

Palmerin d'oliua

THE FIRST PART,

SHEWING THE MIRROVR

of Nobilitie, the Mappe of Honor, Anatomy of rare Fortunes, Heroycall preferences of Loue, Wonder for Chivalrie, and the most accomplished Knight in all perfections.

Presenting to Noble minds, their Courtly desire, to Gentiles their expectations, and to the inferiour sort, how to imitate their vertues: handled with modestie, to shun offence, yet all delightfull for Recreation.

Written in Spanish, Italian, and French: and from them turned into English, by A.M. one of the Messengers of his Maiesties Chamber.

Patere & Abstine.



LONDON,

Printed by T. C. and B. A. for Richard Higgenbotham, and are to be sold at his shop at the signe of the Cardinals Hat without Newgate. 1616.



TO THE WORSHIPFULL
Master Frances Yong, of Brent-Pelham,, in the
County of Hertfort, Esquire, and to Mistresse Su-
san Yong his wife, and my most kind Mistresse,
health, and their hearts contentment,
YK. continually willed.

Being indebted to you both for your ma-
nifold kindnesses, I am bold to continue
my labour begun, concerning the course
of my promised Histories, this being the
first part of Palmerin D' Oliua, ring-
leaver to all the rest, and therefore he
original from whence they which follow
haue bin deriued. Though in my translating they came last
which should haue bin first, now I haue good hope, that by
the reprinting of them ouer againe, at length they will
come to a iust order, and each haue his place as their course
describeth. The second part of this will shortly follow: then
the third and last that I am now in hand withall, which
concluding with Palmerin of England, and Primallion of
Greece, their seuerall last part, will perfect the whole
history, and make it complete in euery part. As the rest, so
I commend this to your worshipfull protection, remaining
alwayes yours with my vttermost endeuours, and praying
that your prosperity may neuer faile.

Your poore well-willer till death,



To the Reader.



When I finished my second part of *Palmerin of England*, I promised this worke of *Palmerin D'Oliva*, because it depended so especially on the other: to discharge that debt, for promise is no lesse accounted, with the new yeere I send him abroad, a freendly companion for the long euenings, and a fit recreation

for other vacant times.

But because some (perhaps) will make exceptions against me, that being but one Booke in other languages, I now deuide it twaine: my aunswere is, that to glut men with delight, may make them sutesit, and so in expecting thanks for my paynes, I should remaine condemned by generall misliking. Beside, a Booke growing too bigge in quantitie, is profitable neither to the minde nor the purse: for that men are now so wise and the world so hard, as they loue not to buye pleasure at vnreasonable price. And yet the first part will entice them to haue the second, when (it may be alleaged) the cost is as great, though it had come altogether: yet I am of the minde, that a man grutched not so much at a little mony, payd at seuerall times, as hee doth at once, for this aduantage he hath, in meane time he may imploy halfe his mony on more needfull occasions, and raise some benefit toward bying the second part. Againe, the other part will be new at the comming forth, where now it would be stale: for such are affections now
a daies,

To the Reader.

a daies, that a booke a fennight olde, is scant worth the reading. Thus no iniurie is offered by diuiding my Booke, but profit both to you and me: yours I haue rehearsed, and mine is, that a little pause doth well in so long a labour, beside, this aduantage would I take, that if my first part deserued no liking, you should neuer be offended by mee with the second.

Yet heerein I am encouraged, that what hath past with so great applianse in diuers languages, can hardly merite to be despised in England, being matter altogether of delight, and no way offensive: for noble and Gentle mindes, are farre from iniuring the Historie, that hath so highly pleased the Emperours, Kings and mightie potentates, if then the inferiour sort mislike, it is because they are not capable of so especiall deseruings.

And yet I am perswaded, that both one and other will freendly entertaine *Palmerin D'Oliva*, because his History is so plentifully stored with choyse conceit, varietie of matter and exquisit conueyaunce: as nothing can be reprooued but my simple translation, yet that I hope will be pardoned too, in that to translate, allowes little occasion of fine pen worke.



THE FIRST PART
OF THE ANCIENT AND HO-
nourable Historie of the valiant Prince *Pal-
merin D'Oliua*, Emperour of Constantinople,
Sonne to King *Florendos of Macedonia*, and
the *Fayre Griana*, Daughter to *Remci-
us*, Emperour of Constantinople: a
*History full of singular and
courtly recreation.*

CHAP. I.

Of the secret loue that the Prince *Tarissus* bare to the
young Princeesse *Griana*, & the arriual of the Prince
Florendos of Constantinople.



He ancient Histories of the famous Empe-
rours of Constantinople doe record, that the
eight Emperaur succeding Constantine, the
founder of that ancient and famous Citie,
was named *Remcius*, who governed so iust
ly, and with such exceeding honour, as not
onely his Subjects intirely loued him, but of the Kingdomes
about him he was so feared and reuerenced, that his Empire
increased moze large then in the time of his Predecessors.
This *Remcius* was of such a petyty and magnificent mynd
that no knight whatsoeuer came into his Court, without
very

THE HISTORIE

came into his Court, without verie honourable recell and beautifull rewards: expelling the good nature of a vertuous Prince, whose doctes were helde of no small reckoning amongst the verie enemies. He married with the King of *Hungaries* Daughter, a Princeesse for witte and beautie, equall with any of her time, which caused her to be so especially loued of her Lord the Emperour, as he altogether gaue ouer her exercise of Armes: notwithstanding, his Court did not dimittish one iote of the former glorie for good and hardie Knights, but dailie increased in such sort, as he took great delight to haue young Princes, Knights and Gentlemen, nurtered and educated from their verie infancie in his Palace, especially after the Emperesse had brought him a Sonne, which was named Caniano, at whose birth was no little stooping through the whole Empire. Within two yeeres after, she was likewise deliuered of a goodlie Daughter named Griana, who growing to fourtene yeres of age, was of such rare beautie and singular good grace, as those that behelde her, esteemed her for the chiefeest pere of womanhippe that euer nature framed.

Whereupon it chanced, that Tarisus Sonne to the King of *Hungaria* (who had bene brought up in company with the young Prince Caniano) fell into such amorous conceits of the young Princeesse, as he deuoted himselfe onely to her service, being unable to conceale the object of his affections, but that time made her acquainted with the cause of his alteration. Paule meanes he found to entise her good opinion towards him, but the carrying a religious zeale to lone in one other climate, made no reckoning of his importunate and diligent seruice, which drew a Hell of tormenting thoughts vpon Tarisus, seeing his sute and seruice so despised. Wherefore, (to compass his intent) he desired his Cozin Caniano, to cause a Triumph bee published whereunto all Knights might be summoned, as well Strangers as others: not doubting but hee should speede so well in vnder of Armes, as thereby hee might recover the

OF PALMERIN DOLIVA.

loue of the faire Griana, and so afterwards make meanes by the Emperesse to demaund her in marriage, all which hee concealed from his Cozin Caniano: who verie glablie did consent to what Tarisus had requested, watching opportunitie to finde the Emperour his Father at leysure, when he made his highnesse acquainted with the whole enterprize, of himselfe and his Cozin Tarisus, desiring him that all Knights might haue warning for preparation, against a day the next Moneth appointed for the purpose. The Emperour was verie well pleased with his Sonnes request, accounting himselfe highlie honoured by his demaunde: whereupon he caused Heraults of Armes presently to bee dispatched, to signifie his intended Tournament through all Countries farre and nere. In the meane while Tarisus could not rest day nor night, but still endeouored to do what he indged might please the Princeesse Griana, to whom as yet he had not uttered the effect of his longing desire, albeit, by exteric uractions hee dailie made shew sufficient of his tormenting passions. But it so fell out not long after, that one day in her walking he had sorted her alone from all the other Ladies & Gentlewomen, in a place commodious for a Louers discourses, where falling from one argument to another, the surie of his expressions imboldened him so far, that at length he brake with her in manner following.

Madame, you are not ignorant of the honourable assembly, that is appointed at the feast ensuing, when I hope to receiue the order of Knighthode, and if it shall like you to thinke so well of mee, as to graunt mee one request, easie enough for you to affoord mee, perswade your selfe that I shall imagine my fortune equall with the happiest Knights that euer liued, in that it may be the onelie meane, whereby I shall enioy the prize and honour of the Triumph. Griana knowing assuredly that Tarisus bore her great affection, as I haue before rehearsed, returned him this answer. In sooth Cozin, it would please me meruailous well to bee the meane of so good fortune as you promise your selfe: Where-

THE HISTORIE

nevertheless, I have not learned so little modesty, as to grant any thing before I know what is desired. When Tarisius understood her modest excuse, he perswaded himselfe that he should now obtaine that of her, whereof untill that instant hee had liued in despairs: whereupon, the teares standing in his eyes, hee beganne in this manner. I humbly beseech you good Madam, to take in worth what I am to acquaint you with: for when I determined to smother my griefe in secret, the extremities of my affection grew to such a surplusage, as it brake the strings of my thoughts, almost bowed for ever silent, to reueale that to you which my selfe dare but reuerently thinke, such is my feare to displease you, otherwise, I know no meanes to warrant mee from so vaine and cruell death: so settled is the vnspotted loue I beare you, which when I strive to overcome, and my selfe also, the more I would decrease it, the more it augmenteth, and that so strongly, as while you are in presence, my spirit is forsaaken every part of me, to liue in you onely. For which cause I haue determined (if you thinke it good) to request you of the Emperour your Father for my Wife, and if he regard mee with so much honour, the Realme of Hungaria may well challenge, and my selfe likewise, the highest raine in earthly felicity, hauing a Distresse of such vnspokeable quality. In the meane time, if you please to bestowe on mee any felwell or fauour, commaunding mee to weare it as your knight and Seruant: you shall well perceiue how aduenturous loue will bee in defence of my right, by the aduantage I shall recouer in the vertue of a gift so acceptable.

Griana, who made but slender account of his passions, and being not well pleased that he held her with such vaine discourses: modestly returned him this answer. If you had such regard of mee as I well deserue, you would not attempt mee with speeches so vnbecomming my hearing: for if your desire be such as you giue me to vnderstand, you ought to make it knowne to the Emperour or Emperesse, who haue greater

OF PALMERIN D'OLIVA.

greater authoritie ouer me then I haue my selfe. Therefore I desire you henceforth not to aduenture the like on perill of your life, otherwise I shall let you know how highly you offed me: on which condition I am content for this time to pardon your want of discretion, in that I perceiue my selfe to be the onely cause thereof, graunting you time and leisure thus priuately to assaile me, for which oversight, I repent me at the very heart. With which words shee slong away and left him alone, declaring by her countenance to be offended with his request, in that shee desired rather to die then accept him for her Husband, or to allow him the name of a friend. If then Tarisius was diuen into a quandarie, we neede not murther: wherefore troubled as he was, and not caring greatly whither he went, he entered the Emperesse Chamber, where she and her Son Caniano stood conferring together: without saluting the one or other, he satte downe in a Chaire, and gave such bitter sighes, as the Emperesse hearing, was somewhat moued therewith, doubting he had either receiued some great iniurie, or else could not preiude himselfe so sufficiently as he would for the Triumphe, whereupon she left her Son, and calling Tarisius aside, thus began with him. Nephewe, I see you very melancholy, which makes mee to iudge, that you want some needefull thing for the Tournament, which my Sonne hath caused to be published. With which words she beheld Taurisius more wisely then shee had done before, and perceined the teares to trickle down his cheekes, which made her more desirous to know the cause of his griefe, but his heart was so confounded and shut vp in anguish, as he could not speake one word to her. Nevertheless, the Emperesse, who loued him as her owne Sonne, found so many meanes to perswade him, as in the end he disclosed the loue he bare to Griana, and the answer likewise which shee made him: whereby I am assured (quoth he) that nothing but death can cease my torments. The Emperesse who of her selfe did many times determine to make that marriage,

THE HISTORIE

age, (perceyuing now how fitly the occasion offered it selfe, began to resolute on the consummation thereof: and to content her Nephew. in excusing the Princeesse Grianas, spake as followeth.

Does you Nephew mislike the answer of my daughter? Belieue me, therein shee did but her duty: for shee cannot dispose of her selfe, being young, and vnder controule, but by consent of the Emperour and I, whom you ought first to make acquainted with your request. But since I perceyue how you are affected, I promise you I will conferre with my Lord the Emperour: and hope to preuaile so well in the cause, as you shall speed of that you most desire.

As they continued these discourses, they were giuen to vnderstand by a Messenger, that the Prince Florendos the Kings sonne of Macedon, was newly arrived with a bzane company of Knights. But his coming to the Emperour was not as his Maile or Subject, because the Kingdome of Macedon was at that time no way beholding to the Empire, but onely to see the faire young Princeesse Grianas; the renowne of whose Beautie and vertues had so pierced his thoughts, as before he saw her, he loued and honoured her so that for this cause onely heourneyed to Constantinople, where he was very honozably entertained, both of the Emperour and his Sonne Caniano, as also of the Emperesse and saye Grianas, who oftentimes heard him reckoned and esteemed amongst the most honourable and gracious Princes, that liued at that day.

CHAP.

OF PALMERIN DOLIVA.

CHAP. II.

How the Emperesse conferred with the Emperour, as concerning the marriage of theyr Daughter Grianas with Tarisius, Sonne to the King of Hungaria; whereof they both determined, and of that which happened in the meane time.



The Emperesse was not forgetfull of her promise made to her Nephew Tarisius, but endeuored by all meanes possible to finde the Emperour at such leisure, as she might impart the whole vnto him: and because shee had so hardly taken the matter vpon her, shee would gladly it should soe to effect, as commonly Women are couetous of theyr owne desires: Therefore no maruell if she were earnest in following her intent.

Some after, walking alone with the Emperour, and secretly coneyring the haite she was desirous he should swallow, she desired him to grant her one request, whereof shee would not willingly be denyed. The Emperour neuer before hearing her so importunate, consented at the first to whatsoeuer she demanded: now perswading her selfe, to speake, thus she beganne.

My Lord, hauing often considered with my selfe, that our Daughter Grianas is of yeares and discretion able for a Husband, I am the more desirous to see her honourably bestowed. And soe that the young Prince Tarisius hath bene trained vp in your Court, and (which I little thought) some god-will appeareth to betwene them: I should thinke it not amisse to unite them in marriage together: for haue

He shall we finde (in mine opinion) a Lord of greater blood and birth then he, being heere apparant to the Crowne and kingdome of Hungaria: besides, they hauing bene so long time conuersant together in their young yeares, will entertaine a more speciall regard of loue betwene them, then can be in any other that may moue the question to her. *Madame* (answered the Emperour) there is your Child, and I doe not thinke but you would her good: therefore I like the motion well for that indede I esteeme so well of Tarisius, as of mine owne Sonne, and since we haue so happily fallen into these discourses, we will forthwith certifie the King his father by our Ambassadors, that we may vnderstand his opinion herein. The Emperesse gratified her Lord with very hearty thanks, being not a little glad she had so well prevailed, wherefore immediately shee aduertised Tarisius. But for Griana, her affection was else where, for she bare a certaine secret good liking to Florendos, so soone as she beheld him, hearing so great report of his knightly bountie and prowesse, so that beholding them together, and they eyes deliuering the good conceit of each other, one might easily iudge, that Loue had so mightily mastered her thoughts, as if she consented, shee had set downe her rest for her choise, and hee on the other side was drawne into the same compasse, notwithstanding each of them (for the time) concealed what they rather desired it should bee knowne betwene them. Yet this hidden fire stroue to gaine place of issue; for diuers times the Princesse Griana being amongst her Ladies, talking of such Knights as would shew themselves at the Tournameit, the Prince Florendos was commonly first spoken of, and so highly would the Ladies commend him beyond all the other, as Griana could not re-fraine from changing colour, so that the alteration he found in her spirit might be evidently perceyued, howbeit none of the Ladies as then noted it: and thus shee continued till the feast of Saint Maria d' Augusta, which was the day appointed for the Tournament, on which day the Emper-

our

our knight, his Sonne Caniano, and Tarisius, prophete to the Emperesse. In honour whereof, he helde a greater and more magnificent Court, then befoze times he had done: for he suffered the Ladies to accompany the knights at the Table: Albeit they were not wont to do so often till that time, yet full well it pleased the Prince Florendos, who late opposite to the Princesse Griana: During which time of dinner, though many piercing Lookes, and smothered Sighes were sent from each other, as messengers of their semblable opinions, yet cunningly they shadowed all from being discovered, and after the Tables were withdrawne, and each one preparing for the Journey, Florendos so well behaved himselfe, as he found the meanes to speake priuately with his new friend: and thus he beganne.

Madame, the Heauens haue not a little fauoured mee, in sozting vs so commodiously together: that I may shew befoze I enter the Lyons Royall, the occasion why I lost the Realme of Macedon, to visite my Lord the Emperour. I sweare to you vpon my knightly faith, that your gracious selfe was the only cause of my Journey: and while I liue, I shall euermore aduenture my selfe, in ought that may stand with your fauour and liking: And the first argument of my happinesse, I should account, if you would commaund mee this day to Arme my selfe for your knight: Otherwile, I must be content to absent my selfe, being assured, that without your regarde, it is vnpossible for mee to do any thing that can returne mee estimation or honour. And albeit I haue not as yet done any seruice to you, whereby I should deserue to be accepted: Yet such is the hope I repose in your vertuous nature, as you will not refuse my honest request, being the first I ever desired of you, and not the last (I trust) shall do you honour. Now as you haue heard befoze, Griana, earnestly affected Florendos: Penethtolus, as a modest and well aduised Princesse, doubting least he seigned those speeches of course, assembling her selfe to be somewhat displeased, returned this Answer.

B

I did

THE HISTORIE

I did not think my Lord Florendos, that you would so farre forget your selfe, to hold mee with speeches not becoming the Daughier of so great an Emperour as I am: Neuer the lesse, knowing you are a stranger, and ignorant (it may be) of the modestie which should defend knights, dealing with Ladies, I will not vse such rigour towards you as I ought, yet must I tell you that I find my selfe offended. You desire that as my knight you may enter the Courney: for that I grant ye, to the ende I may perceiue the effect of the promise, which each one so much commendeth in you, the rest, it is my pleasure that you forbear.

Hadamie quoth he, if I haue vsed any such speeches as agree not with your patience, for Gods sake (in my excuse) accuse my small compass of libertie, which remaineth only at your disposition. What god, shee, thinke you that I will loue any but he that must and ought to be my Husband: As sweete Lady said Florendos, that is it that I so earnestly desire: and thinke not that I sollicite you with any other kind of lous, but only to make you the possessor of my selfe, and altogether to dispose of mee and mine: for proue whereof, I will hereafter imploy my selfe in the Emperours service, in such sort (as if you like it) I hope to purchase his content. Truly shee quoth she, that onely appertains to the Emperour and not to mee, to whome you are to make knowne what you intend: for he hath authoritie to command, and I am bound by duty to obey. At which wordes the Emperour called her away; when Florendos making her curtesie and reuerence, departed to his Chamber to arme himselfe, for many knights were entred the Lynes, and he in short space came thither for company: where he behaued himselfe with such valour, as he not onely got the honour of the first day, but of the foure dayes following, while the Courney endured, and wonne the prize, which Cananio had prepared for him that best deserved it, which made him be greatly esteemed of the Emperour, and of the whole Court in generall, especially of the fayre Griana, whose heart by little and

OF PALMERIN DE OLIVA.

and little, was brought in subjection, to the no small content of Florendos, which doubtlesse hadde the Prince Tarisus behelde, I imagine hee would haue hardly liked it. But now during the time of these great feastes and triumphes, Fortune the sworne enemy to all quietnesse, presented the Emperour with other occasions, to cut off these pastimes and Courty deuises: For after many of the knights assembled at his Court, had taken leaues to returne into their Countreies, Gamezio Sonne to the Soldane of Babylon, who was on the Seas with a mightie Armie, intending to conquer Alexandria, was by extremitie of winde and weather, driuen into the Streytes before Constantino-ple. Which when the Pilotes and Marriners perceyued, not one amongst them but greatly reioyced at this great good Fortune, but chiefly Gamezio, who perswaded himselfe that his Gods had sent him thither, that the most noble and flourishing Citie of the world might fall into his handes: Whereupon the windes somewhat appeased, and the Seas calmed, he assembled the chiefe and principall Captaines of his Armie, and thus he beganne.

O good friends, I beliene assuredly, that our great gods would not suffer vs to arrive in Alexandria, because wee went against them of our owne Law and Religion, but rather it liked them better, that we should aduersitate our selues to this Countrey of Christians, eyther to ruinate it altogether, or at least to bring it vnder our obedience. Therefore I am determined at this time, to deferre the reuenge of the insulte, which the King Calameno did to the Soldane, and as much as in me lyes, imploy my forces in conquest of this Countrey: for which cause, I desire that each of you would particularly encourage your people, assuring them (if wee can conquer this Citie) the Riches thereof will counter-uaile theyr paine and trauaile. The Captaines failed not to accomplish their charge to the uttermost, summoning euery one presently to Armes: so providing their Shippes, their Ensignes, and all thinge else needfull for their defence,

THE HISTORIE

they hoysed their sayles, making towards the shoare, where with such provision as they had they took Landing, making such a noyse with their Drums, Trumpets, and Clamours, as was heard with no small feare in every part of the Citie. Nevertheless, they were received with better resistance then they looked for, as following the discourse of the Historie, you shall at large understand.

CHAP. III.

Of the Battell fought before the Citie of Constantinople, betweene the Emperours power, and the Armie of Gamezio.



Immediately was this huge Armie on the Sea discovered by the Sentinelles of the City, whereupon the rumour arose so great, as the people ranne on heapes to defend the Haven, where the Moors thought to have made their first entrie. In the mean while, Caniano, Tarisius, and the other principall Knights with their men of Arms, put themselves in Equipage, ordaining their Army in such warlike manner, as now they marched south of the Citie, to succour those places where the mores gave most eager Assault. The Prince Florendos being left behinde, made no little hast to gather his Company: And as he galloped with them by the Emperours Pallace, he espied the Princesse Grian, standing at her Chamber-window, casting many a ruefull look towards the Gates of the Citie, which so deeply pierced the gentle Princes heart, as immediately he saide with himselfe, My Deauen (Sweete Ladie) either will I dye this day

OF PALMERIN DE OLIVA.

day, or remove the griefe that seemeth so neare to touche you. And with this resolution hee gave the spurres to his Horse; when it was not long before hee got among the thickest of the Moores, where hee behelde the Enemies so strong, and the Christians so weake, as the day was like to prove dangerous and dismall. For the Prince Gamezio was esteemed one of the best knights throught all Asia, and that day hee behaved himselfe so roughly amongst the Christians, as sooth to say, they were enforced to retire towards the Citie.

Which when the Emperour beheld, who remained with no great strength to defend the City, he was not a little grieved to see his men turne their backs on their enemies, & dispose themselves in such fearefull and dismayng sort. But Florendos & the Prince Caniano used such meanes, as they got them some in Array againe, and returned on the Enemies with a fresh and hardie charge. Tarisius beheld himselfe very balliant, and adventuresous, striving by all the meanes hee could to equall the Prince Florendos, who that day gave demonstration of most rare exploits: so these 3. noble Gentlemen past from ranke to ranke, sending all to the earth that durst withstand them. Gamezio seeing his men so bloodily slaughtered on every side, making to Tarisius, would take revenge on him, delivering him such a cruell stroke on the head with his sword, as down he fell to the ground so astonished, as his enemy might even then have slaine him: and so he had done but for the Prince Florendos, who seeing the Moore advancing himselfe on his steps, to reach a full stroke at Tarisius on the ground, lifted him quite out of his Saddle with his Launce, and bare him so rudely therewith to the earth, as breaking his necke with the fall, hee gave up the ghost.

When the Moores beheld Gamezio their Generall slaine, and the Christians make such haueock of them, their hearts failing them to make further resist, fled so fast as they could towards their Ships, when had not the sight of some prevented them, not one had escaped death or taken Prisoner.

THE HISTORIE

Notwithstanding, the greater part were put to the sword, others making haile to get away by Boates, were drowned in the sea, and manie of account brought backe Prisoners; Thus with victorie returned the Emperours power to its Title.

So many of the Moores as escaped to their Ships, being not a little glad they were so farre from their Enemies: set saile and returned towards the Solane, to whom they declared the summe of their ill-fortune, as also the death of his sonne Gamezio; which tidings made him wel-wie mad with rage and anger. But being olde and crazed with sickness, hee could not goe in person to reuenge his death, which made him bold and fcare, that so soone as his other sonne came to yeares to beare Armes, he would send him with such a puissant strength, as easily he should destroy the Emperour and his Countrey: in the meane time he sent the Ransome to redeme them that were taken prisoners: where we will leaue the Solane, and returne to Caniana, and the other Princes, who being now come againe to the Citie, the Emperour having heard the worthy service Florendos had done that same day (and how he had receiued some self dangerous wounds in the Battell) sent for him in all haile that might be to his Palace, because his owne Chirurgians and Physicians should haue care of him. So was Florendos brought very honourably to the Palace, and conducted to a Chamber beseming his estate, where the Emperesse & Grian came presently to visite him: to whom the Prince Caniano recounted, how Tarisus had bene slaine by Gamezio, but that Florendos stepped betwene his death and him, but quoth he, the Moore excused Tarisus; for in my presence hee gaue his last farewell to this world, so that now wee may say the victory is ours, albeit before it hung in hard suspence.

While Caniano continued these and such like speeches, Grian cast manie a sweete look on the Prince Florendos, and he answered his obiect with the selfesame messengers of his heart. Thus contented they their severall passions with

OF PALMERIN DE OLIVA.

with modest and vertuous regard, as none present could suspect their secret meaning. The Emperesse and her daughter courteously taking their leave, Florendos and his Chirurgians to leaue a while together, they to apply medicines to his woundes, and he the remembrance of his misfortune to his heart. On the morrow the Emperour with his Nobles little rode forth of the Citie, to see the slaughtered bodies, among whom they found Gamezio, who was easily knowne by the richness of his Armour, which Caniano caused to be taken from the dead body, and brought to Florendos, as the desert of his trauell; where the Emperour himselfe (the more to honour him) made present thereof to Florendos at his returne, with these speeches.

O noble Coyen, by your Valour and knightly prowess, haue I had the upper hand of mine Enemies: may I but liue to requite thy good deserts, I shall account my selfe happy and fortunate: Notwithstanding, account of mee as thy kindest and continuall friend, and be there ought in my power shall like thee to requite, on the faith of a King I vow to giue it thee.

Florendos most humbly thanked the Emperour, as well for the great honour hee did him, as also for his large and bountifull promise; whereon he buildes so assuredly, as hee almost accounted sayre Grian for his owne: who with the Emperesse her mother, came daylie to visite him, by which meanes their mutuall Love encreased more and more, and Florendos recovered his health in the shorter time, when he solicited the Emperour with this suite following.

THE HISTORIE

CHAP. III.

How Florendos intreated the Emperour, to giue him in Marriage his Daughter *Griana*, and what answere the Emperour made him.



After that Florendos was thoroughly healed of the woundes which hee had receyued in fight against the Moores: finding the Emperour one day at leysure, and alone in his Chamber, hee beganne to salute him, as after followeth:

Most dread and soueraigne Lord, so princely and gracious haue your fauours bene towards mee since first I entred your royall Court, as the King my Father and I shall neuer answere such exceeding courtesie. And to the end this kindnesse may rather increase then any way diminish, I beseech your Highnes not to deny mee one request, which among the infinite number of your princely graces towards mee, I shall account it to exceed all other. In briefe, it is the princeesse *Griana* your Daughter, whose loue and honorable fame, made me forsake the Realme of Macedonia, onely to desire her in Marriage, if either any desert in mee, or your owne princely good conceipt, might repute mee worthy of so high a fauour. And for I would not your Highnesse should any way misconceiue of mee, as that the motion proceedeth from a youthfull and vnadvised head, or that I haue enterprized it without the good liking of the King my Father: I humbly desire your Maestie to rest satisfied, both in these and all other opinions, in that my Father consented, brought me with no little speede thither, and the hope of yours

OF PALMERIN D'OLIVA.

yours during my abode heere, hath taught mee to place my Loue with discretion, and continue it with honourable vnspotted loyalty. With this addition (under your Highnes Correction,) that were she mine, as I am wholly hers, the faithful seruice of a thankful sonne, would answer the gentlenes of so good a Father, and the irrenocable bowes of holy Loue, assure *Griana* of her Florendo. Right deeply did the Emperour loue the Prince Florendos, as had hee bene his own Sonne Caniano: his knightly valour, and manifold other vertues indly inducing him thereto: and gladly hee would haue consented to his request, if his promise made vnto *Tarissus* did not binde him to the contrary: whereupon he returned him this answer. Belieue me good Cousin, I am not a little grieued, that I cannot satisfy your gentle request, for that *Tarissus*, nephew to the Emperesse hath already preuented me: to him haue I past my promise for my Daughter, and daily I expect the Embassadors comming from Hungaria, to finish the Marriage: so that I had rather lose the best of my Citties, then it should be said I falsified my word. Notwithstanding, of one thing I can assure you, that you are farre higher in my grace and fauour then he: yet necessity is without late, and the regard of mine Honor must intreat you to hold me excused.

Greatly abashed was the Prince Florendos, seeing in one instant that Pope stricken deade, that had maintained his life, since his comming to Constantinople: and so nypt in the head was hee with the Emperours answer, as hee stode a good while in a stude, not speaking a word; At last he began thus. God forbid that so great a Prince should breake his promise, by my occasion; neuertheless, my truth and loyalty to your Highnesse shall not any way diminish, but I shall remaine the most forsworn in tiew, of any that owe seruice and Allegeance to your Maestie. Purther will I (saide the Emperour) imagine the worse of you, but loue you rather better then I did before. When entred diuers Noble-men and Gentlemen, which made them breake

THE HISTORIE

off from further speeches, and Florendos taking his leave, went to his Chamber, so full of griefe, and extreame heavynesse, as easily he could haue bene induced to commit some violence vpon himselfe: but casting himselfe vpon his Bed, he thus began to breath forth the furie of his Passions, to ease the heavy burthen of his oppressed spirit.

Unhappy wretch that I am beyond all other, what hope of life canst thou flatter thy selfe withall, seeing the maine that should maintaine the continuance thereof, forbids thee (Fond man) to hope any longer. What angry Planet governeth thy Fate in this: that hee to whom thou gapest life, should this day be cause to ende thine owne. Wellene me, Tarisus, had I made triall of this inconuenience before, hardly should I put my person in such daunger amongst the Moores, to shaloe thy life: but in defending the sword out of thy throat, I haue deseruedly thrust it in mine owne: So that by lengthening thy dayes, I haue epyred mine owne hate, and that with a death so miserable and cruell, as no enemy whatsoeuer would wish to another. But were it not that my duty to the good Emperour, countermandeth me, thou couldst not with such ease epyer out here me in my loue, or thus vsurpe the gracious fauour of my spittresse Griana, where affection ballanced with desert, or loue measured by vertue, as it is by opinion. Notwithstanding, to dye for her loue, I shall account my selfe happie, in that she cannot but pittie my unfortunate death, and my spirit shuld passe with greater quiet to his ende, if shee knew with what content I take my Destinie: but sake Griana, would God I had epyer not seen thee at all, or else that Fortune had bin more fauourable to mee in my choise. At which wordes, the extremitie of his Passions toke away the libertie of his speech: so that hee could not finish, what hee would gladly haue spoken, but falling from his Bed to the ground in a swoone, amazed one of his Esquayres, that was in the next Chamber, who hearing the fall, ran in immediately, to where seeing his Maister lying dead (in his iudgement) ranne and called Frenato, who was Cousin to Florendos, and one that knew

OF PALMERIN D'OLIVA.

knew most of his priuate affayres: notwithstanding, hee was ignorant in the cause of this Accident, who taking him vpe in his armes, with colde water and vineger cast in his face, at length hee got life into him againe: when Florendos opening his eyes, and seeing his Cousin so busie about him, breathing forth two or three bitter sighes, saide. My deare friend and Cousin, I beseech you hinder not the end and issue of my life, for being out of all hope to recouer my Lady Griana, there is no meane left to maintaine my life.

When Frenato heard these wordes, hee doubted that the Prince had receyued some contrary answer from the Emperour, as concerning the Marriage betwene him and his Daughter, for whose loue onely, hee left the Kingdome of Macedon: wherefore he perceiving that shee must bee the onely meane to ease his torment, hee began thus roundly to answer the Prince. And what of this: must you therefore dispayre: Alas saide Florendos, what would ye haue me doe? the Emperour hath long since past his promise for her to Tarisus, as his Highnesse assured mee by his owne wordes. Wery well sayd (answered Frenato,) but doe you know if she haue giuen her consent: I promise you, I am perswaded that she loueth him not, but that her fauourable regard is much more towards you then him: and because you say so much, to morrow will I sound the bottome of this matter so, that (if I can) I will frustrate the Emperours intent towards Tarisus. Do you in the meane time but learne to dissemble your griefe, and shew not your selfe mal-content, for any thing that hath beene saide: but be of good cheere, and referre your fortune in this case to the successe of mine endeuours. These and such like perswasions Frenato vsed to the Prince, whom he thus left in his Chamber, and returned to the Pallace as was his manner. All this while the Emperour belought him on the speeches that had passed betwene him and Florendos, which made him the night following, to discourse thereon with the Emperesse, and perswading her, that hee could more willingly accept of him

THE HISTORIE

for his Sonne then Tarisus. But she who highly fauoured her Nephew, repproued his opinion with many Answers, so that by importunate intreaties, teares, and other subtil fetches, which Women are wont to vse to accomplish their desires, shee so farre dissuaded the Emperour, hee promised her againe not to giue her to any other, then to him to whom shee first past his word. Of which word, the Emperesse was not a little glad, and therefore all that night shee deuised, by what meanes she might from that time forward so much as lay in her to hinder Florendos from speaking to her Daughter: whereupon shee daily kept her Chamber of presence, and helde a more strict lookes on Griana, then before shee had done, which greatly increased the passions of Florendos, and brought him into so weake estate, as the learned Physicians could not deliuer the cause of his sickness, so the no small griefe of the Emperour, but especiallie of Caniano. Yet for all this would not the Emperesse at any time visite him, because shee would hinder the occasion of her Daughters seeing him, remembering what speeches had past betwene him and the Emperour. And albeit Griana made no outward shewe thereof, yet in her heart shee was highly displeased at her Mothers dealings: so that one day, when her Brother Caniano came to see her, to recount vnto her in what extremitie he hadde left his friendly Companion, and what griefe it would bee to him if hee dyed, as he greatly doubted: What my Lord (qu. shee) it is not so I hope: Per certain (qu. hee) and I feare he will very hardly escape this day. At which words, the water stood in her eyes, yet so well as shee could, shee dissembled her passions: Peruerthelesse, shee could not hold it in, but saide, I marvel much that the Emperesse my Mother, makes so slender account of him, as since his sickness she would not vouchsafe once to visite him: I feare she hath forgotten what good he did for vs, that day when hee valiantly slew the Turke Gamazio. Believe mee (my good Lord and Brother) I am heartily sorrie for his sickness: for if hee dye (as God so bid

quoth

OF PALMERIN D'OLIVA.

quoth she secretly, the Emperour my Father shall lose more then he thinketh on: the great service he hath done for him already, may giue instance of my wordes, and hee being the Sonne of so great a Prince as hee is. By this time hadde such extreame griefe ouerhardened her heart, as shee was constrained (seigning to goe to the Emperesse Chamber) to leaue her Brother, that she might alone by her selfe bemoane her Friends hard fortune.

CHAP. V

How Griana, sent a Ring to the Prince Florendos, by Cardian her Mayde, desiring him (as he loued her) to comfort himselfe; And of the answer he sent her.



Some as Griana had left her Brother, she went into her chamber, where more and more shee lamented for the sickness of Florendos, and with her teares shee coupled these discourses. May it be that any liuing creature can deserue so grievous punishment as I doe, that endanger the life of the worthiest knight in the world? Unhappy that I am, that Leue, yea, the loue he beares to me, should bring so braue a Gentleman to so hard an exigent: but if hee die, such iust vengeance will I take vpon my selfe, as I will not remaine one houre aliuie after him, and let our Chollers take their owne quiet in death, that Fortune would not aske vs in life. Yet will I thus farre first adventure, and that before any sleepe enter these eyes of mine, trie if it consist in my power to ease his extremitie, that buyes my loue at so deere a price. And in this anguish of minde, she called one of her

THE HISTORIE

her Damoysels, the Daughter of her Purie named Cardina, whom aboue the rest she trusted most, and to her she began in manner following: Cardina, thou knowest the loue I alwaies bare thy Mother, and for her sake how well I haue thought of thee, I haue knowne thee long time a true and faithfull Seruant: but now Cardina, is a time beyond all other, to make tryall of thy truth, and to witnes thy loyalty to me, onely as thou art sure, so to be secret, and so secret as I must put my life and honour into thy secrecie.

Cardina, who was wise, and of good gouernement, hearing Giana these earnest speeches, imagined that she would commit no common matter to her trust with such confutation, whereupon shee modestly returned this answer. Madame, rather had I be some parenteale in sunder, then any thing you commaund for secrecie, should by me be reuealed without your licence: and so assure your selfe, that while I liue, you shall finde mee as faithfull in deede, as I promise in word. I neuer hitherto (quoth the Princesse) had other opinion of thee: Listen now therefore what I shall commaund thee. I haue vnderstood for certaine Cardina, that the grievous sickness of the Prince Florendos, is caused by verie earnest loue which he beares to me, and for I account it great pittie to lose so great a knight, do so much as take the paines to go to him from mee: and saye I desire him to bee of good cheere, and if there bee any thing in my power may do him good, I will gladly accomplish it, as hee that loues him as hee ouer selfe, and to assure him thereof, say I send him this Ring, which I will him to keepe as a pledge of my loue. Madame, answered Cardina, Fortune spake me so well, as my paines may giue ease to both your passions: and might my sentence like you Madame, I know no knight so worthy of your loue as Florendos. So then saide Giana, and retorne againe so soone as thou canst. So went Cardina straight to the lodging of the Prince Florendos, at the entrance whereof, shee meete the Prince Caniano so heauye and pensiue as might be, because

OF PALMERIN DOLIVA.

he perceyued his friend to consume awaye euerie day more and more, But Cardina, who had well learned her lesson, kept aside, and would not be seene of Caniano; who being gone, she got vp to the Chamber, where when shee was ready to enter, shee heard the Prince complaine in this sort.

Ah poore wretch, must thou needs die without any hope of remedie? And as he would haue proceeded on, Cardina stopped to him, and after shee had saluted him, saide to him secretly, that the Princesse Giana had sent her to him, to vnderstand of his health: and belonne me good Prince, quoth shee, I neuer sawe a Ladie so sorrowfull for your sickness, as she is. Shee commeueth herselfe to your honor most fearfully, and hath sent you this Ring, as an earnest of the loue she beares you: desiring you to be of good cheere, and comfort your selfe, because she desires to see you, to conferr with you, of matters which concerne you both neerely. These words so rauished the spirit of Florendos, as a good while he doubted, whether he dreamed, or that he might giue credite to what he heard: For albeit he knewe the messenger so well as any in the Court, yet could he not perswade himselfe that hee was so fortunate. At length betweene hope and despair hee took the Ring, which hee entertained, with many devout kisses: and embracing Cardina so well as he could, thus answered: Alas my sweete friend, may it bee possible that any Ladie hath such regard of him, who neuer was able to see her any seruite? Doubt not therefore my Lady (answered Cardina:) and if you will declare your loue answerable to hers in vertue, you must giue testimony thereof, by comforting your person, that shee may see you so soone as may bee. Ah faire Virgin (quoth hee) let my whole life be employed, in what shall like her Diuine nature to commaund mee: and I assure you, that these tydings hath increased such newe life into my soule, as already I finde my selfe wonderfully chaunged; Yea, and that in such sorte, as before three dayes be ouer past, I shall attend her most gracious will, with seruicable diligence. In the mean while, I shall desire

THE HISTORIE

desire you saye Friend, to let my soueraigne Mistresse vnderstand, that I kisse her Highnes hand in humble dutie, and haue this giuen Farewell to this life, had not her swete regard called mee againe from death. Thus parted Cardian from the Prince, taking her way speedily towards Griana, who longed not a little to heare from Florendos, whom she had made Lord of her gentle affections.

CHAP. VI.

¶ How Cardian recited to the Princeesse Griana, what speeches had passed betwene her and Florendos; and of the counsell shee gaue her Mistresse, to conferre with him in the Garden, so soone as hee was recovered.



Cardian thus dispatched from Florendos, made no little haste towards the Princeesse, who remained all this while silent in her Chamber; and no sooner perceiued Cardina to enter, but she demaunded if Florendos receiued her Token in good parte or no. Beleeue mee Madam answered Cardina, I thinke you neuer did any thing in all your life, whereby you could obtaine moze honour and applause, then by that you vouchsafed to doe at this instant; for in my iudgement you haue perfozmed a myracle, in giuing him life that was in the very Jawes of death. Then from point to point she recounted the talke passed betwene them: First, how shee found him in the midst of his regrets, and lastly, what message hee had sent her.

Thus while Cardian continued her discourse, euery word took hold on the gentle heart of the Princeesse, and wounded her

OF PALMERIN DE OLIVA.

her with such pittifull regards of the Prince his torments: as what she desired inwardly, shee shadowed with modestie, as loath to receiue shame in her Loue, hating carryed herselfe with such honour all her life, quoth shee to Cardina. How might I (said Cardina) ease this weightie oppression? Very well (said Cardina) when Fortune alloweth opportunity. But thou knowest (quoth Griana) a Princeesse as I am, to bee seene secret with so braue a Gallant, doth greatly hazard my life and honour. As for that Madam, (saide Cardina) my Sister can better annise you then I, or any that I know: by her meanes may you speake with your Knight, the brauest Gentleman in the world, & one to whom I know is so farre denoted yours, as he will rather lose his dearest life, then impeach your honour any way: and otherwise then in loyalty, to make you his Lady and Wife, I am well assured hee loueth not, which loue (Madame) you may well entertaine. Returne then Cardina, (quoth the Princeesse) to my Lord Florendos, and assure him that so soone as hee is well recovered, I will come and speake with him, in such a place where he may safely aduenture: and desire him as hee loueth mee, that it may be with all conuenient speed.

Cardina without any further delay, went with this message to the Prince Florendos: who hartened himselfe so well vpon these speeches, as within five dayes he found himselfe thoroughly amended, wherof the Emperour and Caniano his Sonne was not a little glad: but Tarisus was scant well pleased thereat, for hee had conceived a secret iealousie, because he was so earnest in affection towards Griana, who by her maid Cardina had warned Florendos, that the night following, hee should come into the Garden, where into her Chamber had a secret entrance, and there would hee and she conferre of their loue, without suspicion of any. Florendos seeing these affaires sorte to so good ende, purposed what euer happened, not to faile the time and place: which made him thinke this day a yeare in length, so long hee lacked and desired for the night. But now the wished houre is come,

C

when

THE HISTORIE

When Florendos with his Cousin Frenato, (who was priue to the Princes secret loue) departed from their Lodgings, and coming to the Garden, they saw the Wall was very high, and hard to climbe, notwithstanding, greater things are possible to Louers, chiefly when a cause of such weight is in hand, so that in short time Florendos had got to the top of the Wall, and afterward went to the place wher Grianana staid his coming, who had no body with her, but Lerina, sister to Cardina, to whom likewise shee thoroughly bewrayed her secrets. Wher having espied them, came and fell on his knee, before the Princesse, but shee took him by the armes, embracing him so sweetly: as Lerina with drew herselfe amongst the Trees, not with any intent of feare to displease them, but with a certaine kinde of grieve, which ouercame her, in that shee wanted a friende to participate with her in loue, as her Mistresse had, before whom Florendos, being on his knee, saide. Madame, by vertue of your commaundement, I am thus bolde to enter your presence, yielding my whole abilitie to you, as to the diuine Goddess, that hath shielded mee from death: which grace saving your Princely nature hath afforded mee, my life for ever hereafter remaines at your soueraigne pleasure: the unfeigned promise whereof, I binde to you by irreuocable bowes, but especially by my faith, the onely ornament of a true knight, that I desire no longer to breathe this ayre, then to honour your name with my continual seruice: for life without your grace and fauour, is more pynesome to mee then a thousand deaths. But by your fauour my Lord (answered Grianana) how, or from whence hath this hot loue sprung, let me know. I desire you. Madame (quoth hee) as I haue heeretofore, so at this time I assure you, that in my native Countrey of Macedon, I heard the renowne of your excellling beautie, at which very instant, I dedicated my selfe onely yours: and euer since continuing in this religious seruice, I haue so confidently set downe my rest, in gracious regard of your sweet selfe, as being yours in seruice, I live: if otherwise,

OF PALMERIN DE OLIVA.

I die. In sooth said the Princesse, I see then you haue giuen your selfe wholly mine, and so I am now contented to accept you. When Madame (quoth he) to seale the assurance of this diuine fauour you haue done me, let me intreate to kisse those sweete Lippes that deliuered the sentence I haue long looked for. Which to graunt, though for modesty sake, at first she seemed daintie, yet at length shee had so surprized her, as he needed not strue when no resistance was offered. Thus with teares and solempne kisses, they breathed into each others soule the true arguments of theyr Loue, and saye Cynthia, amiably fauouring this delicate encounter, added such courage to the minde of this lonely Champion, as breaking the Lance in the face of Venus, hee bequeathed the successe of his deuoir to the gracious Aspect of that Planet. And among a number of soft and sweete long speeches, hee discoursed to her his talke with the Emperours her Father, how he had requested her in marriage, and how hee excused his consent, by the promise he had made before to Tarisius, through the daylie and earnest perswasions of the Emperesse. Notwithstanding (quoth he) in respect you haue not consented thereto, I hope they shall finde themselves farre beyond their reckoning. Now for the Princesse, shee neuer knew that Tarisius had laboured to haue her to his wife, because she made so light account of him, as she would rather die then consent thereto: whereupon shee returned Florendos this answer. The Emperour my Father hath reason to thinke hardly of my Mother, and great discredite will it be to her, to procure my marriage against my will, for neuer shall I consent thereto: and therefore my Lord I desire your aduise, how I may preuent this insuing daunger?

Madame answered Florendos, my aduise is layd already, so please you to accept thereof, I will conuey you hence secretly, and before the Emperour or any one know of it, in to my countrey of Macedon, where I and mine shall entertaine you with great and reuerend honour, and you shall be our gracious Ladie and Princesse. Belieue me sayd shee,

THE HISTORIE

it is doubtfull in such a iourney what dangers may happen, notwithstanding, hauing holwed my selfe onely yours, be it to the liking or disliking of my Father and Mother, I hadde rather breake through the straightes of a greater hazard, then be forced to marrie him, whome while I liue I cannot like: therelbye doe you expect the advantage of the time, and I will adventure with you whither you please. Madame (answered Florendos) continue you this resolution, and referre the rest to my charge, which you shall see asfected ere thre dayes be past: in the meane while I intend to take my leaue of the Emperour your Father, with this excuse, that the King my Father commaunders my returne home: for which cause I will send my trayne before, reseruing onely but tenne of my best knights to accompanie me. For that (quoth Griana) doe what you thinke best, & without any further expecting me in this place, certifie mee how things happen, by your Cousen Frenato, or my maide Cardina. At now you see the day beginnes to breake, whereloye let me desire you to depart, that no scandall or suspicion arise of our meeting. Florendos kissed the Princesse hand though longer hee would haue stayed, humbly took his leaue, and by the helpe of Lerina, hee got ouer the Wall againe, where Frenato stayed his coming, to whome when he was entred his lodging, hee imparted the appointment betweene him and the Princesse, desiring him to discharge his trayne, except ten of his best approued knights, to helpe him if any hinderance preuented his intent: as for the rest, they shoold be going on before, and stay his coming at an appointed place, thre daies iourney to Constantinople. In the morning he awaited the Emperours coming abroade, to whom he said, that he had receiued Letters from the King his Father, with expresse commandement to make speedie returne home: thereloye my good Lord (sayd hee) I desire to depart with your favourable liking, and in respect I may not contrarie where I am bound to obey, I intend to make speed to set forward on my iourney: assuring your highnesse,

bas

OF PALMERIN D'OLIVE.

that in what place I shall chauce to come, I am yours in loyall and faithfull service. My good Cousin (answered the Emperour,) I giue you thanks with all my heart, for the honour you haue done me with your gentle presence: and if you haue occasion to bleme in ought, you shall perceiue how highly I loue and esteeme of you. My Lord (saide Florendos) I desire to deserue the great kindeesse I haue found already: So taking his leaue, the Emperour embraced him, and as he wasd, with to his chamber, he met the Prince Caniano, of whom he took his leaue likewise; who desired him to stay thre or foure dayes longer. In which time there came to the Court certaine Ambassadors, which the King of Hungaria had sent to the Emperour, to conclude the Marriage betwene his Sonne Tarisus, and the Princesse Griana, the Duke of Gramay beeing the chiefe of this Embassage: Who was accompanied with many knights and Gentlemen of name and account, to whome the Emperesse gave very gracious Welcom, in that she had privately procured this their coming. As these Ambassadors entred the great Chamber, Caniano and Tarisus who accompanied them, perceiued Griana to withdrawe herselfe aside, very sad and melancholie: Whereupon Caniano came vnto her (greatly abashed at her angry countenance) and thus he beganne. Faire Sister, now at this time when you ought to shew the most cherefull countenance, you are more sadde then of long time I haue seene you: Hee thinkes you haue good occasion to be merrie, seeing the Emperour my Father hath prouided you so braue and worthie a Husbande, as is my Cousin the Prince Tarisus, who I am sure loues you as his owne life. Ah Brother (quoth he) I know not what should moue him so to doe, seeing I neuer thought so well of him: and more gladly could I entertaine mine owne death, then be constrained to loue where I cannot. These words did Tarisus easily vnderstand: notwithstanding he made shew as though he did not: but going to the Emperesse hee desired her to stay there with the Emperour, seeing the Ambassadors were come

THE HISTORIE

from the King his Father, that what was begun as concerning him and Grianā, might now bee finished according to his promise. Upon this occasion, the Emperesse called Grianā aside, and with smooth and sweet speeches began to breake with her, how for her good she had induced the Emperour, to giue her in marriage to her Cousin Tarisius, and what honourable aduantage shee should receiue thereby: wherefore sayre daughter (sayde shee) resoluē your selfe with childlike obedience, to thinke well of that your Parents haue determined. All these perswasions could not draw one pleasing word from the Princesse, but shee excused her selfe still, by the desire shee had to remaine as shee was, and rather then to marry shee would take a religious life vpon her: with which words she brake into such teares, as the Emperesse was constrained to leaue her alone, not doubting to find her the next time in better tune. Grianā then considering with her selfe, how she should at length be enforced to yeeld, whether she would or no, if Florendos did not the sooner accomplish his enterprize: called Cardina vnto her, and sent her with this charge to Florendos, that that present night hee should not faile to meet her in the Garden, where shee would be ready to depart with him, otherwise he should neuer gaine the like opportunity: with which message Cardina departed.

CHAP

OF PALMERIN D'OLIVA.

CHAP. VII.

How Florendos came that night to the Garden, to conclude what hee and Grianā had intended, and what hapned to them.



Florendos vnderstanding the will of his Princesse, with great diligence laboured to execute what they had intended, and taking his leaue at the Court, fained hee would retorne no more, but take his way straight towards Macedon. Tarisius, whose jealousy increased every day more and more, set priuy spies to watch euery night, who went in and out at the Princes Chamber, and albeit of long time his labours were frustrate, yet at length he and his spies perceyued, how hee whom hee most enuied, mounted the Garden Wall where the Princesse lay: for Florendos hauing left his company without the City, accompanied with Frenato, and both of them well armed, hee priuily returned againe to the Pallace, thinking about midnight to carry her away, for whose loue hee had thrust himselfe into this dangerous hazard. Thus hauing left their horses without the City with their Pages, and being come to the Garden wall, Frenato helping the Prince to get vp. Tarisius and his men, who unhappily lay there in ambush, ran violently vpon him, crying all aloud, kill, kill these villains that would dishonour the Emperours Pallace. At which wordes, Florendos and Frenato seeing themselves discovered presently drew their swordes, and beganne to lay aboute them very valiantly: Florendos giuing

THE HISTORIE

Tarissus so great a blowe on the head, that hee fell downe to ground as hee had bene dead, and two of thre of his companie with him: Which when the rest behelde, they gote ouer the Wall, and running with great clamor into the Cittie, cryed, helpe, helpe, Tarissus, whome Florendos (seeking to robbe the Emperours Pallace) hath cruelly murdered.

This noyse was heard by Grian, Lerina, and Cardina: who were in the Garden staying for Florendos: Which did so amaze the hardiest of the thre, as they knew not well what countenance to set on the matter: especially Grian: Whom this feare had stricken into a dead Traunce, but Lerina, and her Sister, taking her vp in their armes, conueyed her into her Chamber, and some after into her Bed, when recovering her selfe, in extreame weeping, thus spake. Alas miserable wretch that I am, doth fortune employ all meanes shee can for my destruction? Well, let her do the uttermost spight she can: for I am well assured betozeit be long, that Death shall triumph above all her discourtesies. Cardina seeing her so weepe, and wringing her handes, and as it were ready to fall into dispaire, beganne to perswade her in this sort, Madame, it is no time now to vse these extremities: for Gods sake learne to coner your Passions, to the end the Emperour may not detect vs, being assured, that as yet we were not perceined: And if you can but content your selfe, all this tumult will some be overcome. I pray thee (quoth Grian) leaue me alone, and goe (if thou canst,) What is become of Florendos: that I may know whether he be taken or slaine. So went Cardina, and standing amongst others, as one that knew nothing, behelde all. During this hote Tumult, Frenato seeing troubles increasing more and more, followed the matter with such diligence, as hee gote Florendos out of the throng, and the darkness of the night was such, as they easily compassed to get out of the Cittie, where their Horses stayed with their Hozles; whereon they mounted, & set on away. But the Prince Florendos would many times haue returned backe againe, so loath was he to

leane

OF PALMERI DOLIVA

leane her whom hee loued so dearly: for being out of all hope to see her againe, hee esteemed his life of no value or account. In which impatience, he rent his comely locks of haire, and haied his flesh with great violence, whereupon Prenato thus spake to him. Why how now my Lord: will you in seeking honour, wound your selfe with shame: or in arguing your loue to your Lady, endanger her life? desire you to lose your selfe, and her also for ever? Beloue me Cozen, this very hardly besemes you, that the subtil dealing of a cowardly knight, should make you thus to forget your self. No no good Cozen, it is now no time to declare these shewes: let vs therefore make spæde to our companie, and if you thinke good, we will send one secretly backe to the Cittie, to vnderstand the end of this troublesome boyle, and we in the meane time may set forward towards Macedon. Ah swete Cozen (quoth Florendos) you speake as the man that cannot comprehend my torments: thinke you it is possible for me to lide, leauing that rare creature in such perill, for whose lone a Hell of graces hath martired my soule: By my knightly faith I sweare, that death is a thousand times more welcome to me, then to be mastered by this one conceit, that I should lide an houre out of her gracious seruice. Well well Sir (said Frenato) what you may not do now, referre till better conuenience, and let vs set on before the day-light desery vs: otherwise, in seeking to defend Grian, your selfe shall be witnes of her reproach and condemnation. Florendos perceiuing his Cozen did aduise him for the best, was well contented to be ruled by him: so giuing the spurres to the Hozles, stayed not till they ouertooke the rest of the company: when he dispatched an Esquire presently backe to the Cittie, commaunding him straightly to direct some to the King his Fathers Court, the successe of which thing that happened in his absence.

But now to returne to here before we left, Cardina had not long stayed in this hurlyburly but shee perceined the Emperour was risen, who in all hast caused his Guard to

arme

THE HISTORIE

arme themselves to helpe Tarisus: for by this time had the two knights which escaped, aduertised in the court, that they take Florendos as he was climbing the Garden wall, to go to dishonour the Princesse Griana. At which report the Emperour was so moued, as he wēt in great furie to his Daughters Chamber, whom he found in her bed, moze likelie to die then liue: but necessitie (whereof many do often make a vertue) made her couer her weakenes with a faire shew of courage, so that when she saw him enter, she wrapped her selfe in her night mantle, and came before him, to whom he began in this furious manner. Thou leud Cyprie, darest thou conceine the thought to doe me this dishonour? By my crowne, for this thy presumption, I shall make thee such an example to all other, as thy head from thy shoulders will scant quite thy fault.

Griana hearing him speake so roughly, answered him againe thus mildly. My Lord and Father, I beseech you to pardon me, you accuse me, & I know not whereof: if I haue done euill, it is in you to chastise me as you shall please: and if I be innocent, vouchsafe good Father not to condemne me. Ah varlet (quoth he) this excuse shall little profite thee. So taking her verie rudelie, he locked her in a strong Tower, whereof he carried the Key himselfe: then went he to Tarisus his lodging, to see how he did, for it was tolde him that he was in daunger of his life: where he found the Emperesse heauily weeping, but he caused her to go to her Chamber, and commaunded his Chirurgions to looke diligently to his Nephewe, and not to spare any cost to purchase his health. Now because they which searched for Florendos, could not finde him, the bruite and rumour was qualified, and the Emperour went againe to his Chamber till the morning, when the Emperesse hearing of her daughter was in prison, took it very heauily, and kneeling before the Emperour, desiring him that she might fetch her frath: but he was so angery, as her wordes could doe nothing with him, yet hee graunted that she should go see her,

OF PALMERIN D'OLIVA

her, and took her the Key: when she entering the Tower, found her sitting on the ground so blubbered with teares, as was lamentable to behold: but when she beheld her Mother, she arose, and doing her reuerence, could not speake, her teares so ouercame her. The Emperesse that loued her dearly, seeing her in this greiuous estate, had much ado to dissemble what shee thought, how be it, after a few light wordes passed betwene them, she said. I am sozrie daughter, that you haue so lightly throtone your affection vpon a stranger, and that you forget your duetie, in following your Fathers counsell and mine, who well knewe the loue Tarisus beares you, and no otherwise Daughter, then to take you to his wife. But you (carried away with that loosenesse, which ill agrees with your credite and calling) haue rather thought best, to graunt Florendos entrance by your Garden, at such a suspected houre, as while you liue, your honour will be hardlie thought on: for two of Tarisus his knightes, who thought to take the Traytour, are slayne, and my Nephewe himselfe daungerously escaped. Griana hearing him called Traytour, whome shee so highlie loued, and that shee her selfe was accused, by that which ought to excuse her, answered. Madame, and my gracious Mother, as yet I am ignorant of the cause, that hath moued the Emperour in such choller against mee: and be it for this you speake of, in sothe I am offered very great iniurie, for I knowe not whether Florendos, or any other haue entred my Garden: well I am assured hee came not where I was. These are strange newes to me Madame, I would rather haue thought him on his way towards Macedon, in respect of the soleimne leaue he took in the Court. For my part, I would that the Traytour which was the cause hereof, had long since bene buried in the bottome of the Sea, then he should so abuse the honour of Florendos, with a matter of such villanie, wherein I cannot iudge him faultie: but were it he Madame, I am at a point, let him die the death, as he hath well deserved, for my dutie to you my Parents hath

THE HISTORIE

hath taught me better nurture, and loue can be no p̄iud-
ledge to me to fiend. Then good Mother, thwt not me
with impeach of honour in so inuocent a cause, for defence
whereof, were the death present before mine eyes, I haue
sorrowed as much as I would, and am moze ready to em-
brace it then lie in suspect, so shall my Father and you be
eased of providing me a Husband. As for the prison wher-
in I am, I will not denie his fauour when it shall please
him to deliuer me: but I could take it farre moze conten-
tentlie, to spend the remainder of my following dayes thus
solitarie, then to lie abroade misdemeaned on by any. Faire
Daughter (said the Emperesse) do not discomfort your selfe
in this sort, the Emperour hadde some reason (in regard of
the loue he beares you, and the outrageous tumult which
happened) to doe as he hath done: but I hope in the end all
will sort to the best, and that you your selfe shall remaine
contented. Many of her speeches passed betwene them, till
at length the Emperesse left her and departed, for she thought
long till she was with the Emperour, to let him know the
talke betwene her and Griana: which she did without
omitting any thing, notwithstanding he was moze seuerer
to his Daughter euery day after. Then sent he for the
Ambassadors and thus he behan with them. My Lordes,
at this time I am aduised, that you shall returne to your
king my Brother, for in respect of the accidents which you
haue seene to happen, I will craue pardon for this time,
referring matters ouer till some other time, when things
shall fall in better disposition. The Ambassadors under-
standing the Emperours pleasure, the next day toke they
leave toward the king the 22 Daister, to whom they decla-
red the whole in generall: whereat hee conceived such dis-
pleasure, as hee presently sent for his Ornae Tarisius, who
had not as yet recovered his health. But hee was so enamo-
red on the young Princeesse, as would not obey his Fathers
command: but so soone as he was indifferentlie amended,
he intreated the Emperour to pardon his Daughter, accu-
sing

OF PALMERIN D'OLIVA.

King his owne men, who vndiscreetly hadde raysed this false
rumour of her and Florendos. By this meanes, the Em-
peresse and her Ladies obtained libertie daylie to accompanie
Griana; but all the night time he caused her to be locked by
as closely as before, committing her to the charge of an aged
Gentlewoman named Tolomestra, whom he commaunded
vpon paine of death, not to be a minute of an houre without
of her companie.

CHAP. VIII.

How Florendos arriving on the Frontiers of Mace-
don, made many sorrowfull complaintes, for not
bringing away Griana, according to his Enter-
prise.



Neither had Florendos & Frenato over-
tane their companie, but they ridde on in
such hast (fearing to be followed) as at
length they got the Frontiers of Mace-
don. And because Florendos imagined
himselfe without life, not hearing any
tidings from his Mistresse Griana, hee
concluded to rest at the first Towne hee
came vnto, there to expect the returne of the Esquire he sent
to Constantinople: who returned towards his Maister so-
oner then hee looked for, by reason of the little abode he made
in the Emperours Court; for he stayed not when he heard
that Griana was imprisoned, and that Tarisius was not
slaine, as his Maister was perswaded. These newes did
wonderfully afflict the Prince, as well for the harde blage
of his sweete friend, as that hee had failed in killing him,
by whose death hee well hoped to recover his losse: all the
whole

THE HISTORIE

whole day would he receiue no sustenance, but locked himselfe close in his Chamber, and tumbled on his Bedde as a man halfe desperate. But Frenato, who would not be long absent from him, fearing least his furie would cause him worke some violence on himselfe, made such meanes that he got into the Chamber, at what time the Prince was thus lamenting. Alas swete Madame, was I borne in such an unhappie houre, that without desert you must endure imprisonment for me: What satisfaction may your Florendos line to make, in requitall of this iniurie? When did you euer merite to be so hardly intreated for him? Believe me, could you bee discharged so soone as I could wish it, Walls, Locks, nor Walls could hold you a thought while; yet wishing is not action, euery thing is contrary to me, all helpes refuse me, and death likewise denies mee: but by my Sword, (and therewith he started vp) in spight of whatsoeuer, I will deliuer you. Frenato seeing him rise in such a furie, came and toke him by the arme, demaunding what he would haue. Death (quod he) if I could, for it grieues mee to liue any longer. You speake very wisely (quoth he in mocke) all this is for the imprisonment of Griana: Is it not better shee should be there, then in the custodie of Tarisius? her Captiuitie you know cannot long endure, but were she married she could neuer be recovered. Wherefore, let god hope perswade you, and now send an other Messenger with speed to Constantinople, to know what accidents haue happened since, and to praye the meane to speake with Cardina, who will certifie you from Griana, what is or may be done in these affayres. This Counsell liked well Florendos, whereupon he presently dispatched a Gentleman of trust, who with all diligence did execute the command of his Maister: For in good time hee arrived at Constantinople, where Griana had liberty to speake with her Gentlewoman: When he heard, he was not a little glad, whereupon he searched earnestly, till he had found Cardina, to whom he deliuered his Maisters minde, as also in what sadde and

OF PALMERIN DOLIVA.

heauy plight he left him, desiring her with all speed to certifie the Princeesse thereof, and what seruice shee would commaund him to his Maister. Cardina knowing how glad the Princeesse would be, to heare these tydings from Florendos, went to seeke her sister Lerina, to whom shee imparted what you haue heard, and shee, well aduised of the time, and place, discouered the same to the Princeesse, vnscene, and not suspected of olde Tolomestra. How ioyfull she was of this message I cannot offer, nor you conceiue, but she was resolved, neuer to haue any other Husband but Florendos; and therfore to comfort him, she deuised to write vnto him: that he might hope as well as shee did: but well shee knew not how to accomplish her intent, by reason shee wanted penne, incke, and paper, and shee was forbidden to haue any. Notwithstanding, shee so well perswaded her woman Tolomestra, (as feigning to write to the Emperour her Father) shee recovered the meane to execute her desire. When with holding her selfe apart, first she wrote a letter to the Emperour, and afterwards one to Florendos, wherein shee desired him not to bee offended, albeit things fell not out to his liking: for (with the fauours of Fortune) the sad would be as pleasant to him, as the beginning had beene unhappie to them both: Withall, that as hee desired to prolong her life, hee should do nothing to the preiudice of his own person. These two letters, thus written and sealed, she called Tolomestra, and gaue her that she had written to the Emperour, desiring her to carry it presently to his Maister: By whose departing she had opportunitie to conferre with Lerina: in briefe, she desired to goe seeke the Squire, that he might returne to his Maister, with the letter she sent him: which shee did effectually, and the gentle Squire made no little haste to his Maister. Who receiuing the Letter from his Mistresse Griana, was not content alone to reade it, but kiss, and re-kiss it, an hundred times, thus saying: Ah swete Letter, written with the hand of the onely fayrest Princeesse, this day liuing: And (for her sweet sake will I hope) as the

THE HISTORIE

best Token a true knight can receiue from his Mistress.

CHAP. IX.

How the Emperour promised *Tarissus* that hee should marry *Griana*, whether shee would or no: and how she was deliuered of a faire Sonne, without the knowledge of any, but olde *Tolomestra*, who had her in garde.



When the Emperour had receiued the letters which *Tolomestra* presented him from his Daughter, although he found nothing therein might prouoke him to anger, sauing that shee earnestly desired him to pittie her Estate, being innocent of any thing was layde to her charge: yet hee shewed himselfe more discontented then before, sending *Tolomestra* backe with this answer.

Say to *Griana*, that saing she was so aduenturous to incur my displeasure, she shall well know that I will not spare to punish her offence: and let her assure her selfe that I will neuer looke on her while I liue, if shee match not with *Tarissus*, to whome I haue giuen her. All this *Tolomestra* told to *Griana*: which rather then to obey, shee desired to dye.

Wherfore when any came to visite her, she would shew her selfe more pleasant in their company then she had done, in respect of vnexpected heavines that secretly touched her, feeling her selfe so farre conceyued with Child, as she knew no meanes to saue it, and her Honour, if it should happen to be perceyued. Yet one onely helpe shee had in this extremitie, that being so weake and sickly, as the Physicians could not discerne her disease; but reputed her likly to die,

OF PALMERIN D'OLIVA.

which shee with all her heart desired, yet doe what injury to her selfe shee could, shee had better health then shee desired to haue. In the end feeling her selfe so grasse and vnbewdie, shee durst not leaue her bed, but kept it dayly, till her time drew very neere at hand, when the Emperour (by the earnest importunity of the Emperesse) happened to come and see her, bringing with him the Prince *Tarissus*: who being thus entred the Tower, they found her in such grievous and dangerous estate, as for all the anger the Emperour had against her, it moued the teares to stand in his eyes, which hee shadowed so well as hee could, framing his speeches to her in this sort. Well daughter, it likes you to contrary me, in that which concernes your honoꝛ and profite, and without any feare (as is thy duty) thou hast boldlie refused the Husband which I haue appointed thee: but (by mine honour) I will cause thee know that thou hast displeased mee, for wilt thou or not (before I leaue thee) I will giue thee to him whom I haue promised. Then taking her by the hand, an causing *Tarissus* to come neere, shee said. My Sonne, in regard of my word, which I will keepe inuiolably, I giue thee here *Griana*, from hencefoorth account of her as thy wife: And holde thee, here is the Key of the Tower, keepe her in thine owne custody, and hereafter thinke of her as thou findest occasion. Well said *Griana* that perforce shee must obey her Fathers will: wherfore with great wisdom couering her secret thoughts, with extreme teares deliuered this answer. Alas, my good Lord and Father, I neuer thought that your highnes would vse such cruelty towards mee as to enforce mee take a Husband contrary to my liking, not (my good Lord) but that *Tarissus* hath much better deserved: but that which toucheth me most in opinion is, that our new alliance in kindred, is sufficient to continue the loue betwene the King his father and you, without any such needlesse seeking of new vniuing. And moreover, good Father, his education in your Court with my Brother *Caniano* and me, since our very

THE HISTORIE

youngest yeares to this present, had bene of such equall and familiar condition: as it seemes to mee impossible to reuerence him with that intire duty, which women must and ought vse to their Husbands. Wherefore my good Lord and Father, I perswade my selfe (under your correction) that you should support me in this iust request: the rather in respect of my present estate, which may induce you somewhat to conceine, that the obsequies of my buriall is more likely to be solemnized, then those holy ceremonies that should be used at my marriage. And with these words shee powred forth such abundance of teares, as the Emperour knew not what to answer: but overcome with pittie, with drew himselfe, leaving Tarisus with her: who hoping to have better words of her, sayde: Madam, I beseech you not to offend your selfe for any thing the Emperour hath saide concerning mee, for I will not any thing to your discontent, and rather would I suffer all my life, then cause the least doubt to incurre your dislike, hoping that in time to come, you will take such pittie on mee, as being perswaded of the love I beare you, and the reverent desire I have to doe you service, you will grant that with good will, which the Emperour strives to gaine perforce, assuring you that nothing can be more precious to me, then the hard dealing which hitherto hath bene used towards you. And to the end you may revalue your selfe of that I say, your Father having delivered mee the key of your Prison, and the garde of your person, I here commit both to your gentle pleasure. So kissing the key, he layd it by her, and without expecting any answer, with great reuerence hee departed, leaving her with Tolomestra, so rapte into a Rumber or trance as her Keeper would not for pittie trouble her. The Princesse in this silent passion, thought that shee saw a fierce Lyon be fore her, with open throte to deuoure her, and neere at hand shee spied an armed Knight, to whom shee laboured for defence crying, that for God sake he would sheeld her from the beast: but the Knight with stern and angry countenance thus answered. I will not defend thee, but with my sword will take thy life from thee. Whon hast thou much offended the heavenly powers in disobedience to thy Father, as I ought rather to divide thy heare from thy shoulders, then to hinder this beast from deuouring thee. Thinkest thou to contrarie their diuine pleasures? Sufficeth not the fault thou hast committed with Florendos? content thee, and shrowde thy shame, in regarde of the fruit in thy wombe, whose worthinesse thou shalt know more of hereafter. If thou doest not, thou diest an everlasting death, from which thou canst haue no meanes to defend thee. The Knight did so affright Griana, as shee promised him to accomplish the Emperours commandement without fayle: wherupon the Knight and the Lion banished away, leaving her (as shee thought) by a sayre fountaine, enuironed with Trees and diuersity of flowers, the sweet sent wherof was so pleasant and obexiferous, as made the cheerefull blood to reuine againe in the Princesse, and with beating forth a vehement sigh shee awaked, inuocating on the powers to pardon her transgressions, and promising to obey the will of her Father, albeit shee could hardly forget Florendos so soone. Within two or three dayes after, the Prince Tarisus came to visite her, to whom shee shewed better countenance then shee had done: and as they were dining together in amorous talke, shee said. Beleeue mee Sir Tarisus, you haue vled such honest and gentle courtesie towards mee, as henceforth I will giue my selfe wholly yours: therefore being sorry for my long disobedience to my parentes and you: triumph now Tarisus in the honor of my loue. If these words pleased Tarisus, it is not to be doubted: for for whereof hee went presently to the Emperour, and made him acquainted with these happy tidings: so that (to make short) after many promises and solemn oathes to the Princesse, not onely to accept her as his spouse and wife, but as his Soueraigne Lady and Mistresse, hee brought her with him to the Emperour, who hearing

OF PALMERIN DOLIVA.

the

D 2

the resolution of his daughter, embraced her and took her in
to as good conceit as ever he did.

Not withstanding, Tolomestra was commanded to attend
on her still: wherefore Griania knowing her time to draw
neere, and hardly could shee conceale her fortune: after ma-
ny difficult doubts and feares debated in her thoughts,
at last she imparted the whole to Tolomestra. The olde
Gentlewoman after many motherly rebukes, for the fault
committed, as the danger eminent, thought better yet to co-
ner this misadventure, then to publish that which would
displease many, and profite none: so leaving to reprehend
when care and comfort was more required, at that instant,
the Princesse was deliuered of a goodly man child. Thus
in the ninth moneth, after the returne of Florendos to-
wards Macedon, on monday at night about eight of the
clocke, the Princes had her houre of deliuerance: When
Tolomestra receyuing the Child, saw it so beautifull and
well fourmed, as it grieved her meruailously to think what
hard fortune it brought with the birth. For the honour of
the Mother could not bee defended, but by the price of the
infants life: wherefore hauing wrapped it in swadling clothes
which the Princesse had prepared of some value, shee
brought it to the sorrowfull Mother, saying. Trust me Ma-
dam, it much displeaseth mee that we must thus lose this
lonely child, whom I could haue esteemed happy, and the
mother likewise, if it might liue without displeasure: but he
sweet babe must suffer the punishment for the offence, where-
of he is not any way culpable.

As (said the Princesse) what shall wee doe? Would God
it were dead, or out of danger: then taking it in her armes, &
washing his face with floods of teares, after many sweete
kisses, thus said: Ah my little dainty, and must I needs leaue
thee? must the safety of thy life remayne in the mercy of a
strange woman, who not knowing thy Parents: may
deale with thee discourteously? Well, if thou die, thy mo-
ther will not be long after thee. And as shee thus mourned

ouer

ouer her infant, she perceived on his right cheek a little
marke in likeness of a Crosse: which made her call her bles-
sed to remembrance, and the words of the knight, that promi-
sed good fortune to the Child: which made her conceiue a co-
fortable hope, whereupon, about his necke she tyed a sayre
Crucifixe of golde. Now was the night very farre spent, and
Tolomestra feared they should be presented, wherefore (quoth
she) Hadst it is time to determine of some thing, leaue me
sing I pray you any longer on the Child, and let me go carry
it to Cardina to be borne forth of the Court. The weeping
Mother seeing shee counsell'd for the best, for her last adieu
sealed many sweet kisses on the face of the Infant, and so in
great griefe deliuered it to Tolomestra, who went and found
Cardina, to whom she gaue it, and she without any tardiance
mounted on her pearch, & not knowing what way she took,
rode on which way fortune guided her. Very doubtfull was
shee how to be discharged of her carriage, for she feared to let
any woman in the neighbour Villages haue it, least so the
Princesse might be discovered: for that it was commonly
blazed through the Empire, that the Princesse was impri-
soned for the loue of Florendos. At length the day began to ap-
peare, when shee perceived her selfe on a high Mountaine,
which was very thicke set with Palme and Olive trees:
then she alighted from her Horse, and made a little bed of
sweet Herbes, wherein she layde the Child, hoping some
body would passe by, that would take some compassion on it.
So committing the tender infant to the protection of the
powers above, she returned to the City in very good time.

THE HISTORIE

CHAP. X.

How Gerrard passing where Cardina had left the child
heard it cry, and so brought it home with him to
his wife to nourish it.



The Mountaine where Cardina had left the
Princesse yong son, was about a dayes iour-
ney from Constantinople, and was common-
ly called the Mount of Olives, where nere
at hand dwelt a wealthy Farmer, who ha-
ving the occupation of the ground grew be-
ry rich by gathering the fruits of the Palme, Olive, Date,
and other trees, and like a good husband hee daily followed
his affaires, being named Gerrard. His Wife the same
morning likewise was deliuered of a Male Child, which be-
ing dead bozne, caused this good man to walke forth into
his grounds in great heavinesse, for he had but one daugh-
ter aged thre yeares, and his Sonne would haue bene a
great comforte to him. In these melancholique pas-
sions, as he went nere the Tree, where Cardina had
left the seely Infant, hee heard it cry: whereat he greatly
maruailling, approached nere, and saw the swete Babe
pittifullly mourning, wanting the nurture that should com-
fort it.

He tooke it very tenderly in his armes, & seeing it so swete
and lovely, was perswaded that God had sent it him, in re-
compence of his olone that was dead bozne: and so ioyful-
ly went home with it to his Wife, who was named Mar-
cella: and to her he beginneth in this manner. Behold swete
Wife, in the place of your yong dead Sonne, God hath this
day

OF PALMERIN D'OLIVA.

day sent vs another, which I haue brought you home. Then
recounted he to her, how he found it on the Mountaine un-
der an Olive Tree: and therefore, (quoth hee) I pray the
nourish it in steade of thine owne, for a goodlier Child did
I neuer behold. The good Woman tooke it, and unwrapp-
ing the swadling clothes, saw they were rich and of good
value, but chiefly the Crucifixe which hung about his necke:
whereupon shee iudged it of some noble hou'e, and moued
with pittie thus sayde. I beleene (wot I not, that thy mo-
ther is in no small grieve for the losse of thee, but seeing thy
fortune hath brought thee to mee, I will foster thee as thou
were mine owne Sonne. And from thence forthward shee
led it so lovingly, as every one thought it to bee Gerrards
owne child: and bringing it to Baptisme, because he found
it so among the Palme Trees, hee caused the Child to be
named Palmerin, who grew on in yeares, both in comelie
feature and gentle behaviour. Not long after Marcella
brought her husband another son, whose name was Colme-
lio, and him did Palmerin love as his owne brother, and com-
panion, as hereafter you shall more at large vnderstand: but
here I will craue leaue to pause for a while, and following
the intent of this History, you shall vnderstand how Gria-
na gouerned her selfe, after shee had escaped this hard aduen-
ture.

So soone as Cardina was returned to the Court, Griana
sent for her, to know what shee had done with the infant:
to whom shee discoursed in what sort shee had left it: which
griened her as much as the weight of her offence.

Notwithstanding, considering how happily shee had esca-
ped shame and disgrace, from thence forthward shee dissem-
bled her passions better, and shewed her selfe so well re-
claymed, as the Emperesse much reioyced thereat, hoping now
to end the matter for her Nephew Tarisius: whereupon
one day finding her Daughter alone, shee tooke occasion to
conferre with her thus. Daughter, will you now accomplish
that, which your Father and I haue long bene importu-
nate

THE HISTORIE

nate for, I pray you hold off no longer, least you dye him into anger againe, which can no way returne you benefite. When Grianah heard her mother speake so gently, & knowing well, (that whether he would or no) it must come to that conclusion, she answered: Madame, you have thought good (will I, will I) that I should match with your nephew Tarisus, I must then by force doe that which willingly I cannot, nor while I live shall I conceive better opinion: if then (God other) hereafter our fortunes fall out so contrary, that any misadventure happen by this your willfulness, you need not complaine but of your selfe, being the inuener and procurer thereof. All these speeches of Grianah could not alter her opinion, but without regard of any danger, she went presently to the Emperour, desiring him (seeing Grianah was recovered) to end the marriage betweene her nephew and her: whereto he gave such suddaine consent, as before a seven night was finished, Tarisus and shee were married together, to her great grieve, as her countenance declared: for when every one were at their feasting, dancing, and other delights, the wofull Princeesse thought on the great injury she had done to Florendos, accounting her selfe the most unhappy on the earth, and to her selfe thus sorrowed. Ah my deare friend, what wilt thou say, when thou hearest these tidings, that I am become so false and disloyall to thee? What excuse may plead for mee to thee. By good reason may I for ever bee excluded from their company who have kept their faith inviolable to their friends, and continue in possession of their unchangeable affections: for never did woman commit such treason as this that I have done: and yet (my Lord) altogether against my will, as my wofull heart may give evident witness, which shall be thine while it remaines in this miserable body, which Tarisus must now have, though in justice it be thine. And in this sort continued her dolorous complaints till night approached when shee must yeeld that honoz to Tarisus, which with better will shee could have afforded Florendos.

After

OF PALMERIN D'OLIVA

After the feastes and triumphes of the marriage were finished, Grianah desirous to absent her selfe from her fathers Court, because the remembrance of Florendos passions was so grievous to her: desired Tarisus to make short his state, and set forward to Hungaria, whither the Emperour her Father caused her to be so honourably conveyed, as becoming the Daughter of so great a Prince. But as she was taking her leave among the Ladies, the Emperesse came to her sorrowfull weeping: which when Grianah beheld, she said. Madame, I am a bashful to see what heaviness you shew for the departure of your Daughter, to whom you alone have bene so cruell, as by your meanes she is banished for ever from you and your Countrey: why lament you then, seeing it is your pleasure to make her unfortunate while shee lives? I heartily desire the heavens to pardon you, and that the first newes, hereafter you shall heare of me, may be the true report of my death. This said, shee mounted on horsebacke, and without any semblance to take her leave of her Father: so being honourably accompanied, in short time shee arrived in Hungaria with Tarisus, whose love to her so vehemently increased, as he reputed himselfe the most fortunate Prince in Europe, having gained the paragon among all Ladies. Some after the aged King died, by which meanes Tarisus came to her Crowne. Grianah highlie esteeming such as shee brought with her from Constantinople, to wit, Lerina and Cardina, but especiallie Tolomestra, to whom shee very often imparted the whole secrets of her mind, leading so strict and constant a life, as all the Court did wonder at her. But the remorse of conscience, which daily touched her for the losse of her Sonne, caused her to spend day and night in devout orisons, that the heavens would forget her heinous offence.

CHAP.

THE HISTORIE

CHAP. XI.

How Florendos vnderstood by the Esquire hee sent to Constantinople, the marriage of Griana and Tarinius: whereat hee conceived such inward griefe, as he would haue died with extreame sorrow.



ALl this while continued Florendos on the frontiers betwene Constantinople and Macedon, til at length he heard y^e Griana was released of her imprisonment: whereof he was so glad, as now he thought to reale more surely the he did before: whereupon he dispatched Lyomenus one of his Esquires towards her, with a Letter of earnest and intire affection, wherein hee desired to know, if he might compass the means to come and see her, and hee doubted not to bring her so secretly on her journey, and with so good provision, as before they should bee againe discovered, they would bee safely arrived in Macedon. But this hope was soon frustrate, for Lyomenus, being come to Constantinople, found the marriage betwene Tarinius and Griana consummated: which hee toke so displeasingly, as without giuing y^e Letter, or speaking to the Princesse, he returned hastily againe to his Lord and Master. Who being aduertised of his coming, sent for him immediately by into his Chamber, at whose entrance, the Prince discerned the newes by his countenance: whereupon he demanded, if Griana were sicke, or how shee sailed? My Lord (qd. he) happie had shee bene, if she had dyed tenne yeares since: for I doubt (vntill you arme your selfe with

OF PALMERIN DOLIVA.

with wonderfull patience) that what is done will highly endaunger your person. Why (quoth Florendos) what is happened? Trust me my Lord (qd. he) the very worst that can be for you, Tarinius hath espoused her, and (despight of her) the Emperour caused it to be done. No sooner had Lyomenus spoken the word, but Florendos cast himselfe cruelly against the ground, saying. O my God take pittie on my soule, for my body must needs suffer misfortune. At which wordes hee fell in a sounde, when Lyomenus thinking him dead, ran hastily and called Frenato: who knowing well the cause of his passion, laboured by all means he might to perswade him, but notwithstanding all the intreaties he vsed, in foure and thientie houres hee could not get one word of him, whereupon hee sent for an auncient Hermit nere at hand, whom Florendos made verie much account of: who being come, and applying diuers seuerall good Herbes to his temples, whereof the elde Father knew well the vertue, at length Florendos recovered his senses, and opening his eyes, beheld the old Hermit, to whom with verie sadle voice he said. Ah good Father pray for me, for I feele mine ende nigh at hand. Not so my sonne, sayde the Hermit, what are you so vnprovided of diuine perswasion, as you will lose both bodie and soule for a matter of so meane consequence? Hast thou liued so long, and yet ignorant of the inconstancie of Women which is no other then thou beholdest in Griana, knowest thou not, that as the sayle of the shippe is subiect to all winde, so are their affections to continuall mutabilitie? and knowest thou not, that what they purpose to execute irreuocably, in one moment they are suddainly dissuaded from? My Sonne, beleave my counsell, and with as much pleasure learne to forget this folly, as with extreame paine thou diddest first imprint it in thy thoughts. Ah Father (quoth Florendos) neuer seke in this sort to perswade me, being assured if you knew how things haue past, you would not thus in teares disgrace my Ladie: for shee is mine, and Tarinius hath no right.

THE HISTORIE

right to her, to whom the Emperour hath married her perforce, els would she neuer haue broken her faith to me: and while I live father, none but she can be called the wife of Florendos, Sonne to the mightie King of Macedon. The wife old father seeing him in choller, and being loth like wife to offend the Prince, would no longer crosse him in speeches, but fearing to moue him too much, mildly thus spake. May be (my Sonne) he hath bene rare to you, and I would your consent in loue had answered your liking: but thus to dispaire, and endanger your owne life, trust me it is not well done, therefore I desire you to perswade your selfe, and by your constancie condemne her lightnesse, taking patientlie what hath happened. These and such like good words pleased the old Vermet, but Florendos would take no seruance, neither be remoued from this opinion, for five days while the old man stayed with him: neither would hee looke cheerefully as hee was wont, but continued euer more sad and melancholique, nor could the King his father cause him like of any wife, but onely Griana, for whom continually he neuer left mourning.

CHAP. XII.

How young Palmerin sleeping, had a strange vision, which prouoked him to know whole Son he was: and of the talke which passed betweene him and Dyosena, the daughter of Gerrard.



Palmerin being now come to the age of sixteen yeres, nourished in the Mountaine as the Child of Gerrard his supposed father, well beloued of him and Marcella his wife as their owne Son: grew in stature so tall, comely and well nurtured, as well might he

OF PALMERIN DOLIVE.

he be knowne of noble parentage. For albeit he companied with Gerrards Childzen, who used him after theyr rusticall capacities: yet hee desired more to passe the Mountaines with his long Bowe, to chase the Beares and Bozes thorough thicke and thinne, and to keepe Hawkes and dogges, rather then Sheepe and Cattell as the other Childzen did. In these sports he hadde such wonderfull delight, as oftentimes he would come home very late and sore wearied; but one time among the rest, he came home so ouerlaboured, as he was glad to lay him downe to rest, and he was no sooner fallen a sleepe, but he was solicited with a meruailous vision, the effect whereof thus followeth. He thought (as hee was pursuing a goodlie Harte thorow a Forrest) hee mette with the sayrest Ladie that euer eye beheld, who sat on the side of a goodlie fountaine, and called him vnto her saying.

We not abashed Palmerin, though I am come fro the furthest parts to find thee in this Country, for I am wel assured that ere manie dayes be past, thy boultie & promise shall make thee renowned through the world, for one of the hardiest knights that euer liued. Leane therefore this obscure & rusticall kind of life, & henceforth lift thy mind to high occasions which are offered thee: and hereof beleue me, as shee that loneth thee as her owne life, being deuoted onely thine at all times as nature may witnes who hath marked me with thy like Character. Then shewing her arme, she said. Behold in this hand, and on this side of my heart, one like & selfsame make, as thou broughtest on thy face from thy Mothers womb. To which words Palmerin would haue answered, but the ladie vanished away so sodainly, as he could not perceive what was become of her. Whereupon raising himselfe, and maruailling from whence this occasion shuld proceed, he admired the beautie of the Lady he saw in his sleepe, which was so liuelle in his remembrance, as he iudged her present before his eyes. But perswading himselfe that such apparitions happened by idle thoughts, or by some vapour of no effect:

THE HISTORIE

test: made no account thereof, whereupon, the next night following, the same Lady that appeared to him in the Forest, presented her selfe to him againe, holding in her hands a sumptuous Crowne of Gold, and thus spake. *See here (my Lord) the honour which I hold, being given me onely for the loue of you.*

In this sort continued this vision for fouretene or fiftene days following, till at length the Lady shewed her selfe very angrie, saying. *I am ashamed Palmerin, that you deserue so long to seeke me out: do you thinke the promises I haue made you are sciuillous? No, no, the time and trauaile thou takest (if thou giuest credit to my wordes) shal make thee know that thou art the Son of a King, and not of the Countrey swaine that hath lostered thee. From henceforth therefore expect me no more in this Mountaine, but if my beautie haue found place in thy heart, seeke then to conquer me, that thou maist be the Lord and possessor of mee.* Thus departed the Ladie, leauing a desire (more then accustomed) in the heart of Palmerin, who till that time made little reckoning of so high matters, for the past all life he led with Gerrard and his familie, seemed the most happie to him in all the world, not hauing seen any person of greater calling then he. But now new affections so eleuated his mind, as he intended to go seeke her, whom in sleepe he had beheld so often: For (quoth he) if she assure mee to discend of a royall linage, I may well presume she knowes me better then my father Gerrard, else would she not so often induceme to follow my fortune, and the good that is promised for mee: well might I be accounted a foole, if I would not aduenture on so especiall an occasion, therefore happen what will, I meane to search thorow the whole world till I haue found her, and none but she shall euer be my Mistresse. But how can it be that I am discended from so high a place seeing my father is such a simple Countryman? hath my Mother becue forgetfull of her reputation, that some Prince or great Lord hath to become my father? Well, I will know of her (if I can) before

OF PALMERIN D'OLIVA.

before I depart, and if she will not tell me, I will search for her that shall assure me. Thus was Palmerin confounded with remembrance of his visions, as from that time he became meruailous pensie and solitarie: then bethought he, how he might know of his Mother Marcella the end of his desire, whereof Dyosena (who loued him dearly) partly aduertised him.

Now haue heard heereof afore, how when Gerrard found Palmerin among the Olive Trees, he had a Daughter three yeeres olde, named Dyosena, indifferent fayre, who as shee increased in yeares, became so amorous of her supposed brother, that hardly she could dissemble her affection: notwithstanding, shame and regard locked uppe her lippes, that she durst not speake what she gladlie would, but seeing Palmerin in like sadnesse as he was, she imagined that one likenesse had broken them both, wherefore casting many doubts as she lay in her bed, in the same Chamber her Parentes did, she heard them enter into this discourse. Haue you not seene Palmerin (quoth hee) how heauy and sadde hee hath bene a long time? Hea trulie haue I (qu. shee) it may be that some haue told him he is not your Sonne: so falling out of one matter into another, Dyosena heard them report the manner how they found him, which she desirous to let Palmerin vnderstand, arose early the next morning, and coming to Palmerin, thus conferred with him. Brother, if you know so much as I do, per aduenture you would be not a little abashed.

Why god sister (quoth he) I pray you let me vnderstand the matter. In which (quoth she) I neuer thought til this time, that you had bin mine own natural Brother, but by chaunce hearing some talk betweene my father and another this last night, I am no other then your friend, and she y lones you dearelie: which I haue euermore hitherto feared to let you know, doubting y meeres of our collanguinitie, which I now perceiues cannot hinder our marriage, if you will request mee of my father, who I am sure will not deile you. And so she

rehearsed

THE HISTORIE

He rehearsed the manner of his finding, which so well liked Palmerin, as he gave the more credit to the visions he hadde seen, neuertheless, he thus dallied with Dyofena. It may be suffer, you misunderstood our Parents, my selfe will demand the truth of our mother, if she assure me as you haue done, then will I talke with them concerning our marriage. So shall you doe well (sayd Dyofena) to be thow you be assured, yet made you not report me to haue informed you, least thereby you bring me into my Parents displeasure. Palmerin thus leauing Dyofena, chanced to find his mother Marcella alone, to whom he said. Mother, I beseech you grant me one request that I shall demand of you. What will I my Sonne (quoth she) if it be in my power to doe. Understand then good mother (quoth he) that I haue oftentimes dreamed how I am your son, so that I know not what to say, vntill you please to assure me better. When Marcella heard these words, she was stricken in a studie: but Palmerin was still so importunate, as at last she thus answered. In good faith (sayd she) I neuer knew thine owne natural parents, yet haue I loved thee as if thou were mine owne Sonne: and so what wordes Dyofena had before reported, Marcella confirmed, taking him with her into her chamber, where she shewed him the coslie swadling clothes that he was found in, & the Crucifixe likewise that hung about his necke, which he intreated her to bestow on him, to the end (quoth he) that for your sake I may keepe it while I liue. Marcella would not deny his request, but put it about his necke her selfe.

From which time forward, Palmerin shewed himselfe of more cheerefull disposition, deuising how he might compass the meane to go seeke his Fortune, to whereto his sundry apparitions had so often incited him. And as none can shunne what is ordeyned him by diuine prouidence, not many dayes after, as he was walking alone vpon the mountaine he heard a voice cry verie pittifullie for helpe and succour: wherevpon Palmerin ranne that way which he hearde the

OF PALMERIN DOLIVA.

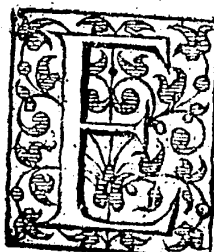
the voyce, where he beheld a Lion greedily deuouring a Doyle. Palmerin having no weapon to defend himselfe withall but a staffe, very hardly set vpon the beaust, giuing him such a stroke betwixt the eyes, as he fell dolone dead to the ground, then comming to him, hee heard complaine, said: I haue my friend in some part reuenged thy wrong. Alas, sir (quoth he) and had you not bene, my life had perished, for as I travelled on my toynie, this Lyon furiously set vpon me to deuoure me: which the rest of my company perceiving, tooke themselves to flight, leauing me as you found me. The best is, (said Palmerin) that you haue escaped with life, and if you please to goe with me, not farre hence where I haue bene nourished, you shall haue the best entertainment that I can make you. My friend (quoth the stranger) you haue already done so much for me, as if you will goe with mee into the Country where I dwell, I haue wherewithall to rewarde your travell richly. Is it farre hence Sir (sayd Palmerin) In the City of Hermida (quoth hee) in the Realme of Macedon I dwell, from whence I departed a moneth since with my merchantize, which I haue left at Constantinople: from whence returning homeward, this unlucked for mischance befell mee, which had made an end of mee without your resistance. As they were thus conferring together, one of the strangers servants came to looke him, and finding him so happily escaped, was not a little ioyfull, reporting that hee had left his companions not far off. Returne then (said the stranger) and will them to come to me to the next villiage, where I mean to haue my wounds dressed, which the servant perfozmed immediately, & all this while stood Palmerin in debating with himselfe, if he should thus leaue his Father Gerrard or not: at length, (after many opinions) fearing if hee returned home againe not to finde the like opportunity, concluded to depart with the stranger. So was hee set on a very good palfrey, and setting forward to Macedon, that night they were entertained in a very good lodging, where the stran-

THE HISTORIE

get caused his wounds to be searched, reporting to every one how by the ayde of Palmerin his life was preserved, for which cause hee accounted of him as his lone Sonne. All this while Gerrard and his wife little thought of this mishap, but expected Palmerins returne till darke night, and seeing he came not as he was wont, both hee and his wife the next day searched the mountaines; but they could not finde him, which made Gerrard to question in himself, what euill hee had offered him, that should make him thus depart. Now durst not his wife Marcella tell him, the talke betwene her and Palmerin, but accompanied her husband in sorrow for their losse: especially Dyosera and her brother Colmelio were most sorry, Diosena for losse (as she thought) of her husband, and Colmelio for the company of his supposed Brother, whose absence went so neere his heart, as hee intended neuer to giue ouer search till hee had found him.

CHAP. XIII.

How Palmerin went with this Merchant named Este-
bon to the City of Hermida, who afterward gaue
him Horse and Armour to be made Knight.



Estebon the Merchant thus conducting Palmerin on his way, at length arrived in the City of Hermida, where hee was lovingly welcomed home by his Wife, both young and beautifull as any in that Country, to whome hee reported his dangerous assault by the Lion, and without Palmerins helpe he had bin deuoured: but

OF PALMERIN DOLIVA.

but (quoth he) good fortune sent him at the very instant that hee saw him, for which I shal be beholding to him while I haue a day to liue, therefore good Wife entertaine him in the best sort you can deuise, for hee hath well deserved it. This speech had the Merchant with his sayre wife, who embracing Palmerin, sayde: that nature had omitted nothing in her workmanship, making him so nimble, and full of hardinesse. Palmerin seeing himselfe so fauoured of so beautifull a Woman, hauing before spent his time among shepherdes, swineherds, and loutish swaines of the Country, with modesty beganne to blush, and was so well stored with civility to make her this answer. I desire Mistrresse that my behauiour may bee such, as may continue my Masters good liking and yours towards me. So from that time he followed Marchandize, and profited so well in the course of traffique: as Estebon committed all his assayes to Palmerins trust, who rather gaue his mind to martiall exercises, and followed knightly dispositions so much, as very nature declared the noblenesse of his mind, for hee delighted to manage great horses, to fight at all manner of weapons, to see dangerous Combates, to frequent the assembly of Knights, to talke of armes and honourable exploits, and in briefe, to exercise all the vaneries of a noble Courtier.

Whereat Estebon marvelled so much, as falling in talk with him, he sayd. He thinks it is strange Palmerin, that thou being the sonne of a bridge, and nourished on the Mountaine of Oliues (as thy selfe hath often tolde me) shouldst lead the life of a Merchant, frequenting the company of hardy knights, as though thou couldest take Lance and Shield to enter the combate. For (said Palmerin) I know not if my Father bee such as I haue told you, but I wot wel my heart so serues me, as I can thinke of nothing but actions of honour and knighthood. The Merchant was contented to heare Palmerin in these tearmes, because hee perceived that his Wife fauoured him greatly, whereat hee became a little tealous, and gladly would remoue the occasi-

THE HISTORIE

an, wherefore he said. Seeing it is so Palmerin, that thou hast no mind to follow mine affairs, I am well content thou shalt exercise chivalrie, being the thing thou naturally affectest, and whereby thou mayest attain credit and account. For mine owne part, because I will not hinder so good a wardnesse, thou shalt haue of mee money, horse and armour, that thou mayest goe to Macedon to the king, where, if thou request it of the Prince Florendos his Sonne, hee will not refuse to giue thee thy order. Palmerin returned him very hearty thanks, and hauing promised all things expedient for his journey, tooke his leave of the Merchant Ettebon and his Wife, hoping to spend well in his adventures enterpryse.

CHAP. XIII.

How Palmerin arriued at the Court of Macedon, hoping to receyue the order of Knighthood, at the hand of the Prince Florendos, sonne to the aged King Primalion, by the fauor of the Lady Arismena



With spede made Palmerin being departed from the Merchant, as on the fourth day following, riding by a river side, hee found a Dwarfie sitting heavily weeping, of whom hee demanded the cause of his mourning. *Elas sir* (said the Dwarfie) as I was riding by the commandement of my master, to a Lady whom hee cruelly loveth, a Knight euen now tooke my horse from mee, and very villanously offered mee outrage, which yet dooth no so much grieve mee, (as being thus on foote,) I know

O F PALMERIN D'OLIVA.

know not how to get over the river. Mount vpon behinde mee (said Palmerin) and at the first Tollne we came to, I will psonde thee of another Horse. Then mounted the Dwarfie vpon behinde him, and hauing past the river, desired to know of Palmerin whether hee traualled: for (quoth hee) I neuer saw man whom I had greater desire to serue then you. Dwarfie (sayde Palmerin) I now journey toward the court of Macedon to the King, where I hope to finde the Prince Florendos, who is accounted one of the worthiest Knights in the world, and by his hand I desire to be knighted, if I may. And after you haue receined your order (said the Dwarfie) I hope you will not be so vnwise to hazard the adventure wherein so many haue failed and lost their liues. What adventure is that quoth Palmerin? To go to the Mountaine Artiseria (saide the Dwarfie) in hope to kill the serpent, which hath beene the death of so many valiant knights. And what occasion sayd Palmerin, moued them to fight with the Serpent? That I wil tell you answered the Dwarfie. The King Primaleon father to Prince Florendos whom you seeke, thre yeares since fell into a very strange disease, for which no remedie can yet be found, notwithstanding, the diligent endeouers of the Quene and Lady Arismena her Daughter, one of the fairest and most vertuous princeses that euer was heard of, who seeing her Father in such dangerous estate, hath often assembled the best physicians in the whole world, who haue practised all possible meanes to recover his health: yet hitherto all hath bene to no purpose. Whereupon she sent to an ancient Knight, the most skilfullest in the art of Sigromancie this day liuing, who returned this answer: that hee should neuer be healed, except hee be first washed with the water of a Fountaine, which standeth on the top of the Mountaine Artiseria, whither foure times a yeare cometh thre sisters, Magicians of the Isle Carderia, to gather vertuous Herbes which there they wash, and whereof they frame all their enchauntments. This place is be-

THE HISTORIE

sended by the Monster, to heresof I tolde you, that no man as yet durst approach it. Which newes when the Princesse Arismena vnderstood, hoping by strength of men to recover the water and vanquish the beast, leaued a great number of Souldiers well appointed, who were no sooner entred the Mountaine, but the Serpent came furiously out of his Denne, throwing fire and smoke out of his mouth, and beating his wings together with such terror, as the very hardiest durst passe no further, but were all glad to take themselves to flight, yet could they not depart with such expedition, but the greater part of them paid their liues for their bold attempt: the Mountaine was so stord with Lions, Wolves, Witches, Harts, Wygers, Dunces, and other wilde rauenous Beasts that deuoured them.

Now at length many Knights had tryed themselves in this aduenture, thinking by their prowess to perforce more then the other: but all the worse, for not one of them returned backe aliue. And why goes not the Prince Florendos himselfe said Palmerin, that is esteemed the most valiant knight thorough al Greece? Alas sir, sayd the Dwarf, so much other matter hath so drownded his mind in melancholie, as he liues like one that despiseth himself. While the Dwarf continued his discourse, the desire of honour and renowne did so liuely touch the spirite of Palmerin, as he sayd to himselfe. It may be that Arismena was the Lady which in my sleeping thoughtes visited mee so often, if the Destinies haue bowed her mind, why should I feare the Serpent, or all the other beasts wherewith this Dwarf dooth so terrifie mee? Haue not I slaine a Lyon already with a staffe? Wch, the more danger is in the place, the more hono? depends vpon the victo?y. If I leaue my life there, I am not the first: If I returne with conquest, I shall be the first any yet in fortune: therefore fall out as it will, no paine shall dismay mee from giuing the aduenture, wherupon tis sayd to the Dwarf. But tell mee my friend, hee that brings the water from the mountaine to the King, what aduantage

OF PALMERIN DOLIVA.

age shall he deserue. My Lord (quoth hee) it hath bene many times published, that his reward shall bee the best City in all this Realme. He then Dwarf sayde Palmerin, one man more will hazard his life in this enterprise, albeit I should receiue but thanks for my trauell, wilt thou goe with mee? That will I (answered the Dwarf) if you please, and neuer will I forsake you while breath is in my body. Thus let they on till they came to the great City of Macedon; at what time Florendos was gone to the Temple in such beautie, as he seemed a man of another world, being accompanied with many Knights, and his fayre sister the Lady Arismena, to whome Palmerin boldly addressed himselfe: and as though hee had bene a Courtier all his life time, with seemly modesty he set his knee to the ground before her, and thus began. Madame, I humbly beseech you to vouchsafe mee one request, which well you may not deny mee, in that I am a Stranger, as also in respect of the desire I haue to doe you seruice. And trust mee Sir (quoth hee) you shall not bee refused, what is it you would haue mee to doe for you? That at your request (sayd Palmerin) the Prince Florendos your brother, will giue mee my Knighthood. Arismena seeing Palmerin so amiable, and well disposed of body, marvelled of whence hee was, and sayd. In good sooth Sir, such matter nothing appertayneth vnto me, & (as I iudge) such a motion should procede from your selfe: yet taking him by the hand, shee presented him to her brother, saying. I pray you my Lord grant to this young Gentleman as yet not knighted, the thing he hath desired mee to demand. Florendos hauing not as yet beheld him, looked vpon him, when an exceeding passion, presenting vnto Princesse Griana to his thoughts suddainely touched him, and being rapt into more conceits of her then he had bene accustomed, demanded of Palmerin if hee would bee made knight. With right good wil my Lord, quoth he, if it shall like you to doe me so much hono?, for above all things else it is my onelie desire. My friend,

saie Florendos, it is necessarie I should first know, whether you be noble borne or no. My Lord, quoth Palmerin, as yet I neuer knew my Father or Mother, nor any of my kindred: notwithstanding, mine owne heart makes mee iudge no lesse of my selfe, and meze gladlie would I die, then do any thing that were not vertuous, and well worthy the name of a Gentleman. And trust me, said Florendos, I am of the same opinion: this night therefore you must observe the religious watch as is accustomed, and to morrow will I giue you your order, and put the spurre on your heels my selfe. Palmerin on his knee humbly kissed the Princes hand, and continuing in talke together, Florendos took a great delight in beholding him, so that he demanded his name and Countrey. My Lord, quoth he, they which found me amongst the Waline Trees, on the Mountain of Olives, not farre from Constantinople, haue giuen me the name of Palmerin. By mine honour said Florendos, I ought wel to know the Citie whereof you speake, as the place wherein my dearest affections take their first life, and not long since, are bequeathed to death, awaiting now but the houre to be discharged of the burden.

Thus hauing in his company his unknowne Sonne, begotten by him on the Princesse Griana, knew little that his loue had sorted to such effect: neuerthelesse, nature prouoked him to like so well of Palmerin, as none in the Court contented him more then he. And longer would they haue continued their talke, but that saye Arismena interrupted them, asking Palmerin if he would discharge her of the request he demanded. What do I Madame (quoth he) and in requitall thereof, dedicate the whole circuit of my life to your gracious service: and to begin my deuoir on your behalf, so soone as I haue receiued my knighthode, I will take my iourney towards the Serpent, in hope to bring the water that must recover the king your Fathers health. O good Sir, quoth she, God forbid that you should fall in such danger by my meanes. I know well answered Palmerin,

merin that I can die but once, and if it be now then am I dispatched, and if I escape, I shall do that whereof many other haue failed, and this is my resolution saie Madame. Beloue me, said Florendos, we thinke you are as yet too yong, to finish an action wherein consists a great danger, I pray you therefore reserue it vnto such, as haue had more experience in Armes then as yet you haue. My Lord, saide Palmerin, in other matters I shall obey when you commaund, but this I must desire you not to dissuade me from. Well then (quoth Florendos) seeing you will needs haue it so, I am content, you shall in the means while keepe me company: as for sword and armour, trouble not your selfe to provide any, because my selfe will furnish you sufficiently.

Thus all day Florendos accompanied Palmerin, demanding of him what things he had seene in Constantinople, and falling from one discourse to another, he asked him what Esquire he had to attend on him. When he shewed his dwarfe named Urbanillo, such a deformed and euil fauoured fellow, as euery one that saw him laughed heartily: whereupon Palmerin said to Florendos. By my faith my Lord, as vnlike as he is, I thinke so well of him, as I should be displeased if he were any way iniured. Assure your selfe, said Florendos, that he will stand you in great steade when you haue no need of him, and loke that you leaue nothing behind you, that you neede to fight against the Serpent, and trust it in his discretion to bring after you. When Urbanillo perceiued euery one left with him, hee was halfe angry, and in some choler thus said to the Prince. I can no way my Lord, better my shape or proportion, but if I live, this little deformed body of mine shall giue you to vnderstand that I beare so good a minde, that where my master leaues his life, I meane to finish mine, and though in meane while I can do him no other service, hee shall be assured of my truthe and loyalty. Be not offended, (Dwarfe my good friend) said Florendos, for I thinke well of thee and of thy behaviour. And so because the Tables were covered for Supper,

THE HISTORIE

per, they brake off talke, Palmerin preparing himself to his watchfull deuote in the Chappell.

CHAP. XV.

How Florendos gaue to Palmerin the Armour and Sword of Gamezio, whom he slew before Constantinople, and afterward Knighted him: and how a Damosell came to the Court, who presented him with a Helmet and a rich Shield.



The time being come, that Palmerin should performe his deuout watch in the Chappel, before he receiued his knighthood, according to the auncient custome: Florendos gaue commaundement, that the Armour of Gamezio should be brought him, to wit: the Emperour had giuen him, after his conquest of the Soldane of Babilons army on the Sea, as you haue heard before, and these hee shewd to Palmerin, saying. My friend, this armour sometimes belonged to the best knight of his time, whome (neverthelesse) I conquered, being then moze pleasant, ioyfull, and at better content, then I shall be while I haue a day to liue. And because I haue some speciall opinion of your prowess, and that these ornaments of defence you will better imploy, then any other, on whome I shall bestow them: I pray you henceforth to weare them for my sake.

My Lord, sayde Palmerin, my desire is, that my seruice towards your honour, may bee witnessed in my good employment of this gentle gift. Then Frenato and blucers of ther

OF PALMERIN DOLIVA

ther knights did helpe to arme him, and afterward accompanied him to the Chappell, where all that night hee spent in solemne orisons, that God would endue him w strength to vanquish the Serpent, that so the King might again receive his strength:

At the breake of day, as Florendos went to the chappell to giue him his order, there entred among them on the suddaine a comely Damosell, bearing a Helmet & a Shielde of azier, the goodliest and most beautifull that euer was sene, vpon his Shield being portrayed a Ladies arme, hauing her hands fast closed together: the Damosell coming before the Prince Florendos, began thus. I pray you my Lord to pause a while, till I haue conferred a little with Palmerin. Florendos was greatly amazed at this accident, in that hee had neuer seene the Damosell before: notwithstanding he returned this answer. Saye Damosell, and my friend, god leaue haue you to say what you please. The coming to Palmerin, and falling on her knees before him, shee sayde. Sir Palmerin, a knight that hath authority to commaund me, and whom as yet you doe not know, hath sent you by mee this Helmet and Shield, wherein you shall find the very secrets of your heart. And if you desire to know whence this honour proceedeth, it cometh from him who hath proued the effect thereof, and that knowes moze of your nearest affayres then you doe your selfe, albeit as yet hee hath neuer sene you. Damosell, sayd Palmerin, where may I finde the learned man that hath thus honoured mee, whom I may remunerate with my chiefest indures hereafter? You cannot as yet know him, saide the Damosell. I pray you saye Virgin, quoth Palmerin, that you will answer on my behalfe, how in any place I shall come heereafter, I remaine ready to doe what likes him to commaund mee. It sufficeth (quoth she) loke that hereafter you remember your promise: Then, coming to the Prince Florendos, shee sayd. My Lord, the same Man from whom I haue saluted Palmerin, gaue mee in charge to say, that you should

THE HISTORIE

should not feare or doubt to dubbe him knight: but to perswade your selfe, that both by father and mother hee is so noble as hee doth well deserue it, and him hereafter you will loue beyond all other, for by him you shall enjoy the thing you most esteeme and desire. Thus having no longer licence to stay with you, I humble desire you to excuse my departure. Wrote maide, saide Florendos, may your words sort to so good ende, as you haue promised. So departed the Damosell, leaving Palmerin on his knees before the Prince, who taking the sword that sometimes belonged to Gamezio, knighted him saying: And mayst thou prove as famous and fortunate, as my hope perswades mee thou wilt. Then was hee honourably conveyed to the Pallace, where the faire Arismena barmed him and covered him with a rich mantle of white Watten, imbodered all over with sumptuous flowers of gold: beside, no one in the troupe but highly revered him, for the waythe report the Damosell made of him. And albeit the Princeesse Arismena dissuaded him so well as she could, that he should not endanger himselfe against the Serpent, because by him her Brother should overcome his melancholy, and fearing his losse without hope of recoverie: yet needes would he be gone the same day, but that her importunate intreatie perswaded him to stay eight dayes longer. Palmerin being some after alone by himselfe, hee remembered the words of the Damosell, who promised him to finde the secrets of his heart in his shield: whereupon he well advised himselfe, and saw that the hand portrayed in his shield, had the same marke which the Lady hadde, that appeared to him in his sleepe, whereat not a little marvailling, he sayd within himselfe: It must needes bee without all doubt, that hee which sent me this present, knoweth full well the scope of my fortune, for I am well assured that the Lady which spake to mee in my sleepe, when I abode in the house of my Father Gerrard, shewed me her hand with the selfe same marke I see here pictured: by which I may perswade my selfe, that shee will

me

OF PALMERIN D'OLIVA.

not cease to follow and finde me out, untill such time as I might speake with her. Whereupon hee found himselfe so sudda nly inveigled with her love, as hee thus complained. Ah Palmerin, well maist thou see that long thou canst not resist this impression, but whence should this honour proceede? to love her thou never sawest, nor knowest whete is her abiding: If it fall out that thou diest in the pursuite, these passions shall soon have a final end, and I gain y greatt felicitie that I can desire. By this time had he spent the eight daies, which he promised Arismena for Florendos company, when as well to begin the search of her hee loved so well: as to end the adventure he intended of the Serpent, he prepared to depart, providing himselfe a great huge Space of Iron, which did him good service, as you shall reade hereafter.

CHAP. XVI.

How Palmerin fought with the horrible Serpent of the mountain Artæferia, and slew him, bringing the glasse filled with the water of the fountaine, whereby King Primaleon of Macedon recovered his health.



Eight daies had Palmerin stayed with Florendos, and in company of the faire Princeesse Arismena, who fearing that hee would never returne from the Mountaine Artæferia, was very pensive and sad: and oftentimes she intreated him, not to hazard himselfe against those cruel, venomous and supernaturall Monsters, but rather to wisnesse his

THE HISTORIE

his valour against Knights of account like himselfe, but all her speeches profited not, for he was resolved to depart. I shall yet bestre you, said the Princesse, that for my sake you will take with you three Esquires which I will giue you, which may leade you succour if any inconuenience should befall you. When shee called the Esquires, and presented them vnto him, with the glasse that should bring the water in from the fountaine, if fortune should with him to finish the aduenture. Palmerin mounting on horsebacke, and Florendos accompanying him halfe a dayes iourney on the way, left him on his iourney towards the Mountaine Artiferia, where hee arrived on the last day of Aprill. When he commanded the Esquires and his Dwarf Urbanillo, to expect his returne at the fote of the Mountaine, for he would suffer none of them to go vpp with him: so ascended he the Hill by a little tracte fote path, with his yron Pace on his necke, and the Glasse for the water fastened to his girdle. Hauling thus trauailed vp till about midday he found the passage so thicke set with trees and brakes, as he was constrained to alight from his Horse, to whom hee vnbided and left there feeding: and much further had hee not gone, but the night ouertooke him, yet did the Moone shine bright and cleare, which made him still trauaille onward, till he beheld the Rocks where the water was, and the Serpents denne, wher was come somewhat lower to recreate himselfe among the greene heabes, where hee had closely couched himselfe. But when he heard Palmerin coming he beganne to swell, and with his taile together beery strangely: all which could not dismay this aduenturous Knight, but commending himselfe to God, sette down his Glasse, and with his Pace marched stoutly against his enimie, saying, Why Palmerin? dost thou so often request of Florendos and the Princesse his sister, to try thy strength against this Diuell, and now thou art come in sight of him, wilt thou faint? Doth it not become the better to die with honour, then to liue with shame? let the one encourage

OF PALMERIN DOLIVA

rage thee to followe thy enterprise, and the other kill thee when thou offerest to retire. And with these words he aduanced him to the Serpent, and the Serpent fiercely began to assaile him, and with his taile hee smote him downe, but that hee nimble prevented the stroke, deliuering the Serpent so force a blow on the head with his Pace, as made him reele and stagger, and crie so terribly, as the whole Mountaine resounded with a maruailous Echo, and to reuenge himselfe, with his tallants hee got hold on Palmerins Armour, which hee rent violently in two or three places, wounding his body very dangerously. When Palmerin perceived in what hard plight he was, he took heart afresh, and watching his aduantage, strooke the Serpent with his Pace so strongly on the necke, as hee fell to the ground in a manner dead, and Palmerin plyed him with so many strokes one after another, as hee left him not while any life was in him. After this happy victory, for which devoutly he praised God, binding vpp his woundes as well as hee could, with extreame wearinesse he layd him downe & slept: when he seemed to see the three sisters wherof we haue spoken before, who were the Daughters of a Knight, Lord of the Isle Carderia, to whom none might bee compared for knowledge in the Magickall science, and so well hee had instructed his Daughters, as after his death they alone excelled in this arte, so that the men of the Countrey commonly called them the Goddesses of destiny, because they could deuine before what should follow after. And if any one did happen to iniury them, they would reuenge themselves by their incantments, so that they were greatly feared and held in reuerence. They vied diuers times this Mountaine Artiferia, as well together heabes for they needed sary use, as also for the Water of the fountaine, for the defence wherof they had left this Serpent, who was in time growen so huge and monstrous, as hee rather seemed a Diuell then a naturall Beast. Notwithstanding how hideous soeuer hee was, Palmerin as you haue heard

heard, overcame and slew him, finding the three Sisters in the manner as I have told you: who were not greatly discontented with him, but esteemed so well of him, as in his shape the eldest of them thus spake to him. Believe me Palmerin, thy beginning is so honourable, as great pittie it were to let thee die here, chiefly for the want that all Greece shall have of thee in time to come, the whole Empire whereof is predestinated thine: and therefore will I heale the woundes thou hast at this time received. I will then do some what more for him, said the second Sister, I will enchaunt him so well for his avails, as hereafter no conjuration or witchcraft shall have any power to hurt him. And the third Sister, for my part, I will give him such fortune, as the first time he shall see his lady Polinarda, (who so many times saluted him in his Dreames) he shall love him so intirely, as no dolor or torment shall make her forget while she liues, the happines she shall receive by his occasions. When the eldest Sister took a Golden Cup, and filled it with the water of the fontaine and wynding the iuyce of certayne hearbes into it, washed therewith Palmerins woundes, so that they were immediately healed.

Now felt he very well all they did, but his flumber took away the libertie of his speech, untill such time as they were departed, but first the eldest of them thus spake. Since this Knight hath had so good a beginning, and that his strength hath deprived our guard of our fontaine, I pray you let us suffer him to have a glasse of our water, that by his meanes the King of Macedon may be healed, which a number of other knights haue failed of heretofore. Whereto they all consented, and so it came to passe: then gathering their hearbes as they were wont, and washing them, they took the way to the Isle Cerdia.

CHAP.

CHAP. XVII.

How Palmerin descended from the Mountaine, with his glasse, full of the water of the enchanted Fontaine, and how ioyfull Vrbaniillo and the other Esquires were, seeing their Master returne with so good fortune.



When these three Sisters were departed, Palmerin awaked and arose, not a little marrelling at that hee had heard & seen, but most of all when he felt his woundes healed, and saw his glasse full of the water he came for: so rendering thanks to heauen for his good successe, hee went by higher on the mountaine, thinking to see

the Fountain, but he could not, wherfore without any longer stay hee descended downe again, thus saying to himselfe. How happy may I count my selfe, to finde so good Fortune in this desolate mountaine: for now I know her name that is destined to be mine, henceforth shall she not conceale herselfe from me, may I finde the place where she abideth, and thus I know by him that made mee, that I will not cease to seeke her through the world, til I heare some tidings of her: and were it not for the promise I have made the Princesse Arismena, to bring her this water to recover the King her Father, this day would I begin this religious enterprise, in hope (if the Ladies spake truth that appeared to me in my sleepe) hereafter to bee one of the happiest Knights in the world. So walked he on till he came to where he left his horse whereon he mounted, and came to Vrbaniillo and his other Esquires, who hauing heard the try of the Serpent, & hee

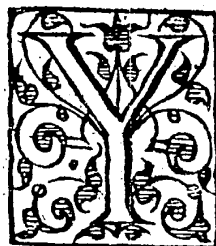
Palmerin

THE HISTORIE

Palmerin gave him his first stroke, perswaded themselves that their Master was slain: but when they saw him coming, Urbanillo above all the rest was most joyful, and ran apace to meet him, desiring to know how he had sped. Every well I thank God, said Palmerin, who gave me strength to kill the monster, and to bring sufficient of the Water, I hope, to win the King Primaleon his health. Then haue I the thing, I most desire, said Urbanillo, albeit I greatly feares, that you had accompanied all the other knights to death, that aduentured before you, and could not speede so well. So mounted they all on horsebacke, and made so good iourneyes as they arrived at Macedon, whercof Florendos and say: Arimena were not a little ioyfull, especially when they were assured, that Palmerin had brought with him the Kings health, by meanes whercof it is not to be demanded, if he were highly honoured and receyued at the Court.

CHAP. XVII.

How foure Knights would haue taken the glasse of fall-water from Urbanillo, before Palmerin arrived at Macedon, and of the Combate betweene them.



You must here vnderstand that the same day Palmerin, in company of his Esquiers departed from the mountaine, hee sent Urbanillo the Dwarfie before, towards Macedon with the glasse of water: when so fortun'd that foure knights mette with him, one of them saluting him in these hard termes. Despoyme villaine, giue me that glasse, or I shall take thy head from thy shoulders. Palmerin, who

OF PALMERIN D'OLIVA.

came not farre behind, seeing the knights offer injury to his Dwarfie, gaue spurs to his horse, and thus answered: How now Gentlemen? are you not ashamed in my presence to abuse my servant? trust me, I neyther can nor will so put it ag: and so couching his Lance, he encountred one of them so roughly, as hee fell from his horse deare to the ground. When the other thre saw their companion thus soiled, they altogether set vpon Palmerin: but their fortune fell out so ill, as two of them were soone vanquished, and the third took himself to flight, very hardly escaping. Palmerin made no account of following him, but leauing them rode on his way, his Dwarfie thus coming to him: Believe mee my Lord (quoth he) he is to be accounted neuer foolishly hardy, that at the weapons point seeks to offend you: I dare boldly assure my wordes, by euidence of the fortune of these foure knights.

In that, said Palmerin thou maist be deceyued, but God is alwayes friend to iustice and equity, and enemy to such as go against them. But because you shall know the occasion why these foure knights would haue taken the glasse from Urbanillo, you must note that they were all sonnes to a great Lord of a Castle, which was a dayes iourney off the Mountaine Artizaria, who hauing intelligence by Shepheards and other peasants, what good fortune had befallen Palmerin to kill the Serpent, and bring away the fall-water, repined greatly thereat: for the Lord did highly malice the King of Macedon, because he had enforced him to surrender a Countie, which he against all right held from one of his Sisters, and for this cause, knowing that by the vertue of that water the King should recover his health, hee sent his foure sonnes to take it from Palmerin, whose success in their attempt fell out as you haue heard. Now Palmerin by this time is come to Macedon to the King, whom with great reverence he saluted on his knee, when the King embracing him so well as he could, sayd. Trust me my good Friend, next to God I must esteem you dearest, for that

THE HISTORIE

that as hee by his Godhead hath made me breath this age,
though weake and sickly: by diuine prouidence hee hath
sent you to restore my bodily health, from hencefoze
theresore I shall intreate you to commaund mee and mine
at your pleasure. My gracious Lord, sayde Palmerin, the
heauens giue me successe to doe you seruice, for I know no
Prince liuing this day, for whom I would moze gladly ad-
uenture my life. I thank you good Sir, quoth the King, but
the griefe I haue sustained for the losse of my sonne Flo-
rendos, hath brought mee into such a long and lingering extrea-
mity, as well may I blesse the time, that by your good suc-
cesse am so happily deliuered: let mee theresore entertayne
you as my second sonne, and perswade your selfe of such a
Father, who will loue you as if you were his own natural
childe, in that I, and the greater part of my Kingdome shall
be at your disposition. Worthy Sir, sayd Palmerin, would
this might I be reputed among the worthies in the world,
refusing the honour you please to offer mee, especiallie in
such an extraordinary kind of fauour: for the rest, (be-
eing thus accepted in your princely grace) I haue sufficient
being furnished with horse and armour to doo mee seruice.
With these words the King embraced him, and meere toy
caused the teares to trickle downe his cheekes: so that Pal-
merin stayed longer with him then he made account to doo,
till the Duke of Durace sent for him, as you shall reade in
the discourse following.

Chap.

OF PALMERIN DOLIVA.

CHAP. XIX.

How Duke Astor of Durace sent to the King of Ma-
cedon, desiring him to send him the Knight that
had slaine the Serpent on the Mountain Artisaria,
to ayde him against the Counte Passaco of Mecæ-
na, who layde siege to one of his Cities.



So farre was spread the fame of this vic-
torie, that Palmerin had against the
Serpent, on the Mountain Artisaria,
as at length the Duke Astor of Durace
heard thereof, against whom the Count
Passaco of Mecæna waged battaile,
and finding himselfe unable to resist his en-
emies, minded to send to the King of Ma-
cedon, requiring ayd of the knight y slew the Serpent at the
enchanted fountaine: and hereupon he dispatched one
of his Gentlemen towards the King, who made good haste
till he came thither: when doing his reverence, and deliue-
ring his Letters of credit to the King, he saide. My dear
Lord, the Duke of Durace my master most humbly salutes
your Excellence by me. The King hauing read the Letters,
and noting the contents, bad the Messenger discharge the
rest of his message. It is so Sir, said the Gentleman, that of
long time my Lord and master hath bene assaulted by the
Count Passaco, who in such cruell sorte hath warred on
him, as he hath well nere destroyed the whole Countrey,
for hee hath taken the Cittie of Mizzara, and against all
right doth challenge it for his owne. After this the Duke
my master laying his siege to bid him battaile, fortune
hath

THE HISTORIE

hath bene so contrary to my Lord, as his noble Sonnes
are slaine, and y greater part of his worthiest Gentlemen.
Yet not contented with all this, the Counte pursues him
till to his very Cittie of Durace, which he hath begirt with
siege so strongly, as he is doubtfull of a further danger.
But within these eight dayes he understood that your high-
nesse hath here a knight, that slew the Serpent on the en-
chanted Mountaine, in whose valour my Lord reposeth
such confidence, as would you graunt him licence to come
thither, my Lord will accompany him with so many har-
die men at Armes, as hee doubts not to enforce the Counte
to leaue his Countrie: and for that the matter requireth ex-
pedition, he desires your assistance with all possible speede.
I am forrie, quoth the King, that the Duke my Nephew is
in such extremitie, and I promise you I did not thinke as
yet to part with Palmerin: but seeing the necessitie is so
urgent, I will intreate him to go with you, and so manie
approued knights with him, as the Count shall perceiue
I am not well pleased with his hard dealing towardes my
Nephew. Now was Palmerin present when the Gentle-
man deliuered his message, which pleased him not a little,
because hee would gladlie leane the King to follow his for-
tune, and was thus held from his desire by importunate re-
questes: but seeing the King had graunted to send him to
the Duke, he fell on his knees, making these speeches. In re-
spect of my god Lord, that the Duke your Nephew hath be-
gent accesse to employ me, and in that his sute is onely for
me, without any other of your people, I beseech you suffer
me, to go alone to him, for my hope is so good, in a cause of
truth and right, that wee shall be sufficient there to ende
the controuersie. Not so my good friend Palmerin, sayde the
King you shall not hazarde your selfe alone, but take such
company as I shall send with you. My Lord, quoth Pal-
merin, hee demaundes mee without any other company,
and therefore let mee perswade you to salisfie your request:
so turning to the Gentleman, he bid him prepare to set for-
ward,

OF PALMERIN DOLIVA.

ward, for he was readie. To this Sir, answered the mes-
senger, with what expedition you please, for neuer was
knight expected with moze earnest longing for, then you
are. This suddaine resolution of Palmerin displeased Flo-
rendos: wherefore taking him aside, he said. I see then my
deere frende, you will needes bee gone, albeit your compa-
nie hath giuen mee greater solace & delight, then any thing
else since I lost mine onely content: yet is my regarde of
your honour such, y I feare moze to heere your misfortune,
then a pittle y necessitie of my Cousin the Duke of Durace.
Yet let me intreate you, that finishing your intent with
fortunate successe, you make your present returne to the
King my Father, whose loue, and whose liberalitie you
neede not doubt off. My Lord (quoth Palmerin) the King
and you haue so highly honoured mee, as wheresoever I
shall come hereafter, I rest yours in my verie vndermost en-
deuours.

These wordes did Ptolome heere, the Sonne of Frena-
to, whom Florendos had kept since y time he was his page,
and was now olde enough to receiue the knight hood: which
made him desirous to purchase honour by some meanes, es-
pecially if the King would moue Palmerin to take him
with him, his request he perswaded himselfe would not bee
denyed, whereupon, kneeling before the King, he beganne
thus. If it please your highnesse, that at your handes I
might receiue my order of knight hood, before Palmerin
departed from your Court, I am assured he would not dis-
daine me for his companion, especially if your Maestie did
moue the question on my behalfe. Beleeue me, quoth the
King so good a motion shall not be hindered by me, & there-
fore to morrow will I giue you your order, and such serui-
ce as shall well become a knight, prepare you in meane time
to performe your watch. Highly contented was Ptolome
at these speeches, and gaue order for his provision of neede-
full occasions, till euening came, when he entered the Chap-
pell, where he spent the night in deuout orisons, that heauen

THE HISTORIE

would so further y^e whole course of his time, as might stand with the advancement of iustice and his owne hono^r. Earlie in the morning, the king accompanied with his Sonne Florendos and many other knights, entered the Chappell, where finding Ptolome on his knees, he gaue him his knightthode, wishing his fortune to proue such as might make him famous where euer he came: afterward he desired Palmerin, that this new knight might beate him company in his traualles, whereto Palmerin willingly consented, accepting so well of Ptolomes behauiour, as he purposed thence forward not to forsake so good a companion. When they both toke theyr leaue of the King and Florendos, and departed with the Gentleman towardes the Duke of Durace, making such good expedition in theyr iourney, as hauing cross the Seas with a prosperous winde, they landed in the Countrey of Durace. Now because the Cittie was belleged on all sides, they were doubtfull how to gette in vnto the enemye: which the Gentleman, their guide, performed so well, as by priate signes made to the Gentleman, at length they got in without any danger. The Duke hearing tydings of their arriual, left his Chamber and came to welcome Palmerin, to whom he entertained with great honour, spending the most part of the night in familiar conference with him, till hauing brought him to his Chamber, he left them both to their good rest, till the next morning, when he came againe to visite them, thus saluting Palmerin.

Your arriual, Sir knight, doth arme me with such assured hope, as by the helpe I shall receiue at your hande, mine enemye (I trust) shal not ouerbzaue me as he hath done hitherto: and therefore you with your worthy companion, are both so welcome as you can desire. My Lord, (quoth Palmerin) the King that sent me to you, hath bound me to him by so manie courtshies, as for the loue of him and Florendos his Sonne, you may assure your selfe of my uttermost seruite, so long as I shall be able to holde my Sword.

The

OF PALMERIN DOLIVA.

The Duke returned his noble offer many thanks, and walked into the Hall, the Duchesse there expected the coming of Palmerin: so after many welcomes and courtly embracings, the Tables being couered, they sate downe to Dinner: at which time, Palmerins eyes were firing on the Duchesse Daughter, who was one of the fairest Virgins that euer he saw, and so busied was his thoughts in beholding her, as he gaue small regard to the Dukes words, who reported what shamefull iniuries the Court had offered him from time to time, and how many skirmishes had passed betwene them since the beginning of the wars. Thus spent they the Dinner time, till the Tables being withdrawne, the Duchesse with her Daughter were gone into their Chamber, and the Duke questioned with Palmerin as concerning Ptolome, who was very nere allied to the Duke; and so with discoursing of nouels of Macedon, also the doubtfull affaires of the warres; they passed the whole day till night came: when Palmerin and Ptolome departing to their Chamber, Palmerin could take no rest, the beautie of the Duchesse Daughter so troubled his thoughts, which made him desirous to know her name, if this were shee the three Sisters spake of on the Mountaine, and was relid pronounced him in his sleeping visions. Palmerin was not alone thus passionate, but on the other side the young Lady became as amorous of him: but fortune would not permit their loue, as you shall heere more hereafter. The Count hauing all this while maintained very straight siege, intending not to loose or gaine al, gaue fierce assault vpon the Cittie, first calling all the chiefe Lordes and Captaines of his Armie, mouing them with earnest and Soldierlike peritiuations, to forgoe the aduantages, and to encounter their enemies with magnanimous and resolute courage. When he had thus imboldened his men so, the fight, with sound of Drums, Trumpets, and Clariours they had the Cittie battail: then might they behold how they beliered themselves with fagots to fill the Ditches, and

THE HISTORIE

and Trenches, set scaling-ladders to the walles, both the one side assaulted and the other defended, that many lost their liues or departed maimed: such haucke did Palmerin and Ptolome with the Dukes power, make on their enemies, notwithstanding they were in number farre beyond them, and maruailous well provided of all necessaries. But then Palmerin remembered a sodaine policie to prevent a mischance, for as the enemy retired to prepare for the second assault, hee called the most part of the best knights that the Duke had, willing each one to betake himselfe to his horse and follow him, leaving the rest well appointed for defence of the wals. The Countes power sounding the alarme and coming roughly againe vpon the Citie, Palmerin with his companie priuily issued forth at the Posterne gate on the backs of their enemies, and gaue such a braue onset, as they were enforced to forsake their scaling ladders of resist this encounter. Theretwore many stroakes deliuered on either side, the Counte and most part of his knights being on horsebacke, which made them holde the longer play with Palmerin and his men: notwithstanding, the Counte seeing such a hardy attempt giuen on a sodaine, and doubting fresh supplie would come from the Citie, with feare beganne to retire, and with one of his Brethren laboured to resist this sharpe assault: but Palmerin and his companie gaue them small time to rest, laying on loads with maruailous fiercenesse, whereat the Counte was so offended, as coming to Palmerin, hee gaue him such a cruell stroke on the helmet, as he fell therewith to the ground, yet did hee quickly recover himselfe againe, and requited the Counte with so sound a salutation, as he made him tumble from his saddle headlong to the earth, at what time on the other side Ptolome had so canuzzed the Countes brother as hee leaue him in acquittance with his sword for his liue. When began the Counte to labour to dispaire for their successe, and Palmerin with his traine to follow them to close, as they were glad to take themselves to flight, leaving the

OF PALMERIN DOLIVA.

Palmerin overthronged in the Arnie, where he was trodden to death with the trompling of the Horses. Thus did the victorie remaine to the Duke, his enemies scattering in flight glad to save their liues, whome Palmerin commaunded to follow no further, least gathering themselves together againe, and espying advantage, they might so endanger them: for oftentimes the vanquished so narrowly pursued, recover courage and daunt the pride of the conquerers. For this cause he returned with his men into the Citie: the Duke understanding the foyle of his enemy, which made him with a great number of worthy Citizens to go meete Palmerin and Ptolome, whom embracing he thus entertained. As good knights, by you is my estate recovered, and the death of my Sonnes reuenged on the murderer, therefore dispose of mee and mine what you thinke best: to which words Palmerin thus answered. My Lord, let heaven haue this honour of our victory: as for me I haue done, and will hereafter what I can, for the great kindnesse of the King of Macedon your vncle, who hath honoured mee in sending me to you, and other recompence I neuer did or will seeke. As they thus parted together, the Duke perceived by the bloud on Palmerins Armour, that he was wounded in many places: wherefore (quoth he) I see you are sore wounded, let vs make haste to our Pallace, where a Lady attending on the Duchesse, and well skilful in chirurgerie, shall giue attendance on you till you are recovered. So mounting on horsebacke they rode to the Pallace, where Palmerin was lodged. Being brought into his Chamber, the Duchesse and her daughter holpe to examine him, when the Ladie dressed his wounds, perswading him there was no danger in them to be feared. Thus each one departing, Laurana and the Duchesse daughter called Urbanillo the Dwarfie saying to him. My friend, desire thy Master to make bold of any thing hee wants, and that for my sake he will dispaire of nothing. He answered, sayde the Dwarfie, you haue good reason to wis my master well, as well for

THE HISTORIE

that as bee by his Godhead hath made me breath this ayre, though I weake and Achly: by diuine prouidence hee hath sent you to restore my bodily health, from hencefoz I theretoz I shall intreate you to commaund mee and mine at your pleasure. My gracious Lord, sayde Palmerin, the heauens giue me successe to doe you seruice, for I know no Prince liuing this day, for whom I would moze gladly adventure my life. I thank you good Sir, quoth the King, but the griefe I haue sustained for the losse of my sonne Florendos, brought mee into such a long and lingering extremitie, as well in y^e I blesse the time, that by your good successe am so happily deliuered: let mee therefore entrectayne you as my second sonne, and perswade your selfe of such a Father, who will loue you as if you were his own natural child, in that I, and the greater part of my Kingdome shall be at your disposition. Worthie Sir, sayd Palmerin, woz this might I be reputed among the world in the world, refusing the honour you please to offer mee, especiallie in such an extraordinary kind of fauour: for the rest, (being thus accepted in your princely grace) I haue sufficient being furnished with Wyse and Armour to doo mee seruice. With these wordes the King embraced him, and meere for causes the teares to trickle out of his cheekes: so that Palmerin stayed longer with him then he made account to do, till the Duke of Durace sent for him, as you shall reade in the discourse following.

Chap.

OF PALMERIN DOLIVA.

CHAP. XIX.

How Duke Astor of Durace sent to the King of Macedon, desiring him to send him the Knight that had slaine the Serpent on the Mountain Artifaria, to ayde him against the Counte Passaco of Mecena, who layde siege to one of his Cities.



Sarre was spread the fame of this victorie, which Palmerin had against the Serpent, on the Mountain Artifaria, as at length the Duke Astor of Durace heard thereof, against whom the Count Passaco of Mecena wayed battaile, and saying himselfe unable to resist his enemies, minded to send to the king of Macedon, requiring ayd of the knight y^e slew the Serpent at the enchanted fountaine: and hereupon he dispatched one of his Gentlemen towards the king, who made good haste till he came thither: when doing his reuerence, and deliuering his Letters of credit to the king, he saide. Deade Lord, the Duke of Durace my maister most humbly salutes your Excellence by me. The king hauing read the Letters, and noting the contents, bad the Messenger discharge the rest of his message. It is so Sir, said the Gentleman, that of long time my Lord and maister hath bene assaulted by the Count Passaco, who in such cruell sorte hath warred on him, as he hath well nere destroyed the whole Countrey, for wee hath taken the Citty of Mizzara, and against all right both challenge it for his owne. After this the Duke my maister sayling his siege to bid him battaile, for we

ff 3

hath

THE HISTORIE

hath beene so contrary to my Lord, as his noble Sonnes are slaine, and y greater part of his worthiest Gentlemen. Yet not contented with all this, the Counte pursues him till to his very Cittie of Durace, which he hath begirt with sieges so strongly, as he is doubtfull of a further danger. But within these eight dayes he understood that your highnesse hath here a knight, that slew the Serpent on the enchanted Mountaine, in whose valour my Lord reposeth such confidence, as would you graunt him licence to come thither, my Lord will accompany him with so many hardie men at Armes, as hee doubts not to enforce the Counte to leaue his Countrie: and so for that the matter requireth expedition, he desires your assistance with all possible speed. I am sorrie, quoth the King, that the Duke my Nephew is in such extremitie, and I promise you I did not thinke as yet to part with Palmerin: but seeing the necessitie is so urgent, I will intreate him to go with you, and so manie approued knights with him, as the Count shall perceiue I am not well pleased with his hard dealing towards my Nephew. Now was Palmerin present when the Gentleman deliuered his message, which pleased him not a little, because hee would gladly leane the King to follow his fortune, and was thus held from his desire by importunate requestes: but seeing the King had graunted to send him to the Duke, he fell on his knees, making these speeches. In respect of my good Lord, that the Duke your Nephew hath urgent occasion to imploy me, and in that his lufe is onely for me, without any other of your people, I beseech you suffer me, to go alone to him, for my hope is so good, in a cause of truth and right, that true shall be sufficient there to end the controuersie. Not so my good friend Palmerin, sayde the King you shall not hazarde your selfe alone, but take such company as I shall send with you. My Lord, quoth Palmerin, hee demaundes mee without any other company, and therefore let mee perswade you to satisfie your request: so turning to the Gentleman, he bid him prepare to set forthward,

OF PALMERIN DOLIVA.

ward, for he was ready. Worthie Sir, answered the Messenger, with what expedition you please, for neuer was a knight expected with more earnest longing for, then you are. This suddaine resolution of Palmerin displeased Florendos: wherefore taking him aside, he said. Yee then my deere freende, you will needes bee gone, albeit your company hath giuen mee greater solace & delight, then any thing else since I lost mine onely content: yet is my regarde of your honour such, y I feare more to heare your misfortune, then I pittie y necessitie of my Cousin the Duke of Durace. Yet let me intreate you, that finishing your intent with fortunate successe, you make your present returne to the King my Father, whose loue, and whose liberalitie you neede not doubt off. My Lord (quoth Palmerin) the King and you haue so highly honoured mee, as wherefoeuer I shall come hereafter, I rest yours in my better vndermost endeours.

These wordes did Ptolome heare, the Sonne of Frenato, whom Florendos had kept since y time he was his page, and was now olde enough to receiue the knighthood: which made him desirous to purchase honour by some meanes, especially if the King would moue Palmerin to take him with him, his request he perswaded himselfe would not bee denyed, whereupon, kneeling before the King, he beganne thus. If it please your highnesse, that at your handes I might receiue my order of knighthood, before Palmerin departed from your Court, I am assured he would not disdain me for his company, especially if your Maestie did moue the question on my behalfe. Belesse me, quoth the King so good a motion shall not be hindered by me, & therefore to morrow will I give you your order, and such Armes as shall well become a knight, prepare you in meane time to performe your watch. Highly contented was Ptolome at these speeches, and gaue order for his provision of needfull occasions, till euening came, when he entered the Chappell, where he spent the night in deuout orisons, that heauen

THE HISTORIE

would so further y^e whole course of his time, as might stand with the advancement of iustice and his owne honoz. Carle in the morning, the king accompanied with his Sonne Florendos and many other knights, entered the Chappell, where finding Ptolome on his knees, he gave him his knight-hood, wishing his fortune to prove such as might make him famous where ever he came: afterward he desired Palmerin, that this new knight might beate him company in his travails, whereto Palmerin willingly consented, accepting so well of Ptolomes behauiour, as he purposed thence forward not to forsake so good a companion. When they both took their leave of the King and Florendos, and departed with the Gentleman towards the Duke of Durace, making such good expedition in their journey, as hauing cross the Seas with a prosperous winde, they landed in the Countrey of Durace. Now because the Cittie was besieged on all sides, they were doubtfull how to gette in breske of the enemy: which the Gentleman their guide, performed so well, as by private signes made to the Sentinell, at length they got in without any danger. The Duke hearing tydings of their arriual, left his Chamber and came to welcome Palmerin, whome he entertained with great honour, spending the most part of the night in familiar conference with him, till hauing brought him to his Chamber, he left them both to their good rest, till the next morning, when he came againe to visite them, thus saluting Palmerin.

Your arriual, Sir knight, doth arme me with such assured hope, as by the helpe I shall receiue at your hande, mine enemy (I trust, shall not surchaunge me as he hath done hitherto: and therefore you with your worthy companion, are both so welcome as you can desire. My Lord, (quoth Palmerin) the King that sent me to you, hath bound me to him by so manie courtesies, as for the loue of him and Florendos his Sonne, you may assure your selfe of my bittermost service, so long as I shall be able to holde my Sword.

The

OF PALMERIN DOLIVA.

The Duke returned his noble offer many thanks, and walked into the Hall, the Duchesse there expected the coming of Palmerin: so after many welcomes and courtly embracings, the Tables being couered, they sate downe to Dinner: at which time, Palmerins eyes were fixing on the Duchesse Daughter, who was one of the fairest Virgins that euer he saw, and so busied was his thoughts in beholding her, as he gave small regard to the Dukes words, who reported what shamefull injuries the Court had offered him from time to time, and how many skirmishes had passed betwene them since the beginning of the wars. Thus spent they the Dinner time, till the Tables being withdrawne, the Duchesse with her Daughter were gone into their Chamber, and the Duke questioned with Palmerin as concerning Ptolome, who was very nere allied to the Duke: and so with discoursing of nouels of Macedon, also the doubtfull affaires of the warres, they passed the whole day till night came: when Palmerin and Ptolome departing to their Chamber, Palmerin could take no rest, the beautie of the Duchesse Daughter so troubled his thoughts, which made him desirous to know her name, if this were shee the three Sisters spake of on the Mountaine, and was besides promised him in his sleeping visions. Palmerin was not alone thus passionate, but on the other side the young Lady became as amorous of him: but fortune would not permit their loue, as you shall here more hereafter. The Count hauing all this while maintained very straight siege, intending now to loose or gaine all, gaue fierce assault vpon the Cittie, first calling all the chiefe Lordes and Captaines of his Armie, mouing them with earnest and Soldier like periuasions, to forseeke the aduantages, and to encounter their enemies with magnanimous and resolute courage. When he had thus imboldered his men so, the fight with sound of Drums, Trumpets, and Clarions they had the Cittie battaile: then might they behold how they besetted themselves with fagots to fill the Ditches, and

THE HISTORIE

and Trenches, set scaling-ladders to the walles, helpe the one side assaulted and the other defended, that many lost their liues or departed maimed: such haucke did Palmerin and Ptolome with the Dukes power, make on theyr enemies, notwithstanding they were in number farre beyond them, and maruailous well provided of all necessaries. But then Palmerin remembred a sodaine policie to prevent a mischiefe, for as the enemy retired to prepare for the second assault, hee called the most part of the best knights that the Duke had, willing each one to betake himselfe to his horse and follow him, leaving the rest well appointed for defence of the wals. The Countes power sounding the alarme and coming roughly againe vpon the Citie, Palmerin with his companie priuily issued forth at the Posterne gate on the backs of their enemies, and gaue such a braue onset, as they were enforced to forsake their scaling ladders of resist this encounter. Theretwere many stroakes deliuered on either side, the Counte and most part of his knights being on horsebacke, which made them holde the longer play with Palmerin and his men: notwithstanding, the Counte seeing such a hardy attempt giuen on a sodaine, and doubting fresh supplie would come from the Citie, with feare beganne to retire, and with one of his Wethren laboured to resist this sharpe assault: but Palmerin and his companie gaue them small time to rest, laying on loose with maruailous fiercenesse, whereat the Counte was so offended, as coming to Palmerin, hee gaue him such a cruell stroake on the Helmet, as he fell therewith to the ground, yet did hee quickly recover himselfe againe, and requited the Counte with so sound a salutation, as he made him tumble from his saddle headlong to the earth, at what time on the other side Ptolome had so tauazed the Countes brother as hee sealed him a quituance with his sword for his life. When began the Counte wordisours to dispaire for their success, and Palmerin with his traine to follow them so closely, as they were glad to take themselues to flight, leaving theyr

Palmer

OF PALMERIN DOLIVA.

Palmerin overthrew in the Arme, where he was troden to death with the trompling of the Horses. Thus did the victorie remaine to the Duke, his enemies scattering in flight glad to saue their liues, whome Palmerin commanded to follow no further, least gathering themselves together againe, and espying auantage, they might so embauger them: for oftentimes the vanquished so narrowly pursued, recover courage and dunt the pride of the conquerers. For this cause he returned with his men into the Citie: the Duke vnderstanding the foyle of his enemy, which made him with a great number of worthy Citizens to go meete Palmerin and Ptolome, whom embracing he thus entertained. Ah good knights, by you is my estate recovered, and the death of my Sonnes reuenged on the murderer, therefore dispose of mee and mine what you thinke best: to which words Palmerin thus answered. My Lord, let heauen haue this honour of our victory: as for me I haue done, and will hereafter what I can, for the great kindnesse of the King of Macedon your vnkls, who hath honoured mee in sending me to you, and other recompence I neuer did or will seeke. As they thus parled together, the Duke perceived by the bloud on Palmerins Armour, that he was wounded in many places: wherefore (quoth he) I see you are sore wounded, let vs make haste to our Pallace, where a Lady attending on the Duchesse, and well skilful in chirurgery, shall giue attendance on you till you are recovered. So mounting on horsebacke they rode to the Pallace, where Palmerin was lodged. Being brought into his Chamber, the Duchesse and her daughter holpe to vnaime him, when the Ladie dressed his wounds, perswading him there was no danger in them to be feared. Thus each one departing, Laurana and the Duchesse daughter called Urbanillo the Dwarfie saying to him. My friend, desire thy Master to make bold of any thing hee wants, and that for my sake he will dispaire of nothing. Heaue, sayde the Dwarfie, you haue good reason to wish my maister well, as well for

the

THE HISTORIE

the good assistance he gaue the Duke your father, as also in respect of his deserts, which are as honourable as any that euer came in this court. These wayes Palmerin very well heard, hauing his eye continually on her: wherefore when she and all the other were departed, hee called Urbanillo, demanded what talke hee had with the Princesse, which he reported and his answer also. Gramercies sayd Palmerin, I pray thee finde the meane to let her know that I am her seruant and knight, ready to accomplish any thing that shee shall commaund me. Referre this matter to mee: quoth the Dwarfie, I know what Saint must patronize these affaires, and what offering must bee layde on his Altar.

CHAP. XX.

How Palmerin became highly enamored with the beautie of the Princesse Laurana, thinking her to be the Lady that solicited him in his visions.



Urbanillo the Dwarfie not forgetfull of his Masters commaundment, the next day when Laurana came with her mother to visit Palmerin, he tooke the Dwarfie aside, demanding what rest hee had after the night past. Madam (quoth he) indifferent, I thanke God and you, for in you lies conside the disposition of my Masters health. As how, quoth shee; Thus Madam, sayd Urbanillo: the first day that he behelde you, he gaue the whole possession of himselfe so firmly to you, as day & night he meditates on your diuine perfections, doubting

OF PALMERIN DOLIVA.

ting in requitall of his seruice to my Lord your Father and his Countrey, whose liues and yours he hath defended, himselfe shall bee repayde with sodaine and cruell death: for, had hee not come for your safety, well had hee escaped this dangerous extremitie. Then seeing (sayd Madam) that his valour hath been the mean of your deliuerance, doe not so degenerate from gentle nature, as to kill him that gaue you life. Why, my friend (quoth she) what wouldst thou haue me to doe? To loue him, swat Madam quoth he, as he doth you. Alas, said she, thou maist assure thy selfe, that none can wish thy Master better then I doe, being my duety and his desert: with which words shee changed colour with such modest bashfulness, as it might be perceiued shee could hardly master her affections. Which, when the Dwarfie beheld, as one not to learne his lesson in this art, perswaded himselfe by the very lookes of Laurana, that his Masters loue would sort to happy end, and thereupon hee followed the matter thus. I thinke Madam, that you wish my Master as well as any, but that is not inough, to leaue your wish agree with his in this point, that you graunt your selfe his onely Lady and Mistresse, as hee hath vowed himselfe your knight and seruant. If it may please you to wish this good to my Master, vouchsafe this fauour as a president of your liking: that so soone as hee shall finde himselfe better in health, you will but consent to speake with him alone, in some such conuenient and unsuspected place, as hee may haue liberty to acquaint you with the secrets of his thoughts. Alas, quoth she, how should I so doe, without offering too much impeach to mine own honour? Madam, sayd the Dwarfie, the night giues fauour to loues sweet enterprises. By this time the Duchesse was ready to depart, which Laurana perceiuing, said to the Dwarfie: Assure thy master from me, that I am more his then mine owne, and I will doe for his welfare what I may with modesty. By reason of their departure, the Dwarfie could not make her answer, but shadowing the matter as hee had

THE HISTORIE

had done before, went about his Masters business, till he came and found him alone, when he discovered all that had passed betwene the Princeesse and him, which so well comforted Palmerin, as nothing could more: because hee perswaded himselfe, as I haue sayde already, that this was the which the three sisters promised him, by whom hee should receiue the honour that destiny allowed him. For this cause thence forthward hee was very desirous to know her name, commaunding Urbanillo very straitly to enquire it, which hee did, informing his maister, that her name was Laurana: whereupon he well saw, that hee was deceyued, in that the three sisters had named his Mistress Polinarda, & therefore he resolved to withdraue his affection, and to depart thence so soone as hee could bee able to beare Armour: But it may bee easily presumed, that when one hath so far ventured in loue, that he perceiues himselfe beloued, as the Dwarfie perswaded his maister, hardly can hee giue ouer so soppa a beginning: yet here it fell out contrary, as you shall well perceiue, that the end was more sodaine then the beginning. Palmerin now knowing the Princees name, beganne to vse other countenance to her then he was accustomed: but the good Lady (in his excuse) conceiued better opinion then shee had cause: yet as if euermore falleth out in loue, that when Ladies see themselves but slenderly courted by their friends, they grow importunate in their amorous desires: so came it to passe with Laurana, who perceiuing her self not solicited by Palmerin as shee was wont, one night somewhat late shee called the Dwarfie and thus beganne. How comes it to passe my good friend, that thy maister is not of so pleasant disposition, as heretofore he hath been? It may be thou hast not let him vnderstand my last salutation, or else feare withholdes him from following his determination: I pray thee doe the message of my earnest good will to him, and tell him that I long to impart our affections together, to the full resolution of our desired thoughts, which I haue found the way unsuspected

OF PALMERIN D'OLIVA.

to accomplish, so please him to come to my chamber to morrow at night, where I shall not faile to expect his presence. When the Dwarfie heard Laurana vse these wordes, thinking his Master was still in his former cogitations, thus answered. Trust me, sayre Madame, within these fewe dayes, my maister is become so melancholike, as I haue many times feared his death, and I am sure hee hath no other cause to torment him so, but onely the fury of the extreame loue he beares you: yet seeing you haue promised him such great fauour, let me alone to change this vnplesant humour. Staye not then (quoth she) to let him know my mind. I goe presently, sayd the Dwarfie, to acquaint him with these long desired wordes. So taking his leave, he went to his maisters chamber, whome hee found fast asleep, when not daring to awake him, let stay his message till the next morning, and so laye him downe to rest, at what time sleepe had thoroughly possessed him, he began to cry and complaine so loude, as his Master hearing him, arose, and demanded of him the cause of his lament. Alas, my Lord (quoth he) neuer in all my life was I so affrighted, me thought that one of the sayest Ladies that euer eye looked on, held a naked sword against my throat, saying, Wile, and villanous creature as thou art, darest thou presume so much to offend me, as to make thy Lord and maister amorous of Lady Laurana, and to forsake me? Iustly dost thou deserue to die on this weapon for thy pallardise, and if hereafter thou carry any message to presume my right, assure thy self, that I will chastise thee in such sort, as all deformed villaines shall receiue example by thee. I tell thee Traytor, Palmerin his fortunes climbe higher then the name of Laurana, and where he is more loued for the royalty of his linage, then for his base and pastozall education. Which which wordes shee gaue me such a stroke on the head with her sword, as I, (fearefull of my life) cryed so loude as you say, you heard mee. This motion made Palmerin easily perceiue, that Polinarda had made this

THE HISTORIE

threatning to the Dwarfes for Laurana: which concealing to himselfe, he sayde in laughter. I thinke thou wilt forget to drinke when thou comest to bed, and so thy heart being drie, conceived this vision: I pray the sterpe, and trouble me no more with such idle passions. The Dwarfes betooke him to rest, but Palmerins thoughts were all night hammering on this oceanie, so that he resolved to depart thence the next morning, and seeke elsewhere his adventures, seeing hee was advertised by so many advertisements. So at the day rising, hee called the Dwarfes, and commaunded him to prepare his Armour, for hee intended to take his leaue of the Duke. Ptolome hearing this, and having noted before all the Dwarfes tolde his master in the night, dissembling the matter, as was his manner, he came, and bad Palmerin good morrow, who answered Ptolome in this manner. My beare friend, I have concealed none of mine affayres from thee, since the time we returned our Knighthood, and parted together from the Court of Macedon: now therefore will I impart to thee what I have determined.

It is so, that urgent occasions constrains me presentlie to leaue this Country, and henceforth to frame my course which way fortune will direct me, by which occasion I see we must be enforced to leaue each other: notwithstanding let mee intreate that our absence may no way impair our friendship, not doubting but in good time wee shall meete together againe. In meane space, if you see the King, or Prince Florendos, forget not the humble duty of thy bowed Seruant, I bekech you, who dedicate his life and honour in all attempts to their gracious fauours. By God sayd Ptolome, let who will doe the message for me, for neither death nor danger shall separate me from you: but I will beare you company while life and soule holde together. If you bee so resolute, said Palmerin, thane were it for mee to refuse you. Set forthward then when you please (quoth Ptolome) for we neither must nor wil. depart, thats flat.
So

OF PALMERIN DE OLIVA.

So being both armed, they came to the Duke, who marvelled much to see them so prepared, and therefore demanded whither they went. By good Lord (answered Palmerin) in that your Countrey is now quieted, we must intreate you for our departure, because waightie affaires in other places doe so commaund vs. How happens it sayre Friends, (said the Duke,) that you will so soon leaue mee? My Lord (quoth Palmerin) wee are so enforced: and therefore wee humbly intreate you not to be offended. If your affaires be such (said the Duke) loath I am to hinder you, commaund of mee and mine what you please, for all remaineth at your disposition. Most humble thanks did Palmerin, and Ptolome returne to the Duke, and ere they went to Horseback, they came to take their leaue of the Duchesse and Laurana, who was well nigh dead, seeing her hope deceyued, for shee expected the sight comming, when shee and Palmerin should confere together of their loue: but seeing him now departing, shee was out of all hope to see him againe, the extreame griefe whereof so ouer-came her, as gining a great shriek she fell in a swoone.

The Ladies and Gentlewomen in great amazement came about her, ignorant of her euill, but only Palmerin and the Dwarfes, which hee likewise would not reueale so any, for the reason you heard discovered before: and rather would she entertaine her owne death, then make knowne a secrete of such importance: Wherfore hauing somewhat recovered her selfe, and not able to conceale her anguish, with an extreame sigh she thus breathed forth her sorrow. Ah Palmerin, easily hast thou kindled the fire, which with great shame thou leavest consuming vquenchd. Who would haue thought that such treason could harbour, where faire conditions and honourable valour shined so brightly? Well may I condemne all men of disloyaltie, seeing thou hast failed resembling so excellent. Belieue mee knight, thou hast done me great wrong, and thy selfe much more: for which, where ever thou comest, bee thou named the most vngratefull knight

THE HISTORIE

Knicht that ever drew Sword, seeking her death so cruelly,
who loues thee dearer then her owne life.

The complaints made Laurana before the Duchesse,
not sparing to discharge the whole burthen of her oppressed
heart, her Mother not daring to gaine say her, but expected
when she should depart this life: wherefore perswading her
selfe from despaire, she sweetly promised to worke so with
Palmerin, as he should stay, and enjoy her to his Wife. But
all this was in vaine, for he mounted on horsebacke, and
accompanied Ptolome and Vrbaillo, left the Citie of Du-
race, no one knowing which way they were ridden: Palme-
rin conuerted into such heauinesse, as nothing could torment
him more, so earnest was his desire to see her, whom fate
and fortune had appointed for him.

CHAP. XXI.

How Palmerin and Ptolome met with a Damosell, who
made great mone for a Casket which two Knights had
forcibly taken from her, and what happened to them.



Being thus departed from Duraco, these
Knights rode along, thinking in what
heauinesse they had left the Dukes
Daughter: when Palmerin accusing
himselfe as guiltie of this mischaunce,
within himselfe thus sadly discoursed.
Unhappie man that ever thou camest
into this Countrey, where thou hast left so hard an opini-
on of thy selfe, as while thou liuest thou shalt be the worse
esteemed: and well worthie, for iustly maist thou be accu-
sed of disloyaltie, in making meanes to obtaine the loue
of

OF PALMERIN DE OLIVA.

of the faire Princeesse Laurana, and having conquered where
thou desiredst, to make so little account of her as thou hast
done. Hadde death prevented thee before, she had bene satisfi-
fied, thine Honour defended, and thy unknowne Polinar-
da no way iniured: Which speeches made the teares to
trickle downe his cheeks: when Ptolome looking aside espy-
ed him, and guessing the cause of his sickness, said. Truly I
never thought to see such womanish behauiour in you, nor
that any griefe or misfortune should haue teares so sore at
commaundement. How will you hereafter withstand so
many casualties, hard aduentures, and dangerous Strata-
gems, with many and sundry narrow brunts that you must
passe through, when I see you unable to ouercome your own
selfe, being surprized by her teares, to whom you haue done
honour to afford a good countenance? If you hadde recey-
ued of her the sweetes of Loue, reason might then pleade in
your excuse: but hauing no way misused her honour, or of-
fered offence to modest chastitie: what iniurie may she say
that you haue done her? Forget I pray you these vaine-
ly fashions, hardly agreeing with a Knight of such report as
you are: let vs finde something else to talke on: and tell me
which way you intend to iourney? By my life (quoth Pal-
merin,) I knowe not, but let vs take which way Fortune
shall please to conduct vs. I thinke it best then (saide Pro-
lome) that we shap our course towards Rome, where wee
shall find people of all Nations, by whom we may be instru-
cted, as concerning Aduentures worthy our trauell, and gui-
ding to honour. On then chereely (quoth Palmerin,) and
so they trauelled eight dayes together, not meeting with any
Aduenture worthie to be spoken of, till at length they mette
with a Damosell heauily mourning, who said: Alas, what
will shee say, whose trust was enely in mee, hauing lost the
thing wherein consisted her hopes, to recouer the highest of
her noble desires? Palmerin hearing these wordes, and
moued with compassion, rode to her, and demanded the cause
of her mourning? By Knight (quoth shee) I was sent

by a Lady with a Casket, wherein was one of the best Swords in the whole world, which is so Enchaunted, as none can draw it out of the Scabbard, but hee that is esteemed the worthiest Knight living: but before any be admitted to make proofe of this Adventure, hee must graunt a request that I am to aske him. With this Sword haue I trauelled many strange Countreies, as France, Italie, Sclauonia, and diuers others, whereof many haue tryed, but none yet could finish the Adventure: whereupon I was this day traelling towards the Emperours Court of Greece, and here by I mette with two Knights, who hauing heard the cause of my long trauell, made proofe of theyr Fortune, one after another, and both failed, whereat they were so offended, as they tooke the Casket from me perforce, and are gone therewith I know not whither: which doth so much grieue mee in respect of her losse towards whome I am, as death would be more welcome to me then life.

Faire Virgin (saide Palmerin,) do not discomfort your selfe, but shew me which way they rode that dealt with you so discourteously. Gentle Knight (quoth shee) if your hap be to restore my losse againe, you do the most gracious acte that euer Knight did for a distressed Damosell. These Traytors to honour (whereof the one is in Crimson Armour, bearing in his shield three Lyons heads) toke this way by the Wood, and as yet, I am sure they cannot be farre hence.

Then Palmerin clasped his Helmet, and taking his sword and Lance, desired Prolome to guard the Damosell and follow him, galloping that way which shee had shewed him: and by the time hee had rid two miles, hee espied them he looked for, talking with another knight they had mette, and they three together were essaying to open the Casket, vnto whom Palmerin cryed, Treacherous villains, that cannot mete with Ladies on the way, but must offer them iniurie, deliuer the Casket or ye die: One of the two turned presently, and seeing him that thus threatned them to be alone, not mouing a cote, beganne to laugh, and scornfully returned

returned this answer. Softly, softly, good Syr, God pardon theyr soules whome you kill so easily: but for all his words, Palmerin ranne against them, and they at him, so that hee receiued a small wound on his shoulder: in recompence whereof, hee gaue one of them a passe-port into another world, and laid so lustily on the other, as hee let him quickly besides his Saddle. When the third saw his companions at so harde a reckoning, he saide to himselfe. By my faith he spake not vnadvisedly that saide A safe escape is better then a bad tarrying: And allowing this sentence for current in his owne opinion, gaue the spurs to his Horse, making haste away with the Casket, so fast as hee could: but Palmerin heeing somewhat better mounted, got such aduantage of this Run-away, as with his Sword he parted his right arme from his body, whereupon hee fell to the ground and the Casket with him. Then Palmerin alighted, and tooke it vp, and leauing the knight there, returned which way hee came: when opening the Casket, hee tooke great pleasure in beholding the Sword, which was marvellous costly: yet would hee not proue to draw it forth, because he knewe not her pleasure to whome it appertained. At length he espied Prolome coming, who came apace (if neede had bene) to haue assisted him: but when he knew how he had ouercome the knights, and recovered the thing was so desired, no man could be better contented, especially the Damozell, who leaping from her Malstray, came and kissed Palmerins face, saying. And may all happinesse repay this gentle deede, fayre knight, for but by you, my death had bene best welcome to mee.

Damozell (quoth hee) see here the Casket according as I found it, I knowe not whether they that tooke it from you haue abused it or no. No, no, (saide shee) they could no way wrong it, the Sword beeing here that belongs to the best knight. I pray you (quoth Prolome) let mee make tryall of my strength, albeit I know my self no such man as you speak of: so taking the Casket, offered to begin, when the Damozell desired him to forbear, for (quoth shee) you must first graunt

THE HISTORIE

graunt mee one request. What ere it bee said Ptolome, I graunt it : and so set all his might to his intent, but could not accomplish it. Wherefore quoth he to the Damosell, be lieue me Lady, he that wrought this Enchantment, did more by his Arte, then I can by my cunning, and in my opinion you may trauell long enough before you finde him that shall quit your expectation. The more will be my trouble, (quoth the Damosell,) beeing tyed by necessitie to such a knights fortune. When Palmerin saw that his Companion had failed, he doubted whether hee should take it in hand or no : yet seeing hee could speede no worse then others had done, he said to the Damosell, will you any thing with mee before I adventure my selfe, for my friend shall not be mal-content for a fellow. Gentle Knight (quoth shee) I will nothing, but that you make the like promise your friend did. Of that doubt you not, saide Palmerin : so laying hands valiantly on the Sword, without any great labour he drew it forth, being the richest and goodlyest Sword that euer was sene.

Ah good Knight, (saide the Damosell) happie bee the day of thy Patience, for thou hast deliuered mee from incredible labour. The Sword is yours, but by your promise you stand bound to goe with mee where I shall conduct you, to do that shall please my Lady to commaund you. Leade the way Damosell (quoth Palmerin,) and be sure wee will not leaue thy company. So mounted the Damosell on her Palfrey, and toke the way towards Rome, where shee that deliuered her Casket remained in deuotion, & with such speede they dispatched theyr Trauell, as they arrived at the Gate of a strong Castle, where the Damosell alighted, desiring Palmerin and Ptolome to expect her returne a while. The Gate being opened, shee went straight to her Distresse and her Sister, who being glad of her comming, demanded if shee had found out the man shee went to seeke. Deere Ladyes (quoth shee) I haue, and hither he is come with mee, but this I dare assure you before hand, that a more goodly and valiant Gentleman liues not this day : for in my presence he was quitted.

OF PALMERIN DE OLIVA.

quitted thre knights, who perforce toke the Casket from me, and for the sword he drew it forth so easily, as it had bene that he weareth by his side. Goe, said the Lady, and cause him come nere, and come Sister let vs goe to the gate to entertaine him. Then was the draw Bridge let downe, when Palmerin and Ptolome riding to the gate, met there the Ladies, whom they saluted with great reuerence, and each Lady leading a knight in by the hand, conducted them to their Chambers to be vnarmed.

CHAP. XXII.

How the Lady of the Castle declared to Palmerin, what moued the Giant Darmaco to take from her, her Daughter and her goods, whereupon Palmerin promised to enter Combate with the Giant : as much for pittie, as to acquite his promise made to the Damosell that brought the Casket and the enchaunted Sword.



Or two knights being thus entred the Castle and vnarmed, the Ladies brought each of them a rich Mantle of Crimson Damaske, imbrodered with gold and pearle to couer them, and so came with them into the Hall to meate, where wanted no choise of daintie delicacies : so after the Tables were withdrawen, and many other speeches passed betwene them, the Lady thus beganne to Palmerin.

Sir Knight, as nowe I am a poore and disinherited Gentlewoman, that sometime was wife to one of the wealthiest

thiest knights in this countrey, with whom I long time remained not hauing any Childe, till at length it pleased God to send mee a Daughter, so faire a creature as euer Nature framed, who at my Husbands death was left with mee but fure yeares aged. My Lord and Husband learned in the Art Magicke, and for his skill renowned in this Countrey, the day before his death he called me to him, vsing these speeches. Dære Wife, let it suffice thee that I knowe what shall happen to thee after my death, and that one shall take perforce from thee not onely such Goods as I leaue thee, but also thy faire Daughter: to helpe which extremitie, I haue somewhat provided for thee before my departure.

Thou shalt finde in my Cabinet a Sworde, which I my selfe haue enclosed in a Caske, and haue sette so many Enchaunted spells on that Sword, as no man shall be able to draw it out of the Scabbard, vnlesse hee be the best approued knight in the World, and hee it is that must giue thee succour, and helpe to recover againe thy losse. To true fell out my Husbands speeches: For shortly after Darmaco the Giant came hither, and as his custome was to abuse whome hee list, so toke he from mee the best of my Castles, and in despite of me toke my Daughter from mee, saying: that hee would giue her to one of his Sonnes in marriage, a villaine farre more vicious then his Father, and so deformed, as Nature stands ashamed at her owne workmanship. Now in respect I would not consent to this vnseemly Marriage, such goods as was left mee hee most violently toke from mee, this Sword onely excepted, which you haue worthily conquered, and that had gone with them too, but that my Sister hidde it very secretly. Now worthy knight, if euer pittie take place in thy gentle heart, reuenge mee on this Villaine, that hath thus robbed me of my goods and my Daughter, whose youth (being as yet but ten yeeres olde) is the cause that the Giant hath not consummated the Marriage. And if it shall like you to do thus much for mee, you shall not onely fulfill your promise to the Damosell that brought you hither, but you shall

shall doe a dede acceptable to God, profitable to me, comfortable to my poore Childe, and honourable for euer vnto your owne selfe. Madame (answered Palmerin) it is no meruaile if Darmaco haue done you this wrong, in that Giants doe take a habit in trecherous dealings: wherefore did not my promise binde mee to your Damosell, I would not passe so lightly out of this Countrey, ere I compelled him somewhat to recompence this iniurie, and this shall I (God willing) doe to morrowe, so please you I may bee conducted to him. Ah gentle knight, sayd the Lady, what I am not able, Heauen will no doubt repay thee: And because it was now somewhat late, after they had spent a little more time together in conference, these Ladies accompanied him and Ptolome into their Chamber, and taking their leaue, committed the knights to their good rest for that night, which they passed with quiet repose, and on the next morning after they were armed, they demanded their guide of the Lady, that should direct them the way towarde the Giant. When shee called the Damosell that carried the Caske, and two knights of her owne, whom shee commaunded to goe with Palmerin: so committing him to God and good successe, they toke their way straight to the Castle of Darmaco, where they arrived in the morning, when they espied a Squire on the walles, who was appointed there to keepe the watch, to whom Palmerin sayd. My friend, I pray thee if Darmaco be within, cause him to come forth, for I would speake with him. And what would you with him answered the Squire: I would intreate him, saide Palmerin, to vse himselfe more courteously then hee hath done heretofore, and that hee would doe right to a good Lady whom hee hath disinherited, namely to send her her goods and her Daughter againe: and if my intreatie may not preuaile with him, bidde him if hee dare come to the Combate, wherein I will make him confesse vnder my Sword, that his actions haue bene villainous, trayterous, and disloyall. In god sooth Sir, answered the Squire in
devision,

THE HISTORIE

Decision, you may seeme to haue reason, and they that sent you likewise, but your iourney I feare me will not amount to so much: therefore, if you will be ruled by me, get you going, vntil you are willing to leaue your heads for a signe to our Gates. My head, said Palmerin, my Sword holdes to god an edge, and mine arme to sound strength, to leaue a Jewell of such price so easily: goe therefore when I bidde thee, thou wert best, otherwise assure thy selfe if I vanquish thy Maister, that thou with the rest shalt surely dye the death. To soone, said the Squire, shall I doe your message: and if any harme happen to you, say my good friend you were counselled before: but as for my Maister Darmaco, hee hath not bene within for this houre and more, yet is his Sonne Mordano here, who can bid you welcome as well as his Father. So departed the Squire, and in short time Mordano the Giants Sonne came vpon the walles, demanding of Palmerin what hee sought for: I tolde the Squire, answered Palmerin: but tell me, art thou the Son of the Giant, that delightest in offering villanie to Ladies? And how then, said Mordano, what if I am? I pray thee, said Palmerin, bid thy Father that without any further quarrell hee deliuer the Lady that hee detaines violently, otherwise I shall cause him to doe it whether hee will or no. I shall make thee answere, said Mordano, if thou darrest carrie but till I arme my selfe: and so presently departing, in short time he came forth very well appointed, with a meruailous strong Lance in his hand, and mounted on a verie lustie Courser, so praucing towards Palmerin, hee said. Wretch, art thou come to seekethine owne death? I pittie thee: yet if thou wilt yelde thy selfe to my mercie, I will spare thy life, and suffer thee to waste thy time in one of the base Dungeons in this Castle. From lodging there, God shelde mee, quoth Palmerin: and being moued with these rough words of his enemy, hee encountred Mordano with such courage, as their Launces being broken, both of them were dismounted, Palmerin not hurt, but Mordano was

OF PALMERIN D'OLIVA.

was wounded on the right side, the truncheon of Palmerins Lance being left in his body. Notwithstanding hee recovered himselfe quickly, and came furiously towards Palmerin, and gaue him such a cruell stroke on the head, as the blood beganne to trickle downe his face: which when hee perceiued, and how it stode him in hand now to bee victorious, hee requited Mordano with so sound a greeting, as he parted one of his armes quite from his body, and astonished him likewise that hee fell to the ground: but recovering himselfe, he ranne towards the Castle, and Palmerin after him. The Seruants of the Castle, seeing their Lords Sonne in such danger, with Iauelins and other weapons came against Palmerin, whom they had murdered, if Prolome and the two Knights that were sent with him, had not speedily come from their close ambush to defend him: and so manfully did they behaue themselves, as they droue them into the base Court, where Mordano fell dead at Prolomes fete, who deferring no time, presently with his Sword toke his head from his shoulders. The seruants this seeing, dispeaced themselves and ranne into corners, so that Palmerin and his company had nobody left to resist them, some lying there wounded to the death, and other escaping forth at a backe Gate, which they made fast after them, leaue they should be followed. When Palmerin sawe all things fall out so effectually, hee called for the Damosell and the Knights that came with him, who being not a little glad of this great good fortune, desired first to seeke for Esmerinda their Ladies Daughter, for they were well assured that shee was in the Castle. Search in euery place, quoth hee: and because the night drew on, the Gates were made fast, & there they determined to lodge for that night. In the meane while, the Damosell went about the Castle, and neere the Giants Chamber shee found Esmerinda, who immediately knowing her, came running and caught her louingly about the necke: for before, (not knowing that her companie had conquered the Castle) shee and three other Women that kept

THE HISTORIE

kept her companie, were greatly feared, but now the Damofell gaue her perfect assurance, that all was done for her deliuerie, and by the onely knight for proweſſe in the world, whom her Lady Mother had thus ſent thither. As they continued this talke, Palmerin came to them, before whom the young Gentlewoman Efmerinda humbled her ſelfe on her knees: but hee taking her up, embraced her with theſe ſpeeches. Prettie ſoule, your Lady mother hath great deſire to ſee you, will not you goe with vs to her? Sir knight, quoth ſhe, I neuer in my life deſired any thing more, then to ſee my Mother: but I greatly doubt that the falſe Darmaco will make vs by the way, for hee went this morning to the funerall of one of his Siſters, and it will bee to morrowe before his returne, when if he hap to meete vs, we are but dead. Let mee deale for that good Lady, ſayd Palmerin: I haue already killed the Sonne, I doubt not but this ſmall practiſe will make mee doe as much to the Father. While Palmerin and Ptolome thus deuised with Efmerinda, the Damofell and Urbanillo had provided Supper, which being ended they went to reſt, expecting the morning, when they prepared the woman to horſe-backe: and hauing taken what them beſt liked out of the Caſtle, they ſet fire on the reſt, and ſo tooke their way towards the ſorrowfull Widow: who expecting good tydings, continued in earneſt and deuoute Prayers, that the good knight might overcome her blood-thirſty enemy, and returne with victory, and her Daughter Efmerinda.

CHAP.

OF PALMERIN D'OLIVA.

CHAP. XXIII.

How Palmerin running with his companie to the Ladies Caſtle, happened to meete with the Giant Darmaco, who loſt his life in Combat with Palmerin.



Thus rode Palmerin and his companie very ioyfull of their good fortune, eſpecially Efmerinda, about all the reſt: but this pleaſant humour laſtes not long, for ſhe had eſpied Darmaco coming forth of a wood, hauing with him his wife and ſome well appointed knights: whereat the young Lady was ſo affrighted, as ſhe cryed out, ſaying: O God, hold aſide we all caſt away. At which words the other women beganne to diſcourage themſelues: and ſeeing the Giant ſo nere, knewe not whether they were beſt to goe forward or backe againe: whereupon Palmerin ſayde to Ptolome, I pray the good friend, while I fight with Darmaco, doe you and theſe two knights deale with the reſt: in the meane while, I thinke it good that my Dwarf Urbanillo conuay theſe Ladies into the thickeſt of the wood. He had no ſoner thus ſayd, but they beheld the Giant make apace towards them, who not thinking what had happened, yet ſeeing ſaue Efmerinda ſo deliuered, in wonderfull rage, not taking either ſword or ſhield with him, hee ranne towards Palmerin, who entertained him ſo ſoudly on the head with his falchion, as this Giant tumbled forth of his ſaddle, hanging in his ſtirrop by the left foote, and was no way able to recover himſelfe.

The

The Hare feeling his Maister from his backe, and his burthen to weigh ouer heauie on his side, the Giants sote likewise tickling him in the flanke, began to course about, and to beate his Maister with his sote every way he could reach him, when Palmerin on the other side laid him on such strokes, as at length he sent his soule to the diuels, the patrons of his villainous life. Now thought Palmerin he had no more to doe, but goe helpe his companions against the other knights, wherein hee was deceiued, for the Giantesse to reuenge her Husbands death, gaue so cruell a stroke at Palmerin with her Husbands Pace, as had hee not shrunke aside she had slaine him, and so continued more like a Lyon then a Woman, redoubling stroke after stroke: which forced Palmerin for safegard of himselfe, seeing no meanes or persuasions could preuaile with her, to send her packing after her Husband. Ptolome and his knights had dealt so well with the rest, as on the coming of Palmerin they had dispatched them all, if fresh supply had not come to them, as you shall heare more anon.

The Lady of the Castle Mother to Esmerinda, so sone as Palmerin departed thence towarde the Giant, sent to seeke a young Gentleman named Crispino, to whom shee promised her Daughter in marriage, if so be she could recouer her againe out of the Giants power: who staying not long after this message, made haste to the Castle, the Lady entertaining him in this manner. Not long since, my good friend, there departed hence a knight, who intendes to reuenge my wrongs on the Giant Darmaco, and because I knowe not to what ende this enterprise will sort, I pray you Arme you, and take tenne of your hardiest men with you, to helpe the good knight if he should be distressed. Crispino sone consented to this motion, and in his way towards the Castle, it was his chaunce to meete with the Dwarfes and the Ladies that fledde into the wood. It is not to demaund how pleasing this sight was to him, beholding Esmerinda whom hee loued as himselfe: of whom he deman-

ded where their company was, and shee reported in what state they left them at time of their flight. Whereupon hee commaunded five of his men to guide the Ladies to a kinsmans house of his that was neere at hand, and hee with the rest of his traine galloped to the place, where Palmerin, Ptolome, and the Ladies two knights encountred with the fresh supply that came to Darmacos men. Hee was no soner arrived, but hee beheld Palmerin and Ptolome wounded very sore, and one of the Ladies knights slaine among the rest, which moued him and his men to bestirre themselves: so that (short tale to make) the Giants men were all vanquished in the end, and then Crispino declared to Palmerin, how hee had sent Esmerinda and the Ladies to his Cousins house not farre off, whither if it pleased him to walke, hee should receiue what courtesie could be performed on so suddaine warning, in respect of the happy fortune the whole Countrey should finde by him, being thus deliuered of Darmaco and his Sonne, but aboue all, for the safetie of his best beloued Esmerinda. Thus rode they together with Crispino, whose Cousin made them very gracious welcome, reioycing greatly at this happy victorie: and afterward they set forward to the good Widowes, Crispino by the way reporting to Palmerin his loue to Esmerinda, and howe her Mother had promised him her in marriage, desiring him to assist the matter that it might be finished: which hee promised to doe, and so at length they came to the Castle, where when the Lady sawe her Daughter, and heard how her chiefest enemies were slaine, it is hard to expresse her exceeding ioy, which her cheerefull countenance somewhat made manifest, welcomming Palmerin with these wordes. Ah gentle knight, how might I be able while I liue to recompence this inestimable fauour: the comfort of mine age, and my oppressed soule haue you brought me, may neuer haernes befall so good a knight. Ladie, quoth he, giue the prayse to God, as for mee, iudge if I haue bene as good as my promise to your Daunsell or no: and

THE HISTORIE

and if there be any thing else to doe, Lady I am ready now to performe it. You haue done so much for me, sayde shee, as nothing remaineth more to be desired; vntill of your bounty you will cause mee to receiue what the Giant took from me by force: for seeing hee is dead, they that with-helde it from mee, will now willingly restore it againe. That shall be likewise accomplished, quoth Palmerin: but because hee and Ptolome were fore wounded, as you heard, they stayed to be cured; and sent Crispino with his Cousin and a good sufficient traine, to demaunde the Ladies Castle and her goods. They that held it of the Giant, vnderstanding his death, made present deliuerance thereof; and committed themselves to the Ladies mercie: whither shee sent her Daughter, so soon as Palmerin and Ptolome were healed, to whom the Subjects bowed their faith and allegiance, and with great Triumphes honoured the marriage of Crispino and Esmerinda. On the morrowe, as the knight sate at meate, there entered the Hall a Squire, who sayd to Palmerin, that a Damofell stayed without to speake with him. Let her come in, quoth he, and say her pleasure. The Squire bringing her into the Hall, shee fell on her knees before Palmerin, saying, Sir knight, doe you not knowe mee? No in good sooth, answered Palmerin. Belieue mee (quoth the Damofell) then hath my seruice bene euill employed which sometime I did you, and whereof I am sure you haue heard good account. Then Palmerin knew her (shee bringing the Sheldie and the Helmet when Florandos knighted him) whereupon hee rose from the Table, and embracing her, said. Faire Damofell and my friend, I pray you pardon me, for the length of time since I first sawe you, did quite exempt you from my remembrance: pleaseth it you to commaund mee any seruice? Sir knight, sayd the Damofell, when I presented you the Helmet and Sheldie, wherewith you took your order of knighthode, you promised mee (if you remember) that you would vse it with right good will, in any affaires the knight had that sent it you, and when

OF PALMERIN D'OLIVA.

he should require such performance: now is the time to confirm your deede with your word; for he hath sent me to you with humble intreatie, that without any stay you goe where I shall conduct you, otherwise you are the onely cause of his death. God sheld me from such misfortune, said Palmerin, rather would I goe with you presently from the Table. So doe I pray you (quoth shee) for I haue haste. Then hee called for his Armour, and the Table withdrawne, he went into his Chamber to Arme himselfe, and so did Ptolome also: returning, they took their leaue of the Ladies and mounted on horsebacke, the whole company being so sorrie for their departure, as Esmerinda came to the Damofell, saying. I promise you Damofell, you haue done vs wrong in mine opinion, to hinder vs of the presence of so good a knight. Lady, answered the Damofell, thinke you he was bozne for you onely? content your selfe with the good you haue receiued by him, and suffer such as haue neede of his proweesse, to receiue his assistance as you haue done. And good reason, said Esmerinda, if it be to so good an end, that no resistance be offered when helpe is required. So departed the two knights with the Damofell which way she guided them, and very desirous was Palmerin to be with the knight that sent to seek him: because he would gladly know, of whence he was that wished him so well, as his message declared by the Damofell the same day he was knighted.

H

CHAP.

THE HISTORIE

kept her companie, were greatly feared, but now the Damosell gaue her perfect assurance, that all was done for her deliuerie, and by the onely knight for prolesse in the world, whom her Lady Mother had thus sent thither. As they continued this talke, Palmerin came to them, before whom the young Gentlewoman Esmerinda humbled her selfe on her knees: but hee taking her vp, embraced her with these speeches. Prettie soule, your Lady mother hath great desire to see you, will not you goe with vs to her: Sir knight, quoth she, I neuer in my life desired any thing more, then to see my Mother: but I greatly doubt that the false Darmaco will mæte vs by the way, for hee went this morning to the funerall of one of his Sisters, and it will bee to morrowe before his returne, when if he hap to mæte vs, we are but dead. Let mee deale for that good Lady, sayd Palmerin: I haue already killed the Sonne, I doubt not but this small practise will make mee doe as much to the Father. While Palmerin and Prolome thus deuised with Esmerinda, the Damosell and Urbanillo had prouided Supper, which being ended they went to rest, expecting the morning, when they prepared the woman to horse-backe: and having taken what them best liked out of the Castle, they set fire on the rest, and so toke their way towards the sorrowfull Wittow: who expecting good tydings, continued in earnest and deuoute Prayers, that the good knight might overcome her blood-thirsty enemy, and returne with victory, and her Daughter Esmerinda.

CHAP.

OF PALMERIN DOLIVA.

CHAP. XXIII.

How Palmerin running with his companie to the Ladies Castle, happened to meete with the Giant Darmaco, who lost his life in Combat with Palmerin.



Thus rode Palmerin and his company very ioyfull of their good fortune, especially Esmerinda, above all the rest: but this pleasant humour lasted not long, for she had espied Darmaco coming forth of a wood, hauing with him his wife and tenne well appointed knights: whereat the young Lady was so affrighted, as she cryed out, saying: O God, now are we all cast away. At which words the other women beganne to discourage themselves, and seeing the Giant so neere, knewe not whether they were best to goe forward or backe againe: whereupon Palmerin sayde to Prolome, I pray the good friend, while I fight with Darmaco, doe you and these two knights deale with the rest: in the meane while, I thinke it good that my Worthy Urbanillo should these Ladies into the thickest of the wood. He had no sooner thus said, but they beheld the Giant make apace towards them, who not thinking what had happened, yet seeing faire Esmerinda so deliuered, in wonderfull rage, not taking either Sword or Shilde with him, hee ranne to assault Palmerin, who entertained him so soundly on the head with his fist, that as this Giant tumbled forth of his saddle, hanging in his stirrop by the left foote, and was no way able to recover himselfe.

The

The Boye feeling his Maister from his backe, and his burthen to weigh ouer heauie on his side, the Giants foot likewise tickling him in the flankes, began to coule about, and to beate his Maister with his foot euery way he could reach him, when Palmerin on the other side laid him on such strokes, as at length he sent his soule to the diuels, the patrons of his villanous life. Pain thought Palmerin he had no more to doe, but goe helpe his companions against the other knights, wherein he was deceiued, for the Giantesse to reuenge her Husbands death, gaue so cruell a stroke at Palmerin with her Husbands Pace, as had he not shrunke aside she had slaine him, and so continued more like a Lyon then a Woman, redoubling stroke after stroke: which forced Palmerin for safegard of himselfe, seeing no meanes or persuasions could preuaile with her, to send her packing after her Husband. Prolome and his knights had dealt so well with the rest, as on the coming of Palmerin they had dispatched them all, if fresh supply had not come to them, as you shall heare more anon.

The Lady of the Castle Mother to Esmerinda, so soone as Palmerin departed thence towarde the Giant, sent to seeke a young Gentleman named Crispino, to whom she promised her Daughter in marriage, if so be she could reouer her againe out of the Giants power: who staying not long after this message, made haste to the Castle, the Lady entertaining him in this manner. Not long since, my good friend, there departed hence a knight, who intended to reuenge my wrongs on the Giant Darmaco, and because I knowe not to what end this enterprise will sort, I pray you Arme you, and take tenne of your hardiest men with you, to helpe the good knight if he should be distressed. Crispino soone consented to this motion, and in his way towarde the Castle, it was his chaunce to meete with the Dwarfes and the Ladies that fledde into the wood. It is not to demaund how pleasing this sight was to him, beholding Esmerinda whom he loued as himselfe: of whom he deman-

ded where their company was, and shee reported in what state they left them at time of their flight. Whereupon he commaunded five of his men to guide the Ladies to a kinsmans house of his that was nere at hand, and hee with the rest of his traine galloped to the place, where Palmerin, Prolome, and the Ladies two knights encountred with the fresh supply that came to Darmacos men. He was no sooner arrived, but he beheld Palmerin and Prolome wounded very sore, and one of the Ladies knights slaine among the rest, which moued him and his men to bestirre themselves: so that (short tale to make) the Giants men were all vanquished in the end, and then Crispino declared to Palmerin, how he had sent Esmerinda and the Ladies to his Cousins house not farre off, whether if it pleased him to walke, hee should receiue what courtesie could be performed on so suddaine warning, in respect of the happy fortune the whole Countrey should finde by him, being thus deliuered of Darmaco and his Sonne, but aboue all, for the safetie of his best beloued Esmerinda. Thus rode they together with Crispino, whose Cousin made them very gracious welcome, reioycing greatly at this happy victorie: and afterward they set forward to the good Widowes, Crispino by the way reporting to Palmerin his loue to Esmerinda, and howe her Mother had promised him her in marriage, desiring him to assist the matter that it might be finished, which he promised to doe, and so at length they came to the Castle, where when the Lady sawe her Daughter, and heard how her chiefest enemies were slaine, it is hard to expresse her exceeding ioy, which her cheerefull countenance somewhat made manifest, welcomming Palmerin with these wordes. Ah gentle knight, how might I be able while I liue to recompence this inestimable fauour: the comfort of mine age, and my oppressed soule haue you brought me, may neuer hartes befall so good a knight. Ladie, quoth he, giue the prayse to God, as for mee, iudge if I haue bene as good as my promise to your Dauidell or no?

THE HISTORIE

and if there be any thing else to doe, Lady I am ready now to performe it. You haue done so much for me, sayde shee, as nothing remaineth more to be desired, unlesse of your bounty you will cause me to receiue what the Giant took from me by force: for seeing hee is dead, they that with-helde it from me, will now willingly restore it againe. That shall be likewise accomplished, quoth Palmerin: but because hee and Ptolome were sore wounded, as you heard, they stayed to be cured; and sent Crispino with his Cousin and a good sufficient traine, to beleaguere the Ladies Castle and her gods. They that held it of the Giant, vnderstanding his death, made present deliuerance thereof; and committed themselves to the Ladies mercies: whither shee sent her Daughter, so soone as Palmerin and Ptolome were healed, to whom the Subiects bowed their faith and allegiance, and with great Triumphes honoured the marriage of Crispino and Elmerinda. On the morrowe, as the knight sate at meate, there entred the Hall a Squire, who sayd to Palmerin, that a Damosell stayed without to speake with him. Let her come in, quoth he, and say her pleasure. The Squire bringing her into the Hall, shee fell on her knees before Palmerin, say- ing, Sir knight, doe you not knowe mee? No in good sooth, answered Palmerin. Beloue mee (quoth the Damosell) then hath my seruice bene euill imployed which sometime I did you, and whereof I am sure you haue heard good account. When Palmerin knew her (shee bringing the Sheldie and the Helinet when Florendos knighted him) whereupon hee rose from the Table, and embracing her, said. Faire Damosell and my friend, I pray you pardon me, for the length of time since I first sawe you, did quite exempt you from my remembrance: please it you to command mee any seruice? Sir knight, sayd the Damosell, when I presented you the Helinet and Sheldie, wherewith you took your order of knighthode, you promised mee (if you remember) that you would vse it with right good will, in any affaires the knight had that sent it you, and when

OF PALMERIN D'OLIVA.

he should require such performance: now is the time to confirme your deede with your word; for he hath sent me to you with humble intreatie, that without any stay you goe where I shall conduct you, otherwise you are the onely cause of his death. God sheld me from such misfortune, said Palmerin, rather would I goe with you presently from the Table. So doe I pray you (quoth shee) for I haue haste. Then hee called for his Armour, and the Table withdrawne, he went into his Chamber to Arme himselfe, and so did Ptolome also: returning, they took their leaue of the Ladies and mounted on horsebacke, the whole company being so sorrie for their departure, as Elmerinda came to the Damosell, saying. I promise you Damosell, you haue done vs wrong in mine opinion, to hinder vs of the presence of so good a knight. Lady, answered the Damosell, thinke you he was borne for you onely: content your selfe with the good you haue receiued by him, and suffer such as haue neede of his proweesse, to receiue his assistance as you haue done. And good reason, said Elmerinda, if it be to so good an end, that no resistance be offered when helpe is required. So departed the two knights with the Damosell which way she guided them, and very desirous was Palmerin to be with the knight that sent to sake him: because he would gladly know, of whence he was that wished him so well, as his message declared by the Damosell the same day he was knighted.

H

C H A P.

THE HISTORIE

CHAP. XXII.

How Palmerin and Pcolome arriued at the Court of the King of Bohemia, where they entred Combat against the Countie of Ormeque and his two Couzins, who accused the Knight and his Sonne of treason, that sent to seeke Palmerin.



Any miles had these knights rid with the Damsell, when Palmerin at length desired her to tell him, what hee was that sent him the helmet and the shield: whereto she answered, that seeing he was so desirous to know, listen, quoth she, and I shall report the whole vnto you. The knight wee speake of, is descended of very royall blood, being Uncle to the King of Bohemia that raignes at this present, as also to the Emperesse of Allemaigne, the very best sone in Pegromancie this day liuing. This noble man is named Prince Adrian, who neuer liked to lue in the Court of the King his Brother, but contented with what patrimonie his father left him, at length married with a very beautiful Lady, of whom in time he begot a Sonne named Dyardo, which Sonne his Brother the King of Bohemia, nourished vp in his Court with his owne Sonne. So mutually in loue agreed these two young Princes, as after the death of the aged King, the young Dyardo should ioyntly rule with his Cousin the King: who toke to wife the Daughter to the Duke of Lorayne, bringing her with him into this Countrey, in company of her Sister, a Princess so wise and

vertu

OF PALMERIN DE'OLIVA.

vertuous as euer liued. It so came to passe, that Dyardo my Lords most noble Sonne, framing his thoughts to the inspirations of loue, affected so highly the other Sister, as hee determined neuer to haue any other to his Wife, if hee might compasse what hee intended. For her good Lady, hee could not be deceiued in his amorous desires, hee found her loue so equall with his, yet did they shadow their affections so discreetly, as none could perceiue them, but Domarto the trayterous Countie of Ormeque, one of the best knights in all that Countrey, were he as familiar with vertue and honesty, as he is with malice and disloyaltie. This Traytour enterprised to match with the Quenes Sister, beloued as you haue heard by my Lords worthy Sonne, and thereupon after many sollicitings, made knowne his intent vnto her, wherof she made so slender account, as shee forbade him any more to trouble her. Domarto seeing my Lord Dyardo his onely hinderance in loue, intended a malicious villanie, and on a suddaine accused the Prince, that hee intended to poison the King, so to obtaine a Crowne, as descended of a nearer consanguinitie. And as it often falleth out in such cases, when one seekes to crosse an others fortune, there is no time slackt in following such drifts: euen so this Traytour, finding the yong King alone, began his matter in this colourable sort. O ye gracious Lord, the faith and alleageance I owe to your Highnesse, binde me to make your Princely eares acquainted with such newes, as, God is my witnesse, sayde the Traytour (lifting his eyes and hands to heauen) mine onely death were more welcome to mee, such is the loue I beare them whom it concernes, being all so nere allied to you in birth, as sorrie am I they should be detected: but in your regard my gracious Lord, the action touching you in such sort as it doth, let mee die rather then spare any liuing creature, no not mine owne Sonne, had nature giuen mee any. This needlesse exordium haue I made to so foule an occasion, albeit truth needs no colours or eloquent figures: and therefore in briebe my Lord, this is the summe, I am

THE HISTORIE

credibly enformed, that your Highnesse Cousin the Prince Dyardo, and Madame Cardonia Sister of the Quene, haue laide the platforme to poyson your Maestie, and this haue they attempted, by the procurement of olde Adrian your Uncle, who pretends that the Crowne of Bohemia is his. I know not whether it be for want of discretion or no: but howsoever it be my Lord, you should not leave such a villanie unpunished. The King began greatly to meruaile at the newes, and knew not well what to thinke: whereupon hee answered the Countie, that hee could not beleue this accusation. But the Traytour set so smother a countenance on the matter, and did auerre it still with such stout protestations, as hee induced the King to beleue him: so that a day or two after, the King being walking in his Garden, seeing Dyardo and Cardonia at the Quenes Chamber window, secretly conferring of their amorous affections, commanded them both to be carried to prison. The Countie glad thereof, prouoked the King still with such anger against them, as immediately hee would haue them both done to death: but that the Quene and the Lords of his Counsell, found meanes to qualifie his displeasure, declaring what discredit his Highnesse should receiue, if he did not suffer them to be openly conuicted of their offences. All this while good Princes, were they ignorant of this defection, till at length the King discoursed the whole matter to them, and likewise who was their accuser: nor did the Countie faile to maintaine his words openly, offering to make it good in fight, against any that durst say the contrary: and because he had two Cousins, hardie and valiant knights, conspiratours likewise in this faction, there could be none found that would enter the Combat against them. Which when the noble Prince Adrian vnderstode, very grieue had wellnere slaine him, in respect he had no Childe but this Dyardo, as also for that hee was accused with that he neuer thought. Whereupon he went presently to the King his Nephew, and preuailed so well with him, as he obtained the space of two

Moneths,

OF PALMERIN DOLIVA.

Moneths, to bring with him one or two that might maintaine the innocencie of him, his Sonne Dyardo, and the Princesse Cardonia, against the Traytour Domarto and his Cousins. And this is the cause he sent mee to seeke you forth, in hope that you are as much his friend as hee is yours, which you may somewhat perceiue, by the friendly presents hee sent you by mee to Macedon. So helpe mee God, said Palmerin, you haue reported a most strange discourse, and neuer did I thinke, that such treason could enter the thoughts of any knight, or other inferiour person. All this is true, quoth the Damosel, and it is appointed that the Prince Dyardo, with his aged and crazed father, shall defend their owne causes, without seeking helpe of any other: but he neuer as yet receiued the order of knighthood, and therefore is constrained to desire your assikance. And that shall I doe with all my heart, said Palmerin, would God wee were there where hee expecteth vs, for the desire I haue to see him, as also to vnderstand what hee knowes of my following fortunes. Those matters are hid from mee, quoth she, yet this haue I heard him say diuers times, being in talke of you, that he accounted you the most honourable knight in the world: and that if he euer chaunced to see you, he would aduise you to goe to the Emperour of Allemaignes Court, to be the knightly seruant to the Princesse Polinarda. When Palmerin heard the name of Polinarda, hee remembered that it was her name, whom hee had so many times seene in his traunces, for which cause hee asked of the Damosell, what the Lady was of whom she spake? By Lord, quoth she, Polinarda is Daughter to the Emperour, and piece vnto my Lord Adrian, the most beautifull Princesse that euer eye beheld. By my faith, said Palmerin, the more easily may I be induced to graunt her my seruice, and therefore intend I to trauaile, when I haue finished your Lords business. So rode they with much more haste then before, till at length they came to the Citie of Almedya, where the King remained, and the Prince Adrian expecting Palmerins

THE HISTORIE

coming: which when hee heard, hee came to meete him,
 each embracing other with meruailous courtesie, and the
 good olde man with the teares in his eyes, thus said. Ah good
 knight, what may counteruaile this your exceeding paines,
 to maintaine the right of my Sonne and mee, who are
 falsely accused of such villanous treason, as (on the perill
 of my soule) wee neuer did imagine: Theretof am I cer-
 tainly perswaded, answered Palmerin, and therefore am I
 come to enter the Combate with him, that dare affirme o-
 therwise. Mine olde age, quoth Adrian, might excuse mee
 henceforth from bearing Armes, but being unable to en-
 dure so vilde a slander, so long as life and soule will holde
 together, shall I doe my deuoir: so please your companion
 to make the second, as olde as I am I will be the third, for
 the trayterous Count hath two of his Cousins that take part
 with him. And if my fortune so fall out as I die in this try-
 all, I shall receiue my lot very contentedly, if mine eyes
 might first behold mine iniurie reuenged. I pray you, said
 Palmerin, goe presently to the King, to the ende that his
 Highnesse may graunt vs the field, for my friend and I
 thinke long till we haue made your accuser know his trea-
 cherie. Adrian immediately went to the King, and on his
 knees thus began. My Lord, you knowe that the Count
 of Ormeque hath accused me, my Sonne Dyardo, and Ma-
 dame Cardonya, of the crime of Lesa Maiestatis, and in
 that wee all are innocent, I am ready to maintaine, that he
 hath falsely and maliciously belied vs, which I my selfe
 will approue vpon him, or two moze with mee, against him
 and his Cousins, if they dare enter the field with him in
 this quarrell, where wee will either make knowne their vil-
 lanie, or receiue the reward belongs to disloyall Traytours.
 As for the wrong which you (my Lord) haue done mee, be-
 ing your vncle, and my Sonne Dyardo your Cousin ger-
 maine, that I referre to God to recompence, and to the bet-
 ter knowledge you shall receiue of mee heereafter, being
 now so olde to be a Traytour, and my Sonne to louing
 to

OF PALMERIN DE OLIVA.

to proued disloyall. The King was abashed to heare his vnc-
 cle speake so audaciously, doubting now whether hee should
 giue credite to what had beene reported, especially against
 him, so neere his Highnesse in blood, who so liberally offered
 to enter the Combat: notwithstanding his white head and
 aged body made him vnfit for such actions, wherefore hee
 thus answered. Good vncle, impute not mee any thing
 faultie in your accusation, and that the proofe shall mani-
 fest that must be made. The Counte being present, was
 stricken in a quandary at these wordes, and gladly hee would
 haue denied this former slander, but hee could finde no way
 cleanly to doe it: wherefore seeing of force hee must needs
 enter the Combat, he boldly fell on his knees before the King
 with these wordes. My Lord, what I haue saide is verie
 certaine, and most true it is, that by the counsell of Prince
 Adrian heere present, his Sonne prauided with Lady Car-
 donia, to poyson you, that hee might be King, which to make
 good, there is my gage, on the behalfe of my selfe and my
 Cousins. Thou liest Traytour in thy throat, said olde Adri-
 an, I take thine offer: and as hee would haue gone on with
 further speeches, Palmerin stept before the King, saying.
 Most worthy Lord, seeing the effect of the wordes must be put
 in execution, which haue bene heere spoken on both sides
 before your Maiestie: may it please you the Prince Dyar-
 do and Lady Cardonia may bee sent for, to take with vs
 their oathes as in such cases is required, and in meane time
 let each one goe put himselfe in equipage for the Combat.
 Good reason saide the King, and presently hee commaunded
 the Princes to be brought, who being come, Palmerin de-
 maunded where they were that tooke part with the Count:
 whereupon hee presented his Cousins, the one named
 Edron, proud and arrogant, and the other Edward, of selfe
 same quality. These two tooke their oathes with the Count,
 that the Princes accused, conspired the Kings death, in
 such sort as hath beene before declared: and olde Adrian,
 Dyardo, and faire Cardonia sware the contrarie. But it is

THE HISTORIE

true, and I will not denie it (said the Prince Dyardo) that I haue and doe loue Lady Cardonia, as much or rather more then mine owne selfe, yet neuer did I carry any other intent, but to request her in holy wedlocke, so pleased the King and Quene to like so well thereof as we could. But that euer I intended treason or villany, it is most false, and Count thou liest in thy throat, and thy copartners that haue woꝛne with thee. It is sufficient, said Palmerin: but my good Lord, quoth he to the King, if we be conquerers, the accused shall be deliuered, and the accusers hanged: What say you Counte, said the King: Good reason Sir, the like doe we request if we be victors. Will you (said Palmerin) that each shall helpe his felloꝛ as he findes it conuenient: What else said the Count, that is expedient. While this talke endured, Edron regarded so well Palmerin, that hee espied the Sword which the Damosell carried in the Casket, and brought to that Court as she did to others, which shewing the Count, hee said out aloud. Where did the deuils finde this knight to giue him this Sword: Belike they gaue him strength to draw it out, else hee might haue failed as many other did: the Damosell was vnwise to bestow it in such bad sort. At which words Palmerin being angry, returned Edron this round answere. I see (knight) there is in thee more brauerie and foolish glory then manly action, thou blamest me before thou knowest me, but ere you and I part, Ile finde better reason to bestow on you, and beate better gouernment into your pate with this sword that likes you not. This caused euery one wishly to behold Palmerin, the King remembꝛing that he had sene the Sword, which none in his Court could deserue to conquer: whereupon he esteemed so well of Palmerin, as he commanded Edron to silence, and all to goe arme themselves, because he intended that day to see the Combat fought.

CHAP.

OF PALMERIN DOLIVA.

CHAP. XXV.

How Palmerin, Adrian, and Ptolome entred the Combat, against the Counte of Ormeque and his Cousins, whom they honourably vanquished.



After the King had commaunded the knights to goe arme themselves, he gaue charge to foure of his ancientest knights to see the field provided, and there to place the Judges, according to the wonted custome in Bohemia: the knights being carefull of the Kings commaundement had sone prepared all things in readinesse, wheretoꝛe the King, his Lords, Ladies and Gentlewomen, went to see the issue of this valiant enterprise. Then was the Prince Dyardo and faire Cardonya brought into the field, before whom was made a very great fire, wherein they should be burned, if the count conquered. Sone after came the fire Combatants, who entred at two places appointed one against the other, the Challengers being conducted by two of the Judges to their place, and the defendants by the other two where they were appointed: so the Judges being placed, the Marshall summones the field, and the Heraldos bid the Champions doe their endeavour.

Palmerin had good regard to Edron, whose wordes sticking on his stomacke, called now for reuenge, wheretoꝛe couching his Launce, hee encountred him with such a full carriere, as his Launce passed through his body, and Edron tumbled dead to the ground. In the meane while the Count and Prince Adrian had vnhusled each other, Adrian so sore wounded

THE HISTORIE

wounded as he could hardly helpe himselfe: as for Ptolome and Edward, they had assailed each other with falles from their Horses, but they recovered themselves quickly, and with sharpe strokes beganne to charge each other valiantly. Greatly ashamed was the Countie to bee unhorsed, and therefore to recover his honour, hee came with great furie towards his enemy: which Palmerin perceiuing, kept betwene them, saying. To me Countie, to me, who will bid more for thy head then any in the field. With which words he reached him such a sure stroke on the head, as made the fire flye forth of his eyes: notwithstanding, as a man of good courage, he kept aside, and thrusting his sword into Palmerins Horse throate, enforced him quickly to take him to his fate: but all the worse for him as it fell out afterwards, for Palmerin hauing beaten him out of breath, he flung away his weapon, and caught him about the middle, where they tugged so long together, that Palmerin getting him downe, and his knees on his belly, with his sword some took his head from his shoulders. All this while Ptolome had good play with his enemy, and after many dangerous wounds receiued on either side, at length hee had the better of the day by killing his aduersarie. Then hee and Palmerin went to the Judges, who giuing them sentence of honorable victory, they took off their Helmes, and came to see in what estate the Prince Adrian was. Euill enough (quoth he) my noble good friends, but the lesse account doe I make of my life, in that mine eyes haue seene due vengeance on mine enemies. Then was he nobly borne forth of the field, the King commaunding to lodge him in his owne Palace, and the Chirurgions searching his wounds, found them mortall, which newes did grieue the whole Court ingenerall: the good olde Prince yet being of some courage, was ioyfull to dye in so good sort, hauing defended his owne honour and his Sonnes, whome hee sent for, and in the presence of all the standers by, saide. My Sonne, seeing it hath pleased God thus to send for mee, good reason

is

OF PALMERIN D'OLIVA.

is that his will be fulfilled, but ere I depart, this I command thee, that (next God) thou truly serue and loue my Lord and King, bearing towards him a heart so faithfull, as I haue done to the houre of my death: and conceiue no offence at what hath passed betwene thee and mee: hauing come to passe (as I iudge) more by euill counsell, then any settled perswasion against vs. For the rest, to thy bittermost remember the good thou hast this day receiued by that noble Knight, who is called Palmerin: then calling Palmerin to him, he said. Say Palmerin, Death seized so surely on mee, as I cannot let you know a number of things that concerne you very nersely: I counsell you therefore to trauell to the Emperours Court of Allemaigne, where you shall heare tydings of that you seek so earnestly. With which words he deliuered vp his ghost. And because it seemeth good, ere I passe any further, to let you knowe how the Prince Adrian came by the knowledge of Palmerin, thus it is;

I haue heretofore reported, that he was a notable Cabalist or Magician: by meanes whereof few secrets were concealed from him: so casting his Kalender of most honorable Wyths, he happened on Palmerin: and perceiuing the high Fortune he was borne to, chiefly, that he should proue a most notable Knight, and the greatest Lord in Europe: hee was desirous to contract a Marriage betwene him and his niece Polinarda, presenting her to him in his visions, as hath bene declared. Hee thus deceasing, the King highly discontented at his Uncles hard fortune, caused him to be buried in most sumptuous manner: making him a Tombe in forme of a Pyramides, the most excellēt and stately that euer was in Bohemia, and ouer against him were hanged the bodies of Count and his two Cousins, for his Trophie. Thus euery thing quieted, and the funerals of the Prince Adrian solemnized, Palmerin would presently haue departed toward Allemaigne: but Ptolomes wounds were so dangerous, as hee was constrained to stay longer then hee intended, In the mean space the King did them all the hono^r that could be

done

THE HISTORIE

denied, in hope to stay them still in his Court, but it was impossible, for Palmerin told him he must needs go to the Emperour, about affaires of very great importance. I know your meaning well enough (saide the King,) you intend to goe combat with the Enchanted Knight: and in so doing you shall lose both your paines and your life, as many others haue done before you.

What Enchanted Knight is it (saide Palmerin: on my faith (my Lord) I neuer heard any one talke of him but you, When wil I see, (qd. the King) since I haue begun the matter. Not long since in the Countrey of the Emperour my Uncle, in the Citie of Ymanes, dwelled a wealthy Knight, who had a faire Daughter, amorous of a Gentleman: and they loue kept so secret as none knewe it but themselves. It so fell out, that her Father married her to another Gentleman in his house, but for any good acceptation, or cheerefull countenance of the Gentle-woman, the Wyde-grome could haue none, so highly esteemed shee her first Loue: and continued in opinion towards him so firme, as shee graunted him enterance into her Chamber, at an appointed time, where he murdered her Husband, and carryed the Lady with him whither he pleased. The bruit hereof was so sone spread abroad, as the Mother of the murdered Gentleman heard thereof: Whereupon shee made her complainte to the Emperour, who immediately sent to summon the other before him: but they refusing to come, and hauing betaken themselves to a very strong Castle, were in the ende so streightly besieged, as the Lady with her loue, at length were taken, and hauing confessed the trueth of their offence, sentence was giuen on them, that they should both be burned. The Father of this Knight offender so grieued hereat, as hee went to one of his Sisters, intending neuer to see the Emperour and his Court againe. His Sister seeing him in this extremitie, (as no malice or badde inuention is comparable to a Womans) deuised to Enchant one of her Sonnes, a good & hardy Knight, in such sorte, as hee should neuer be overcome in fight, but

OF PALMERIN D'OLIVA.

with an Enchantment of greater force. Besides, shee gaue him a Bew, and a great company of empoysoned Artowes, wherewith hee should kill the Emperour and his Children, or any other whome himselfe pleased: which hee hadde not failed to haue done, but mine Uncle Adrian vnderstanding thereof, did take such carefull regard to the matter, as he could not hurt them, but many of his people: so that the Countrey is wonderfully perplexed. For hee is mounted on a Horse Enchanted as himselfe, the swiftest in pace that euer was seene, wherewith hee flies into many out-places of the Emperre, committing a thousand hatines, and cannot be stayed, for whosoeuer comes to him Armed, Knight, or Peasant, all dyes the death, and none escapes him. And that which is worst of all, it is commonly reported, that if mine Uncle will not giue him his eldest Sonne Trineus and faire Polinarda his Daughter, to doe with them what shall like his humour, hee will neuer departe the Countrey, till hee haue thoroughly ruinated it. By my Sworde (my Lord) saide Palmerin, in all my life I neuer heard so strange a tale, were I sure to dye a thousand deaths, I will fight with this Diuell, and deliuer the Countrey, if my strength will compasse it. Alas my good friende (saide the King) it would much displease mee that you should hazard your selfe in such a dangerous aduenture: for where such diuellish Enchantments are, the strength of man (how great soeuer it be) doth not preuaile: & therefore for my sake I pray you forbear. Let come what please God (saide Palmerin) for if I dye now, I shall be excused for euer hereafter. Well saue the King that hee could not change his minde, therefore he left off any further to intreate him: and so long he thought he carried for Ptolomes health, so desirous was hee to be with the Emperour, hoping that his Combat with the Enchanted Knight, would graunt him meanes to see and talke with faire Polinarda. Wherefore when his companion had gotten a litle strength, they tooke their leaue of the King and the Ladies, chiefly of the Prince Dyardo, and sayre Cardonia: who after they departed

THE HISTORIE

departure had such successe in their Loue, as with the Kings consent the Marriage was solemnized. Now are Palmerin and Ptolome on the way to Gaunt, where the Emperour made his continuall abode: the Enchaunted Knight so persecuting him, as he durst at no time come forth of his Castle.

CHAP. XXVI.

How Palmerin and Ptolome arrived at the Cittie of Gaunt, where the Emperour of Allemaigne kept his Court: and of the Combate between Palmerin and the Enchaunted Knight.



God expedition made these knights in their Journey, till at length they arrived at the Cittie of Gaunt, where the Emperour of Allemaigne then sojourned, not knowing how to depart thence, because the Enchaunted Knight watched him at all hours: our knights being thus come thither, lodged in the house of a wealthy Burgesse, where they were entertained in very honorable manner. They were no sooner dismounted from their Horses, but the whole Cittie was on a sudden by rote, and the people ranne on heapes from one place to another: which made him remember what the King of Bohemia hadde tolde him, and presently he imagined what after followed, for his Host in great feare, came running to him, saying:

Alas Sir, we are all vndone, the Enchaunted Knight hath gotten the Gates of the Cittie, and in despite of the Guard hee is entred: Wonderfull is the harme that hee will now
do,

OF PALMERIN D'OLIVA.

do, if the Prince Trineus and saye Polinarda be not reskewed. God defend such hard fortune (saide Palmerin,) rather will I fight with him, and if I dye, I shall accompany many others in vnforsunate successe. With these words he took his Launce, and galloped that way where hee hearde the tumult, which was at the Emperours Castle, where the Enchaunted Knight was, shooting his poysoned Arrows at the windowes hee chipped open. Joyfull was Palmerin to finde him in such a place, where the Lady Polinarda might give iudgement of his valour, which opinion did so renew his courage, as presently hee marched towards his Enemy, who held in his hand a persian Bowe, with an Arrow in it ready to shote, having a great sort more at his backe, in his Dwyner: he was of vnrasonable stature, yet with a countenance both sterne and couragious, all which could not dismay Palmerin, but called to him in this manner. Proud Knight, that by the ayde of Diuels and euill Spirits, hast committed monstrous cruelties: It is now time that hee whome thou seruest should haue his prey, which is the saule into endless perdition. And so without saying for an answer, hee ranne valiantly against him: but the Enchaunted Knight taking his aduantage, shot an Arrow at him so violently, as it pierced through his Armour to the bare fleshy. Palmerin hauing broken his Launce, with an Iron Face hee had, hee reached such a stroke to the Knight, as hee brake his Bowe in two pieces, and the blowe falling on the head of his Horse, made him therewithall fall dead to the ground. The Knight hauing recovered himselfe, took a Face that hung at his Saddle bowe, and came against Palmerin, who was no less on fote likewise: So layde they on loose terribly with theyr Faces, that the Emperour and his Nobles, Lordes and Ladies, hearing the strokes, came to the windowes, to see the Combat, little thinking that any one durst presume to meddle with his enemy: yet all this while the knights neuer breathed, although theyr Shields and Armours were very much mingled, and theyr bodies wounded in many places.
And

And because Palmerin sawe the fight endure so long with the
Space, he threwe it down, and tooke him to his sword, wher-
with hee did so bumbaste him about the head, as hee could
scant tell where to strike againe: but the knight on a sud-
den lifting vpp his Pace, gaue Palmerin such a stroke be-
tween the head and the shoulders, as made him stagger, and
rele to and fro amazedly: yet conning to himselfe, and see-
ing the knight faint, with his great effusion of bloud, closed
with him, and casting his legge behinde him, threwe him to
the ground, when setting his foote on him byest to keepe him
downe, with his Sworde he parted his head from his bodie.

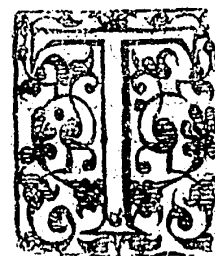
What question were it whether the Emperour reioiced
hereat or no: who for his whole Emprye would not he were
aloue againe, heeing so well deliuered from his onely enemye
in t'ye world, that could so molest him and his Countrey with
such mischieuous crueltie. And for to say sooth, the Enchan-
ted knight was altogether inuincible: nor could Palmerin
haue thus preuailed against his wonderfull Enchantments,
but that the thre Sisters of the Mountaine Artiferia high-
ly fauoured him: as you heard before what promises they
made him.

The Combate beeing thus ended, and the Enchaunted
knight dead, the Emperour (giuing thanks to God for this
victorie) set open the gates of the Castle, and came forth him-
selfe to welcome Palmerin: who kneeling on his knee be-
fore the Emperour, thus spake. Rightie Prince, such re-
solue haue I heard throughe the world of your exceeding
honor and bountie, as I haue trauelled many strange Coun-
treies, to come offer you my seruice: desiring your High-
nesse (if my lute may seeme reasonable) to accept mee hence-
forth amongst your knightly Seruants. My faire knight,
(answered the Emperour) it is for me to know of you how
I may remunerate this unspeakeable courtesie, for but by
you mine enemye had triumphed in my spoyle: so much then
is my selfe, my Children and Countrey bounden to you, as
no satisfaction is sufficient to regeatiate. So taking him by
the

the hand, and perceiuing his body wounded in many places,
hee conducted him into one of the fairest Chambers in his
Castle, where hee was vnarmed, commanding his Chi-
rurgions to take diligent care of him, because in truth they
much doubted his life. Wherefore getting him into his bed,
all needefull things for his health were applyed to him, and
no cost was spared to saue his life that preserved the whole
Countrey.

CHAP. XXVII.

How the Emperesse came to visite Palmerin, who kept his
Chamber, because hee had receiued such dangerous
wounds in the Combat with the enchanted knight, and
of the speech he had with the faire Princeesse Polinarda.



The Emperesse with her faire Daughter
Polinarda, glad of the death of the en-
chaunted knight, came to Palmerins
chamber to visite him, who hearing of
their coming, cast a night mantle a-
bout him, which the Emperour had sent
him, and came with great reuerence to
welcome them: so desirous was hee to see her, for whom hee
had traualled so many strange Regions. In this place it is
necessary that you remember, what gracious gifts the thre
fatall sisters bestowed on him, in the Mountaine Artiferia,
one of them granting him this speciall fauour, that he should
be highly esteemed of her to whom he was desiened, so soone
as he beheld him, which came to passe as here shall be decla-
red.

red. Palmerin expecting the extreame of the Emperesse and her daughter in his chamber, meeting them at the doore, falling on his knee, did with great humility kisse their hands: but the Emperesse taking him by in her armes, saluted him with these speeches. Gentle knight, right happy may we recount our felices by your coming hither, the Realme being more desolate then it hath bene sene heretofore, and not without cause, in respect of the great iniurie the knight did vs, whom you haue slaine, he hauing sworne the death of my children that neuer offended him: but God bee thanked the lot hath fallen on himselfe, which hee determined to inflict on other: for which great grace they stand so deeply bound to you as to their father that first gaue them life, which by your protection you haue happily preserved: this second gift being of no lesse account then the first, worthily may you be called their second father. Palmerin giuing eare to the Emperesse salutations, had his minde more busied in beholding Polinarda, whose daintie regard so mastered his opinions, as head, heart, thoughts and all were now set to worke: yet couertly he shap'd this answer to the Emperesse. Madame, what I haue done for you and yours, is nothing in respect of my great good will: for since the time I first had knowledge of my selfe, and before I receiued the order of knight-hood, vnderstanding of my Lord the Emperour, and what honourable entertainment was in his Court, I dedicated my seruice to him onely, and for this cause Madamo came I hither. But how is it possible Sir, said shee, that you can content your selfe to be one of his knights, your deserts being so great: Very well Madame, quoth hee, and yours too, so please your Highnesse to affoord me such fauour. With all my heart Sir, said shee, shall I entertaine you towards the Emperour, and on mine owne behalfe will prouide better for you then I will speake of: and did it like you, I would accept you for a Virgins knight here, and none other. Whereupon shee called her Daughter Polinarda, saying. Faire Daughter, this knight as yet hath little acquaintance

tance in the Court, I pray you see his entertainment may be good, because his desire is to make stay with vs, and for your owne part, looke that you intreate him well, with this request, that you accept him for your seruant, and he shall be your knight. And are you both agreed Ladies, said Palmerin: Heauen forsake mee if I refuse honour of so high account. And as they would haue proceeded on, the Emperour came in and brake off their talke, and coming to the Emperesse, said; Madame, I beseech you haue good regard to the health of this knight, and let our Chirurgions not trifle the time with him, for I perswade my selfe, that the enchanted knight with his venomd arrowes, hath wounded him with great danger inwardly, and hath besides sore brused his bodie with the weight of his Pace. But Palmerin hauing Polinarda so neere him, neither minded his wounds, or what the Emperour had spoken, his obiect more delighted, then his wounds grieved him, then the Emperour taking him by the hand, said; I pray you my deere friend to bee of good comfort, dispayre not for any thing I beseech you, and be aduised by them that haue care of your health, for you shall want nothing if my Crowne will purchase it. So departed hee and the Emperesse, with their Daughter Polinarda, whom loue had already so incircled, that shee (being yet but tender of yeeres) found herselfe so restrained of her libertie, as shee scant knew how to dissemble this suddaine affection: and from that time forward shee became so sad and pensue, as one of her Ladies, the most fauoured and familiar with her, named Brionella, Daughter to the Duke of Saxon, well perceived it, yet durst shee not presume to demaund, whence proceeded this strange alteration, but so circumspetly did shee regard the Princesse, as shee well noted the ground of her griefes. Whereupon it happened, that one time amongst other, they two being alone together, Brionella iudging that her Lady delighted to heare speech of Palmerin, now to hit the nape on the head, shee thus began. What say you Ma-

THE HISTORIE

dame, (by your fauour) of the new come knight: did you euer see a brauer and more accomplisht Gentleman? Upon my faith Madame, in mine opinion I thinke that nature hath wrought all her perfections in him, and fauoured him aboue all other knights in manhood and Chiuallrie. Ah Brionella, answered the Princesse, thou art not alone of this opinion, for I euer thought as much though I kept it in silence: would God I had as great authority ouer him, as hee already hath gotten ouer me. Is the matter so with you, saide Brionella? it should seeme you are in loue with him then. To tell thee the truth Brionella (quoth shee) I am, and did I not doubt some other hath preuented mee, I would aduenture to make him mine. In good soth Madam, said Brionella, you two being vnited together in one reciprocal league of loue, well might it bee reported the most honourable match, and of the two noblest young Princes thorough the whole world: and seeing you haue made a choise so worthy, dismay not good Madame, but procede in your determination. Thus deuised the two Ladies together on Palmerin, who was no lesse in affection for the love of Polinarda, whom hee had searched with so great paine and trauaile, and had now found with so high good fortune. If loue was so earnest with him before in his sleeping visions hauing not scene her, much more vehement was the impression now hauing her in presence. Whereupon the day following he called for his garments, and as he was making himselfe readie, the Emperour by one of his Gentlemen sent him the good morrow, desirous to vnderstand in what plight hee felt himselfe. Good Sir, answered Palmerin to the Gentleman, I beseech you doe my humble dutie to the Emperour for this great courtesie, and you may thus assure him, that (heauen be prayd) I feele my selfe in so good estate as euer I did. Which the Emperour hearing was highly contented, and sent to desire his company to the Chappell, where Palmerin (neuer before so thoroughly touched with the forcible assaults of loue) glanced so

many

OF PALMERIN DE OLIVA.

many sweet looks on the Princesse Polinarda, and breathed so many sighes, the secret Ambassadors of his heart, as it was a heauen to him to be in these passions. The Emperour and all the traine returned from the Chappell, they went to meate, and Palmerin being placed right against Polinarda, was in such fits as hee knewe not what countenance to be: for his colour went and came in such manner, as the Princesse might easily iudge the cause of his colour, whereupon shee presently presumed, that she had more interest in his thoughts then ere shee looked for. The like opinion conceiued he other, yet was no other testimony deuiered on either side, then sad countenances, the reuealers of a tormented spirit. Thus continued these two louers, till the Tables were withdrawne, and then the Lords and Ladies fell to dauncing, in which delight and diuers other, the whole day was spent, till the Emperesse and her Ladies departing to their Chambers, the good night on all sides was reuerently giuen: when Palmerin went to his lodging in such an agonie, as more likely to dye then liue, hee threw himselfe on his bed, where hauing sighed and sorrowed long time grievously, at length hee brake forth into these teares. Ah Palmerin, unhappie, wretched and most miserable, now art thou entred into such a Labyrinth, as impossible is it for thee to get out againe with life, but what should moue thee to so high an enterprise, being no way able to equall her that is second to none: Alas, now doe I plainly see the small crevice is to bee reposed in Dreames, and that the visions I sawe in my father Gerrards house, on the Mountaine Artifaria and else where, are sciuilous illusions, and of no account: with them may I ioyne the promise made mee by olde Adrian, who boasted to knowe so much of my fortunes, for loue is not of such power on my behalfe, that faire Polinarda either can or will make any reckoning of me. Then Palmerin resolued thy selfe suddenly to die, that this inuincible and consuming fire, which by little and little melts thee away, may bee extinguished, and

THE HISTORIE

thy selfe eased. With these words hee breathed forth such an extreame sigh, as Vrbaniillo the Dwarf (being nere) heard him; who doubting least any new mischaunce had happened by the priue wounds the enchanted Archer gaue him, made hast to know the cause of this euill. Ah Vrbaniillo, quoth Palmerin, I finde my selfe farre worse then dead. What my Lord, said the Dwarf, now you ought to be of best disposition, will you deceiue vs with this alteration? The Emperour neuer gaue you bad countenance since your coming, whence then should procede this strange conceit? No no Vrbaniillo, quoth hee, it is not the Emperour, but a Lord of greater power then his Maestie. It is Loue my Lad, the strict commaunder of the stoutest mindes, hee hath conquered mee, and well I know I shall die, if thou doe not finde the meane to helpe me. By my faith my Lord (quoth the Dwarf) so please you to tell mee how and wherein I may helpe you, let me die a thousand deathes if I doe it not. Vnderstand then my good Vrbaniillo, said Palmerin, that this strange alteration, procedes from the diuine looks of my percellesse Mistresse Polinarda, whose fiery beames haue searched so narrowly euery corner of my thoughts, as I must die because I loue too dearly. But couldest thou make knowne to her the least part of my insupportable verations, may be she would haue some pittifull remorsse of my martyrdome; for well may it be iudged, that a Lady accomplish'd with so many vertuous perfections, must needs bee stor'd with sweetness, fauour and pittie. Not vnlike my good Lord sayd Vrbaniillo, but doe you not remember how I was punished, when in the like case I ventured to sollicite your loue to Laurana, Daughter to the Duke of Durace? by my faith my Lord, I shall not forget it while I haue a day to liue, and am afraid to fall againe into the like danger. And this spake Vrbaniillo with such a grace, as Palmerin could not but laugh, noting wth what feare the deformed fellow gaue it forth, whereupon hee said. Thou needest not be dismayd, if she that liueth in thy sleepe be that Polinarda, for whose

loue

OF PALMERIN D'OLIVA.

loue I am thus tormented, and for whom I was borne, as many haue enioyned mee: I pray thee therefore speake to her, and dread no colours. It is good, said Vrbaniillo, that you would haue mee more hardy then you are your selfe: speake to her your selfe if you dare, for I dare not aduenture it for feare of my life. If thou doest it not (quoth Palmerin, assure thy selfe thou shalt neuer henceforth serue mee. Pray then (quoth the Dwarf) I will rather put my selfe in jeopardy, to be better beaten then I was the last time, before I will lose so good a Maister. I pray thee doe, said Palmerin, in respect thou seest the earnestnesse of mine affections. Feare not (quoth the Dwarf) albeit you were a great deale more fit to breake the matter then I: but I will gage my life to gaine you the Lady, and hereupon they rested till the next morning.

CHAP. XXVIII.

How Polinarda desired Palmerin to giue her his Dwarf, and of the speech which shee and Vrbaniillo had afterward together.



Early the next morning Palmerin arose, and hauing walked abroad to contemplate his desires, returned into the chamber of presence, where he found Trincus the Emperours Sonne conferring with the Ladies: at which very instant the Dwarf entered, whose bad shaped body and face, made them all fall a laughing, so that Trincus came to his Sister Polinarda, saying. Sister, did you euer behold

THE HISTORIE

a more proper Page to attend on Ladies, then this gaunt Squire that serues my Lord Palmerin? In good sooth Brother, quoth she, he is farre unlike his noble Master, yet would I like well enough if hee were mine. I beseech you Sir Palmerin, said Trineus, bestowe your Seruant on my Sister Polinarda. Madame, quoth Palmerin, were he better, he is yours, and his Master likewise. Then called he Vrbaniillo, who kneeling to vnderstand his Masters pleasure, he said: Vrbaniillo, I haue giuen you to my Lady Polinarda as her man, will you not serue her honourably and truly aboue all other? Hea my Lord, quoth he, next after you, but you will I not leaue while I liue, although you would disbaire my seruice. Good reason hast thou, said the Princeesse, and well am I pleased it should be so: yet during the time of his stay here, you shall forsake him and abide with me. For that Madame, quoth the Dwarf, I am well contented. Then loke you faile not, said the Princeesse, henceforth to giue your attendance. These speeches were thus vsed as it were for pastime, that shee might thereby deceiue the iudgements of other: but her whole intent was, to knowe of Vrbaniillo, if his Master were affected to any other Lady, by whose meanes her loue might be frustrate. For as you haue heard, a little before that loue had brought her vnder such obedience, as did not the regard of honour with-holde her, her selfe would first breake the Ile of her verations, rather then stay too long and not bee solicited. Many other deuises had the Ladies with Vrbaniillo, who knew so well how to behaue himselfe, as from thence forward he grew so familiar amongst them: as hee would enter their Chambers when himselfe pleased, vnder colour of attendance on the Princeesse Polinarda, from time to time to moue his Masters messages. But at length shee preuented him in this sort, for being alone at a window in the presente Chamber, shee called the Dwarf, and making her entaunce by other occasions, she asked him whose Sonne Palmerin was. God knowes Madame, quoth hee, for I doe not, nor himselfe neither:

OF PALMERIN D'OLIVA.

neither: but of this I can assure you, that neuer was knightly Cheualrie better employed by any then by him, for since the time of my knowledge, hee hath done such noble Acts, as it is not remembred that euer in night in this age did the like. And then from point to point hee discoursed all that Palmerin had done since his coming to him: And can you thinke then good Madam (quoth the Dwarf) that hee is descended of Noble lineage? Trust mee Ladie, I haue my selfe heard by many learned Magicians, and others, that they Diuinations were no lesse then I say.

Polinarda heard the Dwarf thus speake on his Masters behalfe, if before his loue had kindled her liking, no manuell if heart and spirit were now enflamed: so that now shee could not longer conceale what she had hitherto couered, and therefore said to the Dwarf, I beseech thee Vrbaniillo, by the faith and dutie thou bearest to thy Master, Tell me one thing that I desire to know of him, which shall tende to nothing but to his honour and aduantage. You haue so Coniured me, saie Madame (quoth the Dwarf) as death shall not compell mee to hide whatsoeuer you shall please to commaund, if it lye in me to resolue you. Know then Vrbaniillo, said the Princeesse, that I loue thy Master as heartely as my Brother Trineus: and am desirous to know of thee, what Lady it is he esteemes aboue all other: because when I know her, I may loue her the better for his sake: Withall, that I may commend the Ladies happinesse, whose fortune is to be loued of so braue a Gallant: Well perceiued the Dwarf, that cyther now or neuer was the time to bestirre himselfe, according to the promise he had made to his Master: wherefore he answered the Princeesse in this manner. Belieue me Madame, were it to any other, I would not reueale such secrets of my Lord as you desire to know: but to you that are his Lady & Mistress, I am content to belouay the whole. Sufficeth then Madam, that hee loueth in such sort, that if the Heauens send him not remedie the soner, vnpowable it is that his Life should long endure: for I see him so farr besides himselfe, and tormentes

THE HISTORIE

with so many passions, as every houre his death is expected. What will yee Lade that I say? He complaines, he sighes, and day by day is in such dispaire for his Lades Loue: As happie might I haue counted him, had he neuer scene her, or that his dayes were as short as his desires. If then Polinarda were in doubt (not iudging her selfe to bee shee) it may easily be imagined, and presently was shee brought into such a perplexitie, as the Vermillion colour in her cheeks begaine to chaunge, such sudden feares possessed her minde, & so manie sundry varieties of opinion thwarted her conceit, as faine she would haue spoken, but could not of long time, whereby the Dwarfie discerned the cause of her alteration, yet he dissembled what he saw, and thus continued on with his discourse.

Now considering (faire Madame) the high defects of my Lord and Maister, may shee be esteemed happye (as you say) that shall cause the losse of the best Knight liuing this daye? Ah Mistresse, if he dye (as God forbide,) farewell the onely flower of all true Noblenesse, and the most assured Friende to distressed Lades. Wherefore I beseech you pardon me, I shall name her vnto you: and let mee intreate you to deale with her so farre, that the courtessie wherein shee is indebted to so good a Knight as my Lord and Maister is, may be shewed effectually, as that she would loue and fauour him, as hee doth and hath very well deserved. Trust me Urbanillo, answered the Princesse. when I know the Lady I will, & beside, if she do not regarde his passions as she ought, I will intreate her at my request to be more pittifull. These wordes procured a sudden zealousie in her, that shee should promise to another what shee most desired herselfe: yet somewhat earnest to be resolved, shee vowed to fulfill her promise, and therefore desired him to tell her Name. So you will giue mee your word Madame, (quoth the Dwarfie,) not to take in ill parte what I shall say, I will satisfie your request presently. Believe mee (saide the Princesse, I will not, rather perswade thy selfe, that herein thou dost me great pleasure. Ah faire Princesse (quoth the Dwarfie) it is for you and no other, that

my

OF PALMERIN D'OLIVA.

my Lord is thus tormented, it is for you that hee liues, and dyes an hundred times a day: Swete Ladie haue pittie on him, and take not the losse of so good a Knight, who loues you dearer then his owne life. At which answer shee was surprized with incredible pleasure, yet feigning the contrary, shee saide: Is it I? And how long I pray you? By my faith Madame (quoth hee) that can I not tell you: But I haue heard him say of a long time: more then foure yeares before hee was knighted, hee vowed himselfe yours: since which time, all his honourable Actions hath hee onely dedicated to your praise. So that for to finde you, hee left the King of Macedon, and his Sonne Florendos, with whom he was in such estimation, as no man the like: yet that honour hee forsake to do you service: and for your loue hee yielded himselfe as vassall to the Emperour your Father, and gaue himselfe your Knight, if you deigne to accept him. When Polinarda had well heard the Dwarfie (albeit her heart floated in ioyes) yet could shee so well commaund her thoughts, as she seemed to make small account of his wordes: Notwithstanding, returned him this answer. I promised thee Urbanillo, not to conceiue yll of ought thou shouldst tell mee, nor doe I: yet would I haue thee to regarde my calling, being Daughter to so high and mighty a Prince as is the Emperour: But if it be so, that Palmerin thy Lord and Maister beares mee such speciall affection, I must let him knowe by thee, that it would haue bene farre more seemely, himselfe to haue told mee, then to make thee Ambassadour in such secreete affaires: Princesse thelesse, I mislike not of his honourable Loue and good will, whereof I shall thinke better, when I know the effect is conformable to thy protestations. Madame (quoth the Dwarfie) so you would please to vouchsafe him time and place, hee will make you acquainted with strange matter, concerning both your Destinies: which courtessie can no way impeach your honour. Why tell him (saide the Princesse) hee shall haue one daylie heere in the Chamber of Presence, where hee may say his pleasure with safetie: In meane space I accept him as

my

THE HISTORIE

my knight, charging him that he do not departe the Courte without any licence, if hee desire to doe me pleasure.

The Dwarf well pleased with so good an answer, on his knee kissing the Princesse hand, tooke leaue of her to returne towards Palmerin: who meeting him by the way, in place conuenient, said:

How now Urbanillo? what newes hast thou brought mee? life or death? Haisted answered the Dwarf, as you haue good occasion to repute your selfe the most fortunate knight that euer bare Armes. Then palmerin embracing him, said: Ah tell mee what they are: Hast thou spoken with diuine Polinarda? Takes shee any pittie on my consuming cares? That doth she (my Lord (quoth the Dwarf) and commaunds you by me (if you be so bound hers as I haue perswaded) that henceforth you depart not the Emperours Courte, without her leaue. Then recited hee the whole talke betwixen them, and lastly, the pleasure shee conceiued in so good tydings: so that shee accepted him onely for her knight. Whilest the Dwarf continued this discourse, Palmerin was raiued with such inward ioy, as with a great sigh, he saide: O heauens, how do you fauour mee? Now see I well, that my seuerall apparitions on the Mounts of Oliues and Artiferia, are predestinations, ordained to me by your Gracious presence: I beseeche you therefore humbly, that what you haue promised may some come to effect, for the regarde of incomparable Polinarda. Then demanded he, by what meanes he might attaine to speake with the Princesse? Shee saith (quoth hee) that you shall haue her daylie in the Presence, or in the Emperesse Chamber, and there may you safely impart your whole minde vnto her. But I haue other newes to tell you, for I vnderstand certainly, that the Emperour intendes a matter greatly for your aduantage: he mindes to morrow to visite one of his Castles neere at hande, and there also, to passe the time, in honour of the Ladies will haue a Tourney. So that there (better then any where else) may you and Polinarda conferte together: therefore courage your selfe, and

OF PALMERIN D'OLIVA.

goe keepe companie with my Lord the Emperour, it may be himselfe will acquaint you with this Enterprise.

Now credite mee Urbanillo, (saide Palmerin) thou hast don so much for mee, as I shall neuer recompence thee while I liue: but I pray thee tell me, did she not at the first take my message strangely? That did she (quoth the Dwarf) when I perswaded her that you loued a Ladie in such sort as hardly could you liue without her fauourable regard: then she thinking it was some other and not herselfe, chaunged her colour maruellous passionately, but let it suffice you, that shee is as deepe in loue as you are or can bee.

So went Palmerin to the Emperour, who calling him to him, saide: My noble Friend, I shall make knowne to you what hath hence concluded in your absence. The Ladies of our Courte haue bene so long lockt in, for feare of the Enchaunted knight whome you haue slaine, as they haue desired to progresse a little: for which cause, and to pleasure them, I am thus determined; Two leagues hence haue I a goodly Castle, environed with Woods and pleasant Meads, there may we hunte the wilde Harte and Boze, with other pastimes: but now haue I caused Scaffolds and other provision to be made there for a Tourney, and fortie knights will I appoint in this Action, tenne against tenne, and the first Conquerours shall keepe the feld against tenne other, that shall reuenge the tenne vanquished: So hauing all iousted, they shall fight at Barriers, with rebated swordes, and the brauest Champyon shall haue a rich Jewell, which the Emperesse hath provided for that purpose. Now would I haue you one of the ten Challengers, and my Nephew Ganerino, on the Defendants side: for him doe I esteeme one of the best knights of my Courte: Will you not doe thus much at my request? God forbidde (saide Palmerin) that I should refuse any thing you please to commaunde. These newes were immediately published thorough the Courte, which made euery knight speedily to prepare himselfe, hoping to be of that number of the fortie, that should performe the

The Tourney: and thus they priuily imparted to their Ladies, how they would breake both Sworde and Lance for their Loue. Among whom Ptolome was not the last, for he so affected the young Princesse Brionella, as he had made her sole Mistresse of his hart, yet could he not find the means to acquainte her therewith: But the next day, as she rode among the Ladies, they had good leysure to conferre together, & before they arrived at the Castle, they discovered thoroughly vnto each other their Affections, promising mutually such a iust consent in Loue, as the one should bragge of the others happinesse. While they thus continued their louely amorous discourse, Palmerin who had but newly presented himselfe to Polinarda, was much discontented, because so soon as he came to her, the Emperesse called her, and left not talking with her till they alighted from Horsebacks: Notwithstanding, before night, hee gained recompence for that disadvantage: for after Supper, the Emperour and the Ladies went a walking, by a goodly Riuers side, there to dispose themselves, in the cole of the euening. Now was it the merry Maye moneth, when the fields were richly decked with floures, Cupid gaue good opportunity to his Subjects, to contemplatethey sweet and affable desires, and well came it to passe for Palmerin, while Trincus and Ptolome were conuersing with the Emperesse, that hee taking his Ladie and Mistresse by the Arme, walked with her amongst the faire flowers, and seeing the time and place serue him so well, trembling, (as surprized with a vehement passion) thus beganne. Madame, your gracious nature will not count it strange, but rather take it in good part, that I a knight Errant, and as yet vnknowne among Courtly assemblies, should presume to make knowne a secreete to you, which my self dare not imagine without reuerence, and death can cause me declare to none: nor may I procede without some assurance of my vncertaine hope, by her diuine pittie that giues me life. And althogh the words of my Dwarfes haue acquainted mee with your Princely favour, sufficient to expell all

fear

fear and suspicion of reproche: yet such is the height whereto I aspire, as the greatest Monarch in the Worlde can scantlie deserue, then well may I esteeme my selfe vnworthie. But doubting whether your words were such, or that my Dwarfes (perhaps as hee often may doe,) hath reported more then hee had giuen him in charge: I am desirous, (trusting on your benignitie and speciall fauour aboute all other) to vnderstand, if your good pleasure be so highly to honour mee, as henceforth to accept me for your knight and Seruant. And if such vn-deserued fauour and grace may happily fall to my lot, I shall not only acknowledge, that Fortune hath directed my course, to the onely place of honour, but shall haue good occasion beside, to make knowne by my knighthood, that I am the Favourite of the most fayre Princesse. Herein god Madame, you shall not dissent from reason, if I hauing lost my Libertie (by being onely yours,) want the Modestie that should shelde mee in your high regarde: Therefore may you swete Lady, in mine excuse, accuse Loue, and your celestiall beauty: both stronger to commaund mee, then I to gaine say. My Dwarfes hath let you know (as he told mee) part of the paine I endure for your sake, which you cannot but thinke well of, in that my Destinie so commaunded mee, long time before I sawe or knewe you, not alone in visions, but by manifest solicitings, so that in search of you, I haue suffered such trauell, as naturall it is that Nature could make mee able to sustaine. Notwithstanding, I account all right happily bestowed, if I may but gaine fauour in your gracious Eyes, without which, it is impossible for mee to liue: For there is no parte possessing eyther life or spirite in mee, that is not boiued to your only seruice. These words were dipt in teares, and delivered with many a bitter sigh, which moued Polinarda to such compassion, as taking him by the right hand, shee began to playe with his fingers, her trembling testifying her secret affections: and then breaking off Palmerins discourse, as hee thought to haue continued longer, thus answered. Say knight, it seemeth by your countenance that you despayre of

THE HISTORIE

of something, or else haue more fortitude then I can conceiue.

Excuse me of simple iudgment, that knowing your Valour and knightly perfections, I should not account my selfe happy to haue so braue a Champion: Let it suffice you, that what Urbanillo tolde you, is true: and in regard of the paine you suffer for my Loue, and fancying mee so firmly as you doe: Belieue mee good knight, you feele no grieffe, but it is as familiar with mee, so that what thought you haue of mee, the like haue I of you, as time and the vnspotted loue I beare you shall witnesse: in meane time promise me not to departe my Fathers Courte without my consent. And because I see the Ladies approaching, deferre mee the rest untill some other time, when wee shall haue more leysure to conferre together. And tell mee now, if you haue determined to Ioust to morrow: That will I Madame, (quoth hee) if it shall please you to commaund mee. In sooth (said she) I will not hinder you, because I know the honour of the Tourney will be yours: For my sake therefore shall you weare this Bracelet, as a signe of my fauour, and pledge of my Loue. So taking off her Bracelet, she gaue it to Palmerin, who receyued it with no little content: And so concluding their familiar talke, because many knights and Ladies came about them, they walked where the Emperour and the Emperesse were deuising with Ptolome and Trineus. Now because darke night drew on, and the Cuening dew was dangerous, they returned to the Castle, intending the next day after dinner to beginne the Tournament.

CHAP.

OF PALMERIN DOLIVA.

CHAP. XXIX.

How Palmerin gained the honour of the Tourney, and of that which happened afterward.



After the order of the Tourney was set downe by the Emperour, as you haue heard, Palmerin did but expect the houre to goe to it, not doubting to performe such chualrie, as his Ladies fauour should be worthily honoured: wherefore hauing prepared all his necessities ready, immediately after Dinner, accompanied with none other knights brauely armed, whereof Ptolome was one, he entered the lists royall. And espying his Distresse Polinarda in the window with the Emperesse, after he had done her humble reuerence, he began to manage his horse with such braue carriers, as euery one delighted to behold him, but especially the Princesse, whose heart Loue had thorowly conquered, so that she gloried to be beloued of a knight so worthy and commendable, as that her eye was neuer from the object of her sweet desires. And marking his shield, she beheld in a field of Sable, a silver hand fast closed, the import whereof caused her to meruaile, in respect what had passed betwene them before, and gladly would she haue knowne the meaning, but the place would afford no such countenance: wherefore perswading her selfe for the time, she was content in seeing her Bracelet, which her knight wore upon his right arme. And after many courses and lofty poynts done by Palmerin and other

THE HISTORIE

the knights before their Ladies, among whom Ptolome
 himselfe was content, as the presence of his Lady Brion-
 nell highly prouoked him. Then entered the Prince Gana-
 reno, nephew to the Emperour a knight of no small recko-
 ning amongst the Allemaignes, and with him nine other, in
 most sumptuous armour and their braueries like those ten-
 ded to their Ladies (yet nothing comparable to Palmerin
 and his companions) they went to their tent, and while the
 Triumphs and Clations summoned the field, every knight
 prepared himselfe in readines. Palmerin, not so much to win
 common applause, as her loue who had the saueraigne po-
 wer ouer him, seeing Ganareno ordering himselfe to run first,
 took a strong lance, and encountered him with such pui-
 ssance, as worse a man were both ouerthruene and very sore
 hurted: notwithstanding he was soon recovered by his com-
 panions, and in a Chaire carried forth of the field. One of his
 knights would needs reuenge his misfortune, and was him-
 selfe in like sort serued: in breefe, the other eight had all one
 payment, not one of them being able to moue Palmerin from
 his saddle. Palmerin toyfull of his good successe, was depar-
 ting away with his company, when one of them thus spake
 vnto him. Sir Palmerin, you haue saved our labour, and got
 the honoꝛ that wee desired. The time will come (quoth Pal-
 merin) when you may doe as much for me: but for this time
 (if you please) you may excuse me. All that were present, as
 well Lords as Ladies, marvelled at the valour of Palmerin,
 and among the rest the Emperour, who said aloud, that hee
 neuer knew a more valiant Gentleman. Polinarda being so
 nere as she heard her Fathers wordes, and had her selfe be-
 held his high good fortune, was so dainely sollicitated with such
 affectionate pleasure, as forgetting her selfe, and where she
 was, she thus spake to Brionella indifferent loud. What say
 you faire friend? doth not Palmerin worthily deserve to be
 loued? By my faith Madame, answered she, I neuer saw
 knight giue such rough encounters with the Launce, as he did
 to Ganareno and the rest of his companions. Polinarda would
 haue

OF PALMERIN D'OLIVA.

haue proceeded further, but there entred ten other knights,
 the foremost being Ptolome, not content (as it seemed) that
 he ran not at the first: and then entred ten knights more, of
 whom the foremost was Cormedes an Allemaigne knight.
 They raunging themselves in order, Ptolome and Corme-
 des brauely encountred, but neither were unhorsed: which
 grieved Ptolome to do no better in presence of his Lady:
 wherefore taking another Launce, at the second course
 Cormedes was cast quite out of his saddle, and three more
 of his fellows after him for companie. Which when the
 Duke of Lorraines Brother perceiued, a knight well ac-
 counted of in the Countrey, desirous to recouer the honour
 his foregoers had lost, spake thus to Ptolome. It seems
 that these Grecian knights are come to rob vs of the honoꝛ
 that is ours by inheritance, in unhappie houre were the
 Allemaignes borne if they suffer it: and so couching his
 Launce, met Ptolome with so full a carriere, as losing sad-
 dle and stirrups he fell to the ground, and foure more of his
 knights after him had like entertainment, but a hardy
 knight of the Emperours named Menadus, met the Dukes
 brother so rudely, as downe hee fell to the ground with
 his saddle betwixt his legges. There were many braue
 encounters with the Launce, to vanquish one another, and
 all for the loue of their Ladies, who delighted to see their
 knights so brauely behaue themselves. The Joust finished,
 each one alighted, and with their blunt Swords fell to
 the Barriers, and so cruelly they laid on each other, as they
 would not suffer one another to take breath: especially Pto-
 lome, who buckled with the Duke of Lorraines Brother,
 to winne the honoꝛ he lost in the Jousting. And neer a fustie
 entred noble Palmerin, who was the onely man to whom
 Loue and Fortune were fauourable, raunged among the
 thickest, and with his sworde made way among them va-
 liantly: at length he came to the Duke of Lorraines Bro-
 ther, and so canuazed him about the pate with his blunt
 fauchion, as he fell to the ground greatly astonished, charging

THE HISTORIE

him to speake no more in disgrace of the Grecian knights. All the port ended, the knights withdrew themselves into their Chambers to be unarmed, and each knight wrapping himselfe in his Mantle, palmerin was in his Ladies livery, for shee had sent him a very rich one, and so comming into the Chamber of presence, the Emperour welcomed him in this manner. Welcome me my Lord, I account the Prince happy that hath you for his friend. As I am, my gracious Soueraigne, answered Palmerin, I am your humble and obedient servant during life, ready to accomplish what shall please you to commaund me. The Emperour highly thanked him, and presently came the Emperesse, one of the Ladies bringing with her a rich Cloke, and covered with pearles and stones of great value, which she presented to Palmerin, as the prize and honour he had wonne in the Tourney, and said to Polinarda; Mine Daughter, I am sure you will bestowe some gift on Sir Palmerin, in that hee hath so worthily deserved. These words raised a sweet blushing in the Princesse countenance, not a little reioycing that hee whom she loved, had carried away the prize from all the other knights: so with a prettie modest smile, shee took a chaine of Gold from about her necke, saying; See here Sir Palmerin what I giue you, this gift is to tye and chaine you in such sort, as you may neuer depart from the Emperours service. Palmerin with exceeding contentment receiued the chaine, and on his knee humbly thanked the Emperesse and the Princesse, to whom hee spake as followeth. Madame, I am well contented to abide in such a prison, and neuer will I desire any other liberty, but still will be his vassalle that hath power to commaund me. This answer pleased the Emperour exceedingly, in that he desired to haue palmerin still abide in his Court. Wherefore he said to Polinarda, you haue done well Daughter thus to binde Palmerin, for now he cannot escape away when he list. So the Tables being covered, the Emperour and all the knights of the Tourney sate downe to meate, where much talke was spent as concerning the successe on all

OF PALMERIN D'OLIVA.

all sides, but Palmerin and Polinarda had enough to doe to view each other, their eyes doing their office, and carrying betwene them the message of their passions, yet so discreetly shaddowed, as none could perceiue them. Supper ended, the knights and Ladies went to daunting, and afterwards to their chambers, because the Emperour had commaunded the next day another Tournament: a briefe report whereof may very well serue, in that you can imagine there wanted no braue chivalrie. What Palmerin did that day, it were in vaine to tel, because the former day makes knowne his worthinesse, and Ptolome behaued himselfe in so good sort, that Brionella was as proude of him as the Princesse of her knight, and therefore presented him with a very rich Diamond, as a token of his desert and her loue. Thus while the Jousts endured, the Duke of Lorraine had great familiarity with Palmerin, because hee had deliuered his Sister Cardonya, from the false treason of the Count of Ormeque. All pastimes thus finished, the Emperour returned to Gaunt, where Palmerin intreated his Mistis to appoint him time and place, where they might more priuately discourse on their loue, the which she promised, and awaited opportunity.

CHAP. XXX.

How Polinarda discoursed her secrets to Brionella, and of the talke she had with Palmerin.



Polinarda not forgetting the promise shee made her friend, to meete him in some place where they might argue on their loue, determined to discouer her affections to Brionella, the beloued of Ptolome: well perceiuing, that without her helpe, shee could not attaine the end of her

THE HISTORIE

her desires, wherefore without any longer stay, shee thus began with her. My chosen friend, I would make knowne one thing vnto thee, which death can compell me discouer to no other, wherefore thou must haue care to keepe secret my speeches, in respect of my calling, not doubting but in time to recompence any paine thou takest for me. Faire Princeesse, said Brionella, in that you do me such honour, as to impart your thoughts to mee, rather will I die then sayle one jot of your commaundement, and therefore assure your selfe, that what you declare shall neuer be discouered. Then Polinarda reuealed to her the loue she bare palmerin, what passions had tormented her, and in what extremitie her desires hadde diuenc her: and therefore swete friend (quoth shee with a deepe sigh) find thou the meane that I may priuately talke with him. Brionella admiring the earnest loue of the Princeesse, knew not readily what to answer, but seeing that by this meanes shee might more easily confesse with Ptolome, whome shee likewise intirely loved, thus spake. It is no wonder Madame, you beeing so incomparable, as I know no Prince liuing of whom you are not worthy, if you haue resolved your loue on noble palmerin, in that there is no knight in the world better deserues you, his rare chualerie beeing such, as it cannot otherwise be, but that hee is descended of royall linage, beeing accomplished with so many speciall perfections. Therefore Madame, so like you, I haue deuised well for your purpose, as thus. You know my chamber window stands so commodious, as you may with safety confer with him at pleasure, which you may let him vnderstand by his Dwarfes, and appoynt him time as you shall thinke conuenient. This counsell did not a little content the princeesse, because shee longed to that with her loue, and therefore concluded at his departure to appoint Palmerin his time. Now was the Chamber of Brionella ioyning to the Cittie wall, and had a goodly prospect into the fields, and Palmerins lodging was nere vnto it, facing the wall as the other did, so that one might easily

OF PALMERIN DOLIVA.

easily passe betwene the lodgings, nothing being betwixt them but a little garden, brauely decked with flowers, and goodly fruit Trees. The time appoynted, Polinarda called the Dwarfes to her, saying. Urbanillo, thou shalt go to thy maister, from mee and after thou hast saluted him with my manifolde well wishings, will him this night to come secretly to my Lady Brionellas chamber, where at the window wee may safely talke together: and bid him not misdoubt my Lady Brionella, for I haue made her acquainted with all my secrets. And because thy selfe maist conduct him to the place, come, and I will presently shew it thee. So went the Dwarfes with polinarda to Brionellas chamber. Where hauing scene the window, and glad to carrie such tydings to his maister, beeing well assured how they would content him: hee departed, and carried not long on his message, because palmerin thought each houre a yeere to heare from his mistresse: wherefore hee beholding the Dwarfes coming, tooke him in his armes, and demaunded what newes hee had brought him: The Dwarfes with a cheerefull countenance thus answered. My Lord, For tune speade you as luckie, as the newes that I bring you do well deserue. By this beginning palmerin perceiued that hee brought such tydings as hee long looked for, which was how hee might speake with the Princeesse: wherefore embracing him againe, hee commanded him to make report of that his swete mistresse had giuen him in charge. Then the Dwarfes deliuered how the Princeesse had great desire to see him, and where shee did intend to speake with him. Which when palmerin heard, filled with vnspcakable ioyes, hee recorded the wordes to himselfe, with many iterations, and the more often hee spake the wordes, the more his delights increased. But tell mee (quoth he to the Dwarfes) dost thou marke the place well where I must talke with my goddesse? Whereof doubt you not my Lord, sayde the Dwarfes, for I shall not faile to bring you sure thither, if it be your pleasure I shall go with you, because the Princeesse

THE HISTORIE

her selfe, in company of Lady Brionella she showed it me. Yet
am I beholding to her, said Palmerin, for this high fauour,
which else were my death if I should be denied: Upon this
hee called Ptolome, to whom hee imparted euery circum-
stance, which Ptolome reputed for his great auail: this
offering the meane for him to visit Brionella, and therefore
they concluded to goe together the night ensuing, to the
place appointed for this louing encounter. The houre of
rest being come, and euery one in their Chambers as best
becomed, Palmerin, Ptolome and the Dwarf, reirayned
together, and seeing the time readie to countenance their
enterpryse, tooke each of them a rich Mantle, and with
their Swords vnder their armes, went out at a window
vpon the walles: and albeit the passage was somewhat
dangerous, yet loue had so encouraged them, as without
regard of danger or fortune, they came to the window
which the Dwarf had showed them, not scene by any. Po-
linarda who was most attentiu, hearing the trampling of
their fate, saide to Brionella. Is not this Palmerin? So
opening the Casements, shee saw Palmerin and Ptolome
attending like diligent Seruants. If then both parties
were pleased, it is not to be doubted, nothing in the world
more contenting them then the sight of each other. And
truely Palmerin and the Princesse had great reason, for
beside that their fatall destiny did so pricke them; their
equall natures were so commendable and correspondent, as
though they had neuer scene, yet were they borne to loue
together. As was Polinarda very brauely accoustred
in a glorious night mantle, and such soft white silkes, as
shee showed brighter then the morning Starre, her fierie
pointed lookes so wounding Palmerin, as rapt type as it
were into a second heauen, hee remained silent a long time,
not able to speake a word. The Princesse was likewise in
the selfe same conceit, and so ouercome with regard of her
Paramour, as she continued mute, and was loth to giue the
onset. Palmerin ashaied to accompanie his Lady with
such

OF PALMERIN D'OLIVA.

such silence, beganne thus mildly to Court his Mistresse.

I did neuer thinke, (saye Madam) that Fortune would
honour mee with such extraordinary fauours, directing my
course to your noble Fathers Courte, to be thus entertained
into your gracious seruice, hauing no deserts in mee to induce
you to your choyle: but it may be in respect of some good re-
port by such, to whome I account my selfe highly beholding,
hauing thus founde the place where I was preordinate to
loue, my Starre hath thus appointed it, and withall, to make
me the happiest man liuing. And it may bee Madame, that
such as enuie not my happinesse, haue acquainted you with
some of my exterior actions, which God (not I) hath brought
to passe: but they, ignorant of the entire and feruent loue I
beare you, could make no iust reporte thereof to you, being a
secret so speciall, and not to be comprehended: Besides, the
deapth and wonderfull nature thereof not to be measured,
therefore to be buried in your heauenly opinion, which how
ample so ever you please to graunt me, the more am I bound
both in dutie and affection, which in despite of enuie and his
confederates, shall remaine immouable, and pleade the con-
tinuall loyalty of your Knight and Seruant.

And if I should report how many times your diuine per-
son hath bene presented me in sleepe, I would therewithall
discourse infinite passions, which I endured, seeing my selfe
frustrate of that I now behelde. Yet many Countreies
and Citties: What perils and dangers haue I past to finde
you, prouoked on still with neuer chaunging loue? If this
then were sufficient to make mee runne through a world of
daungers, I leaue it to your iudgement (Sweet Madame)
what it may doe now, seeing with mine eyes what I dream-
ed on before, and now may with safetie say, (incomparable
Beautie. Here hence then proceedeth, that these my ex-
treame Affections haue ouertome all other partes in mee, not
once able to imagine how many reuerend opinions I vse of
you: which must intreat you on my behalfe, that your ac-
customed clemencie, will pardon my preiudicate conceyte, be-
cause

THE HISTORIE

cause being not mine owne, but yours onely, I may easily offend. These speeches moistened with the teares of his eyes, and luke-warme Bloud of his heart, deliuered manifest eu-
dence how truly hee loued the Princesse, who bearing him company in all arguments of Loue, thus answered. I doubt not Sir Palmerin, but that the loue you beare me is exceeding great, noting your earnest Affections, and the great trauell you haue sustained in searche of mee; and no other certaintie doe I request to be perswaded by, being as vehement in affection towards you, as you are to mee: For whose whereof, this present attempt may suffice, that against my duty I should be seene thus secretly, in a place so suspicious, and the Time so vnecessary. But yet if I haue offended herein, then accuse those seemely perfections which I haue obserued in you, and the confidence I repose in your good Concept, coupled with the honorable estimation, that is generally reputed in your vertues.ardon me (swete Ladie) said Palmerin, if by my longing desire to speake and conferre with you, I haue in any thing displeased, for earnest good will to do you seruice, constrained me to be thus importunate. The matter is farre from any desert of offence (quoth the Princesse, for hither are you come onely by my commaundement, to the ende that wee might see one another, and talke of such things as nearest concerne vs: and therefore resolute your selfe good night, that I esteeme you aboue all other, and promise you by the faith of a Princesse and loyall friende, to dye, rather then any other shall be Lord of me. Which very words, so rauished his senses, as very hardly hee could sustaine himselfe: Whereupon Polinarda put forth her hand out at the window, which hee in often kissing well marking, beheld the Character thereon as you haue heard before. Ah (swete Madame, (quoth he) this is the token that makes mee the happiest man this day liuing. As how I pray you (said she:) what know you here of? Then Palmerin discoursed all his Dreames and visions, and briefly raune through repetition of his whole life, how the wise Adrian had sent him the Shielde of Sable, where-
in

OF PALMERIN D'OLIVA.

in was figured a Hand fast closed together, signifying the same hand I holde at this present, because this hath the same marke the other had in figure. In truth (said the Princesse) I was desirous to know the meaning of that Shielde, wherein I saw a Silver hand closed, which you bare the first day of the Tournament, being now a little gladd in that you haue so satisfied me. Afterwardes Palmerin made knowne vnto her, the marke himselfe had on his face, which agreed with hers in perfect likelihood. O God (quoth shee) happy be the time of this meeting: Blame mee not my Lorde to be thus surprized with your Loue, seeing our fatall Destinies haue so appointed: This will cause mee to liue in more hope of good successe, then before I did, and that our amitie will sorte to such ende, as our two hearts shall both be combined in one: and yet let me see I beseech you, the marke on your face, he we nere it resembles this on my hand. Shee fetching a Taper which burned in her Chamber, lifted vp his comely locke of haire, and saue them both shapd in one forme, wherefore suddenly setting away the Light, they embraced Palmerins head in her armes, and sealed many sweet kisses on his amiable Character. The like louing kinde salutations passed betwene Polome and Brionella, at another Casement of the Window, with solenne Vowes and Protestations, neuer to faile each other in theyr loue, and this to be the fittest place for conuersing on theyr desires, till fortune afforded them better opportunitie: and longer would they haue there continued, but that the dwarf came to his Master in this manner. My Lord, I thinke you can neuer finde time to make an ende: Till you haue the day light present you, and so discredit you all: In sooth it is time you were in your Chamber. Palmerin who was loath to departe from the pleasure of his thoughts, made small account of the Dwarfs words, and continued on in amorous deuises: But the Princesse, a little more fearful then hee, remembering the dwarfes said true, and loath to be seene suspiciously, said: My Lord, it is time to breake off, but I pray you foyle not of your promise: Let vs
visit

THE HISTORIE

visite one another, now you knowe the way and place. So Palmerin and Prolome toke leaue of their Ladies, and passed to their Chambers without suspicion: The successe of theire Loue you shall vnderstand hereafter, as time and place shall fitte for the purpose: but now to satisfie you with choyse of delights, we will returne a while to another discourse.

CHAP. XXXI.

How the King of Fraunce kept a Royall and magnificent Courte: And how his Sonne Lewes became enamoured of the Duchesse of Burgundie.



During the time that the Emperour of Allemagne liued in this happinesse, accompanied (as you haue heard) with manie hardy knightes: there reigned in France a mightie Prince named Agariel, valiant, wise, and vertuous, who had three sonnes, whereof the second was the hardiest knight at Arms, being named Lewes.

This King Agariel, the more to honour his knights and noble Gentlemen abiding in his Realme, determined to keep open Court for all comers, as none of his predecessors euer did the like before him, and therefore sent abroad his Herald, Gentlemen of his Citie, and others, to summon his Lords and Barons of France, that on a day appointed, they would all meete at the Courte.

And because none should be ignorant what hee intended, hee requested that all Gentlemen professing Armes, at the Feast of Easter following, should repaire to Paris, being the head

OF PALMERIN D'OLIVA.

heade and chiefeest Cittie of the whole Kingdome. The Quene likewise aduertized all Ladies and Gentlewomen at whose commaund euery one obeyed, so that in fewe daies, the Court was well furnished with Lords and Ladies: nothing nowe intended, but delights and Courtly Pastimes, which made the Duke of Burgundie likewise repaire thither. Now was the Duke aged, a man of good prouidence, and a tryed knight, hauing matched in Marriage with the King of Denmarke's Sister, a young beautifull Ladie, and of vertuous education: the Duke hoping to haue issue by her, because by his first Wife he could not haue any. The King aduertized of the Dukes comming, commaunded his Sonne Lewes with an honorable traine to go entertaine him, which hee did, so that many solemne reuerences passed betwene the Duke and him, as also to the Duchesse, whome as he welcommed with many salutations, so did he earnestly contemplate her excellent Beautie, reputing her farre fairer then the selfe, and on a sudden became amorous of her: Such a violent breach made Loue into his heart at the very first sight of her. In this great and vnlooked for veration, hee conducted her to the lodging which was prepared for the Duke, dissembling so well as hee could his new desire: But so vehement was his oppression, as without returning again to the King, he went to his Chamber. Prince Lewes being thus alone by himselfe, (Loue) not a little triumphing of his new prey, tormented his thoughts with so many conceytes, as all the night he spent in sighs and dolorous laments, his minde still traouelling by what meanes hee might compasse his intent. Sometimes, he thought it vnpossible in respect of the Duke, then againe as easie, because of his Age, a contrarie to yokesome in his eyes, for the sweete flourishing youth of the Duchesse: all which inaginations wrought so diuersly in him, as his spirite forsaking counsell and reason, made him breake forth into these exclaimes. Ah Heauens, haue you formed Beauty with such Excellencie, as to cause mee endure a torment more then mortall: Ah mine Eyes, to lauish wee

you

THE HISTORIE

you in beholding her, who cannot chuse but utterly disdaine this, thou hast an acquaintance with her, and therefore let thy death challenge thy detraite. Yet may it thou be deceyued in thine owne opinion: foolish man: perhaps in offering her thy seruice she may chauce to accept it, for the Duke is olde, and likely to dye: how happy were it for thee to be his Executor, for his Lady: Dispaire not then man, for things thought impossible are easiest oftentimes in performance. In the e and such like tearmes he spent the night, and seeing the faire morning salute him at his Chamber window, he arose, intending that day to bewray his passions to the Duchesse: and knowing that the Duke would goe visite the Quene, accompanied with many knights, he came to bidde him good morrow: which the Duke taking very kindly, requited him with many thanks, ignorant that for the faire Wife, he was so courteous to the olde Husband.

The Duke hauing taken his way to the Quene, Lewes kept company with the Duchesse very manerly, waiting opportunity to discover his affections, and reuielving her beauties so perfect and rare, not able longer to holde began thus. It is maruell Madam, if faire beautie should be so bitter, as a man cannot surfette but he must needs dye. The Duchesse not knowing of whome the Prince spake, nor as yet regarding that hee was in Loue, answered. In sooth my Lord, the Ladie hath small reason, that she should vse you so hardly, if you meane it of your selfe. In briefe Madam (quoth hee) it is you haue wounded mee, and none but you can ease my afflictions: if then (swete Ladie) you retaine such pittie, as all your other Excellencies shewe you to haue, you will not disdain to giue mee remedie, which if you do, for euer I remaine your knight and loyall friende. And in mine opinion Madam, you cannot well refuse my sute, seeing hard Fortune hath bene such an enemy to you in Marriage, the Duke being olde and full of melancholy, you young, tender, fresh, and dainty as may bee: Was more meete to keepe companie with Antropos the most fall goddess, then liue with a saint of

OF PALMERIN D'OLIVA.

To rare perfections. But had my lucke bene such, before you were Epoused to haue knowne you, I would with Malouhaue hindered your Widing so, or Fortune should haue felowly denyed me: For such is my religion in Loue, as better death then discontent, and had I bene Lord of Europe, you had bene Ladie. Notwithstanding Madam, so like it you, I may be your friend and knightly seruant: for loue wants no wiles to compass desire, and my sute is modest, if you count it not vncomely. The Duchesse, whom sweete loue could easily intice to folle, hardly might resist a present Conquest: Wherefore chaunging countenance, and not daring to reueale what shee gladly would, saide. Trust mee (my Lord) your speeches are not comely, to violate chaste Wedlocke is so monstrous, as you can haue no priuiledge to aske, nor I to graunt, and therefore content you.

This answer, albeit it was sharpe, and scant pleasing to the Prince, yet loue so perswaded him, that the Duchesse had another meaning then she bewrayed: For, noting her countenance so full of change, he guessed that some sparks had fallen among her affections, wherefore he began againe. I beseech you Madam accuse Loue, if I haue spoken to your disliking, yet hope I to at the time, when I shall make knowne how great my affection is to do you seruice: and continuing this talke, he brought her to the Quenes lodging, Loue following them both so narrowly at the heeles, as the Duchesse was no lesse affectionate, then Lewes was most passionate. Which when he had gotte some light off, in hope to purchase his desire, hee sollicitd her in more secrete manner then hee was wont: so that being one day in place where they might familiarly talke, Lewes perseuering in his enterprise, declared what torments hee suffered for her Loue: Whereupon the Duchesse not onely by the Princes reasons, which were perswasive, but as well to mitigate her owne oppressions, thus answered: Great is the force of your perswasions (my Lord) but greater is that of loue, which hath made me your: So that what you request I cannot denye, and although it stand

THE HISTORIE

stand not with mine honour, yet such is my fortune. Let mee intreate you therefore to conceale this Loue so discretely, as none may know of it; especially my Lord the Duke, and expect the day that shall yelde me content, and make me happy.

This answer so highly liked the Prince, as neuer man thought himselfe in greater felicitie, and rendering her againe manifolde thanks, he sayde:

I sweare to you Madame, by the diuine force of Loue that gouernes vs both, to be for euer your Knight, and neuer shall any other desire abide in mee, then you shall like and well allow off: for otherwise I were not worthy this speciall fauor. The Duchesse thanking him, departed: and thenceforth so secretly shadowed their Loue, as none suspected that the Prince loued the Duchesse.

CHAP. XXXII.

Of the enterprise of Lewes the Prince of Fraunce, for the loue of the Duchesse of Burgundie.



King continued the King of France this state in all Magnificence, there meeting many noble personages, as well Strangers as of the Realme, that it was maruellous to behold, as also the Ladies and Damoels that accompanied the Queen: who on a day in the Presence chamber among many Knights, conferred of the bountie and promise of the flourishing braue young Courtiers: among whom the Prince Lewes making one, each one spake in behalfe of his Ladies beauty, yet concealing they names to themselves, till better occasions might cause them deservedly to be knowne. All this talk the Prince well marking, who for the Duchesse loue.

OF PALMERIN DOLIVA.

Loue was deprived of libertie, threw many sweete glaunces at the Mistresse of his affections, perswading himselfe, that nature neuer made a more perfect creature, and not able to make her like againe, burst her mould, whereupon hee sayd, Lordes and Ladies, who with such aduantage haue chatted on beautie, vnderstand that such as you haue yet spoken of, or feuerally in your owne thoughts shall thinke vpon, may not be equall with one that I know, euen shee that is Ladie and commaunder of my heart, whose beautie is so far beyond all other, as bright Cinthia from the goodliest star in the firmament. And because that none shall imagine, how (being carried away with private opinion) I be these speeches, I will make good my wordes by deedes of Armes, against any Knights whatsoever that dare say the contrarie. Now in regarde that none shall pleade ignorance, I will aduertise all Knights, how the first day of Maye next ensuing, and seauen dayes more immediatlie following, I will be in open field in my Tent, where I will erect a stately monument, on the toppe whereof shall bee her figure whose Knight I am: and there will I defende it in this honorable quarrell, against such Knights as will Combat for the beautie of their Ladies, I affirming mine to excell all other in perfections. This condition must be obserued by such as enter the field, that they bring the Ladies figure with them whom they honour most: and if Fortune wroth be on them in such sort as they be vanquished, there shall they leaue their Ladies Image, to be placed vnder my Mistresse as her subiect. Now if my unhappy Starres so crosse me, as I lose the credite I would be loth, the conqueror shall enter in my Tent, and in my Ladies place shall his Mistresse be mounted, if hee meane to maintaine her with such conditions as I doe mine. And hee that last shall accomplish these eight daies, shall beare away the honour with the portraictures of the Ladies, which by him or any other all the sayde time haue beene gaured. And this libertie shall bee granted, that he which receiues the foyle with the Lainece, shall Combat

THE HISTORIE

bat with the *Sword* (if he please) before her yeeld. So to
th at this time enterprise may be openly knowne, and put
in execution as the vertue requireth: I will send *Horse-*
men through all the prouinces of Christendome, that all
knights willing thus to aduenture, shall bee here receiued.
His speeches ended, the Gentlemen present could not mer-
uaile sufficiently, at this great and high enterprise of the
Prince Lewes, and the danger whereinto hee thrust him-
selfe, yet not knowing who was the Ladie hee would thus
aduenture for: but shee being present, perceiued that the
Prince in honour of her loue, took in hand this perillous
hazard, wherein she conceived such secreete content, as the
passions of loue hauing penetrated her heart, made her feare
his misfortune, which she would not for her life. In this as-
semble was present the Duke of Sauoye, a young Prince,
braue, hardie and couragious as might be, and esteeming so
well of himselfe, as he thought no knight in the world could
vanquish him, who to answer the Prince Lewes, arose
and thus spake. My Lord, I would not willingly haue en-
tered the Combat against you, but that I heard you so farre
outreach your selfe, as shee whose beautie you maintaine,
is more perfect then all other Ladies: but shee that is the
commander of my heart, is such a braue accomplished La-
die, as (in truth) her beautie may not be matched through
the whole world. And to affirme what I say, I sweare by
the order of my knighthode, that the morew after you
haue finished your eight dayes enterprise, I will enter the
same felde, and auerre against all knights, that the God-
desse to whom I am dedicated, excelles all other Ladies in
her heavenly gifts: and hee that dare maintaine the contra-
rie, vnder my *Sword* I will make him confesse it. All such
therefore as will make proofe of their valour, shall find mee
there in my Tent at my appointed day, and nine dayes af-
ter to sustaine the same quarrell in plaine Combat, eyther
at the Lance, the Pace, the *Sword*, on horsebacke or on
foote, at his choise. And though I vanquish one knight, it
shall

OF PALMERIN D'OLIVA.

shall not be lawfull for me to rest a minute space, but pre-
sentlie take him in hande that shall follow: and bee it my
fortune to be foyled by him, hee shall keepe the field in man-
ner as you my Lord deuised. And to the ende all may be the
better executed, please you that in such places where your
intelligencers shall come, my enterprise may likewise bee
declared, in respect I hope to behaue my selfe so well, as my
Ladie will make speciall account of me. The lady for whom
the Duke of Sauoye thus attempted, was Daughter to the
King, and Sister to Lewes named Lucemania, whom he lo-
ued intirely, and aboue all things desired in marriage:
which to compasse, and to honour his Ladie, hee thus offered
the Combat against all knights. These Princes, intending
to go thow with their intent, concluded betwene them,
that the Duke of Sauoye should breake it to the King, to
gaine his good will: whereupon the Duke departing to-
wards the Quenes Chamber to find the King, espied him
at verie good leysure walking in his Garden, to whom hee
went in all hast, and on his knee thus began. So please it
your highnesse to graunt me one boone, I shall be bound to
continue the loue I haue borne your Maestie, which is to
prolong my life in your seruice, as the most forward knight
in your royall Court. The King who had long time fauou-
red the Duke, taking him by the hand, thus answered.
Demand my good Cousin what you please, and it shall bee
graunted. Then the Duke deliberateli discoursed, what
the Prince Lewes and hee had intended for the loue of their
Ladies: wherewith the King scant content, and merrailing
at this hastie enterprise, said. Why Cousin, do you imagine
your selues able to maintaine so hard a task, in resistance
of so manie hardie knights, wherewith the world is now
plentifullie stozed? Welcome me, in manie Countreies are
Ladies of greater beautie (I doubt) then is at this time in
our Realme of Fraunce. I promise you, I hardly like what
my Sonne and you attempt, but seeing my word is past,
you shall not now bee hindered: do therefore what your
selues

THE HISTORIE

selues thinke expedient, with this consideration alwaies, that the ending of matters is greater then the beginning. The Duke humbly thanking the King, answered. Wee doubt not my Lord, but by the helpe of God and fauour of our Ladies, to end our affaires with fortunate successe: but if not we should giue cure, and not go forward with our promise, we might worthily be reproued of shame and in Paradise, the most villainous reproches that can be to any noble heart.

The King perceiuing the earnest affectio of the two yong princes, and that to deny their request would be more hurtfull then to graunt: commaunded him againe to proceed with their intent, with such suritie against all strange knights, as what losse or victorie happened to them, they must be content with al that fell out. The Duke not a little toyesfull, kissing his highnes hand departed, and immediately acquainted Prince Lewes therewith, but not to the quaine vnderstanding her sons enterprize, sent for him, & with sad countenance thus spake. I would (my son) that the intent of you and the Duke of Sauoy, were eyther a while deferred, or vtterly forgotten, because I greatly doubt, that the end will bring a further consequence then you expect. For thinke you, that by all your forces & Chivalries, the beautie of your Ladies shall be any lot increased: no beleue me: but if they loue you as loyall friends ought to do, as greatly will they dislike your enterprize, as feare the danger whereinto you may fall, a matter causing other desire then you thinke on, and more offensive (perhaps) to them, then any honour you may winne can please them. Lewes, who by no meanes would be dissuaded from his conceit, answered. Good Mother, if for no other feare, this matter shall not be reuoked, in regard of the shame, and neuer dying dishonour I shall gaine thereby, which makes me desire a thousand deathes, rather then not to be so good as my worde: therefore perwade your selfe good Mother, that albeit her beautie for whom I enter the Combat, cannot be more perfect hereby, in that it is without imperfection, yet

OF PALMERIN D'OLIVA.

such is my resolution in a matter so certaine, as her sweete lookes shall deliuer me strength enough to ende my taske, without dread of any inconuenience that may happen. The Duchesse (enamored with loue) hearing these wordes on her behalfe, must needs speake, and thus began. I know not (my Lord) who is the Ladie you loue, nor what are her vertues, but hereof I can assure you, that she is highly beholding to you, and (except great reason to the contrarie) ought to loue you, considering what perill you thrust your selfe into for her beautie. Madame (quoth the Prince) the trouble I shall take, and the bad fortunes may befall mee, are little and of no account in respect of her gracious deserts, therefore for her honour I will beare my inward paines with secret content, and attempt these outward actions with the greatest courage I can possible, desiring no other recompence then her fauourable conceit, wherof once assured, nothing can seeme difficult to me, no, were it to dye in her diuine seruice. And as he would haue continued longer, the King (not yet shewly content with his promise past to the Duke of Sauoy) entered the Chamber, by whose countenance, Lewes well knew he was mal-content with him, wherefore falling on his knee, he said. My Lord, no one is ignorant, how all my well-fare and reputation consisteth onlie in your Maestie, as a Prince and Father, the most vertuous that I know: which great god in some part to recompence: I haue enterprised a matter vnworthie of dislike, so please your highnes (of your accustomed bountie) to excuse and accept it in god part, in respect that such as are borne to the highest place of dignitie, ought to bee more prompt and readie to all magnanimous actions, then their inferiours. What brought such resolution to Horatius, Mutius Scauola, Marcus Curtius, Manlius Torquatus, and a number more of Romaine knights, if not the couragious following of occasions offered? What made for ever immortal the fame of Marius the Romaine Citizens, Hanniball the

THE HISTORIE

Carthaginian, and Agislaus the Greeke, if not the vndaunted valour of their minds, deliuered in their deeds of Kinglie consequence: Assuredlie I beleue, that their Fathers, Uncles, and auncient progenitours neuer made them noble or ought renowned: what then: onely vertue, the very fountaine of all nobilitie. For this cause my good Lord and Father, hauing now oportunitie, as my Cozin & Duke of Sauoye hath informed you, may it please your grace to permit my endeouours with fauour, to the ende I may deliuer perfect testimony, that I no whit degenerate from your heerecall and kingly vertues. The King somewhat moderating his former opinion, answered, Trust me Sonne, full well you know how to disguise and couer your folly with vertues colours, God send it to fall out so well: arise, and keite as your Cozin and you haue requested. See in meane time that you provide all needfull occasions, that when the ray comes nothing bee wanting. Lewes humbly thanking his Father, arose, euery one present not a little reioycing, because they feared all would be squandered. Then began the Lordes and Ladies to conserre together, and the Duchesse departing to her lodging, being manned by the Prince, did not (as I thinke) repent her selfe of her loue, as a number of you (marching vnder the same Ensigne) would do the like in such a case. In fine, the Duchesse fearefull of the thwart of fortune, that she would worke her disgrace by some bad coniectures or wounding reports, said, I know well (my Lord) the good will you beare mee, without any further selfes or confirmations by actions so dangerous, which I had rather die then behold, and therefore whatsoever you shall performe, will condemne mee as unworthy of so good defects: in this respect you shall therefore graunt me one thing, which is, that aboute all you haue care of your selfe, els'e will perpetuall discontent cut short my date, being bereaued of the honour of my Greene desires. Now Madame (quoth the Prince) may I boast of my fortune, not doubting to folloiw the deuilse of a Ladie so vertuous, for your

OF PALMERIN D'OLIVA.

your sweet words prolong my life, els'e ere this had death robbed you of your knight. The Duchesse hereto with an amiable smile, answered, I must not looe you yet good Prince, for may I lengthen your life, it shall be so: ever. Many solene thanks the Prince returned, and by this time had brought her to her Chamber, where hauing baile la main, departed.

CHAP. XXXIII.

How the Prince Lewes and the Duke of Sauoye, sent their Heraldes and horsemen into all partes, to make knowne to all Knights their enterprises, and the conditions of their Combats.



He Prince Lewes full of the King his fathers consent, but of the gracious answere of the Duchesse most of all, dispatched immediately his Heraldes into all the prouinces of Europe, who executed their charge with such diligence, as there was no court or Emperour, King, or Prince, but they declared the enterprise of these two young Princes. So that one of the Princes Heraldes, accompanied with the King of Armes belonging to the Duke of Sauoy, came to the Emperours Court of Allemagne, which then was furnished with a great number of Lordes and Knights, being there to solemnize the day of his birth, but especially Palmerin about all the rest, trying triumphing in the loue of his Mistresse Polinarda. The Heraldes being entered the great Hall, found the Emperour sitting in his chayre of estate, with many Princes, Barons

THE HISTORIE

and noble personages about him: who granting them libertie of speech, the Herald of Fraunce began first in this manner,

Illustrious and most redoubted Emperour, the cause why we thus presume before your Maiestie, is by the commandement of the vertuous young prince Lewes, son to our dread Lord Agariel King of Fraunce, as also of the Duke of Sauoy his Cousin, so good a knight as may well command: what our message is, so please your highnes to call all your knights in presence, because it chiefly concerneth them, we with dutie will deliver it. The Emperour presently called for all knights and Gentlemen of his Court, who desirous of the newes, were not long in coming, before whom he said, Dread Lord, the prince Lewes of France my maister, commends him to your Maiestie with this Letter, may it please your grace to command it to be read, and you shall soon see the effect of our Embassage. The Emperour caused his Secretarie to read it openly, and because it contained what you haue heard already, it shall be needlesse to wast longer time in talke thereof: but the letter being read, the herald thus proceeded. The prince my Maister (worthy Emperour) giues the knights of your Court (as else where) to understand, that he intends to proue by dede of Armes, how no Ladye in the world is comparable in beautie to the Ladie he loues, which he will be ready to maintaine in Combat the first of May next, and seauen dayes following, in his Tent before the Gates of Paris, there will he verifie it against all comers that dare auerre the contrarie. Afterward he rehearsed all the conditions to be observed in this Combate, and the King of Armes to the Duke of Sauoy, made known his Masters challenge likewise as you haue heard. The Emperour meruailing at this message, said, Without doubt the Ladies had need to be sayre, and my Cousins your Masters valiant and hardie, else it is doubtfull how such an enterprise will fall out, for the affections of persons are diuers, and they fortunes dangerous, neuertheless I desire the

issue

OF PALMERIN D'OLIVA.

issue may sort to their honour. The Lordes and knights haue heard your Message, and I iudge some of them will prouide to be there, because they prize the beautie of their Ladies at as high a rate, as your Masters doe estimate theyr faire friends: yet let them do what they thinke most expedient, because they are olde enough to make you answer. As for mee, you may salute (on my behalfe) the King, my Brother, and my Cousins, to whom I send thanks with all my heart, that they thus acquainted me with their honourable endeuours. All this while the knights conferred together, with diuers iudgements of their pretended Combats: Some of them were eyther fearfull or too forward: others well aduised and prouoked with discrete courage. Among whom in repute we Noble Palmerin, all pensue, his eyes fired on the ground, and not a word, hauing in his spirit discoursed how bitter the diuorce would be of the Eye from his sweete abiect: in the ende concluded the Combate, perswading himselfe, not in Christendome, nor in the other three habitable partes of the Earth, eyther Emperour, Quene, or Ladie, was more accomplished with perfections then his gracious Mistresse Polinarda. And in respect of this Embassage, it seemeth to him bituperous, and a dishonour not sufferable, if he should not iustifie the truth, and haue so good occasion: whereupon he desired a thousand deaths, rather then he would deferre so braue a Voyage: and so on his knee before the Emperour, he thus beganne: Gracious Lorde, and my most worthy Patron, I intend (with your good liking and leave) to depart with all speede possible, to see the Ioustes and Combates of Fraunce and Sauoy: Let it not therefore displease (for the honour of Chualtrie, that I leaue your noble Court a while, but may commit my selfe to this iourney, with your fauourable opinion. The Emperour very leath to let Palmerin goe, answered: In good sooth Syr Palmerin, I greatly doubted (so soone as I heard these newes from France,) that it would not passe without your presence, which displeaseth me, not so much for their follie, as your absence, which is and will bee

to

THE HISTORIE

to me greater griefe then you iudge: but let me intreate that thy returne may be peace, and stay no longer then thou hast good occasion. I would gladly knowe, would you graunt it mee, what Lady she is, for whome you thus aduenture: you neede not Palmerin hide it from mee.

My Lord (quod he) the Dame for whom I enter the Combate is such, as none may or ought compare with so singular, rare, and (aboue all) vertuous, as neuer would I thinke my selfe worthy to beare Armes, if feare of danger, misfortune, or death it selfe should haue power to plucke mee from my dutie. As for my stay (the Iousts once ended) within one moneth or sooner, I intend my returne to your Maestie: and let me intreate you not to feare any thing in my iourney, because I go for your Honour, and my Sworde shall ring on the stoutest creast, the euer continuing honours of the Emperour of Allemagne. The Emperour but willing to forgoe him, and loath to hinder knightly Chivalrie, saide. Without question Palmerin, the Lady is indebted to you, and you declare vnspokeable Loue, that for her Beautie you deliuer your selfe to such great hazard: but as for your intent to my honour, I rather delight to haue it by your presence, then thyself after such applause with your absence. But seeing that you will needes to Fraunce, happie Fortune goe with you, and make you victorious in all your attempts: which I doubt not, but by your valour and the vertues of your Mistresse, the French will not bzaue so much on the twentieth of May, as perhaps they will on the first. Prouide that before you departe, you demand and haue all things for your iourney, as well for such as goe in your companie, as for your owne necessarie prouision: and some will I appoint to attend on you, that may preuent any treacherous inconuenience. Palmerin not refusing this bountifull offer, with great obeysaunce thanked the Emperour: and taking his leaue for that Night, returned to his Chamber, determining to depart with all expedition, because the day of the Iousts were at hand. Nowe was Trineus the Emperours Sonne a young Prince, and had not yet re-

ceiued

OF PALMERIN D'OLIVA.

reiuued his order of knighthood, hee hearing of Palmerins departure, was maruailous desirous to beate him companie: whereupon hee kneeled before his father, intreating him not to deny him one request. Demaund what thou wilt my Sonne (quoth her) I graunt it thee. When I beseech you good father, said hee, to suffer mee, see Fraunce with noble Palmerin, that I may bee acquainted with the courtesie and civilitie of that nation, not doubting but some to be due my knighthood. And yet if before I receiue my order, I see the high and worthy deeds of Armes, happily they may entice mee to follow their vertues: beside, if now I looke so good an occasion offered, I know not when I shall compass the like commodity, therefore (good father) let mee not bee denied. The Emperour offended for his rash promise to his sonne, laboured to change his minde, yet all would not serue, for the Prince promised to go so couerfly, as none should know him. Wherefore he called Palmerin, who as yet was not departed the Hall, saying. I see Sye Palmerin, you shall not go alone in your voyage, for my sonne Trineus desires to be your companion: for which cause I comitt him to you, and desire you to conceiue so well of him, as at your returne wee may be all merrie together. Which Palmerin promised, whereupon the Emperour called for the maister of his horse, commanding him that all things might bee in readines against their departure: all which was done with such diligence, as the third day following all things prepared, they tooke their leaue of the Emperour & the Ladies, who at their departure shed many teares (a common matter with them) wishing the victorie and honour to Palmerin. Thus with Trineus and twentie other knights, a great number of Squires and seruants in good equipage, they iourneyed towards Paris without any hindrance by the way, or matter of memorie.

Now before wee passe any further, you shall understand, that after the Heraldres of the Prince of Fraunce and Duke of Sauoye were departed, and that Palmerin had ob-

tained

THE HISTORIE

tained leaue of the Emperour, the Princesse Polinarda advertised hereof, was greatly displeased with his sudden departure, wherefore calling Urbanillo, the Dwarf to her, she saide: Urbanillo, thou must goe to thy Maister, and will him this night to meete mee at our appointed place, that I may conferre with him, of a secret matter concerning mee. Which when Palmerin heard, the earth being couered with her blacke mantle, and euery one in their deade sleepe, he called Ptolome and Urbanillo, who were all well acquainted with this loue-walke, and being there in presence of the Ladies, the Princesse with a great sigh thus beganne.

Alas my Lord what minde is this in you, thus to voyage towards Fraunce, and to leaue mee alone sadde and solitarie: Alas, not content to hazard so long a iourney, but also a dangerous Combate beside for my Beautie, which is a thing of so slender estimation, as may not Barragon with the Ladies of Fraunce, beeing Percelesse (as I haue heard) among those of highest perfection. Ah my Lord, more comfort and content it is for mee to haue your companie, then to be crowned Queene of any Realme conquered by your worthy vertues and prowesse. Wherefore (sweet friend) I intreat you with all my heart, and by the vnfained loue you beare mee, to leaue such dangerous Enterprises, where death is commonly more frequent then life. These words came with such amiable con- iuration from the Princesse, as Palmerin, (though loath to be dissuaded) answered. Let me prouaile with you so farre good Madame, as not to mislike my Enterprize for your gra- cious Loue, for the honour you haue done me, in making me your Knight, I prize at no lesse value then my dearest blood, and should I be helde from these French exploits, vntill I were I to be your Seruant: in that (as you well know) no Knight but carries the honour of his Ladie in such account, as hee preferres that before his owne life. If then Madame, in religion of this office, I absent my selfe for a while, I shall accomplish nothing but my dutie; whereto your selfe bound mee, and I hope to execute with such successe, as you shall beare

OF PALMERIN D'OLIVA.

beare the prize of Beautie, not onely from the faire Ladies of Fraunce and Allemaigne, but from all Christendome, yea, the whole world, may I liue to trauell it.

Do not then (sweete Princesse) mislike, if I absent my selfe, for a cause so reasonable, & continue me still in your fauourable conceit, as hee that was borne to doe you seruice. And albeit I cannot depart without exceeding griefe and anguish, yet perswaded of your rare arguments, I came my selfe with patience yelde to reason, beeing present with you alwayes, in that I carry your diuine image in my soule, and loue hart, life, and all, till I come.

These words were sealed with many deuoute kisses, and Ptolome had like paine in perswading Brionella, yet this contented them in the ende, that the honour of their trauell was the reuolue of the Beautie: and so with forced content they most louingly departed.

The next morning, the Princesse sent Palmerin an Arming-coate of Greene Veluet, embroidered all ouer with great Orientall Pearles, and very thicke beset with Starres of golde, and in the midst of each starre a costly Emeralde: and he had caused her Portraite to be most curiously drawne in the purest Arabian-golde: her face and hande formed wonderfully nere the life, and all her Lineaments very singularly fashioned, and this portraite caused her to be set in a faire Litter, couered ouer with Crimson-veluet, which hee had provided onely for the purpose, and so set forward.

CHAP.

THE HISTORIE

CHAP. XXXIIII.

How the Prince Lewes came to see the Duchesse of Burgundie : And what happened.



Soone as the Heraldes and Horsemen of Lewes of Fraunce and the Duke of Sauoye hadde dispatched theyr Charge, their Lordes gaue direction to prepare all things in readinesse so soone as might be: but yet the Princes affection to the Duchesse did so torment him, as hee daylie compassed new meanes to conferre with

her, that she might know the passions he endured for her sake.

At length it came to passe, that the King and the Duke of Burgundie, & diuers other Princes, rode forth on pleasure together, and returned not againe for two dayes space, which made him thus beginne with the Duchesse, I neede not tell you Madame, for you know it well enough, how continually I languish in remedilesse affections, till now this opportunitie puts me in some hope of comfort, that you performing so solemne promise, will deliuer me out of this extremitie.

Wherefore faire Mistresse, since time and occasion hath pointed it, and Fortune (by Nature slowward and inconstant) fauours it: Let me intreate you to take the benefite of both, least hereafter we compass not the like againe.

My Lorde (quoth the Duchesse,) you must thinke I am more yours then mine owne, and make that reckonig of you, as no Lady can the like: how is it possible then for me (loving as I loue) to flie from that which loue commaunds me to fulfill? Let it suffice you then, that the regarde of mine honour

OF PALMERIN D'OLIVA.

honor defended, I am ready to do ought may agree with your liking. What happened afterwards I leaue to your opinions, but by the halfe the whole may be discerned: notwithstanding, vertuous Ladies haue power to resist such motions, though time, occasion, and such amorous solicitings did offer it them: but such may bee accounted more diuine then humane, and to them may worthily be erected a Trophée, in disgrace of the Temptresse Venus. But this little discourse not much dissenting from the matter, is written in reproach of such young dayntie Wantons, that so vainely attend on theyr ouer-sound and vnchaste desires: And may likewise be a warning to vnwisest olde men, that they chuse theyr Pantoffle fit for theyr soote.

But now is come the first of Maye, the day to begin the Enterpises of the Princes of France, and Sauoye: Lewes to entertaine the Duchesse Loue, begunne with such advantage, had greater desire now to execute his intent then before. Wherefore this day was his Paullion erected nere the Cittie Gates, being beautifull and very sumptuous: and at the Entrance thereof was placed a goodly Monument of blacke Marble, curiously set forth with columnes of white Marble, very thicke embossed with golde and pearle. At the side of his Paullion was placed another monument of greene Iaspis, adorned with many Vases, Pillars, and antique Imagerie of Golde, whercon hee intended the straunge Knights that came, should place the figures of their Ladies. On the other side was a stately place appointed for the Judges of the Fielde, who were the Dukes of Orleance and Burgundie: Princes highly esteemed for their Nobilitie, and in their Times had benehardy and aduenturous Knights. Many other Tents and Paullions were that day there set vpp, as well for straunge Knights that came, as for Noble men and Gentlemen of the Realme. And now comes in the Prince brauely mounted to the Fielde, accompanied with many young Princes, Knights, and Gentlemen: the Heralds and Kings of Armes ryding before, Drummes, Pipes, Trumpets

THE HISTORIE

pets and Clarions sounding, so gallantly as made the Ayre beauer a most swete Eccho. Before him in a very sumptuous Coach, was carryed the curious counterseit of the Duchesse, so superficially set forth, and with such perfection of Arte, as though it had bene the Duchesse her selfe.

After followed Prince Lewes, in rich and glorious guilte Armour, all ouer-grauen with most artificiall flowers, and mounted on a Courser of Spaine, esteemed one of the best runners of Europe, which made way with braue and lofty voltagés, as did not a little delight the beholders: one of the chiefe Princes of the Court bearing his Helmet, and another his Lance. What néede I make further report of the Princes triumph, hee comming to the fielde with such Equipage, as well besetmed the house from whence he descended, and as besetmed a lonely knight in presence of his Ladie: who as her fauour had sent him that morning, a costly Gyrdle garnished with Rubyes, Dyamonds, great Emeraulds, and other vnualluable rich stones, with a Swords so good as euer knight wore, and therewith rode he gyrded to the field. Before he went, the King his Father thus spake to him:

By Somme, this day and all the other following, Fortune speede thee so well, as thou mayst winne the honour my heart doth wish thee. By most néede, (answered the Prince) I hope before the semnight be finished, to accomplish your desire effectually, so fauour me thee that may command me. So leauing the King, hee came to the place appointed for the Combat, the Judges placing themselves where they should, and the Prince himselfe in his Tent, where hauing his Distresse picture set on the appoynted place, he commaunded the trumpets to sound, and a Herald to proclaime, that no knight bearing Armes, should bee so hardie as to enter his Tent, except he first granted his Ladie to be the most fairest creature in all the Worlde: and if any were so stubbozne not to confesse it, by knightly prowesse he would force him to do it.

The Herald hauing done his charge, and the Judges caused the Conditions to bee openly read, the People diuided them-

OF PALMERIN DOLIVA.

themselves in conuenient places, and the Lords, Ladies and Gentlewomen betooke them to their tents and Scaffolds. The first that entred the fielde against the Prince, was the Counte Durcell of Arragon, his foure Squires conducting before him in a great gorgeous litter, the statue of his Distresse Daughter to the King of Arragon; the sayest ladie in all Spaine, and for whose beautie hee took in hand this quarrell. After him came foure other Squires, the foremost leading his Courser, the second bearing his Helmet, the third his Shéld, and the fourth his gauntlets and launce: and comming to the monument appointed for strange ladies, caused the portrait of his lady to bee placed thereon: then comming to the princes Tent, said. I know not lord Lewes, if ouercome with glory, presumption of your strength, or ouerwéining your selfe, you haue made this large enterprise, to Combat with the best approued knights in the whole worlde, in iudging no fairer lady, to bee this day liuing then your owne: for mine owne part, I am not so troubled in conceit as you are, to quarrell for such a fabulous matter, yet dare I tell you that my lady is much more beautifull then yours, which if you will deny, I am ready by the strength of mine arme to make you confesse it. Lewes feeling himselfe gréued with these iulurious speeches of the Count, answered. Proud knight, I am ashamed to heare thy iudgement so simple, as to thinke I am come hither for a matter of so light moment, as though I would not iustifie against thee and all other what I haue promised: but let that passe, before we depart he will cause thee know thy folly, by that time thy pate and thy body is thorowly bumbasted, looke to thy selfe, for I intend to deit. So mounting on horsebacke, and prepared as it had bene to a warre mortall, encountred each other with such furie, as their Launces flying in shivers by into the ayre, they met together so terribly with their bodies, their Shéldes, their Horses and their heades, as they were both dismounted to the ground. But earnest desire to vanquish, they being beside, streng

THE HISTORIE

and well disposed knights, made them quickly beginne the second assault with their Swords, which was so dangerous, and handled with such dexteritie, as it was hard to iudge who should haue the honour of the Combate. But Lewes beholding the representation of his Lady, and considering her to excellent and fauourable to him, tooke heart afresh, and (as it were inspired with new vigour) so laide on the Counte Durcell, as in short time he brought him vnder the merrie of his sword, when holding it against his throte, he said. Peren-pox knight, if now thou confessest not my Lady to excell thee in beautie, thy vndiscreet head shall raunsome thy folly. The Counte (for all this) would not answer one word, by reason of the debilitie he felt himselfe in, hauing lost so much of his blood, as for the griefe he conceived to be thus vanquished: whereat Prince Lewes not content, would haue taken his head from his shoulders, but the Iudges of the field came to him, saying. By Lord, you ought to forbear, hauing brought your enemy beyond his owne defence: your victory being sufficient to content you, for his death. The Prince perswaded, entred his Paullion, and ioyfull of his conquest, commaunded two Cardants of the field, to take the figure of the Princesse of Arragon, and place it at the fete of the Duchesse counterfeite: which was done immediatly, and the Counte Durcell brought into his owne Tent, where the Chirurgions tooke diligent care for the curing of his woundes. Some after came a knight of Myllaine, who giuing such defiance as the other did, was in the ende constrained with great shame, to confesse vnder the conquering sword of Lewes, the imperfections of his Lady, and her stature placed by the Princesse of Arragon. The same day were five great Lordes of Italie brought in like subiection, and so the triumph ended till the next day, when the first that came into the field was a braue Gallant of Spayne, a knight of good estimation, and specially reputed, who after a vaine-glorious oration made (as the nature of the people is that way affected) put his

fortune

OF PALMERIN DOLIVA.

fortune to the triall of his lance: where hee sped so ill, as hee was unhorsed, and in the following Combate likewise received the foyle. After him seauen other knights of Castile proued as vnforsunate, their ladies pictures all reuerencing the Duchesse, who being not a little proude of her knight, and the memorable renowne hee witnessed of her beautie, I leaue to your considerations, both for her conceit that way, as also in loue towards the Prince, who seeing no more ready to enter the quarrell, returned thence to the Pallace, to conferre with his sweete mistress of his high good fortunes.

CHAP. XXXV.

Of the Combate betweene Prince Lewes of Fraunce, and Crenus the Duke of Gaule.



Great pleasure did the king conceiue, and all the nobility of the Court, at the gotten victories of Prince Lewes, against so many worthy knights, so that they altogether accounted him most fortunate. And now the third day when hee was entred his Tent, an English knight (no lesse braue in featnes then the other) defied the Prince, and betwene them beganne a dangerous conflict, in the midst whereof, the king with many Princes. Barons, and Lords, as also the Quene and the Duchesse of Burgundie, came to their standing, and unhappily beheld the fayle of the English knight, the Duchesse hearing him confesse her beautie, and beheld his Ladies portrait placed vnder hers. But now the curagious Duke

THE HISTORIE

of Gaule named Crenus, came brauely mounted into the
 hall, vowing his dutie to the King, Quene, and Ladies,
 who not knowing him, by his Armour iudged him some
 great Lord, in that no knight before caused so good opinion
 generally, nor came with brauer countenance into the field,
 hee being indeede a Prince of wonderfull possessions, and a
 knight at armes worthily proued. The Duke (as all
 the other had done) caused his Ladies to counterfeit to be
 placed where it ought by his Squires, to the no little admi-
 ration of all the beholders, noting what rare and excellent
 beautie it was adorned withall, the workman hauing per-
 formed such exquisite perfections, as it had beene the Ladie
 her selfe naturally living: while the Squires were thus
 placing it on the monument, the Duke aduanced himselfe
 to Lewes, in this manner. The ouermuch selfe conceit
 (Lord Lewes) of mindes but easily acquainted with mat-
 ters of difficultie, hath often beene, and yet is the cause to
 plucke great personages more lew then they expect: so
 that men haue seene them deceived of their intents, and re-
 warded with ridiculous shame and confusion. This spake
 I to you, hauing heere begun a businesse, the end whereof
 will bee more hard to you, then as yet the beginning hath
 beene: for Europe is sufficiently storied with hardy knights
 to assuage your presumptuous opinion, and Ladies much
 more faire and excellent, then thee whom you contend for.
 And this (by the fauour of Fortune, gracious regarde of my
 Lady and mistresse, and helpe of my good Sword) will I
 enforce you to confesse, that incomparable Agriola, daugh-
 ter to the King of England, for vertue, for beautie, and all di-
 uine perfections, exceedeth yours whatsoeuer she be. Before
 such a leasing (quoth the Prince) shall passe the lippes of a
 Sonne of Fraunce, eyther will I consent to be peccemeale
 to me in sunder: and before sayre Phœbus haue paced one
 houres iourney, I doubt not to make thee repent thy pride
 and arrogancie. By the soule of King Arture, said the duke,
 looke thou garde thy selfe well, for I haue, with my courte-
 lar,

OF PALMERIN D'OLIVA.

lar, abate the pride of a brauer man then thy selfe, and ere
 wee two part, I meane to trie if I can do it againe, there-
 fore resolue thy selfe to thy best defence, for (by my life)
 I will not fauour thee. Without any further speeches they
 encountred with such violence together, as Prince Lewes
 was throwne betwene his horses feete, and he for England
 lost his stirrups, but recovered himselfe well inough by the
 mayne of his horse: then hee seeing his enemy got by a-
 gaine, cast himselfe out of the saddle to haue taken his ad-
 uantage, but Lewes preuented him, and came marching a-
 gainst the Duke with his Sword drawne, who staied him
 thus. He thinks Prince of France before any worse be-
 fall thee, thou wast best to yeeld thy selfe, and remember
 that our Combate begins for the excellencie of beautie.
 By God man of England, answered Lewes, thou canst not
 perswade me to a thing so farre from my thought, therefore
 go to, and hee that hath the fairest friend shall soone bee
 knowne. In this great choller hee reached the Duke such a
 stroke on the head, as made him set one knee on the ground,
 but recovering himselfe quickly, and both thorowly angry,
 they layde on each other so cruelly, as the very hardiest of
 the beholders feared the successe. Thus fought they for mat-
 ter of speciall value, the defence of their owne reputations,
 and honor of their Ladies, whose loue was more precious
 in their hearts then their owne liues. So long these eager
 charges continued on both sides, as Prince Lewes hauing
 receiued more then twentie wounds on his body, feeling
 himselfe fainte, fell downe before his enemy, saying. O
 noble heart of Fraunce, the true succeder of thy famous
 predecessours. The victorious Englishman setting his foot
 vpon him, saide, Lord Lewes, if now thou declarest my
 Lady to excell thine in beautie, it costs thee thy life, a matter
 nothing pleasing to me, in respect of the chualtrie and singu-
 lar prowesse I haue found in thee, as also this magnani-
 mous enterprise of thine, which in despite of thy foyle, and
 death it selfe, shall make thee liue for ever. But Lewes made

THE HISTORIE

no answer, either for his weaknesse, or for to will conceit of his misfortune, wherefore the Judges came, who granting the Duke victorie, desired him to proceede no further, which hee honourably granting, was as if full of the conquest, as the Duchesse sad and pensive, thinking Prince Lewes had bene a fine cut-throat: wherefore shee flung away to her lodging, not tarrying for the king or any of his Ladies, who like wise departed the field in manifold sorrow, seeing their son so pittifully wounded: but above all, the Duchesse made more lamentation, then shee would have done for the death of her husband, yet fearing what shee thought secretly, should by her grace bee openly suspected, comforted herselfe so well as shee could: and being by her selfe, with one of her trusty Gentlewomen, shee thus bewailed her miseries. Ah trecherous Fortune, enemy to all actions of regard, why hast thou suffered the man that I most favoured, thus to bee vanquished: and (which is most to be pittied) without hope of life? Ah deceitfull tempest, seeing thou hast offered him so much wrong, doe mee the favour to beare him company in death, that lived and died so honorably for my leue. Ah death, let it suffice thee that thou hast wounded him, and make not thou experient of thine inevitable stroke, vntill thou wilt doe as much for mee. Ah false and flattering Sonne of Venus, is this the guard thou rewardest them withall that serue thee faithfully? So ceasing her complaint a while, in great impatience shee thus began againe. Alas, neither the one or other are cause hereof, but my most unhappy selfe, when (prouoked by my beauty) hee took in hand this enterprise: but if it bee so (deare friend) that enuious fate deale so hard with thee, soone may it thou bee reuenged on her that caused it. And with these words shee fell betwene the armes of one of her Ladies present, whom shee specially trusted, who thus spake to her. Why he to now Madame: will you perswade your selfe no other wise? beleeue mee there is no remedy but you must change your conceit. What will you forget your selfe?

OF PALMERIN D'OLIVA.

selfe: it is no time if you remember your selfe well, for if hee whom you loue and endure these paines for, should but destand hereof, in stead of seeking his health, you will shorten his daies, if (as you say) hee liue not without your welfare. More requisite is it that you go comfort him with your cherefull presence, then thus to bee the argument of both your deaths. Beside Madame, if my Lord succure, as no doubt hee shall, what may hee presume: trust me matter sufficient (if you gouerne not your selfe better) that you seeke to discouer, what most of all becomes you to conceale. Alas (my friend) answered the Duchesse, I know you speake the truth: but how is it possible for mee to content my selfe, seeing what estate hee is in, onely for my loue? But if hee die, small reckoning will I make of my life: for let my honour bee blamed or otherwise, let all aduersities and misfortunes go together. Yet will I somewhat bee aduised by thee, and I will go see if my presence will any thing comfort him. To breake off this talke, came an Esquire from the Duene, to intreate her come to her Maiestie: which shee did, and went with the Duene to the Princes lodging, where beholding the Duchesse so pale and full of griefe, with this conceit his wounds opened and bled afresh, for which cause the Chirurgions, who imagined the occasion to proceed by shame the Prince conceived, that any one should see what wounds hee took by the Duke of Gaule, wherefore they forbade any to enter his Chamber, vntill the perill of death was better passed ouer, which was within short time, when the Duchesse by her often visiting him, conuerted his sorowes into many ioyfull conceits. But because our history appertaines not onely to his daies, or the loue of the Duchesse, wee will returne to the Duke of Gaule, who after hee had thus conquered Prince Lewes, followed the conditions of the feld, taking the portrait of his Lady Agriola, and placed it where the Duchesse picture stood, setting it among the other conquered Ladies. That day diuers other knights came on behalfe of their Ladies, whom

THE HISTORIE

the valiant Englishman entertained with such valour, as all his paines turned to the honour of his Mistresse Agriola, who now was seated as paragon of the field.

CHAP. XXXVI.

Of the Combate betweene Palmerin and the Duke of Gaule, and of the successe thereof.



P the same day that the Prince of Fraunce was vanquished by the Duke of Gaule, arrived at Paris Palmerin, Trineus, and their traine, but the combate was first ended, wherefore they commanded their Squires to prepare their Tent. Palmerin understanding that the duke was conquered, græued not a little, in that he came no sooner to win the honoz of the Prince: yet knowing, if now he could conquer the Duke, more honour should arise to him then by the Prince Lewes, hee contented himselfe, passing that night in his Tent with the Prince Trineus, in diuers arguments of the Combate betweene Lewes of Fraunce and the Duke: yet was Lewes highly commended of Palmerin though hee were overcome, because hee had so brauely done the two former daies against all the knights that came. All this night could not Palmerin sleepe, thinking on the day ensuing, but rising early in the morning, and commending himselfe to God in his prayers, hee put on the Coate of armes his Lady Poliarda gave him before his departure, and toke the counterfeite of his Lady in his armes, not thinking any of his knights or Squires worthy to beare it, and thus accompanied with Trineus and other

OF PALMERIN D'OLIVA.

other Allemaigne Lordes, entred the Lyfles with so braue a gesture and countenance, as every one commended him for a good knight. And hauing placed the Picture on the accustomed Monument, as it had beene to the liuely creature her selfe, he thus beganne. Ah perfect myrrour of all beautie, vertue, and excellencie, resolue thy selfe this day, to beare the Palme of honour from all Ladies in the Worlde, in that your knight craues a thousand deaths, before hee giue consent to the contrarie: and perswades himselfe so assuredly of your present fauour, as he durst venture on a whole Armye, to keepe his religion in your diuine seruice. These wordes were spoken so low, as the Duke of Gaule heard him, where with not contented, he answered. What new knight, demandest thou (cunge) of a Ladie to defend her Beautie? Ill canst thou performe what thou speakest, if thou be no better provided. For all that Syz, said Palmerin, I hope to make you graunt what I say, and that there is not a fayrer Ladie liuing, then she whose figure thou here beholdest, other wise I shall constrain thee to beise it, whether thou wilt or no. What shall we sone see (quoth the Duke: So departing into their Tents to be armed, and ready to Fight, they met so valiantly together, as both of them brake their Lances brauely without mouing each other, and taking newe Staues, encountered againe, where the Duke was unhorsed, and Palmerin very sore wounded: So betaking them to their good Swords, continued a dangerous and doubtfull Combat, till in the ende Palmerin ouercame the Duke, and holding his Sworde ready to cut off his head, sayd, Knight thou art dead, if thou graunt not my Lady to excell thine in beauty. Ah Syz, (saide the Duke) unhappy be the houre that you toke in hand this voyage, to deprive me of that which made mee the most happie knight of the Worlde, with what countenance may I present my selfe before her, seeing Fortune hath bene so aduerseto mee: Thus filling the ayre with his requeets, the Judges came, desiring Palmerin to saue his life, whereto hee consented: which wordes were more bitter to the Duke then death

THE HISTORIE

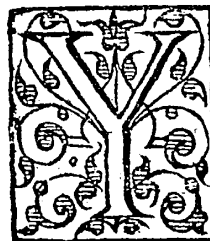
death, who in these complaints was ledde into his Tent by his Squyres. Palmerin not forgetting the honour due to his Ladie, tooke downe the Image of Agriola, and sette his Ladies in the come, saying: How are you in the place Ga-da-ne, which is your owne by right. This victorie was not a little pleasant to the Frenchmen, but especially to the Prince Lewes, when he heard thereof: who the better to make his love knowne to Palmerin, sent him two of the best Horses in his Stable, as glad of the reuenge on the Duke, as that Palmerin remained Conquerour. Palmerin sent hearty thanks to the Prince, as well for his present as his good will, and so continued in his deuote to his Ladies Beautie, as that day he honoured her with the conquest of foure French knights, and the submission of their Ladies portraictures: yet aboue all, Palmerin commended to Trineus, the valour of the Englishman, confirming the Duke for a chosen knight at Arms, and neither Frenchmen, Italian, Spanyard, English-man, Romane, or Greeke, that attempted against Palmerin, in the following dayes, but still he bare away the victorie, and Polinardes Picture theyr Ladies obsequence. The last of the eyght dayes, came into the field the Lorde of Albrer, greatly esteemed for Browesse and Chivalrie, and he would defend the Beautie of his French Ladie: but Palmerin after a long and tedious fight, brought him and his Mistresse among the vanquished, and so concluded the French Princes enterprise, to his owne immortall honour. Afterwards came the King Agariel, with the Princes and Lords of his Court to Palmerins Tent, making him the greatest entertainment could be deuised, whereof Trineus, and the other Allemaigne Lordes were highly contented, and after his Wounds were healed, caused him and his companie to bee lodged in his owne Palace, where the Quene, and her Ladies would often visite him, and the Prince Lewes likewise, who by manie intreaties with Trineus, vnderstood her name for whom Palmerin thus aduentured. But when the King vnderstood, that Trineus was the Emperour of Allemaignes Sonne, and all this

OF PALMERIN D'OLIVA.

this honourable Companie came from his Fathers Court, theyr Welcome cannot be sufficiently sette downe, nor Palmerins prayes effectually rehearsed: to whom the Prince Lewes thus entertained. In god soth Syr Palmerin, the Prince may imagine himselfe happie, that is honoured with your knightly service, but aboue all, the Noble Emperour of Allemaigne. My Lord (quod Palmerin) it likes you to speake your pleasure of mee, yet did I neuer knowe knightes more worthy in fight then your Country-men, among whom your defects may not escape vnrported, no more then the daides of Scipio can among the Romanes. Manie other honourable and familiar speeches passed betwene the Prince and Palmerin, about the Ladies Figures, that we brought to the Fountes: Polinarda, onely triumphing beynd all the rest, hauing no second, but faire Agriola of England, the goddesse and Mistresse to the Duke of Gaule.

CHAP. XXXVII.

¶ Of the Combate which the Dukes of Sauoye and Lorrayne had together, for the beauty of their Ladies: and what was the issue thereof.



V Du haue here before heard, the Enterprise of the Duke of Sauoye, for the beautie of his Ladie, and how after Prince Lewes his dayes of Combat were finished, hee should maintaine nine other in the like quartrell: Wherefore the day after Palmerins victorie, he put himselfe in order as the time requyred, and hauing in the fiede erected two Pillars of Porphyre, displacing them that belonged to the

THE HISTORIE

the Prince Lewes, his Tent was there set up all of Crimson Velvet, very curiously embroidered with Gold and pearle, and round about within, were Inscriptions of many braue sentences of Loue, extracted from Historiographers and Poets, as well in Greeke, as in Latine, in praise of the Distresse of his deuoted affections. In the morning hee went to giue the good morrowe to the Princesse Lucemania, Daughter to the King of Fraunce, whome hee had chosen for his Spouse and Wife. After many solemne courtesies passed betwene them, fearing the Duene should finde them together, hee tooke his leaue of her, shee giuing him from her arme a sumptuous Bracelet, garnished with fire great Pyamondes, and fire faire Rubies: which gift much encouraged him to follow his Enterprise. Being come into the field, the Judges appointed were the eldest Sonne of Fraunce, and the Counte of Armignac: wise Princes and valiant knights at Armes, and standing in the gate of his Tent vnarmed, because hee sawe none ready to offer him Battell, the Duke of Lorraine at length entered the fiede, attended on by a braue company of knights & squyres, who brought the portraite of his Lady, being a figure of rare Beautie, and hauing a Crowne on her head, where ouer was written in great Letters of Golde, This is Polinarda, exceeding in Beautie all Ladyes in the worlde: Which was read by manie, who could not satisfie theyr eyes in beholding so braue a spectacle, and beeing sette on the Pillar appoynted, hee came to the Duke of Sauoye, saying: Blasphemous knight, detractor of the Beautie of Ladyes, here may thine owne eyes witnesse how thou hast belied Beautie, in presuming to thinke any more saye then this incomparable creature, to whome thy Ladye may not worthily be hand-mayde. And if thou wilt not presently confesse what I commaund thee, thelde thy head from my Weapon, which I meane to knocke well for thy great indiscretion. The Duke of Sauoye enraged with these words, Armed himselfe presently without any answer, and mounting on Horsebacke, with a strong Lance in his hande, encountred

OF PALMERIN D'OLIVA.

countred his Enemye so couragiously, as breaking both their Staues brauely in shivers, to their very Gannetts, passed on without any further harme. The Duke of Sauoye angry that he had not dismounted his enemye, with his Sword drawne returned furiously vpon him, and laid on such strokes as the fire sparkled from his Helmet: yet the Duke of Lorraine, like a good and hardie knight, defended himselfe most valiantly, and reached the Duke of Sauoye manie thewde Wounds, so that both of them (beeing thoroughly nettled) rent each others Armour in such sort with their Swords, and mangled their flesh so vnnmercifully, as the Judges could not imagine who hadde the better vantage. The Duke of Sauoye in ordering to see the Duke of Lorraine holde out so long, beganne to storne more like a fiend then a man, rayling on fortune, that (in respect of his Ladies beauty) she assisted him no better, and being at the very point of dispaire, tooke heart afresh, and redoubbling his strokes vpon his aduersarie, at length slew his Horse vnder him, who falling downe, and his Master with him, by reason that he was so sore wearied, and bruised, & beside, had broken his thigh in the fall, could not recover himselfe, before the Duke of Sauoye (being alighted) set foote vpon him, and in furie would haue parted his head from off his shoulders, but such that the Judges ranne quickly and stayed him. Then was the Duke of Lorraine halfe dead carryed into his Tent, and the Duke of Sauoye caused Polinardes picture to be sette at Lucemantias fate: a thing very strange in respect of their great difference. Afterwards hee was vnarmed, to haue his Wounds bound up, which were so daungerous, as gladly hee would haue bene excused from the Combate with any other knight for that daye, did not shame, and the Lawe he had made himselfe prouoke him to the contrary. But within an houre after, was desired by a knight of Scicilia, who would Combate on foote, with the battel-Axe, in which confideth the Duke was very nere overcome, hee had lost so much bloud before: but yet in brieve, the

Scyci-

THE HISTORIE

Scicilian Knight lost the day, his Ladies Picture was yielded conquered, and the Duke of Sauoye went to rest him in his Tent.

CHAP. XXXVIII.

¶ How the Duke of Sauoye entered the Combate against Ptolome, and how hee sped.



DAlmerin not as yet in perfect health, was aduertised how the Duke of Sauoy had conquered the Duke of Lorraine, fighting for the beautie of the Princesse Polinarda, the conceite whereof so grieved him as nothing could more, to see her honour so badly defended whome aboue all other he esteemed dearest, which made him in great choller, say before the Prince Trineus. By God (my Lord) Loue made a slender choyse of the Duke of Lorraine for his Tassall, and Madame Polinarda seemed to bee scant wile to choyse him for her Champion, in respect of the excellent Beautie Nature hath bestowed on her. And yet it could not bee imagined, how the Duke of Lorraine should gayne the victorie without shame, in seeking honour beyond his desert, because hee is unworthy such extraordinarie fauour, which makes me repute it rather of a sainte heart, then any want of a iust quarrell. Trineus hearing Palmerin so affectionate in his speeches, in a merry laughter, saide. In good sooth say Palmerin, the Duke of Lorraine was but ill counselled, to enter the Combate for my Sisters beautie without her Licence, in that hee once learned, how you could defend it much better then hee. Palmerin fearing hee hadde spoken more

OF PALMERIN D'OLIVA.

more then he might, because hee discoursed his Loue so openly, excused the matter thus. If it were not (my Lord) that I doubt to offer wrong to a Lady, on whome I dependeth my life, and whome I loue more deare then my selfe: I would cause the Frenchman well to vnderstand, he wth madame Polinarda your Sister, surpasseth in all perfections, eyther of grace or beautie, all the Ladies of the Countrey: yea, I dare say of the whole World: therefore one may easily coniecture, that the Duke of Lorraine during the Combat, had his minde fixed on baser occasions. When Trineus smiling to see Palmerin so diligent to shadow his Loue, saide: It is no strange matter (Friende Palmerin,) to see presuming mindes payde with selfe-same Coyne, as the Duke is: and yet I cannot maruell enough, that my Sister Polinarda would not commit this matter to my charge, shee hauing had so good knowledge of your Valour and Bravewie. These speeches pleased not Palmerin a little: and did in such sort encourage him, as for the iniurie done his Lady, by the Duke of Sauoy, in setting her figure at the seate of Lucemania, hadde not Trineus perswaded him with faire speeches, all like and soe as he was, he would haue gone to reuenge this dishonour. notwithstanding, hee called Ptolome secretly, saying: Thou knowest (my deare friende) what shame is offered her, to whom I was Destinated before my birth, by the presumption of an euil-bolde Knight, and what griefe it is to mee, that I cannot at this present reuenge this wrong my selfe, I pray thee therefore supplie my insufficiencie, and enter the Combate with that vaine-glorious Duke, of whome thou mayest gayne honour and yeld me content, in giuing ease to my afflictions, which else are insupportable. I promise you (my Lord), answered Ptolome, before you made the motion I intended it, and I will accomplish it with such good will, as I make no doubt to ouercome the Duke of Sauoye. And for my Mistresse Brionella, will I enter the fildes, whose Beautie is sufficient to enrich me with the victorie, for surely in my conceit, shee farre surpasseth Lucemania. Therefore my Lord

THE HISTORIE

Lordes let mee request one courteisie, which I am loathe you should deny me: that if you shall be able to ingroin, but to accompadie me with your presence in the fildge. If the Ayze will suffer mee, (quoth Palmerin, I will, in meane while, I will pray, that thy ffortune may fall out to my hearts desire.

Thus Trineus, Palmerin, and Prolome, were passing the time, conferring with other Noble men, of the valour of the Duke of Sauay, against all strange knights: and how he had foyled the Duke of Lorrayne, had not his Horse fall on him, and mained him: otherwise, he brought the Combate to so good a Iudgement, as he had wonne the honour of the fildge. Whereat Palmerin was more offended then before, because himselfe was not able to reuenge this misfortune: Wherewithall, hee conceived a kinde of Iealousie of the Duke of Lorrayne, because hee hadde chosen his Ladie Polinarda for his Mistresse, and on her behalfe hee hadde entred the Combate: and how hee durst place her Picture on the Pillar with her name, without hee had receyued some commaundement from her: Which conceit so grieved him, as his wounds began to be as dangerous as at the first, continually labouring in his thoughts; Now with the lightnes, then againe with the inconstancie of Women, neuertheless, he could not iudge, (affecting earnestly the vertues of his Lady) that thee would be of such a double liking: and in this doubtfull estate, sayde. Ah God, I see that Women winne lightly, and lose againe more easily. Then repenting his words, followes on thus: O heauens, and what shall I say? It is impossible that thea (meaning Polinarda) should be so forgetfull, and neuer will I believe, that a Princesse so wise and vertuous, would reward mee with such Treason, which may not, nay I dare sweare cannot, once enter her thoughts. Yet would not all opinions serue to allaye this new ieaousie, but still it hadde power to confound reason: and all the night continued he in this variable conceit, till the next morning, when Prolome (so sone as the Sunne arose) accompanied with Trineus, went to his Tent, where being Armed, all saving his Helmet,

having

OF PALMERIN D'OLIVA.

having his Launce and Sheldie, hee came to the Duke, saying. Thou knowest knight the cause of my comming, stand upon thy garde, for I fight for beautie. The Duke suddenly at these words mounted on horsebacke, and ranne against his enemy with such strength, as Prolome cast the Duke forth off his saddle, and suddenly alighted with his Sworde drawne: but the Duke recovering himselfe, entertained him in sharper sort then hee expected. Now beganne betwene them a cruell and pitious Combat, as their Armour, sheldes and swordes, flew about in peces, and the blood trickling downe their bodies in many places, so that it was generally reputed, how the fight could not end without the losse of both their liues. Yet in the ende, the Duke being of stronger constitution then Prolome, and greedy of victory over his enemy, ran so violently upon him as hee got him on the grounde, and he being uppermost, offered to take the aduantage of his life: but the Judges forbidding it, caused Prolome to be carried into his Tent, where the Prince Trineus stayed, not a little, sorry for this great misfortune. The Duke likewise sore wounded was carried into his Pavillion, but first hee saw the portraict of Brionella sette in the rancke of the conquered. The same day did the Duke fight with a knight of Scotland at the Place, who not nimble enough in using that weapon, in the end had the foyle, and three other knights: afterward at severall weapons, so that it was admirable to beholde the exploits of Armes the Duke did, in that no knight as yet medled with him, but departed with shame, and their Ladies pictures placed as vanquished. And now was Palmerins Combat against the Duke of Gaule not talked on: for the Duke of Sauoy was accounted the onely knight in the world, to the no small toy of the Princesse Lucemania, who perswaded her selfe now, that her beautie was most excellent. But thee was not so pleasant as Palmerin was pensive, and enraged out of measure: notwithstanding his weakenes, and the often intreaties of Trineus, he would needs to the fildge, say-

ing,

THE HISTORIE

ing. God my Lord perswade mee not, for I reckon not my life, so I may take vengeance of the dishonour done to my Ladie your Mistresse: the manifold courtesies of the Emperour your Father, haue so bounde me to her and you, as excēde my life farre, and therefore I beseech you not to hinder me. Trineus yet overcame him: by perswasions, assuring him to haue time sufficient for his reuenge, whereat greatly displeased, hee feigned himselfe to be whole sooner then hee was indeede, for the great desire hee had to deale with the Duke. And Prince Lewes angrie, to see the Duke hold the fild longer then hee did, not able to bee overcome by any knight, came to Palmerin, saying. I knew not my Lord, whether you vnderstande the Duke of Sauoyes victories against so many hardie knights, but belike his strength is much better then mine was, or fortune all wes him more fauour then thee did to me. In my conceit, if you enter not the Combat, you do me wrong and your selfe too: and if he depart hence with victory, then shall I haue cause to complaine of you: in that his successe hath made him so braue and presumptuous, as though no knight is able to answere him in the fild: let me intreate you Sir Palmerin to abate his pride, and (as well hee deserues) make him know his folly. Palmerin hauing greater desire to execute this matter, then thus to be intreated, returned the Prince this answer. My Lord, God giues honour and victory to whom hee pleaseth, without eyther regarde of the cause or the persons. If according to bountie or nobility of minde he distributed such gifts, then had you bene among the better sorte, as furnished sufficiently with valour and magnanimitie: yet if your enterpryse haue not sorted to your desire, account this for certaine, that it is for your good, and for other reasons then are to you known, for such matters are his secrets, and hee doth ballance them by his diuine wisdom. Notwithstanding, as well to satisfie your request, as ease mine owne minde, to morrow morning will I enter my Tent, albeit my present estate would haue me stay a while: there will

OF PALMERIN DOLIVA.

will I Combate with the Duke, not certaine how fortune meanes to deale with mee. But happen what shall, I go with a minde to conquire, and doubt not but the issue will be such, as shall yeelde you content, and mee the victory: so shall your sadnes and mine be conuerted into pleasure. With this answer the Prince satisfied, departed, yet was hee ignorant of Palmerins intent, which was far otherwise then hee imagined: but pleased as hee was, he went into the presence Chamber, where many knights were conferring of deedes of Armes past, to whom hee opened the fantasie of Palmerin, which caused a generall doubting of the Duke, setting him downe for vanquished, except Palmerins weaknesses were his greater friend.

CHAP. XXXIX.

Of the perillous Combat betweene Palmerin and the Duke of Sauoye, and the issue thereof.



So daies together had the Duke of Sauoy maintained this quarrell, for the beautie of his Ladie Lucemania, & no knight as yet could get any aduantage of him, vntill the seauenth day, when Palmerin prepared himselfe to the filds, and entered his tent, accompanied with Prince Lewes of France, Trineus, and many other Princes. The King with all his traine taking their standing to behold the Combat, Palmerin came armed forth of his Tent, sauing his Helmet, which was carried before him by two Squires with his Shield and Pace, and next to them came two Princes, who bare the portraiture of his Ladie Polinarda, which being sette on the Pillar, hee

THE HISTORIE

clasped on his Helmet, and taking his Pace in his hande, marched to the Dukes Tent, and thus summoned him. Knight, thou hast long enough defended the field, and to my great græfe that it hath bene so long, my turne is now come, and it is good reason I should keepe it the rest of the time: for the Ladie whom I loue, is not onely much more beautifull then thine, but beside, excelleth all other whatsoeuer, and if thou wilt not confesse the same, I will not leaue thee with this Pace till I haue forced thee to do it. I know not saide the Duke, what thou canst do, but I am of the minde, that I shall some qualitie thy ouerbolde bzaing. At these words the Duke taking his Pace, deliuered Palmerin so sounde a stroke ou the heade, as made him to stagger, but Palmerin requited him well againe for it, and long had they fought together, and bruised each other very pitifully. till at length Palmerin gaue the Duke such a cruell stroke betwene the head and the shoulders, as hee fell to the ground cleane bereft of sence: when Palmerin taking off his Helmet, would not offer him any further violence, but setting his sword against his brest, said. Now am I sufficiently reuenged on him, that so ill intreated the figure of the most fayrest among Ladies. The Judges of the field, thinking Palmerin would haue slaine the Duke, came running to him with these words. Content you Sir, hee is vanquished, and hath no power to defend himselfe. Whereupon Palmerin put by his sword againe, and leauing the Duke, went presently to the Piller where his Ladies portraict stood, which embracing in his armes, he placed himself, and Lucemania at her feete, saying. I beseech you Madam to pardon your knight, in that hee did no sooner repell the famous iniurie offered you, and impute it not to feare, or want of courage, but debility of body, which once a little reconered, I came to maintaine your honour, and heere confirm you for the most beautifull Lady liuing. While Palmerin thus contemplated his Mistresse figure, the Judges commaunded the Duke to bee carried into his Paullion, where

OF PALMERIN D'OLIVA.

where, with soueraigne drinke life was got into him againe, but when hee knew himselfe to be vanquished, and that in one houre hee lost the greatest honour of all his life-time, very conceit of græfe had well nere slaine him. No lesse was the sorrow of Madam Lucemania, but shee and her knight were got so much discontented, as Palmerin, Trieneus, and Ptolome were ioyfull: but aboue all other, Prince Lewes of Fraunce, more pleasant then if himselfe had triumphed in victorie, thinking hee could not sufficiently extoll the renowne of Palmerin, calling him y onely puller downe of the proude. That day did Palmerin encounter with seauen other knights, and in his conquests shewed himselfe not onely magnanimous, but mercifull, sauing their liues, and honouring his Mistresse with the humilitie of theirs. The next day likewise after many braue exploits, being ready to leaue y fiede because none came to resist him, on a suddain there entred a knight in blacke Armour, striped all ouer with Golde, and bearing in his sheelde of Azure the Golden Sunne, whose braue order of entraunce declared him to be a hardie knight at Armes, who aduancing himselfe to Palmerin, said. My intent of coming hither (Sir knight) is to let thee vnderstand, that I am the Seruaunt and beloved of a Ladie, who may not bee equalled with any other, and because I am ensoyned, y thou maintainest thy friend, to excell all Ladies whatsoever, I offer to proue the contrary, and will make thee confesse it. I neuer spake wordes more true, answered Palmerin, and heere abide to iustifie them: but this place is ordeyned to no other ende, then to make thee and thy like know, what vnadvised enterprises you take in hand. And one thing is required of thee, that before thou begin the Combate, thou sette vpon this Piller the counterfeite of her, whom thou perswadest thy selfe to excell my Ladie in beautie, according to the conditions of this field published throught all Europe. That cannot I do, answered the knight of the Sunne, for I haue no other picture of her then is imprinted in my heart, where loue hath

THE HISTORIE

so liuely figured her person, as she is dayly presented to mee by her incomparable beautie, which cannot bee taken from me but onely by death. And if loue folle in the soule, (as diuols hold opinion) whole wordes cannot separate me from her. And therefore are all men vnworthie to receiue fruition (by their regard) of a thing so precious, which makes me imagine, none but my selfe moorthy to looke on her diuine figure. Prepare thee therefore to thy horse, and defende thy selfe. Palmerin desirous to know the name of this fayre Ladie, said. I see sir knight, that thou art meruailous proud and surly, which make mee rather desire to Combat with thee then any other to abate this hotte honour: albeit this is contrarie to his conditions; who was the principall Author of this enterpryse: which is, that thou shouldest set on this Pillar her portraict whom thou so esteemest: yet this exception shall bee graunted thee, for the desire I haue to know what thou canst do, as also her name, if thou darrest reueale it. To tell thee her name (answered the knight of the Sunne) I will not stricke with thee, and because in concealing it, I shall offer her wrong, nature hauing in her sette downe the onely worke of beautie: know therefore that her name is Polinarda, Daughter to the mightie Emperour of Allemaigne. These wordes were so ykelesome to Palmerin, and troubled his thoughts in such sort, that hee knew not readilye what to aunswere: notwithstanding in midst of his choller, thus spake. By God knight, thou hast made a good choise, for against her beautie will not I contende, hauing it in greater estimation and reuerence the thou canst haue: but I am readie to proue, that thou deservest not to be named her knight, no not so much as her meanest Seruaunt. That shall we try, said the knight of the Sunne, befoze wee part: and albeit her excellencie deserue farre greater seruice then mine, yet so it is, that for the loue I beare her, and the affection I haue to obey her by some agreeable seruice, I may by good reason name my selfe hers. At these speeches Palmerin conceived such iealousie, as without attending

OF PALMERIN D'OLIVA.

tending any further matter, mounted in great anger on horsebacke, and met the knight of the Sunne so forcible, as both of them were sent to the ground: whereupon they drew their Swordes, and charged each other with such furie, as they? Armour and Shelds were hacked in peces, and the ground coloured with their expence of blood. No permission of breathing was suffered betwene them, but blood and death earnestly desired on either part, so that the King, the Lordes and the Iudges, reputed this for the strangest Combat that euer they saw, nor could they say who was likeliest to win the feld, but if the one died, the other could not escape, so that the King moued with compassion, caused them to be seuered, and commaunded them to enter their Tents. Which motion liked well the knight of the Sunne, for long he perswaded himselfe he could not hold out, wherefoze he mounted on horsebacke so well as he could and withdrew himselfe, Palmerin being wonderfully displeased, that hee could not obtaine the victorie of this knight. Some after, the King and the Prince Lewes came into his Tent, and seeing him very sore wounded, would not let him stay there, but said, Beloeue me (Sir Palmerin) you haue great neede of rest, and your wounds I see are very dangerous, you shall therefore be conueyed to my Pallace, where all helpes that may be deuised shall be given, assuring you, that greater honour could neuer knight purchase, then you haue done. And though this last Combate were not ended, you neede not be displeased, the issue thereof importeth the death of the one or the other, and perhaps of both, which I would not haue seene, for two of the best Prouinces in my Realme. And mee thinks you should content your selfe, hauing receyued befoze such honour ouer so many Lordes and knights of name: come you therefore with mee, and Lord Trineus beare vs companie. Great thanks receiued the King of them for this honourable courtesie, and Palmerin went with him to the Pallace, where the Kings Chyrurgions toke care for his Wounds, hee being lodged in the most stately Chamber

THE HISTORIE

At the Court. Now the Prince Lewes beganne to loue Palmerin so dearly, as hee could not bee an houre forth of his cōpanie, desiring his health as his owne welfare; wherefore all things that hee imagined Palmerin tooke pleasure in, would hee performe with his uttermost endeouours, and would suffer none to hold him talke, but onely of matter that might yeeld pleasure and delight. Notwithstanding, diuers knights conferring with him that evening, as concerning the knight of the Sunne: Palmerin answered them, that his minde should neuer be thoroowly quieted, vntill such time as he fought with him againe. The Prince, who still endeouored to keepe him from sadness, said, I beleue (my lord) that hee will not easily be induced to deale with him againe, for you brought him into such estate, as hee will keepe himselfe hereafter out of your handes: and well I am assured, that had you continued but a little longer, the victorie had bene yours, for the knight was so weakened, that hee did nothing but defend your blowes. It pleaseth you (my Lord) to say so quoth Palmerin, but had hee felt such haileur in me, or such courage as becomes a vertuous Combatant, hardlye could hee escape as hee hath done: neuerthelesse, I hope (with the fauour of Fortune) to meete him once more, and then we will trie who is the strongest. Much other talke they had, but Palmerin intreated the Prince, that all the portraits of the conquered Ladies might bee brought him, which were aboue an hundred, of diuers beauties and most strange fashions, and among them all could be found none second to Polinarda, but (as we haue said already) that of Agriola the Princesse of England: who (by the report of a Gentleman present that hadde seene her) was much more beautifullly then her figure presented. Such speeches they continued so long of the English Virgin, as Trineus (albeit hee neuer saw her) became amorous of her, and at y instant hee so solemnly vowed himselfe hers, as thence forward hee swore neuer to loue any but her, so that for her sake he thrust himselfe into many perillous fortunes, as in the following discourse

OF PALMERIN D'OLIVA.

discourse of the History you shall reade more at large. From thome let vs returne to the Prince Lewes, who seeing so many portraictures of Princesses and Ladies, would daily congratulate Palmerins good fortune, and embracing him, said. So helpe me God, my noble companion, I would neuer desire greater riches in the world, then to resemble you, especially in chualrie, which in you is so surpassing all other, as you haue ended to your honoz, what a number haue sayled in. Oh how happy may the Lady account her selfe, that hath such a knight? and were not the condition too cruell towards my selfe, I could wish I were a Woman in her place, to haue so high rule and commaunde ouer you. At which words all present beganne to smile, yet shewing good countenance to Palmerin, for the affection they saw the Prince bare him, which is yet to this day a comon vsage and practise among Courtiers: but Palmerin somewhat ashamed of such superstitious prayles, answered. Trust mee my Lord, I account my happinesse the greater that I haue done service to so high a personage and so good a knight as you are, desiring to meete you in such place hereafter where you may perceiue the good will I beare you, not onely for this high entertainment, which is more then I can deserue, as for the pleasure I haue to honoz so good a Prince, which if the occasion happen, you shall perceiue the experience. I haue spoken nothing (quoth the Prince) but what is more acquainted to others then my selfe, and if I would conceale them, then will they bee most openly knowne, because vertue doth so apparantly shine in them. Many other speeches passed betwene them, and longer had continued, but that many Lords which came to see the Iousts, were now upon departing, and therefore would take their leaue of the King, whereupon they were constrained to breake off, the Prince going to his Chamber of presence, where hee gaue thanks to a number that honoured the Court with their presence, and so one after another all departed, the Duke of Sauoye being one of the last, ashamed (God knowes) to be

THE HISTORIE

he so conquered by Palmerin, and not abiding his Lady Lucemania farewell. But Lewes did not serue the Duchesse so, for her loue continued as resolute as before, and she loved him as well conquered, as had hee bene the conquerour, whereof she assured him by many amorous meetings, by which meanes the Prince stayed the Duke at the Court longer then himselfe would haue done. Lewes thus louing Palmerin as you haue heard, intreated the Duchesse to come and visit him, which she accomplished the day following, when Palmerin spent many discourses with her, rather of loue then entring into religion, for hee perceiued by her countenance that she had no will to become a Nun, where wee will leaue them together, and tell you who the knight of the Sunne was, that fought the last Combate with Palmerin.

CHAP. XL.

Who the knight of the Sunne was, and of his strange adventures.



The King of Hungaria, Father to the Prince Tarisus, that married the fayre Griania, Mother to Palmerin, had in his latter yeres a Sonne named Netrides, and after hee had long liued in rest and prosperity, hee dyed, leauing the yong prince Netrides, fiftene yeres olde, and in the custody of his elder brother Tarisus. This Netrides growing in good constitution of body and behauiour, being well beloued generally, so gracious, gentle, and well gouerned hee was, as the Lords, knights,

Gen.

OF PALMERIN D'OLIVA.

Gentlemen, and people of Hungaria, esteemed him more then they King Tarisus, who being Crovned after his Fathers decease, loued Netrides as Brother. had requyred, till Fortune (enuious of this Concord) not willing that the vertues of this yong Prince should be there ertinguished, chaunged his Loue and affection into exceeding hatred, by an occasion hereafter following. One day the King Tarisus walking in his Garden to take the ayre, left his Brother Netrides in the Chamber, accompanied with the Quene, who without imagination of any harme, nor that his fatall starres would sort him any misfortune, satte downe in the Kings Chayre, as hee talked with the Quene, and continued there so long, till Tarisus came vpp and found him there sitting, which he toke in such ill parte, as in a great rage he thus beganne.

Who made thee so audacious and presumptuous to sitte in my Seate, against thy dutie and my liking: By mine honor thou hast done more then thou weneest: and if I see the like againe, or may I but heare thereof, thy Head shall pay the price of thy follie. Netrides, who of his owne nature was humble and gentle, fell downe on his knee, intreating the King his Brother to pardon him, for what he had done was not with any intent or meaning to displease his Highnesse: but an ouer-sight, and that so he would permit it to passe. The King made him no answer, because hee toke Netrides reasons for no payment, but conceived a secreete hatred in his minde by this occasion of so slender moment, which increased thenceforward, as the matter prouoking a fiery Beteeze: so that he did repine at his Brother so much, as hee would not once speake to him, nor afford him a good countenance.

Then called hee to remembrance the loue of his people towards his Brother: And if this hatred should come to theyr knowledge for so small a cause, hee imagined they would displace him, and make Netrides King. For which cause hee intended to haue him slaine, and the execution hereof he committed to one of his Archers, but God (who is euermore the preseruer of the innocent) would not suffer such a damned deed of

of

THE HISTORIE

of Paradise to take effect. Which Tarisus perceyving, and finding one day his Brother alone, enflamed with this discontented humour, saide: Netrides, thou hast offended mee more then I will now stand to argue on, I therefore bannish thee my Courte and Kingdome: and loke that within three dayes thou get thee hence, and on thy life not to discover it to any man, or take any one with thee to beare thee companie.

The young Prince obedient to his Brother, made answer, that hee would accomplish his charge, and so withdrew himselfe into his Chamber, not declaring to any one his cause of heavinesse. Then willing one of his Squires to saddle his Steede, departed away as close as hee could, forbidding any of his Servants to follow him: and such expedition hee made, as not resting but one night in any Lodging, he left his Brothers Kingdome, wandering without any care of himselfe, or which way hee went, but went here and there, as Fortune pleased to guide him. Having long time Travelled in Allemaigne, his Hony sayled him, in that at his departure hee was but badly provided: yet could not his Princely minde abase it selfe to Beg, so that being without meate or drinke, or any place to rest himselfe in, ashamed of himselfe, he sought the meanes to shrowde him where none might discrye him, and so entring a great Forrest, very thick and set with Trees, shrubs, and bushes, hee esteemed that a convenient place for him to rest in, wherefore alighting from his Horse, and turning him to see, layde himselfe downe at the roote of a Tree, and thus beganne to breathe forth his complaints. Ah inconstant Fortune, and to mee most of all inconstant: didst thou erect mee so high, and reiect me now thus low: well then may I say, that more wrong thou doest a man in one houre, then right in all his life time: For if heretofore thou diddest lende mee pleasure and delight, that now thou makest mee pay for it: (and that with Unrie too rigorous) not leaving any hope to comfort mee. Ah tyrannous King, cruel, and vnnimanlike Brother, thou hast with shame bannished mee, and brought mee into this poore estate wherin I must dye: Oh happy if

OF PALMERIN D'OLIVA.

I might, rather then to live in the vile estate of Beggarie. So saying, hee layd him downe among the Hearbs, and was surpris'd with such extreame sadnesse, as he fell into his lamentations againe, thus. Ah my Lord and Father, for some bodiest thou leave mee, would God I then had bozne thee companie, or else that at this instant I might come to thee. Ah men of Hungaria, I am well assured (knowing the love you euer bare mee) that you will pittie when you heare my afflictions and calamities: alas, I never deserued this unhappy ende. And being vnable to continue longer speeche, hee there determined to finish his life. But better Fortune befell him then hee expected, by the meanes of an Auncient Knight named Lombardo, who being nere, heard all his dolorous complaints. This Knight being rich and of Noble blood, had nere that Forrest a strong, delightfull, and sumptuous Castle, and delighted to walke among the Woods for his recreation, as good happe it was for Netrides, that hee walked this Evening. He hearing these sadde and sorrowfull regrets, pittie so touched his heart, as the teares bedew'd his cheekes: yet would hee not trouble him, while he continued his moanes, but afterwards came and took him by the hand, saying: Arise my Friende and take courage, for you are in the place where you shal finde more good to benefite you, then harme to offende you, wherefore cherish vp your spirit, and forget this your heavinesse, which may endanger you beyond recovery. Netrides seeing this Honourable Gentle-man, with his beards so white as snowe, hearing his courteous offer, and for him now so necessary, with love, feare, and bashfulness, all coupled together, accepted it; and humbly thanked him, albeit (quoth he) a contented death is better to mee, then a miserable and despised life. The Knight comforting him, answered him thus, that it was not in his power to chuse life or death, but the Founder of the Heavens reserved that authoritie in his owne handes. With these words hee took him by the hand, and conducd him to his Castle, where hee was worthily entertained by the Knight himselfe, his La-

THE HISTORIE

die and her Daughter, one of the fayrest Virgines in all that Countrey. Lombardo hauing heard all his misfortunes, and harde Aduentures, in the sight discoursed all the while to his Ladie: wherefore (good Wife, quoth hee) entertaine him so well as may be, for I assure you hee is descended of high degree: and if his manners and vertues be correspondent to his Worth, we will giue him our Daughter in Marriage, if so himselfe accept our Offer. The good Ladie misliked not her Husbandes opinion, wherefore the next Morning shee went to entertaine her Guest, saying: My Lord, your coming hether hath wel contented my Lord and Husband, and so please it you to stay here, we will be very glad and faine of your good companie, which gentle offer Netrides accepted, thanking God and the Ladie for his happie fortune. Thus remained hee with this ancient Knight Lombardo, who afterwards neuer remembred him of his miseries in the Forrest, but intreated him so well, as though hee had bene his owne Sonne. Netrides seeing the Knights Daughter so faire, and so well conditioned, and she regarding not only the vertues of his minde, but also his comely and well-featured Bodie, they beganne amozously to affect each other secretly, but Loue inuented the meane to reueale it openly: for Lombardo well noting the great discretion of this young Gentleman, and knowing him to be descended of bloud-Royall, resolved to cause him Marrie his Daughter, demanding the question of Netrides, among many other speeches, if so hee liked to marry his Daughter. My dere Lord (quoth he) it is the summe of my desire, and greater honor cannot you bestow on me, so please her to conceiue the same opinion I do. The marriage was solemnized with all expedition, with the presence of many Gentles, neighbours thereabout, who maruelled the Knight bestowed his Daughter so, in that they esteemed Netrides but a poore Knight errant. It fortuned afterwards that the ancient Knight and his Lady deceased, leauing their Daughter great with Childe, to the no little content of Netrides, that after all his sorowes he would become a Father.

OF PALMERIN D'OLIVA.

Father. Three dayes before his Ladie fell in Trauell, shee Dreamed that shee was shut vpp in a very darke Chamber, whereout shee could by no meanes get, and therefore called for helpe to one of her Gentlewomen. Then was shee aduised to take her Childe in her armes, and to stay there still, whereupon she beheld her Infant, and saw that his Face somewhat resembled the beames of the Sunne, the brightnesse whereof chased away the Darknesse, so that shee might beholde the place as clere as any other, saying: My Lord, forgette this heauinesse, and you shall reioyce by this Infant, for this is he shall reestablishe you in the place you haue lost, and shall seate you in the Chayre with Honour, for which you were exiled thence, giuing you his Crowne, that Traiterously chased you from his Kingdome. Hee comforted with these words, toke the Childe in his armes, and saide. Little soule, I pray God thy Mother speake truth, and that thou mayest be able to execute it. So saying, he espied a furious man, who snatched the Infant forth of his armes, and notwithstanding all his intreaties and supplications caried it away with him.

This sorowe for Netrides made her giue a loude shriek, when hee calling his Wife, demaunded the cause of this her sudden affright: whereupon shee rehearsed to him the whole manner of her Dreame, and reioycing thereat, saide: I hope (my Lord) that it will so happen to you as I haue dreamed, and therefore comfort your selfe without feare of misfortune: Notwithstanding hee remained in many doubtfull varieties of opinion, till they vnderstood by effects the pretended certaintie of this Dreame. Now was come the time of the Ladies deliuerance, which was a goodly Man-childe, so fayre and well fauoured as one should lightly behold, being named Frysol, and shee would suffer none to nurse it but her owne selfe, for the certaine hope shee reposed in him. The Childe growing in time to such comely stature, as eache one toke great pleasure in beholding him, whereat the Mother was so glad, that albeit shee had afterwards two other Sonnes, yet she shewed the no such speciall loue towards them as vnto Frysol,

THE HISTORIE

Frysol, which procured some hatred betwene his brethren and him. This young Lord growing to fourtene yeeres of Age, was in stature very tall, delighting himselfe in ryding great Horses, shooting in the Long-Bow, casting the Barre, and diuers other Gentleman-like exercises, as also to chafe in the Forrest, where olde Lombardo met with his Father. So that on a day after long and weary Chasing of the Hart, hauing sweated very soze, and growne maruellous drye for want of drinke, finding a little Spring by the fote of a Tree, hee lay downe and dranke, but afterwards hee became so ill and sickly, as hee trembled, shivering very soze: So that one of his Squyres could hardly leade him againe to the Castle. Netrides seeing him so exceeding ill, was marvellous sorrie, commaunding his Physicians to seeke some present helpe for him, who plyed him with such wholesome potions, as his Feuer left him, but his face and all his Bodie were so painted as he had bene a Leaper, which made him to be mocked of his other Brethren, and scorned of all the Seruants, except only of his Father and Mother, which was such a griefe to him, as he would haue dyed with fretting at them, but his Father rebuked them, and comforted him in this manner.

I had hope (my Sonne) by thy meanes to be restored againe to the Kingdome of my deceased Father: but now, how long it will be before, God knowes, if this strange malady of thine be neuer holpen. Frysol amazed at his Fathers words, desired him earnestly to report the whole circumstance: which Netrides at length did, rehearsing how hee was Brother to the King of Hungaria, the harde entreatance hee had used towards him, and lastly, hee tolde him the Dreame of his Mother. Frysol studying a long space on his Fathers wordes, at length answered. My Lord, you are not ignorant of the Soueraigne power of the Highest, in who by his diuine iudgement hath sent mee this disease, that thus tormenteth mee: Euen so, when it pleaseth him, he wil take it from me againe, and giue mee health and strength much more then euer I had before, with meanes sufficient to giue you ayde and succour,

accoz

OF PALMERIN DOLIVA.

according to the matter whereon you haue diuined. And albeit I feele so extreame anguish, as death may not be likened to it, yet doth this hope comfort me in such sort, that me thinks already I am become more healthfull: therefore my Lord dismay of nothing, but perswade your selfe there is comfort behinde. These words were so pleasing to Netrides, as mere ioy caused the teares to trickle downe his cheekes, maruailing at the wonderfull courage of his Son, enduring such terrible paines as hee did: wherefore what hee thought hee could not reueale, but withholde himselfe into his Chamber.

CHAP. XLI.

How Frysol persecuted with his disease, and the mockery of his brethre, determined to go seeke strange aduētures.



Rysol hauing heard the originall of his birth, as also the vision that appeared to his mother, was thence forward more pensive then hee had bene before, and perceiuing his brethren continued their bad disposition, and day by day mocked him more and more, hee determined to forsake his fathers house, and to seeke aduētures, and remedie for his sickness, if any wereto bee founde. And being one day in the Forrest more melancholyke then accustomed, hee espied a knight bered with Leprosie come by the high way, mounted on a poyre Balfrey, to whome hee sayd. My friend, I am infected with the same disease thou art, wherefore wilt thou suffer me to heare thee company,

and

and

THE HISTORIE

and I will bee ready to do what thou shalt commaund mee. The knight perceiuing hee might gaine some benefite by Frysol, was well contented, and so bad him mount vppon his horse, and in this life continued two yeeres, trauailing many countries, bearing continually the wallet, and what profit came hee deliuered his maister, reseruing nothing for himselfe but what hee gaue him, and bearing a mind so noble and vertuous, as hee desired rather death, then to enrich himselfe by any villainous or dishonest act. So many countries and prouinces had they trauailed, as at last they came into the Realme of Hungaria, when Frysol remembred that he was in his Uncles Land, who ledde a life so base and ignominious: hee was ouercome with excedding heavinesse, which ill agreed with his dangerous disease, so that his companion desired to know the cause of his sadness: but Frysol prayed him to content himselfe, saying that death was more agreeable to him, then a life so dolorous and miserable. At which words the knight growing in choller, thrust him beside his Horse, and rode away, leauing poore Frysol there, hauing no other comfort then to fill the ayre with his teares and complaints, till at length hee receiued succour by a young maide named Leonarda, the Daughter of a rich Countreyman that dwelt on a mountaine nere at hand. This maide leading her Fathers Beasts and Cattell to pasture, toke great delight in gathering heards and roots, wherewith to make ointments for all woundes and diseases: and this day (by the diuine permission) shee chanced that way where shee heard the meanefull lamentations of Frysol, whome when she behelde, ouercome with pittie and compassion, said. Alas my friend, how came you into this desert and comfortlesse place, being oppressed with such a bad and dangerous sicknesse. In god sooth intrestre (quoth hee) by no other meanes then the misfortune and displeasure of my life: Oh how happier were my death at this instant, then to liue any longer in this monstrous languishing friend,

OF PALMERIN D'OLIVA.

Friend, answered shee maybe, you ought not thus to dispayre in sicknesse, but consider that the Lord and gouernour of the heauens and earth, doth by these meanes trie and prooue his people, whom if hee perceiue thankfull and patient in their afflictions, of reprobate enemies, he makes them his friends and Children, onely by the ransome of his beloued Sonne payde, If then you will put your whole confidence in him, I am perswaded you shall soon finde remedy. So causing him to ryle, shee conducted him to her Fathers house, where for certaine dayes shee bathed him with wholesome Herbes, and annointed him with such precious ointments, as in short time his disease forsooke him, and hee was as cleane as at the time hee dranke the Water: for which hee humbly thanking the maide, said. God make me able (saye Virgini) to repute this wonderfull kindnesse receiued at your hands, accounting my selfe more indebted to you, then to my parents that gaue me first life: and this perswade your selfe, that wheresoeuer my body bee separated from this place, my heart shall remaine ready to do you any seruice. What is my will & intent (quoth Leonarda, but thanke him chiefly that made mee able to helpe you, and in so dooing shall I account my labour well bestowed. Frysol for this unexpected good fortune, was henceforward very dutifull and louing towards Leonardas Father and her Brethren, as the readiest Seruant he had in his house: but the good man esteemed so well of him, as by no meanes hee would suffer him to be so painfull, but with such fare as God sent him, entertained and welcomed him, not suffering him to depart thence in the space of a yeere and more. Frysol often accompanying Leonarda to the fieldes, shee seeing him so saye and comely in personage, began secretly to affect him, yet would shee not acquaint him therewith, fearing more to offend then to be refused. So soone as Frysol had thus recovered his strength, he determined to stay no longer there, wherfore finding Leonarda at leisure conuenient, hee sayd. I know very well (saie Mayden) how much I am behol-

beholding to you, for the speciall grace and good I haue receiued by you, which induceth mee to make you this promise, that you shall not commaund any thing, but I will gladly accomplish it. And because I am desirous to trauaile after strange aduentures, I would request that it might bee with your willing consent, promising you to stay no longer hence then the tearme of thre yeres, in which tyme I will not fayle to visite you againe: and if my fortune so fall out as I am perswaded, I doubt not to recompence what you did for me: That which I alway feared (sir Frysol) quoth she, is now come to passe: notwithstanding, seeing it is convenient I should loue honour more then mine owne pleasure, I am content you shall goe seeke your aduancement so well begunne: but I pray you not to cast your promise in obliuion. I will not to the death (quoth hee) do any thing that may dislike you, or against your will, and since you haue so freely graunted mee libertie, perswade your selfe my word shall bee my dede. So taking his leaue of his Father and Bretheren, hee trauelled towards Allemaigne, where hee hearde that Chiuallrie was more maintayned then in any other place, and so rode hee foure dayes together without any aduenture: till passing through a Forrest, he hearde (as it were) a great noyse of people fighting, wherefore making haste that way, he espied an ancient knight assaulted by fire Willaines that sought to murder him, whome hee resisted so well as he could, albeit he had nothing but his sword to defend him. The knight espying Frysol, called to him for helpe, when hee (suddenly finding a young Tree, pluckt vpp by the roote, came therewith to the Willaines, thus saying: Why Traiterous barlets, what prouoketh you to offer such shame to a knight? wherewith hee toke one of them so suddenly on the pate with his Tree, as hee neuer rose, to tell who hurt him. The knight and he together, so behaued themselves, as three of those Willaines were laid dead before them, which the other three perceiuing, toke themselves to flight: whereupon the olde knight seeing himselfe so well deliuered, came

and

and embraced Frysol with these wordes. Now may I say my good friends, that my life had perished without your assistance, bethinke your selfe therefore how I may gratifie this gentlenesse: in meane time, I haue a house not farre hence, let me intreate you to lodge with mee this night, and I will make you the best entertainment the Countrey will afford. Whereunto Frysol agreed, promising to leaue him in safetie before hee departed: for which the olde knight thanked him, and as they went hee discoursed to him, how these villaines assailed him, because hee had enforced them to surrender certaine heritages, which vniustly they detained from poore Daphanes, and for that cause set spies to watch him, that they might set vpon him and kill him: which surely they had done (quoth hee) without your succour. In the continuance of these speeches, they arrived at his Castle, where many of his Squires manuailed to see him so sore wounded, but specially his Lady and his two Sonnes, to whome hee rehearsed the summe of his aduentures, and the great fauour and helpe hee found by Frysol, for which cause hee entertained him with exceeding honour. And so long abode Frysol there with the knight, till heeing desirous to receiue the order of knighthood, hee came to the knight in this manner. May it please you Sir to bestow on me horse and armour, I will go to the Emperours Court of Allemaigne, hee beeing the most renowned Prince in the world. The good knight seeing him so forward to chiuallrie, gaue him horse, armour, and money for his iourney, whereupon hee set forward, and the third day after hee arrived at the Emperours Court, from whence (a little before) Trineus and Palmerin were departed towards Fraunce: which newes made Frysol earnestly desire his knighthood, because hee intended with all speed to trauaile thither likewise, in respect of the honour was there to be won. Frysol understanding the Emperour was in the Chappell hearing diuine seruise, went thither, where beholding the Princesse Polinarda, hee reputed her the onely faire Lady of the world,

THE HISTORIE

thinking hee could neuer glut his eyes with regarding her: whereon, seruite being ended, he fell on his knee before the Emperour in this manner. Because I knowing (invincible Lord) that you are resolved beyonde all other Potentates whatsoeuer, and that you make no small account of Knights aduenturous: I desire that by your hand I may be numbred among them. The Emperour seeing him so young and yet valiantly giuen, answered. I would be loth my friend to deny a request so reasonable, but I will first know if you be Gentle borne, or no. My Lord (quoth he) I sweare by the faith I owe to God and your Maestie, that I am noble borne, and of the blood royall by my Fathers side. God forbid then (sayd the Emperour) but you should be knight, and Fortune sheld you so well in chiuallrie, as shee haue indued you with comely shape and beautie. Then was the Spurre put vppon his right heele, and the Emperour bad him rise a knight, commaunding his Daughter Polinarda to giue him his Sword to him, which shee did, saying. Worthily and with happinesse (Sir knight) may you imploy the order you haue receiued. Madam (quoth Frysol) if hereafter any vertue or valour abyde in me, it shall be imployed euely for you, hauing thus honoured mee with my Sword, wherewith I hope to accomplish such deedes of armes, as shall renoune her name that gaue mee my weapon: but Polinarda made him no answere, because Palmerin was the onely Image of her thoughts. After Frysol was thus knighted, taking his leaue of the Emperour and his Daughter, he departed, making no small hast till hee arriued at the Iousts of Paris, where hee determined for his first deed of chiuallrie, to enter the Combate for the beauty of Polinarda. But hee could not get thither so soone as he intended, for hee was hindered by the way with an vnspected aduenture, which was, in a sayre Forrest, where hee beheld foure knight carry away a Lady perforce, who seeing him, cryed: Ah good knight, for Gods sake succour mee: whereuppon Frysol couching his Launce, sent one of the knights

OF PALMERIN D'OLIVA.

knights headlong to the ground, and in short time wounded another in such sort, as now hee had but two left to resist him, on whom Frysol made tryall, how well hee could imploy the gift of Polinarda. The knights seeing the hard fortune of their two other fellows, the one hauing broken his necke in the fall, and the other wounded past hope of recovery, took the wisest way for themselves, posting thence so fast as they could ride, but Frysol would not follow, least they had some other company in ambush that might haue intrapped him, wherefore hee conducted the Lady to her mothers Castle, where hee remained that night, and the next day sette forward to Paris, where hee arriued at the time hee fought with Palmerin, according as it hath bene before rehearsed.

After the knight of the Sunne, (who henceforth shall passe by the name of Frysol) had left Palmerin, and was departed the field, the night was so obscure as hee knew not which way hee rode, so that the moisture of the evening dew did great harme to his woundes, as if God had not armed him with the better strength, hee was in danger not to escape with life. The very same day was the Duke of Gaule departed from Paris, to go ayde the King of England against the King of Scots, and Norway, who was Nephew to the Emperour of Allemaigne, for that they molested him with troublesome warres: and the Duke being benighted, was glad to pitch his Tents in a sayre field: through which it fortun'd Frysol to passe, complayning of the danger hee felt himselfe in. The Duke of Gaule being abroad forth of his Tent to recreate himselfe, heard this sorrowfull noyse, which made him sende his men to see who it was, and to bring him with them to the Tent: whether when they had brought him, the Duke pittying his estate, demanded whence hee came, and who had wounded him in that sort. Then discoursed hee the whole matter, how he had fought with the knight that ouercame the Duke of Sauoy, and so long the fight endured, that the darke night

THE HISTORIE

and the king caused them to be parted, neyther of them as yet conquered, and because hee would not returne into the Citie, sought some Village where hee might conveniently lodge. The Duke of Gaule hearing the wordes of Frysol, esteemed him for a worthy and valiant knight, hauing so long endured against Palmerin vnuanquished, wherefore hee sayd. Sir knight, you are very welcome to me: all the aide and succour I can giue you, you shall be sure to finde with hearty good will: assuring you, that there is no knight liuing to whome I with more euill, then him whom you haue this day fought withall. So causing him to bee vnarmed, willed him to rest himselfe vpon his owne bedde, and made his wounds be dressed, abyding there eight daies for the health of Frysol. In which time, the Duke had imparted to him the warres of the King of England, which made him make more hast to be gone, or else he would haue kept him companie longer. My Lord (quoth Frysol) so please you to accept my companie, I hope to behaue my selfe so wel, as you shall not be discontented with me. The Duke thanked him, and reioyced that by this meanes so good a knight was preserved, and did him all the honour hee could deuise, taking him with him into England, where hee found the Country very much desolated with warre to his no little greefe: but leaue we them, and returne to Palmerin.

CHAP.

OF PALMERIN D'OLIVA.

CHAP. XLII.

¶ Of the great courtesie the King of Fraunce vsed to Trineus and to Palmerin: And of theyr returne into Allemaigne.



So diligently were Palmerins Wounds attended, which hee had receyued by the hand of Frysol, as not long after he recovered his health, whereof the King and the Prince Lewes were highly glad, and much more Trineus, vnto whom the king desired to giue his Daughter Lucemania in Marriage: which to compasse, he intended a sumptuous Banquet, whereto hee would inuite these twaine: yet first he would acquainte the Quene therewith, and therefore beganne the matter with her thus.

I see Madame, that our Daughter Lucemania is of yeres sufficient for a Husband, and because I neuer more desired her highest preferment, and for that I would know if the Prince Trineus to whom I could wish she were espoused, were any thing in Loue that way affected, for hardly in my Iudgement shall we find a greater Lord, being heere to the famous Emperour of Allemaigne: for this intent (I say) will I ordaine a Banquet. whereto both hee and Noble Palmerin shall be inuited, and our Daughter to beare them companie in the best sorte you can deuise. The Quene, who more desired this Marriage then the King her Husband, answered. You doubt not (my Lorde) that I request her chiefe advantage, wherefore let it bee as you haue determined, and shee shall be present as you haue appoynted. This matter thus proceeding

THE HISTORIE

ceding, two dayes after were Trineus and Palmerin called to this Banquet, and to honour them the more, the King caused his Sonne Lewes, with a braue companie of Knightes and Gentlemen, to conduct them into the stately Pallace, where they were royally receiued by the King and Quene, so ledde vpp into the Chamber appointed for theyr Banquet.

After they had washed, the King caused Trineus to sit by and Palmerin against him, aboue whom sat faire Lucemania his Daughter, being placed iust opposite to the Prince Trineus, the Quene to furnish the Table, sat downe by the King. And albeit Nature had bestowed on the Princesse most exquisite Beautie, yet her sumptuous Accoustrements made her appeare most amiable: but all could not moue the heart of Trineus, to forget her, to whose Shyne he was dedicated. The Banquet ended, and the Tables withdrawne, Trineus daunced with the sayre young Princesse, Courting her with many honest and decent speeches, which made Lucemania suppose he loued her: but the Prince noted it well enough, albeit his affections were bound to English Agriola.

In this time the other Ladies were conferring of Palmerins knightly valour, when the Counte of Armignac his Sonne, intreating the Duke of Orleances Daughter to daunce, was thus stayed by her speeches to the other Ladies.

You faire Ladies (quoth she) that Palmerin hath mistreated our Beauties, to reuenge our Iniurie, let vs fall vpon him, and shutte him in some place, where he may neuer come forth: For if he escape vs, the Allemaigne Ladies shall beare the honour from the French, which will bee to vs perpetuall disgrace. These wordes she vttered with such a pleasaunt countenance, as moued all the other Ladies to smile, whereupon the Duchesse of Burgundie answered. In sooth it is necessarie wee should do so, and let vs not suffer him to gette out of our handes so easilie, as hee did from the Knightes that came to the Combate. All the companie liked this motion well, but the King said. Ladies, I will not consent that Palmerin shall haue any wrong, because I haue taken

OF PALMERIN D'OLIVA.

taken him into my Guard. And who shall make recompence (quoth an other Ladie) for the wrong he hath done vs? You ought to suffer for satisfaction (said the King) and be glad that you had the meane to see the best Knight in the Worlde, for mine owne part I promise you, I rest so contented. Palmerin hearing the King so commend him, bashfully thus answered. Alas my Lord, there is no such matter in me as pleaseeth your Maestie to report, but what my abilitie is, it remaineth to doe you seruice: accounting my selfe more then happy, by councuning to your Highnesse Courte, to haue knowledge of a Prince so Noble, and vertuous, and no man liuing (next my deere Lord the Emperour) that my command mee more then your Highnesse. Among other speeches, the King brake the matter of his Daughters marriage to Palmerin, desiring him to labour in the cause to Trineus, which he promised, but all in vaine: for after they had taken their leaue to return towards Allemaigne, though Palmerin was earnest in the matter, in respect of the Beauty and Noblenesse of the Princesse, as for the support he might haue by matching with the Daughter of France, yet Trineus thus answered. I thanke you my Lord, for the good you wish me, as also the honour the King affords mee: but another beyond her (whose renoune hath conquered me) is Lady and Mistress of my affections. And because you are hee from whom I will not hyde or conceale my most secret thoughts, knowe that it is Agriola, Daughter to the King of England, to whom though my Father be an enemy, yet by your ayde, and mine owne good endeouours, I doe not doubt to compass my Loue. You know my Lord (quoth Palmerin) that I wish as well to you, as mine owne heart, and when occasion serues, they all shall make manifest. And seeing you haue fired your Loue on faire Agriola of England, imparting likewise the same so confidently to mee: I am persuaded you could neuer make a beter choise, therefore let nothing chaunge your opinion.

Thus rode they on with many sundry speeches, not a little gladder they were returning to the Emperour, but Palmerin

merin, much more then was Trineus, for the great desire hee had to see his Lady Polinarda: wherefore with the consent of the Prince, he sent a Squire before to aduertise the Emperour of the comming: Before whom he had no sooner done reuerence, but hee was presently knowne, and demanded in what estate his Sonne Trineus and Palmerin were, where he had left them, and what accidents had hapned in France? Then the Squire rehearsed the Combates and Victories of his Maister against the knights of Fraunce, and the Dukes of Gaule and Sauoy, with the royall entertainment by the King and his Sonne, how many Portraites of Ladies Palmerin had conquered, with the whole circumstance of euery action. Whereof the Emperour, the Emperesse, and all the Lords and Ladies were maruellous glad, yet was not thei joy comparable to the Princesse Polinardes, hearing the Squire reueale the honorable deedes of her Loue: so that her conceyte might bee discerned by her countenance, and needes must she thus demand of the Squire. I pray thee tell me my friende, how fares my Lord and Brother, with his Noble companyon Syr Palmerin? The Squire well aduised, because hee knewe the Loue betwene her and his Maister, sette his knee to the grounde againe, with this answer.

I lest the Prince your Brother, accompanied with my Lord Palmerin, well and in good health: but chiefly my Lord, who since you sawe him, hath wonne the greatest honour that euer knight did. Afterward hee reported the manner of the Combats to her, and what grieve his Maister sustained in his sickness, when hee could not be rauenged on the knight that lost her Counterfeit, which the Duke of Sauoye placed at the seate of Lucemania: and last of all, the perillous Combat betwene his Maister, and the knight of the Sunne. Which she toke such delight to heare, as she made him repeat one thing manie times, and could not satisfie her selfe sufficiently with these worthy reports. Which the Squire perceyuing, delighted as much to iterate euery thing and saide, Belieue mee Madame, the Loue my Maister beares to her,

for

for whose Beautie hee entred the Combat, in my opinion is incredible: for hee is more hers then his owne, and I haue seen him in such a pensive sort thinking on her, as one could hardly iudge whether he were aliuie or dead: fearing least any other shuld robbe him of his Loue: such is the iealousie of his vnspotted affection, albeit my Maister reputes his Ladie immoueable. Polinarda changing countenance oftentimes at the Squires words, answered. The Ladie should be very ill counselled, being honoured with the Loue of so good a knight as Palmerin, to make refusall of his worthy seruice: and I promise thee, by the faith of a Princesse, that if I knew her, for the vnwillingnesse I haue to heare him so complaine, I would endeavour to cause her like none but him, and therein to thinke her selfe the most happie among Ladies. Wherefore (if thou mayst be so bolde) tell thy Maister at his returne, that I will be a meane to ayde him to wards her hee Loues: and therewithall, present him my fauourable Salutations, in that I euermore desired the fortunate successe of his Enterprise: not so much for the liking of his Ladie, being beloved of the best, as for the renowned Chualrie that harbours in his heart. These speeches ended, the Squire returned to meete the Prince Trineus and his Maister, to whom he reported his talke with Polinarda: which Palmerin reioycing at, let fall all Iealousie, esteeming her now the truest Ladie liuing. The men of Gaunt, for ioy of his returne, that so worthily had deliuered them from the oppressions of the Enchaunted knight, went forth in seuerall companyes, according as honour, yeres, and office directed them, to meete him, and so conueied him with signes of ioy to the Ballace, where the Emperour so much abased himselfe, as hee came downe into the open Courte to entertaine him, and glad likewise, to see the safe return of his Sonne Trineus, saying: Syr Sonne, right happy is thy returne: and you Syr Palmerin, persuade your selfe so welcom as heart can deuise: assuring you, that your successe hath not a litle pleased me. And needes must I account that Lady especially bounden vnto you, for whose sake

THE HISTORIE

loue you haue past so many dangerous Combates, god reason hath this to Loue you, in respect of your Trauells for her, renouning her so much by your knightly Chiuallry, so that it make you not recompence according to your merites, worthy may she be condemned of Ingratitude. Alas my Lord (quoth hee) her Beautie commaundeth higher matters then all my Labours. Polinarda being in presence, remembered well her Fathers words, and therefore she intended to shunne that condemnation, saying to her selfe, What that winneth honour, ought to weare it. And he that commaundeth the soule, may easily ouer-rule the Passions of the minde: Lette my Knight then be rewarded as he hath rightly deserved.

All this while, the Eyes of these two Louers so well discharged theyr office, as Palmerin wished that Iuno had granted him so much, as shee did sometime to Argus her Shephearde, that he might haue more ease in his affliction: for he thought it not enough, onely to beholde the Beautie of so rare and excellent perfection. Againe, hee was not a little tormented, because Polinarda (to couer what shee would) gladly none should discern) cast her looks on the ground, which sometimes she likewise compelled him to doe: but her presence whome he esteemed aboue all other earthly things, would not allowe him that consideration. The Emperour at length commanded, that all the figures of the Ladies which hee had wonne in Combat, should be brought before him: but when he saw so manie, and of so contrarie qualities, hee could not but commend Syz Palmerins victorie. Then were diuers iudgements giuen of the beautie of the Portraits, eache one of the beholders after their seuerall opinions. Ptolome made description of whom they were, and who did enter combate on theyr behalfe, omitting at no time the honour of Palmerin: Whereat they all admyred: some of them commending their Complexions, others, their sweete young yeares, and all together the valor and prowesse of him that brought the conquest with him, whereupon the Emperour said. In god faith Syz Palmerin, I blesse the time that Fortune sent mee so good a knight,

OF PALMERIN D'OLIVA.

Knight, and thinke not to carrie away all the glorie of your Victory your selfe, for I meane to haue part, because you gaue your selfe mine. And would the Ladie you Loue were in this Courte, or in my Empryre, to the ende that I might so assist you in your Sute, as yee might be both mine. By Lords (quoth Palmerin) the victorie is wholly yours, being gotten by your knight, and if the Lady I loue were not vnder your Regiment, then should I complaine of a greater matter then agreeing with you, being obedient to your Highnesse, as your humble Subject and Seruant. With which answer the Emperour seemed highly contented: and Trineus coming to his Sister Polinarda, saide:

Trust me faire Sister, you are more indebted to Palmerin, then to any other knight in the World beside, and rather accept of him, then of the Duke of Lorraine, who maintaining your Beautie, was overcome by the Duke of Sauoye, and your Picture placed at the seate of Lucemania, where yet it had remained, but that Palmerin Conquering the Duke, removed the figure of the French Princesse in obedience to you. Polinarda not content with the indiscreete enterprise of the Duke of Lorraine, answered, In sooth good Brother the Duke of Lorraine is none of my knight, and I repute Palmerin, to haue more Countie and valour then the Duke can haue of wit or courage: therefore great maruell that he was not slaine. The Emperour hearing Polinarda was offended with the Duke of Lorraine, answered, you cannot (Daughter) forbid men to execute theyr owne pleasure, and if the Duke liked to enter the Combate for your Beautie, it was for the honourable good will hee bare you, and albeit hee could not reach his desire, yet haue you no cause to thinke the worse of him. Polinarda being a Princesse of so rare a wit and Iudgement, as any other time, would multiply no more words, but continued silent: nevertheless, Palmerin remembering the answer she made to Trineus, intreated her to keepe all the Portraits of all the Ladies, determining to send them to whome they belonged, according to their degrees in birth,

THE HISTORIE

Byeth and honour. Which shee thankfully accepted, and spending this whole day in diuers delights, Palmerin being in the Euening in his Chamber, accompanied with Ptolome, sent his Dwarfe to the Princesse, to appoynt the time of theyr next meeting: and shee seeing the Dwarfe, caught him about the necke, demanding of him what newes hee had brought her?

None but good, Madame (answered the Dwarfe) my Maister hath sent you the Bon-loir, and therewithall, his humble duty to your Highnesse: For, being your knight, and liuing onely to do you seruire, he hath good hope that your vertuous nature will not forget, how many dangers hee hath past for your sake: and now dooth Loue appeale for his desired reward.

Wherefore (good Madame,) as you are heart-fast, vnite your selues hand-fast, giue my Maister life, your selfe comfort, and make me happy, by carrying of this Message: For I vowe by the Reuerend faith I beare you both, that I will not depart without some gracious answer.

Polinarda smiling to heare Vrbaniillo speake so earnestly, said. The assurance thou giuest me of the trustie affection thou bearest thy maister, dooth not a little content mee, and pittie it were so good a knight should labour all this while in vaine: Therefore perswade thy Maister, that to morrow at night I will meete him where wee were wont, and there will I resolute him to his owne content.

CHAP.

OF PALMERIN D'OLIVA.

CHAP. XLIII.

How Palmerin went in the night to the appointed place, to confer with his Lady Polinarda, and the amorous communication they had together.



Vrbaniillo with cheerefull countenance returned to his maister, declaring to him his talk with Polinarda, her sweet looks, her gracious answers, how cheifely shee loued him, and lastly her promise to meet him in the accustomed place: yet is not this all, for before you depart with her, she hath assured me to resolute you to your own content. And that is it I want (quoth he) for might I once receiue my content, then should I think my trauailes rewarded. And doubt you not thereof said the Dwarfe, if she be a woman of her word. Then Ptolome being present, asked the dwarfe if hee saw Bryonella. No in sooth (quoth he) she was not in the princesse Chamber, nor (to my knowledge) was she acquainted with my comming, yet dare I thinke she will be there with my Lady. The time being come, the Ladies were at the place with deuotion, answerable to those silent houres, and theyr knights not fayling theyr appointment, what pleasure on each side was conceiued, is not to be enquired, for all wisshings are nothing in respect of their contentments. Polinarda hauing her friendly knight before her, so sweet a blush eclipsed her countenance, as would dye nature into a studie to scame the like, and thus she began. Alas my sweete friend, in what paine, anguish and heavynesse of heart,

THE HISTORIE

heart, hath your absence brought me: what teares haue fallen from mine eyes, and drops of blood from my heart, by rent sighs and ceaselesse acclamations, rememb'ring our pleasures past, and present comfort, and the hope of better hap to come: What dolorous conceit hath often wounded me, thinking on so many hazards and perils as might hinder mee from seeing you againe: and not without a cause, be- lieue me, for had you miscarried, neuer Lady sustained such a losse, in respect of your knightly valour, and the vnsai- ned leue I beare you, whereof (before I depart) I meane assuredly to resolue you, in requitall of your honourable trauailes for maintenance of my beautie. And hereof per- swade your selfe good knight, that to haue you, I refuse all other good fortunes whatsoeuer: and therefore I care not though it were openly known, how especially I prize you: de- sire, loue, and esteeme you. Palmerin confounded with this long expected comfort, and not able to endure with silence, interrupted her in this manner. By the faith of your sworne Seruant, swete Madame, the perils, mishaps, and dan- gers I haue past since my departure, neuer deserued the very least of your complaints, nor could my endeauour proue such, as your incomparable perfections merited, the onely remembraunce whereof, was sufficient to make me inui- cible: wherefore swete G. I. I. if I haue wonne any ho- nor, your fauour was the meane, and your beautie gaue me the vertue, streaming so plentifully from your chaste eyes, as the water from the fountaine. To little purpose were it now to rehearse, the strange assaults, massacring thoughts, and violent flames, wherein I haue burned and continual- ly bene crucified, since the houre it pleased you to let mee see Fraunce: vndoubtedly the very meanest of my sufferings was able to destroy me, without the resolute assurance of your diuine fauour, which triumphing ouer death, shall make me liue continually. So that the desire to let you know how assuredly I am yours, and the continuall wishing to see you againe, gaue mee victorie ouer your enemies, and brought

OF PALMERIN DOLIVA.

brought mee safe thorow all extremities, to honour you as I do at this present. It now remaines Madame, that you regard the truth of my loue, the permanence thereof, and the instant passions worke then death to mee, yet with this promise, that I presume not of any action meritorious but your grace, which is able to strengthen mee in greatest debilitie. And no where know I to seeke for pittie and sup- port of my cares, if not onely by her who hath the soueraigne power to cha'ge hence the cruell and euer threating me- naces of death. Forbeare god Lord, quoth shee, thus to talke of death, considering I cannot liue one houre with- out you, or holde I any comfort of my life, but onely in lo- uing you, to enioy you: so that what you endure, I suffer, and no passion torments you, but I haue a share therein, so deuoutly is my spirite comforted with yours. And therefore thinks not your oppressions greater then mine, for if you doe, it proceedeth by want of experience of feminine pass- ions, the extremity whereof farre surmounteth your seere. For which cause, to giue somerest to our long and ouertra- uelled desires, I giue you here my hand, and there withall a chaste heart, accepting you onely for my Lord and husband, and to my promise call heauen and earth to witnes. Where is the wit so daintie, the tongue so flourishing, or the pen so diligent, as can conceiue, report, or set downe in perfect co- lours, the ioyes of these louers? You saye Lordings, and you likewise swete Ladies, that long haue traueled in a- morous affections, and in the end receiued the reward of your passions, by your owne conceits can imagine the con- tent of these twaine: for Palmerin was in this opinion, that Iupiter had not the like pleasure with sayre Alemena, for whome hee caused one night to endure the space of thre daies, as hee hadde with his gracious mistresse Polinarda. For now the manifold strokes hee gaue for beautie, were here remembred, his daungerous trauailes in all places recounted, his absence with kinde gratulations welcom- med, his teares, sighs, complaints, and feares resolved,

THE HISTORIE

and lastly, his long, vncchangeable and most faithfull loue, friendlie rewarded. Let vs not here forget, that Ptolome and Brionella were in the same predicament, for hee knowing her to bee of the noble and auncient ligne, beside, sole heyye to the house of Saxon, might count himselfe highly honored with such a Wife: and therefore the like coniunction was made betwene them, so that now these knights and Ladies were espoused before God, there wanted nothing but the ceremonie of the Church to confirme it. But now comes Urbanillo, and hee breakes off this pleasure, because the time was so farre spent, as they must needs depart: which with much adoe they did, leaving the Ladies examining their content, the Princesse some after, thus conferring with Brionella. Alas faire friend, it is doubtfull what danger may arise, because you haue contracted your selfe to Ptolome without the Emperours consent: how will you answere when you are charged with the fault? Brionella who now feared nothing but the preventing of her loue, answered, In sooth Madame, you speake with great reason, you now giue counsell when the deede is done, and cannot beereuoked till it bee dispatched: would you haue all the good fortune your selfe, and suffer your friends to enioy no parte with you? trust mee that is vnconsciouable dealing, for hee that made you to loue, framed me to the selfe-same mettall. But I see you make the occasion to mee, to learne how to answere your owne deede: let vs referre all to him Madame, that appointed your choise by destinye, and mine by mine owne liking. Many other pleasaunt speeches passed betweene them, and diuers times their knights came to visite them, till Fortune who will neuer suffer things long in one estate, sent an occasion to hinder this delight of these loue: for there was a Messenger come to the Courte from the King of Norway, Nephew to the Emperour, who being admitted audience, thus deliuered his message. *W*orthy Lord, the King of Norway my Master, requires your assistance in his great distresse, against the King of Eng-

OF PALMERIN D'OLIVA.

land, who with a mightie and puissant Armie is entered his dominions, where he hath made great wast and slaughter of his people, in diuers skirmishes and conflicts passed betwene them, so that hee neuer had like neede as at this instant. Trust mee (quoth the Emperour) I will assist him with right good will, and his misfortune doth not a little grieue me, but I will take order for it immediately, and my power shall be with him so soon as possible may bee: with which answer the Messenger departed. Now as concerning the cause of these warres, betwene the warres of Norwaye and England, it was procured by displeasure of succor that the King of Norway gaue to the King of Scots his brother, who helde warre with England about the taking of certaine Shippes: the Emperour likewise his heauy enemy, and for that cause he promised helpe so soon to the King his Nephew. Which when Trineus vnderstood, that his Father declared himselfe displeased with the Father of his beloued Agriola, (whose loue no occasion could alter) hee was greatly discontented, yet dissembling his conceit, determined rather to ayde the King of England, then his Cousin, and therefore intreated Palmerin to accompany him to his Chamber, where hee would acquaint him with some part of the sorow hee conceiued, by the succour his Father would send to the King of Norwaye, against her Father whose seruant he had vowed himselfe, and therefore (quoth hee) let me desire you to conceale a request I shall make to you. You know my Lord, saide Palmerin, that I will no lesse obey you then the Emperour your Father, commaund therefore what you please, and be it in my power, it shall be executed. So it is, quoth Trineus, that I would haue you not accompany the power my Father sends by Sea, but do so much for me, that you, Ptolome & my selfe (vnknown to any) may assist the King of England in his warres, by which meanes I doubt not to compass the thing I most of all desire. And this I dare tell you, that my life is onely dedicated to her service, and so well doe I hope to imploy my

THE HISTORIE

paines, that she shall haue cause to loue mee, and regard the paine I suffer for her sake: and but I gaine the fortune to purchase my loue, right soone and suddaine, shall you heare of my death. You that haue felt the like torments can censure of mine, which I dare not impart to the Emperour my Father, because of the hatred he beares the King of England ad- uise me therefore good friend what I shall do.

These speeches were nothing pleasing to Palmerin, seeing hee must now againe depart from his Ladie: but because he earnestly affected Trineus, and knew he w^{ell} he might helpe him in his loue, answered. Assure your selfe my Lord, that I will labour diligently for your good, and shall assist you to my vttermost, in that you beare such lone to the Prin- cesse. And I am of the opinion, that hauing receiued the or- der of knighthood, which the Emperour your Father will not denie, it would auaille you much, to tell your Father how you desire (vnknoone) to aide the King of Norway.

For my part, if he demaund my aduise, I will like it so wel, as because the Armie cannot bee readie so soone, your honour, Ptolome, and my selfe, will ride before towards the King, and so may we accomplish what wee so earnestly de- sire. This counsell pleased so well Trineus, as he intended on the morrow to request his order of the Emperour: as also how gladly he would assist the King of Norway, and how necessary it was for him to go before the Armie, as Palmerin and he had deuised together.

CHAP.

OF PALMERIN D'OLIVA.

CHAP. XLIIII.

How Trineus was knighted, and what happened to him afterward.



In the morrow, this young prince seeing that to accomplish his intent, it was ne- cessary he should be knighted, he gaue at- tendance to find the Emperour at leisure, when hee might sollicite his highnesse with his suite: and understanding that he was walking in his gallery, he went to him, and on his knee thus began. Dread Lord and Father, so pleased your Maestie, it is now time I should receiue my order of knighthood, and more necessary now then at any o- ther time, in respect of my earnest desire to aide the King of Norway my cousin in his wars. The Emperour maruailing whence this humo^r should proceed, answered. Why Trineus do you thinke your selfe able to take so waightie a charge in hand: truly such hono^r is soone receiued, but to maintaine it as it ought to be, and prevent the dangers incident thereto, is more hard then you wene, and maketh worse of the most co- ragious stomack, in that neither paine, feare or danger must hinder, what matter of so great consequence doth command. And perswade your selfe, that such as counselled you there- to, know scant themselves their due tie in those affaires, wherefore for a time haue patience, and deferre it till bet- ter abilitie: for I will send good Ho^re of other knightes in this expedition, who shall well excuse you to the king my ne- phew.

Trineus not contented with this answer, replied. In truth

THE HISTORIE

my Lord, if I were not desirous to fulfill what is required in chivalrie, I would not so boldly haue made this demaund, therefore for such exceptions as you admitted, let mee not beseech you be denied at this time: and let this induce you, that such as are borne to gouerne kingdomes, if they giue themselves onely to pleasure, without passing through the pykes of some dangerous hazard, they are not worthe to be lifted to such honour. The Emperour hearing the braue minde of his Sonne, and that his wordes fauoured of courage, conceiuing well thereof, answered. Since your desire is so earnest to be made knight, I am well contented, but I would haue it done honorably, and before a greater assembly then now is in our Court. Alas my Lord, said Trineus, there is no neede of triumph before victorie: let such pompe remaine I pray you, till I haue wonne honour and account by my deedes. The Emperour ioyfull of the Princes good opinion, perswaded himselfe he should proue fortunate, wherefore he graunted his request, so that Palmerin might accompany him in his voyage. Of which condition Trineus was not sorrie, because in him consisted all his hope of successe: so his father commaunded him to prepare himselfe for his order, whereupon Trineus made himselfe a costly Armour, and another for Palmerin, the deuises being changed, because they intended to passe vnknoone. Now had the Emperour leued an Armie of tenne thousand good Souldiers, the conduct whereof was appointed to the Counte Tolano, a knight valiant and hardie, hauing had like charge in sundry occasions of warre: therefore so soone as all things were in readinesse, they were imbarked, and sayled with such beneuite of winde and weather, as soone after they toke landing in England. Where a while we will leaue returning to Polinarda, greatly discontent with her Brothers departure, because of Palmerin, and Brionella no lesse troubled for her friend Prolome: but the Princesse feeling newe afflictions for the absence of her loue, came to her Brother, saying, I know not (Brother) who hath aduised you to

venture

OF PALMERIN D'O LIVA.

venture so dangerously, our Cousin hauing assistance sufficient without hazarding your person, let mee then intreate you (good Brother) to affect occasions that promise better seruicie. Better occasions Sister (quoth hee?) it is impossible, if it bee a thing allowable and vertuous to succour a stranger, how much more then is it to our owne kind man, especially, such a one as is our Cousin of Norway: therefore I pray you bee of good comfort till my returne. And if it so happen that my father in my absence intend your Marriage, looke that you consent not till I come home againe: for my not being here will serue you for a sufficient excuse. Which Polinarda promised: and her word so past, kisse her in no small bread afterward, as you shall finde in the discourse following.

So soone as Trineus was provided of all things fit for his knighthood, he came to the Emperour in this manner. I desire you (my Lord) to accomplish your promise, hauing done my dutie as you commaunded mee. With right good will my Sonne, sayde the Emperour, goe attune your selfe. They went hee, Palmerin, and Prolome, Armed to the Chappell, Trineus being in Greene Armour, figured all ouer with hearts of Golde, and in his Shielde was portrayed a knight vnrarmed, holding in his hand a Bowe bent, with an Arrowe ready to shote against a great Tree, whereon hung a Scrole, which had written in it in Letters of Golde, this Motto: Madame, quand Mourray-ie? Whereby he meant, that the Loue which made him enterprise this Voyage, should beare him company till death. Palmerins Armour was all blacke, declaring his mourning for his absence from his Ladie, and in his Shielde for his Deuise, was figured a goodly Eagle, shewing a little Wynde under his wings: declaring thereby the fauour he had receiued of his Mistress. Soone after came the Emperour to the Chappell, where hee knighted his Sonne put his Spurre on his heele and gyrded his sword about him: afterward they went to Dinner, and spent the whole day in many pleasures, for ioy of this newe knight. Palmerin and Prolome to comfort theyr Ladies before their

depart

THE HISTORIE

departure according as they were wont, when the Princesse Polinarda thus beganne. Alas my Lorde, what griefe will your departure be to mee? With what patience do you thinke I am able to endure it? perswade your selfe, the very conceit of your absence will bee my death, or at least a cause of such danger as I shall neuer recover. Wee well advised therefore how you deale with mee, for the intent of my Brother might be broken, if you would labour in it: but if it may not be, then saue my life by your speedie returne. These words were deliuered with such teares and reking sighes, as Palmerin might well perceiue the vehemencie of her griefes, and answering her heauinesse with as earnest oppression, saide: Sweete Ladie be perswaded, and temper your sorowle with patience, considering the vnion of our spirities makes a sympathie of Afflictions: If then for my sake you will not pacifie your selfe, yet to shalbe your owne perill, let mee intreate you to be resolute, in that my returne shall be with such expedition as you will commaund. But if you continue thus in Melancholic, you will too soon bewray what as yet should be concealed, and so may great harme ensue to vs both. Wherefore I desire you to moderate your impatience, and to thinke well of my departure, which is chieflie to seek out a Knight, against whom I haue fought in France for your Beautie: as for any other matter you may belieue me.

Wherevpon hee reported his Combat with the Knight of the Sunne, which made the Princesse (as well for Palmerins promise, as the account hee made of Frysol) some what better quieted; to answer. If it be so my Lorde, that your returne will be with such speed, I shall then enforce my selfe to beare the burthen of my Cares with as much patience as I can, and see you sayle not your appoynted time: but tell mee I pray you, what Armes beares the Knight of the Sunne, you speake off? Which Palmerin describing, Polinarda remembered him, saying: My Lorde, I know now very well what hee is, For eyght dayes after your departure towards France, the Emperour my Father knighted him, commaun-

ding

OF PALMERIN D'OLIVA.

ding me to gird him with his Sword, which I could not but obey: wherein the Knight glorying, solicited me with affecti- ons not liking me, which I pray you reuenge, being the man whome the matter most concerneth. After many other admirable conference, the Knights humbly took their leave of the Ladies, and in the morning betimes, the Mariners called on Trineus and his company to haste aboarde, because the wind serued well for England, which they performed with all speed, hauing first taken theyr farewell of the Emperour and the Court. So hoping sayle, they set on to Sea, and in good time came within the hearing of England: where wee will forsake them a while, and returne to the Emperours Arme, which he sent to the King of Norway his nephew.

CHAP. XLV.

¶ How the Arme of the Emperour of Allemaigne arriued in England vnder the conduct of the Counte Tolano: and how they were discomfited.



Rechearded it hath bene already, howe the Emperour of Allemaigne promised the messenger of Norway, to send his maister the aide of tenne thousand men at Arms, of whome the Count Tolano was made Generall, and they arriued in England, without any resistance. The Counte vnderstanding by his Auant-coureurs, the Order of the Enemys Arme, and where the King of Norway was Encamped, raunged his men in good order, and marched toward theyr Foote, which the King had made in

THE HISTORIE

in the Duchie of Gaule, and which hee had destroyed during the time the Duke was in France, hauing there fortified the the strongest Cittie, and the Hauen that stood fittest for their commodities. Crenus at his returne with Frysol, as you haue heard, vnderstanding the spoyle of his Countrey, assembled his people together, and with the aid of the King of England, came within a dayes Journey from his enemies. The Countie Tolano, hearing thereof, appointed his men in severall companies, and the next day he gaue such sharpe skirmishes to the Gaules, as they were constrained to keepe within their defences. Whereupon the Duke determined to bidde them Battell, and to helpe him in his attempt, hee caused an Ambush of a thousand Light-Horsemen, to place themselves in a Forrest nere adioyning, of which companie Frysol was the Leader: and to provoke the Norwayes to the ffield, hee sent out certaine men at Armes well provided, who scowled here and there, to the ende the Allemaignes, who had bene so hote the day before, should be compassed with the secret ambush, which fell out according to Crenus his expectation, for so soon as the Allemaignes sawe the Englishmen so scattered, they dislodged themselves, and followed them, with the whole Armie of the King of Norway, because they were persuaded that they betooke themselves to flight: but the Gaules not dismayde with their coming, being but foure thousand Horse-men, and tenne thousand fote-men, came valiantly against the Allemaignes Ensignes, and then beganne a very fierce Encounter, but the Englishmen wise and politique, fearing misfortune, came on with theyr regard towardes the Forrest where the Ambush lay. When the King of Norway ignorant of theyr intent, suddenly made after them with the greatest parte of his Power, but they had a worse welcome then they expected, for the Englishmen aduertised what they should doe, gathered vpon the Forrest side, charging theyr Enemyes with such a sharpe Assaulte, as in lesse space then an houre, two thousand of them were slaine. Frysol perceiving that the time was come to shew himself, calling his

OF PALMERIN D'OLIVA.

squadron together, cryed: Upon them valiantly my friends, the spoyle is ours. So they entred pell-mell among the Allemaignes, making such slaughter of them, as was wonderfull to beholde: for albeit they thought not of this decept, they were so ouer-wearied with dalliance, as when they came to the exployt they could do nothing, but were slaine downe right, such valour shewed Frysol, and his fresh supply, driving them to flight, and they following them, being glad to take the Cittie of Tomar, which was strongly fortified. Which when the King of Norway perceyued, hee stayed not long after them, because he saw it was not best for him, and therefore fled after them for companie at the hard heales, and got the Cittie in good time, or else they had all perished. Thus remained Crenus Master of the ffield, and following his successe, the next day began the Cittie of Tomar with Siege, swearing neuer to depart from thence, till he saw the Cittizens eether through the Gates or the Wallles. Yet had this courage of his bene some cooled, if Frysol (like a good Captaine) had not cherished vp his men, when Crenus at one Saillie of the enemye lost two thousand men, and therefore saide. Whye howe now my louing friends and Companions? will you flye or fainte at the houre of good Fortune? desire you not to purchase the vertue so highly esteemed? know you not that you deale with people halfe conquered, and altogether discouraged? Courage then my Brethren, courage, and let vs not exchange our Reputation with their feare and fainting: you giue me double strength good friends, if but with your good countenance: you will make them knowe what cowardly cravens they are. Follow me (braue Englishmen) and this very day will wee giue them punishment, as their Treason and Rebellion hath well deserved. These words renewed each others courage maruellously, so that the Duke with a fresh supplye beganne againe thus to animate them. You knowe my good friends, that although wee are but a handful in respect of them, what successe wee haue already had in these our encounters, so that with greater ease may wee now

son

Conquere, weakening them so mightily as wee haue done: Let vs not dismay then, but witnesse that the worst man amongst vs, is more Valiant and hardy in Armes, then the greatest Lorde that is in theyr Companie, eache man there fore cherish his hope, and bearde our Enemys to theyr very teeth. The day following, the Enemys came forth at a Porterne-Gate, and helde the Dukes posess very good play, and the Norways being very well appoynted with Bowes and Arrows, gauled the Horse so cruelly, as they were gladd to take theyr Campe: Whereupon the Counte Tolano in hope of the day, followed upon them with his Allemaigne Courtlaces, which Frysol perceyuing, mette him in the face with his English Squadron, and giuing the spurres to his Horse, ranne with his Launce quite through his bodie: Whereat the Allemianes much amazed, when they saw theyr General fall dead from his Horse, determined valiantly to reuenge his death, but Frysol and his men dealt with them so roundly, as the frontest of them were glad and faine to make them way. Yet had they heinde in Frysol, with such a troupe, as if the Duke had not speedily come with rescue, they had taken him: and then beganne the sharpest bickering: For the Duke of Gaule and Frysol with theyr men, so besyred them, as the Allemaignes cleane discouraged, beganne to disorder themselves, and with the Norways fledde to the Cittie, so fast as they coulde, inhere Frysol and his men had entred, but that the King of Norway not daring to come into the fiede, was there with man sufficient to resist his entrie. Thus remained the victory of the Duke of Gaule, by the braue pollicies of Frysol and his men, hee being generally commended of the whole Armie: and thus retyred the Allemians and Norways, to theyr shame and dishonour. After the Retrait sounded by the King of Norway, hee sent to the Duke to demand truce for foure and twenty houres, to the ende they might bury the dead, among whome was the Counte Tolano: which being graunted him, hee caused the Countes bodie to bee embalmed: who by the counsell of his Lordes and Captaines,

was sent home into his Countrey. The King and his company secretly in the night imbarqued themselves, to ioyne with the King of Scots, who expected his coming, and then did the Cittizens sent word to the Duke, that by the breake of daye they would yeld by the keyes of theyr Gates to him: whereupon Frysol was Lieutenant-General for the Duke of Gaule, and entred honourably the Cittie of Tomar, where the Englishmen refreshed themselves for two or three dayes, to recompence theyr paines with profite and pleasure. The Enemye was no longer departed odder waile, but there arose such a terrible Tempest, as the most part of theyr Vessells perished in the Sea, and the other were so scattered, as they had lost the sight of one an other: yet was some small number remaining with the King, as well of Allemaignes, as of his owne Countrey men: So getting safe to shore in his Kingdome, he determined a reuenge for his great overthrow, but he could not compass his intent, as you shall reade hereafter.

CHAP. XLVI.

¶ How after the Princes Trineus, Palmerin, and Prolome, were arriued in England, they went to the Court, and what torments the Prince endured for his Loue to the faire Lady Agriola.



Trineus, Palmerin, and Prolome, being landed within foure dayes iourney of the Kings Campe, which was provided against the King of Scots, were aduertised that the King staied but the coming of the Duke of Trineus, and then he went to bidde his enemy Battell, for that hee had boldly presumed to open parte of his

Realing,

THE HISTORIE

Realme. The Garders of the Porte where they Landed, seeing they were strangers, would suffer them passe no further, till they knewe thes; Names, whither they went, and what they came for: Palmerin answering on the behalfe of them all, saide:

God Friends, we are Grecian Knights and trauel strange Countreys to seeke aduentures: and because wee heard that your King menaceth warre against his ancient and maleuolent enemye, the King of Scots, we came to offer our selues and our seruice to him, so please his Maiestie to accept it. This answer so well contented the Officers, as by thes; meanes they were conducted to the Courte, where they were honourably entertained, and two dayes together were there feasted with the King: In which time Trineus vnderstand, that the Quene and her sayre Daughter, were aboute twentieth miles thence: Whereupon, the next morning they took their Journey thither, and by Dinner time they came where then the Quene lay. But it fell out so happily for Trineus, as before they came to the place where the Court abode, they met the Quene and her traine, who daily went to a chappell, not a quarter of a mile from the Cittie, to heare diuine seruice, as she kept it for a continuall exercise, and with her was the sayre Agriola her Daughter. The Quene and all her Ladies alighted from off thes; Palfreyes, they entred the Chappell, the Prince well regarding the Goddess of his heart, who belike making her Prayers more brieue then her Prayer, came forth with her waiting Ladies, to walke vnder a companie of greene Trees vnder a shadyng. Trineus seeing her a Creature, so rare and excellent, made doubt in a matter of assurance, least he should bee surprized as Acteon was, when he found Diana bathing among the Nymphs. He being thus carried away with maruellous concept of her Beautie, saluted not the Princeesse as she passed before him, nor heard Palmerin, who reprimed him for omitting his courtesie: but wading further and further into this Amorous furie, spake so lowde, as he to as easily heard in this manner:

OF PALMERIN DOLIVA.

O heauens, will you suffer the perfections of a Ladie so diuinely accomplished, to be the cause of my vnderfetched death? When may the time come for me, to let her vnderstand my desire to do her seruice: or how might shee knowe the love all affection I beare her? One of the Ladies of honor attending on the Princeesse, reputing his words vnwise & ouer-bolds, answered. Why Sir knight, where learned you so little courtship, as when she fairest in the Westerne world passeth before you, you make no gentle gesture or salutation? I doubt not what is counted honesty and vertue among men of qualitie, with you is esteemed harsh and vnicuill, which makes me repute you more meete for the Kitchen, then to beare the honourable office and rich Armes of a knight, as you do. Trineus as if were awaked out of a traunce, said. Ah swete Ladie pardon me, for by my faith, I can neither tell what you said, nor well where I am my selfe: for euen as you ended, I felt such a passion strike me to the very heart, as death will soon arrest me without remedie. The Ladie, who knew not his meaning, checked him againe, thus. Were it not better then for you to be in the field, then here in this foolish and vnderfetched penitence? It is true Ladie, (quoth the Prince) that at this time I haue shewed my selfe vnmannerly, and a slender Courtier, yet is not the blame altogether to bee throwne on mee, ignorant who the Ladie was to which you speake of: for wee are strange knightes, and are come farre from this Countrey, with intent to aide and succour the King in his warres, with our bittermost endeouours. Notwithstanding, because we haue with no more regarde done our dutie to your Distresse, may it please you to entreate her on our behalfe, to pardon this offence: for satisfaction whereof, wee will go serue the King her father in battell, where we doubt not so well to behaue our selues, as shall deserue our pardon, if so be shee will not at this instant so fauour vs. And I gladly would, faire Ladie, that such seruice should bee done by her commaundement, for our strength and vertue by her affections augmented, will at-

THE HISTORIE

tribute the honoz to her that so graciously assisted vs, wherefore, so please you to make knowne our good intent towards her, we shall for such kindnes remaine indebted to you. The Ladie took pleasure in hearing Trineus, especially perceiving the zeale of him and his companions, to imploy their valour on the Kings behalfe, which caused her immediatlie doe this message to the Princesse, who at that instant (as a thing fatal to her) was wounded with loue: whereupon she sent them answere by her Gouvernesse, that shee entertained them as her knights, and as her seruants desired them to goe aide the King her father, yet would shee not consent to pardon them, till the resolution of their employes might shew them to deserue it. Trineus took this answer for better advantage then the Princesse thought on, accounting himselfe happy by such a good beginning. and therefore saide to the Ladie, I thinke my selfe (saye Ladie) one of the most fauoured by fortune, hauing the meane to obey your Distresse in her command, and hope to execute her charge in such sort, as I shall deserue the grace shee doth not to denie mee, yet with all humilitie on our behalfe, I intreate you, to yelde thanks for her princely kindnesse. The Lady returning to Agriola, accomplished what Trineus desired her, whereupon shee turned herselfe, and gaue them a countenance of fauour, which was answered by Trineus, Palmerin, and Ptolome, with great reuerence, & the Princesse, (shewing herselfe not too stately towards the knights) with her hand and gesture gaue a signe of her content, which was not a little welcome to Trineus. Then the Quene coming forth of the Chappell, with Agriola and her traine mounted on horsebacke, taking their way to the Court againe: but when Trineus had lost the sight of them, wonderfull verasions began to assaile him, so that hee sayde to Palmerin, Ah, my good friend, how happie may that man account himselfe, whose fortune honozs him with the beautie of Agriola? Ah sir Palmerin, I feele my selfe so exceedinglie tormented, as I doubt my death will be ineuitable. But tell

OF PALMERIN D'OLIVA.

tell me the truth and dissemble not, how thinke you of my Distresse: is shee not a Ladie more then diuine? In good faith my Lord, said Palmerin, what the Knight in France tolde vs, was but fables, in that shee exceeded report beyond all opinion: notwithstanding, it is necessarie for you to nourish your hope, hauing thus spoken to her, and bewrayed your afflictions, not doubting but this good beginning of your enterprize will cause the ende fall out to your content. So rode on these three knights, pleasing their humors with their severall indgements of their Ladies, yet Palmerin had seene such matter in English Agriola, as, but his plighted promise to Polinarda, was of force sufficient to chaunge his fancie. The next day they arrived at the King of Englands campe, where, because they would not be knowne, they pitched their Tents beyond all the other: and sone after came the Duke of Trincriel, bringing with him a number of hardie men at Armes, so that in short time the Kings strength was such, as they exceeded their enemies in number. Whereupon the King assembled his counsell, and concluded, that the next day they would goe seeke out the King of Scots, who in two encounters had the upper hande, which made him so presumptuous, as hee perswaded himselfe utterly to confound the King of England: who raising his power, followed so diligently, as the third day after hee encamped within halfe a mile of his enemy, that had besieged the Towne of Corfania, and had brought it ready to yelde, but that the King prevented it by the strength he brought.

THE HISTORIE

CHAP. XLVII.

Of the cruell battell betweene the King of England, and the King of Scots.



When the King of Scots understood the coming of the King of England, and that in all hast hee would bid him battaile, hee would no longer busie himselfe in besieging Corfania, but retired a little for his better aduantage, conferring with his Captaines about their present affaires, concluding to offer the enemye no skirmishes, because thereby they would know their intent: notwithstanding hee gaue order to prepare for battaile, because hee knew the King of England came for no other purpose. The Englishmen not suffering the Scots to haue any leysure to fortifie themselves, were by the King the next morning commaunded in aray, and all wings and squadrons appointed: the Duke of Trintriell was made leader of the anauntgarde, wherein likewise were Trineus, Palmerin, and Ptolome: and to the Dukes Brother was committed the charge of the arreargard: and being all ready to march on, the King himselfe beganne this Oration. I thinke my fierds, that no one of you, but sufficiently is acquainted in what respect wee continue this warre, namely, to defend the honour and reputation of our Realme, and to save the liues of you, your wiues and children, and your goods, which the enemye would violently spoile and take from you, intending to th: to perpetuall bondage and slauey on your necks. Will you not then defend your liberties? will you not

OF PALMERIN DOLIVA.

not maintaine your auncient renoune, which is to bee Lordes and commaunders of the Scots? assure your selues, that holy strong soeuer our enemye be, I hope with the aide of God, your vndaunted courages, and the right of our cause, to make a noble and victorious conquest. For I know that our enemye hath not one man in his Armie, endued with such an entire hart and magnanimous courage, as you are, nor that valueth his title of honour with his life, as you doe: and therefore if wee march on valiantly, continuing resolute and confident together, euery man labouring for his Prince, Countrey, friends, and fellow, and God for vs all, your fortwardnesse will make them fearefull, and your verie countenaunces enough to conquer. Euery man then bee cherefull, with a desire to vanquish. And here I vowe to you on the worde of a King, that if fortune stande so well with vs, as to winne the day, neuer shall the Scots hereafter dare to lift vp themselves against vs. Thus did the King of England animate his men, and so marched on in good aray to the sight of the enemyes, who by this time had empaled themselves in order of Battell: they Auant-gard conducted by the Marquesse of Monchel, the King of Scots himselfe in the maine Battell, and the Rere-ward led by the king of the Isle of Magdalen: and as the King of England had encouraged his Souldiers, so beganne the King of Scots to hartten his men in this maner. The time is now come (loyall Subjects, and deere friends) that the pride of the English must be abated by the valour and prowess of the Scots, so that if you set before your eyes the occasion which calleth vs to the fildes, there is no one of you but will blame his predecessors, for staying so long time to recouer, what by true Patrimonie belonged vnto them, and by the Kings of England, (most Tyrannous Vsurpers) against all right, violently taken from our Ancestours. Will you not then recouer your losse, and reenter on those Possessions, from which your Fathers (against all right and reason) were expelled? Duty doth challenge it at your handes, being the good not onely for your

THE HISTORIE

selues; but for your children and successors. Would you then loe a good opportunitie; to recouer things so lost: Are your hearts more timorous then your enemies: are your minde made of waxe mettall then theirs: No, no, wel I am assured that the least among you, is of higher vertue and account then the best in their company. If it hath bene their custome, (as they themselves vaunt,) to triumph ouer vs, let vs learne them to confesse with patience, that they haue no such right or custome to vanquish, as in these skirmishes already we haue sufficiently made knowne, with what fortune and unconquerable spirit you entertained your enemies. Dismay no more now (my good friends) then you haue done, let each mans (word) make his enteraunce amidst his foes, and saue one anothers life, so shall sweete successe returne you with victorie. The King hauing ended, they discerned the English power eager to encounter, and so the armies meeting, began a dreadfull and dangerous battaile. There might you heare the Drummes thunder, the Trumpets sounde, the Clarions ring, the Whifes warble, Lances shivered, knights dismounted, footemen scattered, heades defended, armes and bodie wounded, some crying, other dying, a matter more then lamentable to beholde, and so long continued this cruell and bloodie conflict, as the most part of the Mauntgarde were slaine, sore wounded, or taken prisoners. Which when the King of Scots perceyued, being a Prince so hardie and valiaunt as might bee, commaunded the maine battaile to giue the Charge, in the midst whereof hee was in person: whereupon the fight beganne againe much more fierce then before, so that yee might haue heard the Horses storne, the Armour clatter, and on euery side behelde good and venturous Knights giue vpp their liues. At this furious onset, Palmerin seeing the Scots to retyre for aduantage, cryed to the King of England, Why hold you now my Lord: do you forget your selfe: why do you not follow on with your maine battaile, seeing the enemy playes vpon aduantage: charefully let vs vpon them, for the day will

OF PALMERIN D'OLIVA.

will be ours. The king seeing that Palmerins counsaile was verie expedient, commaunded his men to march on valiantly, which they did with such courage, as not one of them but was thorowly buisted. Palmerin fearing least Trineus would bee ouer venturous, because the young Prince was inuicible forward, desired him not to runne to farre into daunger, but keepe by him, to the end the one might succour the other, if necessitie requires. With these words hee ranne vpon the Scots like an angry Lyon, and no man durst withstand him, they saw him make such slaughter: the king of England following him at an inch, deliuering true testimony of his inuincible heart. On the other side, Trineus met with the Kings Brother of the Isle Magdalen, piercing his Launce quite through his bodie, so that hee fell dead among his owne Souldiers: and Prolome all this while was not idle, but where ere hee came, he layd his enemy at his fete, so that the Scots wondered at the behaviour of these three knights. When the king of the Isle Magdalen, beried the death of his Brother, incensed with unquenchable anger, ran fiercely among the English, till hee came where Trineus, Palmerin and Prolome were, one of his knightes shewing the king the man that slue his brother, whereupon hee making towards Trineus, lifted vpp his sword, and thought to haue slaine him, but Palmerin stepping betwene them, sayd. To me Captaine, to me, and so the king and hee encountered together so terribly, as Palmerin was wounded in two or three places, for which hee made such recompence to the king, as fastening his sword on his Helmet, cleft his head in twaine: that done, hee fell dead to the ground. The fight hereof enflamed the Scots with such rage, as like mad men they ranne cutting and killing among the English, as well to reuenge the king of the Isle Magdalens death, as to defend their owne king, whose danger they feared. In this hot skirmish, the kings of England and Scots, met together, who charged each other with their forcible strokes, as the king of England was vpon

THE HISTORIE

hayed and sore wounded: but Trineus being at hand, seeing his deere friendes Father in such perill, buckled with the King of Scots so valiantly, as hee gaue him many a cruel wounde, and had not his men made haste to conuey him through the throng, hee had bene slaine by Trineus; so was the King of England mounted againe, and reuenged his foyle on his Enemies with maruellous valour. There triumphed the three Grecian knightes, with ineplicable honour, the Englishmen making such haueche among the Scots, as utterly dispayring, they fledde: one part to a Forrest nere at hand, and the other part towards the Sea, to their Ships, the king getting into one of them to saue his life, by the helpe and means of one of his knights, that lent him a good Fenet of Spaine, to escape away withall. And so sailed thence the King with greater shame, then did the Emperoz Antonius from Octavius Caesar, leaving his men fiercely pursued by the English, who terrified them in such sort, as many of the poore Scots chose rather to runne into the Sea, and drowne themselves, then to fall into the handes of their conquering enemies.

CHAP. XLVIII.

Of the retreat of the King of Englands armie, and the honour he did to the three strange Knights.



After the King of England was Master of the field, hee caused the retreat to be sounded, and his men called together, commaunding likewise that search should be made through the field, to succour such as were sore wounded, and to burie the deade, least the

ayre

OF PALMERIN D'OLIVA.

ayre should bee infected, whereupon the Englishmen took the spoile of their enemies, chiefly their bag & baggage which they had left behind them. In the meane while the King withdrew himselfe into his Tent, where remembering the great service of the three strange knightes, hee commaunded his Nephew Cerides to seeke them immediately, who found them in a Scottish tent, binding vpp their woundes: and being not a little glad of his good fortune, hee came to Palmerin, saying. Gentleman, the King my Uncle earnestly desireth you to come to him, because hee will neyther enter the towne nor enarme himselfe, till hee heare some tidings of you. Seeing it pleaseth him, said Palmerin, to commaund, wee humbly obey, wherefore wee pray you Sir to returne his maiesty our dutifull thanks, and diligent attendance. After Cerides was departed, they resolved among themselves (at the earnest request of Trineus) that Palmerin should be the chiefe among them, and him they would honoz as they Lord, because the prince feared to be knowne in such account should be made of him: so went they presently to the kings Tent, where they were no sooner entered, but the king (albeit hee was sore wounded) arose from his Chaire, and embraced them lovingly one after another, not suffering them to kneele before him, but honorably thus spake to them. Worthy Gentlemen, how welcome you are I cannot expresse, for I account my selfe so highly beholding to you, as the Realme of England had sustained this day great foyle, but by your fortunate valour: thinke then worthy Lords, wherein England may recompence you, and on my word it shall not be denied: in meane while I pray you let mee haue your Companie, because I will see your hurtles carefully attended. The knightes with great reverence accepted the kings noble offer, and were conducted into a fayre Tent next the kings, where the Chirurgions with great diligence dressed their woundes, and afterward they came and supped with the king. And because the king intended on the morrow to goe refresh himselfe at the

Towne

THE HISTORIE

towne of Corfania; which before had bene cruelly besieged by the Scots, to giue God thanks for the happy victorie, a famous Sermon was made before him, by the Archbishop of Canterbury, to whom likewise hee gaue order for enterreing of such as had bene slaine of account, and in that place for memorie of his good fortune, hee caused a goodly Monasterie to be builded, and dispatched a Poste presently to aduertise the Queene and the Noble Lords of his good successe.

Now was his Maestie very desirous to knowe the three strange knights, that had so valiantly assisted him, especially, the man that saued his life: whereupon, the next morning he went to see them, demanding how they fared: For (quod he) we will now set forward to Corfania, where wee will make you better entertainment then we can doe here in the fildes. Then mounted they all on Horsebacke, and rode to Corfania, where the King remained, till he and his knights were better recovered. And where the King made the Duke of Tintriell: high Marshall of England, committing to his charge five thousand men, commanding him to chase all the Scots forth of his kingdome, wheresoeuer he could find them, and to seize to his Highnesse vse, the Townes and Castles, which they before had in vse: which the Duke executed with such expedition, as hee left not a Scot in any Village or Hamlet, placing faithfull Officers for the King in euery Iurisdiction.

During these labours of the Duke, the King euery day visited these three knights, and finding Palmerin at a time convenient, hee requested to knowe of whence hee was, and the names of his Companions. Let me intreat you (quod he) not to hyde your selues from mee, because I shall not be in quiet till I knowe, that I may remunerate your deserts according to your persons. Palmerin, who now feared to be discovered, could not readily well deuise what answere to make, yet at length in great humilitie, thus said; Wee would desire your Maestie, that it might so stand with your good liking, as this time to excuse the knowledge of our present affaires, as also what wee are: yet thus farre will I resolue your Highnesse that

OF PALMERIN DOLIVA.

that wee are all Gentlemen of Greece, nourished in the court of the king of Macedon, who in seeking strange aduentures, haue travelled many Provinces, and now at length came into your kingdome, well-storied at this time with knights Errant, and gouerned (as we well perceiue) by a King so gracious, as no King where we yet haue come doth the like. For this cause my Lorde, as also vnderstanding that the King of Scots menaced warre against you, came we into your countrey, to doe you seruice in all obedience, as the very simplest among your Souldiers. Trust me (said the King) I haue well noted your seruice, and a man might be deceyued in expecting better assistance. For which I rest yours, in ought I may, while I live: but if you would spare your selues, then should I knowe to whom I were indebted, as also that my Subjects might honour you accordingly. That (quod Palmerin) will neither profit nor preiudice your Maestie, let suffice them: I beseech you, the vnfained good will and seruice we owe to your Highnesse. The King, seeing he could not get what he would, changed his talke, saying: Was it you Sir, that the day of Battell was Armedall in black: For my Lord, said Palmerin, and this knight (pointing to Trineus) is my Brother, who shelded you from danger against the King of Scots. Ah deere friends (quoth the King) this made mee so importunate: And may it like you to stay in my Courte, I will regard you according to your speciall desertings, as the onely knights of the world, in my fauour, paying thanks to Heauen, for the good I haue receiued by your meanes. Humbly did the three knights reuerentiate the King, promising for a while to sojourn with him.

CHAP.

THE HISTORIE

CHAP. XLIX.

¶ How the Queene of England was aduertised of the victory against the King of Scots, and the ouerthrow of his whole Armie.



When after the King of England, had sent tidings to the Queen of his good fortune, and the honour hee intended to the three knights of Greece: the messenger was so speedy, as the second day following hee came where the Queen kept her Court, & presented her the letters from the King her Husband, reciting the whole manner of the Battell, with the rare exploits of the three Grecian knights, and how one of them preserved the Kings life, omitting nothing that was needfull to be reported, and how the King intended to come with the three knights in great Royaltie to London, and therefore shee should provide equall Entertainment. The Quene highly contented with these newes, demaunded of the Messenger if hee knew the three knights, that gaue assistance to the King. So indeed Madame, answered the messenger, neither yet did I see them, but at the time I was dispatched with my message. Agriola finding in her selfe the puissance of a little god that made Loue, suddenly suspected that these strange knights were they which shee saw at the Chappell, and therefore saide. I pray thee tell me my friend, what Armes beare the knights: One of them Madame, (quoth hee) who seemes the very best knight in the world, is in green Armour, and that is hee that saved the King your fa-
hearts

OF PALMERIN D'OLIVA.

thers life, when the King of Scots had nere slaine him, but heremounted my Lord, giuing his Enemy such a dangerous wound with his Lauce, as it was greatly doubted hee had kille him, he lost so much blood, and this was one of the principall occasions of our victorie. This knights Companion in black-Armour, behaued himselfe with wonderfull Chualrie: for as a Lyon makes hauocke in a Hearde of Cattell, so did hee cut, slash, and mangle the Scots, as the very hardest durst not abide before him. The thirde is in blacke Armour, sparkled all ouer with white Roses, a knight of no lesse courage then his companions, and one that fought for England, with incredible prowesse. Let mee die, saide Agriola to the Quene, if these be not the knights that pass by this Cittie, when we went to the Chappell to performe our exercise: and therewithall shee rehearsed what speache her Gouvernesse had with them, and what shee commaunded them. In sooth Daughter (quoth the Quene) your Gouvernesse and you may well be blamed, for the slender account you made of them: I pray you therefore when they returne, let your former fault be sufficiently recompenced. That shall I not faile to doe saide Agriola. So the Quene honourably rewarded the Messenger, sending him backe with answere, that the Kings charge should be effectually executed. The King aduertised of the Quenes replye, sette forward with the knights of Greece, and his Traynie to the Court, and by the way, remembering the power sent by the Emperour of Allemaigne to the King of Norway, hee said to Palmerin. I cannot sufficiently maruaile, gentle knight, why the Emperour should declare himselfe mine enemy, and gaue assistance to the King of Norway, against mee, considering I neuer did any thing might deserue his displeasure: but I sweare by the faith of a King, that I will reuenge my wrong, and let him assure himselfe, that while I haue one foote of ground or a dozen of my Soldiers to helpe mee, I will neuer haue peace with him: to molest me within mine owne dominions: by God, my friends, I cannot forget it. These words greatly displeased

THE HISTORIE

sed Trineus, but especially Palmerin, who answered. In my opinion my Lord, the Emperour did but reason, and as dutie bound him, in respect he could not honestly refuse to ayde the King of Norway his Cousin, and hereof I can assure you, in that I haue sometimes bene in his Court, that hee is one of the wisest, and best gouerned Princes that euer I could heare of. Wherefore (be it spoken vnder correction) your Maieesty should forget this light offence, and consider if the like had bene done to wards you, you would haue no lesse. When the King heard him so support the Emperours cause, hee presently iudged him to bee of his Courte, and therefore saide. Are you he Syr, that wonne such honour and renown in France, at the Combat maintained by the Prince Lewes, for the Loue of his Ladie? If you be so, I pray you doe not denie it, for I shall henceforth thinke my Courte most happie, to harbour the most Excellent, among all knights: and I promise you I am so iealous of mine owne conceyte, as you can hardly perswade mee otherwise, such Experience haue I made of your Bountie and vertue. Palmerin blushing at these his words, and doubting least he should now be certainly knowne, answered. We most humbly haue intreated your Maieesty heretofore, and so we doe now again, that you would not enquire of whence we are, sufficeeth your Highnesse, that we are his humble Seruants, in any thing that shall like him to commaund vs. The King this hearing, repented himselfe that he had bene so importunate, for he feared least his speeches would make them forsake his companie, wherefore by this time being come nere vnto his Pallace, he sayd, What I haue saide Gentlemen, I hope shall not offend you: in my excuse admit my earnest desire to know you. By and by overtooke them the Duke of Tintriell, who went to re-store the Crowne, (as you haue hearde) what the Scots vnto, and he aduertised the King, that the Duene and her Ladies were ridden to a Castle about foure miles from London to solace themselves: wherevpon the King resolved to ryde thither: whereof the Prince Trineus was not sorte, such was

OF PALMERIN D'OLIVA.

was his desire to see his faire friende, whose Loue still crossed him with so many Passions, as hee seemed a man of another world, and did not his wounds seeme somewhat to cure his Disease, hardly could hee haue found out any shifte to conceale it so closely, wherefore hee beganne with Palmerin thus: You know my chosen friend, that the good hope of my Loue made me leaue my Fathers Court, and to preuent my meaning consisteth onely in you: Nowe in respect of my forcible Captiuitie, being vnprouided of strength, fence, or any means to discouer my Loue to her, who onely can helpe mee: I intreat you by the inuolable league of our amitie, that when you shall chauce to speake with the Goddesse of my life, my paines and anguishes may serue for my Salutations, and imparting to her the extremitie of my sorowes, she may well perceiue in what estate I am, vnd what need I haue now of her gracious pittie. These words were deliuered with such store of sighes and teares, as Palmerin was amazed thereat, albeit hee knew how heauy the burthen was, and how it exceeded patience in suffering, comparing his absence from his Distresse D'olinda, to bee as insupportable, as the presence of fayre Agriola, (not daring to speake to her) was to Trineus: wherevpon he answered. My Lord repose your trust in this matter on me, which I doubt not but to handle in such sorte, as you shall haue no cause to bee Mal-content, or the Princesse any reason to be ingratefull. But what thinke you if my Dwarf did carrie this message? in my opinion (through the whole world) you could not finde a more fitte fellow, such is his subtile and present inuention, as hee will proue the onely string to your bow. Alas sayd the prince, I care not who were imployed herein, so I were sure of comfort. When was the dwarf called, to whom Palmerin in this sort began. It is wel knowne to the Urbanillo, with what good will I would do any seruice I could to my Lord Trineus, as well for the incomparable kindnes I haue receiued of my Ladie his Sister, as for the affinitie I hope shall one day be betwene vs by his meanes. So often haue I

THE HISTORIE

I made Experience of my loyall seruice and fidelitie, in my chiefeft and very neereft affayres, as well may I imparte to thee, the secrets of my Noble Companyon, perswading my selfe of thy surety and secrecie. It now remaines that thou pleasure the Prince Trineus, in breaking his Love to the Princesse Agriole, as thou diddest for mee to my Distresse Polinarda: but aboue all things haue regard, that thou be wary not of whence, or what wee are, yet must thou assure her, that the Prince is one of the greatest Lordes in all Europe. My Lord (quoth the Dwarf) I was neuer yet disobedient to you in all my time, and very loath were I now to beginne: but because I am such a little withen fellow, you, make mee your Broker in these perilous Loue-matters. Notwithstanding, I will doe it though I dyed for it, esteeming my life well bestowed to pleasure such Princes.

There can no inconuenience arise heereby to thee (quoth Palmerin) but profit euery way: be not enemy then to thine owne good. That will I neuer (saide the Dwarf) (and well might the Ladie be iudged vnprouided of reason, and very farre from vnderstanding, if she make refusall of the Princes honourable offer: the King himselfe (if hee knew it) would imagine his dayes blessed: the issue of this Enterpryse can not but sort to good. The Dwarfs words pleased so well Trineus, as hee tooke him in his armes, saying: I commend me selfe and my happinesse to thee. Let me alone (quoth Urbanillo) if I bring you not heards that shall cole this hote Feuer, then let mee neuer be counted for a tall man: So went hee about it as you shall vnderstand hereafter.

CHAP.

OF PALMERIN D'OLIVA.

CHAP. L

How the King of England went to the Castle to the Queene and her Ladies, and of the honourable entertainment made to the three strange Knights.



Nenes being brought to the Quene, that the King was not farre off, shee sent a verie honourable traine to meete him, and with them his sonne the yong Prince Fredericke, ten yeres olde, but beautifull and of such perfection, as promised great hope in time to come. Hee hauing made reuerence to his Father, and the other Princes, demaunded for the strange Knightes, and saluting them with such kindnesse as was rare in a Child, hee rode betwene Trineus and Palmerin, giuing them hartie thanks for theyr friendly succour to his Father, without which, sayd hee, as the Quene my Mother tolde mee, hee had dyed, and wee all bene distressed. By this tyme they were come to the Castle, all the way so thicke pestered with people, as there was no roome to stirre among them, euerie one crying, Happie be the Knightes that foyled our enemies. So entring the Castle, in the uttermost Court they mette the Quene and her Ladies, among whom laye Agriola layned, as beautifull Venus among the other starres, where with the Prince of Allemaigne was so nipt in the head, as an offendour with his guilt before a Iudge, so that not regarding what yong Fredericke, or the other Lords courted outlie said to him, hee was readie to fall beside his horse with ouermuch gazing: But Palmerin suddenly twitching him

THE HISTORIE

softly, said. *He my Lord, what meane you to forget your selfe thus? see you not her that is ordayned yours, and will you not triumph in your happie sight, but sitte as one vtterly discouraged? For shame let passe this pusillanimitie, and with cherefull counte naunce goe giue her the good morrow. The Prince did so, but with such timorous conceits, as hauing saluted the God her, he durst not speake to the Daughter: who imagining the best, and that bashfull reuerence did so with holde him, she came to him in this manner. Are not you sir, the knight in the greene Armour, that not long since promised one of my Ladyes to ayde my Father in his warres? I am sayre Princesse, quoth hee, and what I haue done, was at your commaundement, the vertue whereof gaue me such strength, as some of the Scots haue felt to their cost: but had I gone vnprovided of such fauour, I am perswaded I could neuer haue returned aliuie. It now remaines, sweete Ladie, that according to the request I then made your Ladie, it would please you to remitte his offence, who deserued the sharpest punishment can bee denied, for not honouring that Princesse, which carries the Palme from all Ladyes liuing. In trueth, my Lord, sayde the Princesse, not onely is your fault to bee forgiven, if it could be named a fault, but also ought I to recompence you to my uttermost power, seeing by your meanes my Father in safetie, and the Realme of England deliuered from the tyrannous seruitude of the Scots: wherefore you may assure your selfe, that if I can stand you in any neede towards the King my Father, you shall commaund mee to my uttermost. The Prince returned her a thousand thanks, and sayde. Believe me, Madame, the very least tittle of your good will, is recompence to mee more then sufficient, and would prouoke such affection in mee towards your seruice, as you could not demand the thing, but I should with dutifull willingnesse performe it, as I doubt not but better occasions shall make manifest vnto you. When entred they the great Hall, where such a sumptuous banquet was provided,*

OF PALMERIN DOLIVA.

provided, as will at the more time to report, then leysure will admit. Likewise here to set howne the wonderfull passions of the amorous Prince Trineus, in regard of a Lady so exceeding in perfections, surpasseth my capacitie: but hee that is seated so opposite to so faire a creature, and loues so earnestly as Trineus, yet dare not speake least he should be spyed, may iudge of that which I cannot utter. But seeing the liberty of speech was denied, the speedy eye posted betwene them with swift conueyances, and still must shee countenance the stranger knights, till fearing to be taken tardie, she closely conferred with the Princesse Eufemia, daughter to the Duke of Norgalles, saying: What thinke you Cozen of these strangers: are they not the seemeliest personages that euer you sawe, both in fauour, countenance, good grace and hardinesse? I am of the opinion, that although they report themselves but as simple knights errant, they be doubtlesse great Lords, descended of Noble and Princely parentage: as one may easily gather by their ciuill and vertuous behauiour, which is euermore the witnesse of true Nobility. These words caused Eufemia to marke well Trineus, as her Cozen Agriola did, which hee perceiving, and iudging that they talke of him, his alterations were so sensible as they might be easily discerned: for the more they eyed him, the greater was his torment, till the Table being withdrawn, he had some ease in opening his minde to Palmerin, whose comfortable words were as good to him as restoratives. Agriola on the other side escaped not free, for her ease was no greater when she arose, then when she sat downe, and that must belittle, hauing so dainty a dish before her to fill her stomacke.

The next morning, the King and the Ladies mounted on horse-back, setting towards London, & God knowes the Prince was not farre behinde them, lining onely by the regard of her, with whose rare beautie hee could neuer satisfie his eyes. And as they rode thowoe a Forrest, the King seeing the Trees so greene and delightfull, and because

THE HISTORIE

the heate of the day hindered their traualle, hee caused his Pavillions and Tents to bee there presently pitched, and intended to dine there under the cole trees. Dinner being ended, hee would needs go course the Hare, waiting the afternone in that pastime, and on the next day, rode to chase a Hart which was taken in the foyles, and therewith all a huge wilde Boe, the mightiest that ever was scene, having wounded him in so many places, as the Dogs and Bloodhounds might easily tracke him. Afterwarde they rowled a falletw Dære, when the Huntsmen made the woods ring so brauely with winding their Hornes, and the Greyhounds pursued the course so speedily: as Pelemedes choise was not comparable to this, till in the ende the Dære was taken. These pleasures finished, the King with his companion returned to his Tents, shewing to the Quene and her Ladies the fruits of their pastime, saying. I promise you Madame, I thinke these Grecian knightes excell in everie thing: for as in chivalrie, so this day have they shewed themselves excellent woodmen, as none in our trayne may compare with them. By this time the Table were covered for Supper, all which time was spent in discoursing of their sports: till the good night given on all sides, the three knightes withdrew themselves into their Tent. All these pleasures made not Vribanillo forgetfull of his Masters charge, wherfore practising how to accomplish it effectually, hee found meanes to come acquainted with the Ladies attending on the Princesse, and in respect he attended on the knights of Greece, he was licenced the oftner into their company. The next morning, the king and the knights walking into the Woods, the Dwarf watching time to deliver his message, made so many walkes and returnes befoze the Princesse Pavillion, as at last she espied him, and calling him to her, sayd: I pray thee, my Friend, by the faith thou bearest thy Master, tell mee the trueth of a matter I shall aske of thee: Madame (quoth the Dwarf upon his knee) command what you please, for there is nothing

(my

OF PALMERIN D'OLIVA.

(my Master preiudice excepted) but I will truly tell you. Which of the three, sayde the Princesse, is thy Master? My Master (quoth the Dwarf) hath not his second in all perfections, he it is that was in the blacke Armour, who in the battell for your Father did so many wonderfull exploits, as facts exceedeth the fabulous reportes of sir Gawine or Launcelot du Lake. In sooth (quoth shee) so have I heard, and beside thy dutie referueth to thy Master, I see thou canst sette him forth for a most hardie knight: but tell mee of whence he is: what are his companions? and why do they make it so daintie to be knowne? Herein Madame, sayde he, I cannot with my dutie aunswere you, for I am restrained by a former promise, not to reveale the least matter that may be hurtfull to them. Nevertheless, in regard of the reverent god will they beare you, and that I would not have you offended with such an abiect creature as I am, I would gladly tell you some thing to your content, so you will promise me on your princely worde, that what I reveale shall neuer be discovered by you. Perswade thy selfe thereof, sayde the Princesse, and looke whar thou sayst, by my honor, shall neuer turne to thy afterharne. When know sayde Madame, (quoth hee) that the greene knight is of the most noble and illustrious house in Europe, loving a Ladie as his proper life, for whom he hath left his Countrey, parents & friends, to come and do her service. The blacke knight, as I have already tolde you, is my master, and further then this I may not tell you. What am I the nearer my desire, quoth shee, by this aunswere: eyther thou shouldest have said nothing, or else thou shouldest have satisfied mee, for now I can not be quieted, till thou tell mee what Ladie it is, that the greene knight loves so dearly: let mee not make so many importunities, for I promise to thee againe, by the faith of a Princesse, that neuer shall any creature know it by my meanes. You urge me so farre, quoth the Dwarf, and have made me such great promises, as I am constrained (beyond the charge given by my master) to acquaint you with the trueth, in

R 3

respect

THE HISTORIE

resped, the fault will be greater in you to make refusal, then in yielding. I resolve your selfe therefore good Madame, that the brave Greene Knight, so rich in Armes, but more in minde, is the Prince Trineus, Sonne to the Emperour of Allemaigne, so passionate in loue, and so deprived of liberty, by deuout seruice to your excellent bountie: as against both dutie and nature, he hath decciued his Father, feigning to come ayde his kinsman the King of Norway, where contrariwise, he hath shewed himselfe his mortall enemy. And to no other end hath he thus offended both Father and Cozin, then to make knowne his long & laborous desires, to make you Lady and Mistresse of him and his: and such is his feare to be refused, as he endures more torments, then the martired bodye of poore Prometheus. See not then the cause I wrote to adie, that a Prince so famous, and a Knight so gentle, shall buy his great good seruice to your Father and Countrey, yea the most loyal loue hee beares to you, with vntimely, vnfürfortunate, and cruell death. Thinke with your selfe, is it not the highest among all honours, to be wife to such a Lord, and Emperesse (in time) of renowned Allemaigne? Is it not perpetuall report, to bee Lady and commaundresse of the principall parte of Europe? Let not him beare record that a bodie so adorne, and countenance so milde and gracious, can entertaine tirannie or crueltie: yea Madam such crueltie, as if you receiue him not into your fauourable conceit, you shall procure the death of the truest Knight in loue, that euer liued. The blacke knight is the renowned Palmerin Oliua, the wonder of the world for valour, conquering in Fraunce the Duke of Sauoy, in maintenance of his Ladies beautie, saye without compare: conforming his Sheld and Armour, equall to his mourning thoughtes, for his absence from her that triumphs in his Loue. The third Knight, so adorne with White-Roses, is called Prolome, Loued by a Lady well worthy of him. It now remaineth fayre Princesse, that you make the Prince Trineus equall with the rest in felicitie, for you haue the Maiden-head of his loue

OF PALMERIN D'OLIVA.

loue, which with honor you may entertaine into your chaste thoughtes. Thus haue I acquainted you with such a secreete, as no creature but your selfe could haue got of mee, and the danger to fall into your misconceit, hath made mee such a blab: leauing all you haue heard to your gracious construction. Agriola, metelle farre enough in loue before, but now utterly denied of longer libertie, hearing the wordes of Vrbaniillo, was surprised with such a strange alteration, as a long time she was dyuen to silence, not able to utter the secreete conceits of her minde, yet at length (to shadow her suddaine change from the Dwarfie) she sayde. Ah my friende, thou acquaintest mee with matter altogether incredible, is it possible that Trineus Sonne to the Emperour of Allemaigne, would venture into this Court, considering the mortall enmitie betwene our Fathers? Trust me my friende I cannot credit thee. I renounce mine owne soule saide the Dwarfie, if it be not as I haue told you: then iudge Madame what acceptaunce shoulde bee made of his seruice, when loue to you exceedeth nature: may it not bee termed loue surpassing all other, eyther registered in antiquities, or present memorie? If it should bee, quoth she, as thou sayest, it is beyonde my power to returne condigne recompence, yet in respect of thy secrecie, I dare assure thee, mine owne opinion of him hath so over-mistred me, as in honorable modestie he may commaund, and I am not so well nurtured to disagree. But if eyther by my words thou hast gathered, or by any chaunge of countenance perceived, the suddaine yielding of a flexible nature: interprete it in this good sort, that Princes afflictions make each other melt, as framed of one mettall, which I charge thee conceale from him, as thou regardest my word and his safetie. Pardon me Madame, (quoth the Dwarfie,) it standeth not with my allegiance to obey you herein, what a villaine might I be accounted, and unworthy the name of a faithfull seruant if I should hide these happy tydings from him, to ease those torments that euery houre threaten his death? Yea

THE HISTORIE

Madame, did my maister but thinke I would so abuse him, well deserved I to be torne in peeces. Well, quoth she, if thou findest time conuenient, tell him, but no other I charge thee on thy life: and withall certifie him, that I would not for my Fathers Crowne hee should be knowne. Feare you not, good Madame, sayde the Dwarf, they are already so well aduised, as none but your selfe can any way endanger them. It sufficeth that the Prince vnderstande your pleasure, which I will impart to him when the King is returned: so kissing her hande hee departed, leauing her so highly contented, in assurance of the loyall loue of Trineus, as she neuer determined any other Husbande, yet would she not disclose her minde, no not to Eufemia, her secret companion, thinking herselfe too much betrayed, because the Dwarf knew it. Some after the Queene sent for her, to walke in the cole shadow of the Trees, where not long they stayed before the King returned, who reported what pastime they had all that morning. The knights hauing saluted the Queene and her Ladies, Trineus saluting the Princesse Agriola, was so transported as hee scant knew where he was. The Princesse likewise fixed with a steadfast eye on him, as wounded both him and her selfe together, her complexion so aptly deciphering her sicknesse, as the Prince perceyuing it, sayd to himselfe. Ah loue, hast thou wrought so happily for mee, as my Ladie knowes my secret afflictions: shall I bee so fortunate, as she will take remorse on my Passions: sweet hope perswades me so, for the often change of her Diuine countenance, telles me there is some merrie in working. The King and Queene departing into theyr Pauillon, Trineus and Palmerin did the like into theyrs, the Prince taking Urbanillo aside, demaunded if he had any good newes for him. If you will graunt mee one thing (saide the Dwarf) I will tell you such tydings, as cannot but content you. Demaunde what thou wilt (quoth Trineus) and by the faith of a Prince, thou shalt not be deceived. Then beganne the whole discourse hee had with the Prince

OF PALMERIN D'OLIVA.

Princesse, and what deuotion we had for the recovery of his health. Judge you in what rare humour the Prince now felt himselfe, without question he imagined himself in a more beautifull Paradise, then ever was iuented by Epicurus himselfe, and embracing the Dwarf, he said. Ah my good friend. What wilt thou that I giue thee: tell me what thou demaundest: thou hast my whole life so much at thy command as thou mayest liberally share out thine owne recompence, but seeing the beginning is so good, no doubt, much better remaineth behind. Why my Lorde (quoth the Dwarf) you knowe, I was borne to do you seruice, commaund what you please, and I will accomplish it. When shalt thou (saide the Prince) returne to my Wittnesse againe, and kissing her hand, present her from mee this Emerald, desiring her to weare it for my sake: with remembrance to pittie his painfull miseries, whose life and death is onely in her hand. Urbanillo taking the King, Trineus and Palmerin, went to sporte with the King, and the Princesse at theyr Entrance regarding Trineus, perceived well by his countenance that hee vnderstood her message, for that his blood was now risen cheerefully in his face, which before was sunk down with much languishing: So that she imagined her selfe more happy, in being so beloved, then to Loue, and knewe not well how to dissemble her ioy.

Ah poore Trineus, the paine thou hast endured, in attending the wished houres to speake with her, farre surmounteth the torments of Leander, abrayting when Phoebeus would goe bathe himselfe with Thetis, and the Martine Goddesses, that he might after ward sinure to his affianced Heroe: and had not thee giuen thee a better signe by her Eye to aduenture, I would haue reckoned thee more infortunate, then the betrothed Spouse to the prisoner of Abydos. Now had Trineus bashfully taken the Princesse by the hand, when unhappy he came to aduertise the King, that the Hart he had chased the day before, was now again gotten within the foyles, that if it pleased him to Hunt in the morning, hee should no doubt kill him with little labour. These newes were so wel-

come

THE HISTORIE

come to the King, that because hee would the next Morning more early goe to his Pastime, he withdrew himselfe for that Night, the Duene and Agriola likewise departing to theyr Pauillion. So that Trineus encounter was thus prevented, and hee with Palmerin returned to theyr Tent, but trusting still on the Dwarfs diligence, that he should perfect all things to his heartes desire, and to perswade him the more, Palmerin thus beganne. I haue this hope my Lorde, seeing already so many good signes, that you cannot any way be deceived in your Loue: and this I would aduise you, Fortune being so fauourable, and assisting you to her very uttermost, you should not henceforth thewe your selfe so feminine, but in hardy manner reueale vnto the Princesse, when you shall finde her at conuenient leysure, both how you Loue her, and what fauourable grace you expect at her hands. I must confesse, that Letters and Messages are able to do much: but the Person being present, and knowing how to request, and how to bee answered, is more auayleable a thousand times: and in briefe, no Messenger can bee like himselfe. I speake not this, as though my Dwarf were vnfaithfull, but to this ende, that thee might receiue no occasion of displeasure. In how many daungers haue Gentlemen bene plunged, onely by the bad construction of theyr Seruants message: the ready wit that is cannot number them: therefore if you find opportunity, attend no other suter then your selfe. This counsell well liked the Prince Trineus, wherefore hee determined to speake to her himselfe, so soone as time and leysure would permit him, and in this resolution they went to theyr rest: but the reioybzance of Polinarda, would not suffer Palmerin to sleepe: comparing his toy in her presence, with his tormenting Passions now in her absence, breathed forth many sighes, and shed many teares, till at length he began to slumber, wherein hee thought he discerned this sight. Being in companie with the King, hee saw forth of a darke Cane a dreadfull Lyon, who with open throte set vpon him, and assailed him in such manner, as with his nayles and teeth hee

OF PALMERIN D'OLIVA.

rent his Armour, and put him in very great danger of his life, so that he stroue in such sort in his sleepe, as Trineus being in bed with him, awaked him, demanding why hee struggled so earnestly. Palmerin thus awaked, desired God to withstand all his euills, and afterwards recounted to Trineus the whole effect of his Dreame, and said. It will not be much amisse my Lord, that to morrow he ride Armed in the Kings companie, for such Illusions, albeit they commonly fall out vntrue, yet can theye do no good to follow. I like your counsell well (answered Trineus, and Ptolome got armed as well as we. In the morning they arose, and Armed themselves, all saue theyr Helmets and Launces, which theyr Squyres carryed, and in this sorte came to bidde the King good-morrow: who marvelled much to see them so prepared, and doubting they had receiued some occasion of offence, demanded what moued them so to be Armed. You know my Lord (quod Palmerin) that a knight ought euermore to be ready for all Aduentures: and not knowing what inconuenience or danger may happen, before such time as we shall returne againe, we haue Armed our selues to prevent the worst. The King not discontented with this answer, mounted on Horsebacke, and coming to the Chase, had excellent game at Dare, Hart, Boze, and wild Buffell, wherein he took such exceeding pleasure, as he determined to stay there five or sixe dayes longer. But in the place where he supposed himself safe, and free from all hazard, suddenly he was solicited with the changes of Fortune, for the Duene and her daughter Agriola were in marvellous danger, as you shall reade in the discourse following.

CHAP.

¶ How the Queene of England and Agriola her Daughter, were in danger to be rauished by the Giant Franarco, and of the succour they had, by Trineus, Palmerin, and Prolome.



The King returning from the chase with his companie, little minding any vnfortunate euent, and conferring with Palmerin, till they drewe nere vnto theyr Tents: at length they heard a great tumult, and behold a Squire making towards them, so fast as his Horse could gallop. Palmerin, doubting some vnhappy chaunce, and remembryng his dreame, said to the King: I neuer credit me my Lord, if this Squire come not to you about some speciall affaires, as well may be gathered by his speedy pace. At these wordes the Gentleman came to the King, reporting how the Giant Franarco, Lord of the castle of Carbones, since his departure came to his Tents, and fro thence had violently taken the Quene and her Daughter Agriola, notwithstanding the resistance of many knights, who stryuing to defende her, lost theyr liues. The King with these wordes, stricken in wonderfull grieve, saide.

Ah Gentlemen, this villanous Traytor hath notoriouly wronged vs: How is it possible to recover them againe, before they be dishonoured? Trineus and Palmerin, moued at these bad newes, asked the Squire which way he went with the Quen and her Daughter? In truth my Lord (quoth he) I cannot tell you which way hee took, wee all were so troubled,

bled and misused by his Traine: except they went along the Forrest, and so are gone to the next Village. Then Palmerin claspynge on his Helmet, and snatchynge his Launce from his Dwarf, galloped awayne after the Giant, not speaking a word to Trineus, who accompanied with Prolome, rode apace after him, and as they passed by the Quenes Tent, they saw the Ladies and the Gentle-women heauily lamenting, especially Eufemia, the chiefe Companyon to the Princesse Agriola. Diuers knights beside armed themselves to pursue the Giant, but Trineus not a little enraged, followed the tracke of the horse, demaunding of all he met, if they saw the Villaine that had stolne away the Ladies. As concerning this Giant Franarco, you must note that he was the cruellest tyrant, and most notable feller in all the Realme, hauing a dayes Journey from the Forrest where the King hunted, a Castle so well fortified, and furnished with Munition and all things necessarie, as in England was not the like, which was left to him by the death of his Father, who forcibly took it from a Lord his neyghbour, and diuers other places, especially the Isle Magdalen. There succeeded hee the royall dignitie, after the death of the eldest Brother, who (as you haue heard before) was slaine in the Battell by Palmerin, and his vnderstanding the death of the King of the Isle Magdalen, was so highly displeased, that although hee had alwayes before borne dutie and allegiance to the king, he now solemnly swore to renenge his Brothers death, being so feared of the whole Countrey, that none durst enterpise to deale with him. So to reuenge the slaughter of his eldest Brother, with diuers other of his kindred and friends, likewise slaine in the Battell, hee strengthened himselfe with thirtie hardie knights, intending to displease the king so much as hee could. And hearing that he was commynge to London, to feast the knights that were the cause of his great Widow, but chieflie him that slew his brother, came with his company this way, in hope to finde them all vnprovided. And commynge that Morning, the king was gone on Hunting, he found those he desired,

THE HISTORIE

desired to wete withall, for the hatred he bare them, thinking himselfe sufficiently reuenged, if hee could carry away with him the Quene and her Daughter: which he accomplished to his owne desire, causing them mount vppon behinde two of his knights. The Gentle-men that were left to keepe the Quene companie, very much offended to see such villany offered they? Ladie and Mistresse, defended her so well as they could, but all auailed not against the Giant and his power, because they were well armed, and they with the Quene were vnprouided, so that a number of them were slayne, and soze wounded, and more had bene, but that hee feared the returne of the king, which made him in hast ride from thence with his spoyle, sending them somewhat before, and loytering behinde himselfe, to fight with any that shuld come to reskew them. Trineus hauing gotten the sight of them, came posting to the Giant, saying: Stay traiterous thiefe, for thou mayst not so carry her away that is worthy the greatest Lord in the world. With these words they ranne fiercely together, Trineus giuing the Giant a soze wound on the shoulder, but the Prince receiued such a mighty stroke from the Giant, as he fell from his Horse with his heeles vppward. Palmerin being not farre off, and doubting least the Prince had bene slaine, came in a great rage to Franarco, saying: monstrous enemy to manhood, what maketh thee so saucie to lay violent hands on Ladies of such account? By my Sworde villaine, I shall make thee docerely to pay for thy follie. So couching they? Launces they met together, the Giant sayling, but Palmerin gaue him a threwoe wounde on his bodie, and they? Horses roughly shouldring one another, as their Maisters were both throlwn to the ground. Franarco (being heavy and vnwieldie) had such a fall, as easily he could not recouer himselfe. But Palmerin nimbly getting vppon againe, gaue the Giant such a wound on his right legge, as the flesh hung downe pittifully to beholde. The Giant being not able to stand any longer on that Legge, set his knee to the ground, being gladd to defend the strokes of Palmerin, who reached him such a sound blow

OF PALMERIN D'OLIVA.

blow on the forehead, with the hilts of his Sworde, as the Giant along on his backe, when Palmerin some setting his foot on his Breast, with his Sworde deuided his head from his shoulders. During this fight, Trineus and Ptolome, made after the Quene and her Daughter, whome the Gyants knights droue cruelly before them. Now was it matter well worthy memorie, to see the braue behaviour of these two knights, but chiefly of Trineus, before his sweete Mistresse, whose presence endued him with such exceeding courage, as he thought himselfe able to conquer the whole world, and therefore sufficient for them all, were they as many more in number. But strength doth not alwayes equall courage, and Louers thinke more then they are able to doe, as to Trineus perill it had now fallen out, but that a companie of the Kings knights pursued, whereupon beganne a hote encounter between them, and Trineus coming to the knight that had Agriola behinde him, set him some beside his Horse, with his neck broken in his fall, so that the Princesse getting forth of the throng, and seeing her beloued so balliant in proweesse, betwene ioy and griefe, she said: Ah happie knight, the byrrour of such as follow Arms, I desire thy high Fortune may proue, as thou and thy god companie may haue victorie ouer these Traytors. Now may I bee well assured of the Loue thou bearest mee: for which, (if we may safely escape this hard brunt) perswade thy selfe not to passe vnrecompenced. Trineus hearing the words of Agriola, was enflamed with such a spirit of conquering desire, as breaking in among the thickest, his strokes gaue witness he fought for a wife. But the Giants knights were men of such prouise, as the fresh supply that came were all wel-nere slaine, and doubtlesse the rest had borne them company, but that the king and Palmerin, with fifty knights more, came to assist them: for Palmerin hauing slayne the Giant, mounted on his horse, because it was one of the goodliest that euer he saw, and espying the king comming with his traine, set on with him, and found Trineus in great danger, because so many of his

THE HISTORIE

his side were slaine, but this fresh assistance brought by the king, was the meanes that all the Gyants knights were slaughtered, and they kneeling downe thanking God for their victory. The king alighting, came and embraced the Quēn, saying: How happy may we thinke our selues *Madam*, hauing so well prevented this trecherous villanie? For neuer did I thinke to see you againe, but that God and these knights so highly befriended vs. The Quēne and her Daughter were as yet so dismayed, in remembraunce of theyr former daunger, as beholding so many lye slaine before them, and ioyfull beside beeing so fortunately deliuered, as betwene these extreames, they knew not what to say, but desired speedily to set forward thence, which they presently did, the king commaunding his Nephew *Cerides*, to see *Franarco* and his men buried to *Asbes*, and honourable Sepulture to bee provided for the other. When the Quēne heard that *Franarco* was dead: Tell mee my Lord (quoth shee) who hath done such a gracious act to kill that monstrous villain? Cuen her *Madame*, saide the king, that was cause of my victorie in *Battell*, the knight heere in blacke Armour, to whome I am so farre indebted, as I cannot imagine any recompence sufficient for him: and this can I not speake without great marvel, seeing such rare Valour performed with so little daunger on his behalfe. Long may the good knight live and prosper, said the Quēne, that hath so defended vs, and may they all thre be most happy in all theyr affaires, for their knightly seruice to the Realme of England. While these speeches endured, *Trineus* being sore wounded, was brought betwixt two squyres, and set vpon his horse, but the king, the Quēn, and chiefly seire *Agriola* was glad, when he hearde there was no such danger but he might well escape it. Wherefore mounting all on horseback, they rode to see the Giants bodie, which made *Agriola* repute *Palmerin* for no lesse then his *Darrie* commended him. Then the king commanded to vname the body, and one of his knights should bring away his Helmet and *Schelde*, which would be tokens sufficient for him,

to

OF PALMERIN DOLIVA.

to recover the Castle of *Carbones* which he seized on, and all other things belonging to the Giant, hee sent the Count of *Bonacroy* with five hundred men to confiscate and returne to his Maesties use. The Count well knowing such matters would not easily be accomplished, if they in the Castle should make resistance, therefore politickely hee sent the Gyants Target and Helmet before, as sent from *Franarco*, who was with the king, and they should open the gates because they were comming thither, for witnes whereof they shewed the giants signet of armes. The guard too credulous, & thinking it impossible for any man to conquere the giant, opened the gates, whereupon the Count presently entred with his power, putting all to the sword, not sparing any, not so much as the giants yonger brother, who escaping alive from the battell, was the cause why *Franarco* dealt thus villanously. Thus did the Count yeld the Castle into the kings obedience: remaining Captaine thereof vnder the kings authoritie, the like he did in many other places, where the people aduertised of the Gyants rebellion, and that the Castle of *Carbones* was taken: there was none would resist the kings commaundement: whereof the Count was not a little glad, returning as soone as hee could with the glad tidings of his successe to the Court, certifying the king how all things happened.

S

CHAP.

THE HISTORIE

CHAP. LII.

Of the conference Palmerin had with the Princesse Agriola, after he had slaine the Giant Franarco,

By this time the king was come to his Pavillion, where he caused his Chirurgions dilligently to attend the three knights, for the curing of their wounds, who found that the prince of Allemaigne was worst of all hurt, yet the king understanding he was in no danger of life, was the better pacified, because he loved him dearly, and intended to honour him so much as lay in his power, promising not to depart thence till hee recovered his health: and because hee would prevent like mishances, he caused dilligent watch to be made everie night, as though hee hadde lien in field encamped with the enemye. During the Princes sicknesse, hee was oftentimes visited by the Quene and fayre Agriola, not vnthankfull of the courtesie receiued by him and his companions, and for which they requited him with manifold thanks. Trineus esteeming himselfe worthily recompenced, seeing that heavenly spectacle, whose presence healed a greater wound then any hee had receiued in fight, desiring the continuance of the outward hurts, for comforting of his inward oppressions. And while the quene thus conferred with Trineus, Palmerin came to the princesse Agriola, seeing the time so lawfull and commodious, that hee might thoroughly acquaint her with matter long enough before premeditated, but because shee was desirous to talke with him, she first began in manner following. I know not fir knight, how the king my Father will satisfie the great seruice

OF PALMERIN D'OLIVA.

seruice you haue done him, in so many hazards to his Realme and himselfe: but for mine owne part, I thinke my selfe so bounden, that after life, which hee gaue me by generation, my deuoted soule shall remaine to honour you. And if these occasions passed so giue me iust cause to thinke my selfe happie, what lesse account may I make of that vertuous Prince Trineus your companion, who came into this Countrey onely for my loue, as I am perswaded: yet doubtfull to be lightly carried away with report, I should accept it for more sound assurance, so please you to speake the truth herein. Madam (quoth Palmerin) if I haue done any seruice to the king or you, it is rewarded with much more then sufficient, seeing it please you to make such account thereof, and I promise you, you haue two knights wholly at command for the loue of the king, who is so confidently beloued your friend and seruant, as no man in the world can be more, & this is he that lieth wounded in his bed, the princely sonne and heire of the Emperour of Allemaigne, in which respect my Dwarf hath not deceiued you. And giue my word this credit (Madame) that since the time hee first heard of your excellent beautie, being then in Fraunce, hee neuer had other determination, but to spend his life in your gracious seruice, and making refusal of many faire Ladies, especially of Luce mania, daughter to the most christian king of Fraunce, set downe this princely and commendable resolution, neuer to espouse any other but you, so it may stand with your liking to accept him for your husband: thinke then aduisedly sweete madame, of the incomparable happines ordained for you, and stand not in your owne light to lose so good fortune. In truth my Lord quoth the princesse, I were well worthy to be reputed among the number of most hard harted and ingratefull Ladies, if I should not loue the prince Trineus, were it but for the danger he remaines in for mee, and the vnassigned loue which you say hee beares mee. And thus farre I presume my Lord on your credit, that if it were otherwise, you would not disguise the matter to me in

THE HISTORIE

this manner, much lesse deceiue such a Lady as I am, which (notwithstanding) would bee to you but a slender conquest. Therefore you may assure him on my behalfe, that the leue I beare him is more then hee thinks, and very far excedeth his iudgement, as the praise hersof (in time) shall deliuer true testimonie. Madame, quoth Palmerin, his onely desire in this world you haue faithfully vnderstande, in you then it consisteth to preuent the contrarie, by mercifull regards of his afflictions, and your presence will appease the anger of the Emperour your father, in that so nobly hee would enterprize (though against his will) to ayde the King your father onely for your leue. And this will bee the meane that the conceiued pleasure of the Fathers, shall conclude in the happie coniunction of their Children. My Lord, quoth the Princeesse, I will do what shall please my father and mother to command me, and no otherwise, considering the danger I may fall into by yielding my honour to any preiudiciall occasion. Palmerin who had no other feare but to be knowne what himselfe was, thus answered; I am perswaded madame, that your iudgement is so perfect, that to attaine a place of such dignitie, and a husband so royall as the Prince Trineus, you will not stand in scruple of tearmes, nor be carried away with any light or feminine feares, seeing that (setting apart these doubts) you shall worthily accomplish the thing which shall make you the most renowned Lady vnder the Occident. I pray you Sir Palmerin, queth she, reserve this talke to some other time, for the answer of such a high and weightie matter, deserueth to be excogitated with leysure, for oftentimes wee see, that such actions suddainely and slightly performed, causeth more repentance afterward then is expected. Yet thus farre I venture, and so faithfully perswade him, that hee is the onely Prince in the world I would accept for my husband, if they were so agræd, to whom God, nature and dutie hath beuene it: and to let him vnderstand my willing desire towards him, I will speake to him my selfe, as soone as the Duene is departed.

OF PALMERIN DOLIVA.

parted. Not long after, the Duene returned to the King, leauing her Daughter with two of her Ladies to comfort the prince, whereupon Palmerin taking her by the hande, brought her to the bedde side where Trineus lay, to whom she made very curteous reuerence, & trembling with modest bashfulness, said. How fare ye gentle knight? trust mee your hard fortune doth greatly displease mee, and if I could beare part therein, beleeue me I would gladly endure the paine: for it is good reason that the causer of the harme, should haue a portion of the torment, gratifying you with a Maidens thanks, for your good assistance without any desert. Trineus was so raiued with her presence, and hearing her speake so friendly, in whom consisted the safetie of his life, as hee could not utter the joy hee conceiued: which the Princeesse well noted and Palmerin likewise, who answered her in this manner. It cannot be madame but my Lord Trineus will soone amend, hauing the sodaine medicine so nere him, that is onely able to helpe him: and with these wordes he left them both together, to acquaint each other with their secret afflictions: when the Prince giuing a gracious sigh, saide. Faire madame, to accomplish what you commanded the first day I saw you, I did my deuoure to execute the effect of the charge, albeit not so sufficiently as I could wish: yet since that time I neuer enjoyed one minute of rest, till this instant, when mine eyes delighted with your sweete presence, gaue hope to my heart of further comfort. For this onely cause (faire mistresse) haue I forsaken my Parents and countrey, regarding nothing more then this present happinesse, whereby my woundes are cured, my spirit contented, and my heart from all dangers sufficiently recovered, so that no grieffe can now molest me, when your gracious fauour thorowly comforteth all. And now might I imagine my misfortune beponde all other, were not this fearefull doubt left to crosse it, that scanning disdaine should be hid in such rare perfections, as oftentimes it cometh so to passe: therefore I be-

teach you Madame, may it stand with your liking to resolve all doubts by your direct opinion, and herein shall I account my selfe more honoured, then were I Monarch of the whole worlde. Ioue having then so wounded the Princesse, as for a while she was diuened to silence, at length withdrew the passion, and caused her returne this answer. Alas my Lord, I was (ere this) so certaine of your affection to wardes me, in respect of the dangerous trauailes endured for my sake, as you neede not seeke any other proues, then what mine owne heart was fully resolved on: and so I continue still, expecting the day to make vs both fortunate, which I would haue you as yet dissemble, lest crooked mishap any way preuent vs. As she was proceeding in her discourse, the Duene entred the Tent againe, by which occasion Trineus could not say what he intended, wherefore taking her secretly by the hand, wrong her fingers with such a trembling passion, as all the night following he lay meditating on his goddesse Agriola, and the comfortable answer she gaue him. If the young Prince were in such tozments, his Lady beare him companie, thinking on the speeches past betwene her and Palmerin, and this evening the Dwarf (not compassing before to speake with Agriola) presented her with the Quieralbe from the Prince, which she kindly receiuing, in recompence thereof sent him a faire Diamond, rewarding the Dwarf liberally for his paines, who among the rest of his talke, highly commended the vertues of the Prince, which increased her towe so confidently, as she assured him of the Princesse's loue, that death could not change her selled affection. Trineus fully resolving heerein, gaue such cheerefull phisicke to his heart, and the Chirurgions such diligence to his woundes, as within seauen or eight daies hee was able to beare armour: whereupon the King departed thence towards London, where the strange knights were entertained with meruailous honor, the Lords, knights, Burgeses, Officers and other Citizens, welcoming them with great pompe and royaltie,

royaltie, saying: These are the knights that deliuered the Duene and her Daughter, from the cruell Giant Franco, with diuers other salutations, whereat Palmerin and his friends were greatly abashed. Passing on to the Palace, all the way they were still presented with rare shewes and deuises, and the knights lodgings were appointed in very stately Chambers in the Court, causing open Court to be kept for eight daies space, for the honour of these knights, and entertainment of all friendly comers, in all which time there wanted no sports and delights as such times and occasions doe necessarily require. Now came all the Princes, Lords, and renowned knights in England to the Court, except the Duke of Gaule, who excused himselfe by the warre in his owne Province, which yet was not the cheerefull cause of his absence: but the shame hee reputed to himselfe for his foyle in Fraunce, when hee entred the Combatte for the beautie of the faire Princesse Agriola. These knights thus woorthily intreated, they were at no time denied entrance into the King and Duenes chambers, by which meanes Trineus might when himselfe pleased, conferre with the Princesse, till this instant among all other, the Prince thus beareth to his Lady and Distresse. You may easily presume to see Madam, what secret combats I continually endure for your loue, and no helpe is expected but the onely hope of your fauour, which as you haue promised to my especial friend Sir Palmerin, I doubt not but you will perseuer in that gracious opinion, and what promise hee hath made of my seruice to you, thinke not but I obserue with religious care and deuotion, though not sufficient to equal your deserts yet because ingratitude shall not insult against me. So many thanks (saith the Princesse) I returne you my Lord, as good opinions can be imagined betwene vs both, and accounting you for my friende, which is a higher degree, I heere discharge you of my seruice, and (mine honour guarded from blame) I shall iudge my selfe so happie to yield

You any content, which I will fulfill, notwithstanding any danger towards me. But I pray you tell me my Lord, what is the intent of your loue in this action? Madame, (quoth the Prince) Sir Palmerin, who is now come to beate vs company, shall credibly enforce you, so please you to rest contented therewith. Palmerin thus entred, and imagined their talke was no about assayes of Perihardile, wherefore he sayde to the Princesse, God speede you Madame, pardon me, I should call you Ladie, and Wife to the Prince of Allemaigne: for I doubt not but you haue chosen him for your Husband in heart. Agriola blushing and smiling hereat, made no answer: wherefore Palmerin went forward in this manner. In faith Madame if you haue done so, I would counsell you to accomplish it presently, and prouide to goe with vs to Allemaigne, where the Emperour will entertaine you with such gracious fauour, as you will not lose if you beare the minde of a Princesse: beside, you shall be the meane of euerlasting peace betwene the King your Father and his Daughters. To which wordes, Agriola thus discreetly answered.

I promise you my Lord, there is no Prince this day liuing, whome I would more gladly accept for my Husband, then the Prince Trineus: notwithstanding, for me to depart without the knowledge of the King or Quene my Parents, is an acte in (mine opinion) farre dissenting from due tie and honest reporte. Therefore my Lord, louing myne honour as you say you doe, I pray you let our behauiours be with better wisdom, least we both fall into dangers not recouerable. Palmerin perceyuing Agriola contrary to the most necessary occasion, vsed such arguments, and played so well the Orator, that the poore Princesse had no power to resist: considering the great loue she beares the Prince Trineus, which made her yeelde more easily to his persuasions, so that she agreed to accomplish their determination, and depart with them towards the Realme of Allemaigne. Trineus loyes now exceeded measure, and Palmerin (for)

his

his sake) was no lesse contented, in selfe hee should the sooner see his faire Distresse Polinarda, whose very remembrance giue him life, as the Ayre doth the Camellion.

But Fortune beholding each thing prosper as liked theyr Fancies, would not to beginne to play her Pageant, crossing them with the unhappiest Stratageme that euer could haue befallen to such Noble Princes, as in the sequell shall be largely discoursed. They little expecting such variable chance, are earnestly following theyr serious Enterprize, which was secretly to conuey Agriola with them into Allemaigne, for which purpose they made prouision both of Shipping, & full Pilots to conduct them, transporting all their necessaries aboard, at what time this Aduenture following hapned in the Court of England.

CHAP. LIII.

How in the time of this pleasant and great Assemblie, there came a Damosell to London, who desired the King to doe her Iustice against a Knight of his owne Court.



During the time that this itoall company continued at London, and doing nothing else but pleasures, pastimes, and Courtly recreations, there came a Damosell so faire as might be, accompanied with two graue Auncient Knights, and a lusty Champpon brauely armed, with fire comely Squyres attendung on him. The Damosell entering the Pallace, came before the King, and upon her knee began

began

began in this manner. Dread Lord, having long time heard your good Justice towards your Subjects, without any favour or exception of persons: I am the more bold, (albeit he that hath injured me, is pretendedly reputed for a man of good quality, and holdeth place of authority in your Court) humbly to crave of your Highnesse one Request, against the most false and disloyall knight that euer was: whom when I do but once remember, more weighty and grievous oppressions fall vpon my soule, then this wretched body of mine is able to endure.

Damofell, (sayde the King) I shall right gladly relieve your heavynesse, if it lie in my power to do it: therefore tell me the cause of your offence: and what he is that hath so wronged you. Knowe you, my good Lorde (quoth she) that I loved a knight so dearly, as contrary to the liking of my Parents and friends, and too much forgetfull of mine owne selfe, I toke him to my Husband, & in a good opinion of him, thinking hee loved me so faithfully, as his fained shewes and counterfeit behaviour gaue demonstration, but the Traytour had no other meaning then falsely to beguile and deceiue me: For after I had made him Lorde of mee and mine, and brought him to a Castle of mine, so strong and sayre as any in your Highnesse Dominions: the Traytour expelled mee thence violently, pretending that we were so nere allyed, as he might no longer account mee for his Wife. Since which time, notwithstanding al the humble intreaties I haue often made: he will neyther restore me my goods & Possessions againe, nor yet accept me as his espoused Wife. Therefore I beseech you my Lord, as becoms a good and vertuous Prince, for the honour of Nobilitie, and regarde of Womanhood, you will be pleased to take pittie on a poore distressed Ladie, and that in such a rightfull demaund, you would doe mee Justice, which I had soner demaunded, but could not by the occasions of our troublesome Warres.

Ladye, sayde the King, as yet you haue not named the man that hath offered you this surpassing iniurie. My Lorde quoth

quoth shee, this is the man in your Presence, named Myseres, a vile Traytour, and publike Adulterer. And if so hee dare affirme that I haue spoken any vntruth, I haue here brought a knight with mee, who by Combat shall make him confesse his falshood and Treason, so please your Maiestie to fauour my Request. Myseres, (quoth the King) holme answer you this accusation and offence, wherewith this Ladie chargeth you? Myseres heeing suddenly driuen into this dumpe, knewe not well what to saye: yet at length, (with humble reuerence) he thus beganne. My soueraigne Lorde, if credit may be giuen to the first countenance of accusations, without hearing howe the Partie accused can iustifie himselfe, I doubt not but your Maiestie will presently condemne mee: but when the matter is once well debated and discied, they which seemed at the first vnreprouceable, are found malicious and slanderous persons, and the accused, Innocent and free from blame, as here your Highnesse shall most plainly beholde.

The matter whereof this Ladie detecteth mee, is forged, and villainously inuented: For to mee belonged the Castle shee quarrells for, descended from my Predecessors, to whom I am the true, lawfull, and legitimate Inheritour. True it is, that this dissembling Woman, by sweete speeches, feminine guiles, and secret deceipts, oftentimes practised to winne mee for her Husbande: but knowing her behaviour such as besmied not a Woman of modesty and vertue, I would not heare her, much lesse consent to match with her. And this is the onely cause of her complainte, in hope that you, (being above all other Princes, most benigne and honourable,) will constrain me to wedde her, in respect of your absolute authority, as the dutifull obedience wherein I am bounde. When the knight which came with the Ladie, had heard Myseres blame her in this sort, he stepped before the King, with these wordes.

It is great folly (my Lord) in Myseres, to denye a matter so apparantly and well known, although if it were put to the iudge.

THE HISTORIE

indgement of honest persons; his common good report might cause him to be believed: But the poyre Lady desireth that her right and Title may be cleared by Combatte, wherein let him confound her if he can, or else receiue rewarde for his notorious offence. On her behalfe therefore, my Lorde, I saye and will maintaine, that Myseres is a moste disloyall Traytour, and his otone mouth shall confesse it, or else this Day will I take his head from his bodie. Myseres feeling himselfe somewhat touched, grewe into great choller, and albeit the shame hee did the Ladie, deliuered him culpable, and made him doubt the issue of the Combatte, yet as it were in a maruellous rage, he answered the knight, that hee falsely belyed him, and was ready to make tryall therof in single Combatte, if it pleased the kings Maiestie to appoynt it. And I doubt not (quoth hee) to make thee paye for thy rashnesse, and force thee confesse thy want of discretion, in giuing credite to the trothlesse complaints of this deceitfull Woman. Then was it ordayned, that this difference should bee decided by Armes: Whereupon the Ladys knight spake thus to the king. Seeing it hath pleased your Maiestie to graunt the ffield to Myseres and mee, may it please you (as it is the custome) to commaund that he deliuer hostages: to the ende that if hee be vanquished, the Castell may bee deliuered into your hands, for to bee surrendered in Justice where it appertaines. Good reason (saide the king) and therefore Myseres, you must before you enter the ffield, accomplish what this knight in equitie hath demanded.

Then Myseres called one of his Brethren, whome heere requested to stand as his hostage: and doubt not before the Sunne be sette, but I will discharge my selfe and my pledge. With which wordes hee departed the Hall, to Arme himselfe: But because the Day was so farre spent, the matter was deferred untill the next Morning. The king and his Lords, seeing the Ladys knight in such resolute assurance, marvelled of whence, and what he was, for none there knew him but Palmerin, who neither coulde guesse assuredly who he

OF PALMERIN D'OLIVA.

he was, but by the golden Sunne in the Azure Shield, which made him remember that at the Ioustes in France, the perilous Combate without Victorie on either side, was fought betwene him and this knight. Palmerin being glad to see the man he long looked for, and purposing now to be fully reuenged on him: secretly went forth of the Hall, commanding one of his Squyres, to conuey his Horse and Armour the next morning out of the Cittie, because if he vanquished Myseres, at his returne he intended to fight with him, or if Myseres had the better, yet he should not depart thence againe with life.

Now you must vnderstand, that this young knight which came with the Ladie, was the knight of the Sunne, named Frisoll, who euer since the Combatte performed betwene Palmerin and him, remained with the Duke of Gaule, and was of him highly honoured for his worthie Chiuallie. Of whom when this distressed Ladie hearde, she made her complaint of the wrong Myseres had done her, and Frisoll pitying her case, promised to ayde her in the recovery of her right: and so came with her to the King of Englands Court, to the great grieve of the Duke of Gaule, who made Frisoll promise him to returne againe after the Combatte: but Frisoll was much more desirous thereof then the Duke, in respect of his faire Sister, because he was most specially beloued of her.

Thus Palmerin following his enterprize, feared to be prevented, because the ffield was appoynted by the king, in the same place wher hee intended to meete with Frisoll, and beside, Palmerin and the Duke of Norgalles, were ordained as Judges of the ffield, which hee would not willingly haue taken vpon him, doubting by that meane to be hindered of his other pretended determination. Now the time being come that the knights shuld to the Combat, the king and the Ladys came to the Scabbolles, and the two Judges were placed in the Tent, accompanied with many Princes and honourable Personages.

After that the Heraulds had commaunded the Champy,
ons

THE HISTORIE

ons to doe they best deuoyre, then they clasped they Hel-
mets, and fetching they Carriere, mette with such puissance,
as Myseres brake his Launce on Fryfolls Shielde, not mo-
uing him in his Saddle: But Fryfoll driving his Launce
quite through Myseres bodie, caused the false traytour to fall
downe dead to the earth. When hee allighting, and opening
Myseres Helmet, and seeing no life in him, came to the Iud-
ges, saying: You may now perceiue my Lords, whether he
that offered this Ladie such villany, hath receiued his due de-
sert, or no: So that now (I say) if there remaine yet any
thing else to do for recouering of her right, I am heere ready
to maintaine her cause. Palmerin, who was not very well
pleased with this Oratorie, answered: Knight, you haue done
enough at this time, pray that other affaires may proue as
prosperous to you hereafter, and in anger went forth of the
field, commanding the body of Myseres to be brought thence,
which was afterward interred with great honour.

Fryfoll having thus vanquished Myseres, the Ladie for
whome he entered the Combatte, fell on her knees before the
king, desiring him to surrender the Castell which Myseres
vniustly detained from her. In sooth Lady (quoth the king)
it is reason you should haue Justice, and your owne deliuered
you: But know you his name that defended your quarrell:

My Lord (quoth she) in concealing his Name, I should of-
fer him great wrong, concealing the Bountie and Browesse
of the man, which hath not beene sparingly shewed heretofore,
in presence of the Duke of Gaule, against the king of
Norway, whose army was discomfited by the worthy valour
and pollicie of this knight, who calleth himselfe by the name
of Fryfoll, the Duke of Gaule, bringing him forth of France
at his last Voyage, and ever since hath so dearly loued him,
as he were his owne naturall Brother. I promise you, La-
die (saide the king) you made no ill choyse of your knight,
for I haue heretofore heard of his Actions, and am not a
little glad that now I know him, wishing he were one of my
Court, because a king accompanied with such persons, must
needes

OF PALMERIN D'OLIVA.

needes imagine his Countrey happie. And in respect he is
so braue a Champyon, it is impossible but that hee should be
a wise and vertuous knight: Wherefore I pray you cause
him come hether to me: which she presently did. And ha-
uing saluted his Maiestie with Honourable reuerence, the
king embraced him with these wordes. Worthie Sir, you
are most heartily welcome: I could wish you were one of
my knights, in respect that my Court should be the more ho-
noured, and I might requite your paines, better then I can
on a sudden.

High and mightie Prince (quod Fryfoll) in assisting this dis-
tressed Ladie, I haue done but my dutie: but if I could any
way doe your Highnes seruice, I knowe no Prince liuing,
for whom I would more gladly employ my selfe. And at this
present time vrgent affaires excuse me from staying here a-
ny longer: Nevertheless, I intreate you my good Lord, (if it
may stand with your fauorable liking) to repete me among
the number of your Souldiours and Seruants: As it must
needes be so (saide the king) you shall do what pleaseth you,
yet will I reckon you amongst these to whome I owe conti-
nuall loue and affection. And although the death of Myse-
res doth somewhat grieue mee, because I made some estima-
tion of him: yet for your sake shall I deliuer the Ladie her
Castell, which you haue conquered with such knightly Che-
ualrie. Fryfoll humbly thanked his Maistie, and departed
with the Ladie, which way they came: But Palmerin very
much offended at his departure, and earnestly desiring to be
reuenged on him, commaunded his Dwarfes to make well
which way they went.

The Dwarfes diligently fulfilling his Maisters charge, re-
turned, and tolde him which way they toke: Whereupon, he
being desirous to followe, without giuing any knowledge
thereof, to his Companions, left Trineus to conferre with
his faire Distresse Agriola, and departed the Court so secret-
ly, as neyther the Prince nor Ptolome suspected any thing.
And so accompanied with the Dwarfes Urbanillo, hee came
to

THE HISTORIE

to the place where as his Squire stayed with his Armour, where, when he was Armed, hee mounted on Horsebacke, thus speaking to his men. Returne you to the Cittie, and then expect my coming: As for the Vrbaniillo, thou shalt say to the Prince Trineus, that he must pardon mee, though I did not acquaint him with the urgent occasion of my departure: which I was more enforced to do then he thinks on: Nevertheless, pray him take no paines to enquire after me, because I doubt not to returne very shortly, although not so soon as hee would: yet pray him to be so little speech thereof as may be. The like mayest thou say to Ptolome, and to them both commende mee most heartily: With this strict charge to you both, that vpon the paine of your liues, neither of you do follow me, nor cause any other to make search after me.

So taking his Launce, hee galloped that way which the Dwarfes shewed him they were gone, and then hee with the Squire returned to the Cittie, making very sorrowfull Lamentation, because they thought they: Maister would returne no more, in that he would not be knowne whither hee went, yet would they not be to say nothing they: Maister had forbidden them. Trineus and Ptolome were marvellous sorrowfull, especially the Prince, who without the Dwarfes assurance of his Maisters short returne, had followed to goe seeke him: yet not thoroughly contented with Vrbaniilloes persuasions, the King himselfe came to comfort him saying: You must thinke (good Syr,) that your noble friend is gone about some strange Adventure. For you know he neuer interpreted any thing, but it returned him to honour. If heretofore for the Love of his Ladie, hee shewed himselfe without his Paire in Chivalry, thinke you hee will not regarde his reputation, and premeditate his Actions before hee runne to farre in daunger: Content your selfe I pray you, for if his returne be not the sooner, I will cause such provision to be made, as hee shall be found againe. The Princeesse Agriola likewise intreated him not to be disquietted at the absence of

OF PALMERINDOLIVA.

of Palmerin, for with the helpe of God and his friends, quoth she, his returne will cause as much joy, as his departure doth grieve. All this could hardly content Trineus, for hee dreamed in his sleepe, that the Knight which Que Myseres, was against whom Palmerin entred the combat in France at what time they could not overcome each other. And remembering what ill will Palmerin bare him, vehemently suspected that for this cause he followed him, which imagination somewhat comforted him, and he reputed the Knight otherwise if hee medled any more with Palmerin.

CHAP. LIIII.

How after the death of Mseres, Palmerin folowed Frysol, whom he had slaine, but that a Damosell intreated his life.



That day Palmerin trauelled, and most part of the next, yet could hee heare no tidings of the Lady and Frysol, which made him rise in great melancholly, till at length meeting with a Damosell, mounted on a goodly Palfrey very richly harnessed, of whom hee demanded, if she mette not a Knight Armed, who bare in a Sheldie of Azure a Golden Sunne, and with him a Ladie attended on by many Squires. Truelie Sir, quoth the Damosell, if you will grant me two requests that I shall be mannde, I will bring you to him you seeke for, before to morrow the third houre of the day. Palmerin who was wonderfull desirous to finde out his enemy, granted to any thing

THE HISTORIE

thing shee would desire: on condition (quoth hee) that you shewe mee the knight. Follow me then sayde the Damosell, for I will accomplish that I haue promised. So rode they together, and among other speeches, Palmerin asked her if shee knewe the knight, and what his name was: The Damosell answered, that shee knewe not the knight, but shee was very well acquainted with the Ladie in his companie, and this night (quoth shee) they intende to lodge at a Castle of mine Auntes. In the Evening they arrived within the sight of the Castle, where they alighted from their Horses, and entred a little thicket, for feare of being seene, and the Damosell hauing a flagon of Wine, and a Baskie of redde Dore in a Paunde at her saddle bow, Palmerin and shee refreshed themselves therewithall: but all that night could not Palmerin settle himselfe to sleepe, watching the Castle Gate, least in the time of his sleeping his enemye should escape him. The next morning, so sone as the breake of day appeared, Frysol came forth of the Castle with his company, wherefore Palmerin not a little gladd, sayd to the Damosell. Now (Lady) is your promise percurued, for this is the knight I seeke: if therefore you will any thing with me, I must intreate you to follow mee, for I would hee verie loath that hee should escape me.

With which wordes he mounted on horsebacke, galloping after Frysol so fast as the Horse coulde alway, and overtaking him, sayde. Stay a while Sir knight, thinke you to passe alway in such sort: haue you forgot your words at Parris, to the knight that guarded the Duke of Sauoyes Tent: now is the time I hope to correct your presumption, when thou shalt well perceiue, that thou neyther deservest to be Seruant to the Princesse Polinarda, nor art worthy to talke of her honourable name. Frysol thus staying knew by Palmerins words, that it was hee against whom he fought the Combate in France, whercupon hee answered.

Truely

OF PALMERINDOLIVA.

Truely Sir knight, I haue not as yet forgotten what I then sayd, nor is the beauty of Polinarda, or my loue to her so little, that my desire to her seruice should not bee now remembered, nor will I forbear to confesse it still, for feare of thee or any other whatsoever. And if thou hast sought mee forth in this quarrell, thou hast found mee so ready to defend it as I will more willingly chuse to die, then deny any part of my dutie to that gracious Princesse.

Palmerin being so angrie, as he would not multiplie any more words, but encountred his enemye so valiantly, as they brake their Launces, and yet could not vnhoise each other, then drawing their Swords, they laide so cruelly vpon their bodies, as their shieldes being broken, their Armes battered, their Armour defaced, and their flesh so grievously mangled, as neither of them both could iudge who was likeliest to winne the victorie. At length Frysol Horse falling vnder him, fell to the ground, and hee so weakened with his great losse of blood, as hee coulde not recouer himselfe, before Palmerin came to him, thinking to haue parted his head from his shoulders with his sword, which when the Ladie sawe, for whom Frysol had slaine Myseres, shee fell into most pittifull acclamations, not sparing her louely tresses of haire, but with very great impatience rent them violently, made the ayre to echo her lamentable complaints. Which the Damosell seeing that guyded Palmerin, and moued with compassion of her exceeding grieues: fell on her knees before Palmerin, intreating him to giue ouer the fight. But he, sauing that he heard her not, because Frysol with rough struggling had got on foot againe: charged him with such violent strokes, as Frysol (being of invincible courage) requited him with as toorthie chivalrie.

Again the Damosell came on her knees to him, intreating him to giue ouer the fight, saying. You know my Lord, that before you came hither, you promised me two requests and this I make one of them, that you continue no longer

¶ 2

Combat

THE HISTORIE

Combat against this Knight, and in so doing I shall acquite you of part of the promise which you made mee. Palmerin chafing like a furious Lyon, answered. I pray you Damosell aske some other thing, for in this matter, of force you must pardon mee. In sooth saide the Damosell, if you denie mee my demaunde, I will complaine at the King of Englands Court, and there will I declare you periured, for ill it becomes such a Knight as you are, to make promise to a Lady and not observe it. By God Lady, said Palmerin, you doe mee great wrong, in with-holding mee from reuenge on him, whom aboue all menne in the world, I hate most deadie, unhappie was the houre wherein I mette you: and so mounting vppon horsebacke, he galloped alway in vey great anger. When the other sorrowfull Lady saue that Palmerin was gone, and had left her Knight, with great ioy she embraced the Damosell that had procured it, thanking her for shelding the life of a most noble Knight, for which courtesie she remained bound to her during life.

What I haue done, (quoth the Damosell) is for the loue of you and this Knight, swearing to you by the faith of a Gentlewoman, that I haue another thing to aske of the Knight which is gone, that concerneth me verie needfullie. Notwithstanding, your teares moued mee with such compassion, that I stand in daunger to lose what I shall neuer recover, yet in respect the cause was so honest and vertuous, I doe not repent what I haue done: but because he remaineth indebted to mee for another request, I must needs leaue you and follow him, so mounting vpon her Palfrey, she rode after Palmerin with all the haste shee possibly could make. And in her iourney wee will leaue her, returning to Frysol, whose woundes being very dangerous, the Lady bounde them vppon so well as shee could, till they came at their next Lodging, where by good fortune was a Lady so well skilful in Chirurgerie, as in short time shee cured his woundes whole and sounde. Frysol so well

OF PALMERIN DOLIVA.

well recovered, departed thence with the Ladie, because the thirde day following they should bee at the Castle, whither already was come Hermes, one of the King of Englands Knights, being sent by his Lord the King to deliuer the Ladie her right: which Hermes did according to his charge, entertained the Ladie honourably, deliuered her the Keyes of the Castle, and commaunded all the Subjects to reuence the Ladie, which they refused not to doe, but were glad of her coming. For ioy hereof, were very solemne feasts prepared, and the Lady recounted to Hermes, Commissioner to the King, how Frysol fought the Combate by the way, against the Knight of the blacke armour: whereby Hermes presently knew, that it was the strange Knight, who had left the Court, vnknowne to his Companions, or any of his friendes, whereof hee was not a little glad, because hee iudged that these newes would be welcome to the King. Wherefore so soone as he had accomplished his charge, and seated the Ladie quietly in her Castle, hee departed, intending to follow Palmerin till he found him, traauelling the way was assigned him by the Ladie.

Frysol stayed there with the Ladie till hee had perfectly recovered his health, and then without any other recompence for his paines, but onely a Horse, because his owne was slaine, and a new Armour, his owne being spoyle, hee returned to the Duke of Gaule, who reioyced greatly to haue his companie. But when the Duke understood how discourteously he had bene vsed by the blacke Knight, who was so highly fauoured in the English Court, hee deuised by all the meanes possible to bee reuenged on him: so that being in a Castle on the Frontiers of his Duchie, yet within the King of Englands Dominion, hee understood the blacke Knight should passe that way, because hee coulde not else returne to the Court. Now perswading him selfe for resolute vengeance, hee pitched his Tents in a fayre Meadow neare a Bridge, and there placed twelue Knights,

THE HISTORIE

the most hardie and valiant men in all his Dukedome, who should maintaine this order: that no knight should passe ouer the Bridge, vnlesse hee entred Combate with those twelue knights one after another, and such as were vanquished, should submit themselves to the Dukes mercie, either for their deliuerance, or to remaine his prisoners, and the horse of the partie foyled, should belong to the conquerour, but if they were dismounted, the passenger should goe on his iourney, and take their Horses with him. This aduenture thus established, many good knights were overcome, because it was a verie harde matter to vanquish the twelue knights, and escape: But the Duke took no little pleasure herein, who detained Frysol more by constraint then otherwise, for his anger so vehemently increased against Palmerin, as no delight or pleasure could expiate his reuenging desires.

CHAP. LIII.

How Palmerin went with the Damosell to accomplish the promise he made her, and what befell him,



Palmerin (as you haue heard) departed from the Damosell in a rage, because he could not execute what hee intended, wherefore hee deuised to deale some other way, and to single forth Frysol in such conuenient place, as one of them should die before they departed. And as he was imagining some other way to overtake Frysol, the Damosell had now againe requied his company, saying. I pray you Sir knight, conceiue no ill opinion of me, for hindering

OF PALMERIN D'OLIVA.

ring you from killing your enemy, whom you haue left in verie great ieopardie, considering what bountie and courage is in him, and which your selfe perhaps will bee sorrie for. Wherefore I pray you forget this displeasure, and determine to fulfill what you haue promised, which if you will doe, you must go with me.

Beloue me Damosell, saide Palmerin, you shewed but little courtesie, so often hindring me from the thing which aboue all other in this worlde most tormenteth mee. What unhappie bodie are you? but more unhappie the houre I mette with you? but seeing it is reason I should keepe my promise, leade the way, and I will not faile to follow you. So rode they on, and for foure dayes space hee would not speake on word to her, and faine hee would haue left her company, but that he could not with honor forsake her. The next day, as they rode by a Riuers side, Palmerin espied a knight standing with a Bow and arrow in his hand, which he let flie at his Horse and killed him. Palmerin impatient by remembrance of Frysol, and angrie that the knight had thus killed his Horse, made towarde him so fast as hee coulede, but the knight was suddenly got on the further side of the Lake, and Palmerin by to the middle in water before he was ware of it, and now he could neither see the knight that slew his Horse, nor the Damosell that came in his company. Palmerin being in great perplexitie, when he saw nothing but water round about him, and feeling hee was vpon a Bridge, behelde a maruailous deepe streame running vnder it, and at the end thereof a goodly Castle. Walking along the Bridge toward the Castle, amazed at this contrary aduenture, he espied a knight on the battlements of the Castle, who saide. Stay a while Sir knight, one shall come presently and open the Gate.

Palmerin knew not what to say, but determined to defende himselfe if any came to assaulte him, so the Castle Gate being opened, he entred with his sword drawne, yet was there no man that displeased him, but every one made

THE HISTORIE

him humble reuerence, with verie good wordes and gentle countenance, declaring by their behauiour, that hee was more then welcome thither. Thus walking on to the inner Court, there came towards him a Ladie, accompanied with many Damoels, and knights, also shewing cherefull gestures, and the Ladie taking Palmerin by the hand, sayd.

Ah, gentle Knight, right welcome are you to this place, and heauen bee prayed for the god it doth mee, to see you here, that is able to accomplish the thing, which no other as yet could bee able to finish: enter hardily in good assurance, for you will wee make all the honour that we are able. Palmerin beleeuing the Ladie, was brought into a maruailous goodly Chamber, where certaine Squires holpe to bname him, bringing him a gorgeous Mantle to wrappe about him. This done, he was conducted into a large Hall, where the table was couered, the Ladie entertaining him so nobly, as in the King of Englands Court hee could not be better. The feast ended, and the Tables withdrawne, the Ladie began to deuise with Palmerin, saying. Long time (my Lord) haue we desired your comming, as the man in whom our only helpe consisteth: for by your valour we are perswaded to be deliuered from the misery wheremin I and mine haue too long time bene detained.

I beseech you Madam, quoth Palmerin, to tell me your affaires, as also what the Knight meane to kill my Heire, and why you entertaine mee with so great kindnesse. If you will promise me, said the Ladie, to accomplish a needfull occasion, and which I thinke is destined to you: I will resolue you, otherwile, I shall but lose my labour. If it be a matter reasonable (quoth Palmerin) and that a knight may compass, spare not to tell mee, for I will do my indeauour therein. Grauercies gentle Knight sayd the Ladie, the circumstance of the occasion followeth in this sort. This Castle (my Lord) sometime belonged to my noble Father, a Knight so hardie and valiant as any in these parts, in whose yonger years loue

OF PALMERIN D'OLIVA.

Loue so ouer-ruled him, as hee affected a Lady of no lesse quality and condition then himselfe, by whome he had a Daughter: at whose birth his Lady and Wife deceased. My Father being yet in the flower of his youth, matched the second time with a Lady of a very Honourable and ancient descent, by whome hee had mee the first Child. My Sister at fourteene yeeres of Age, my Father oftentimes would haue richly married her to her great aduancement, whereto she being unwilling, by my Fathers consent, shee remained with her Mothers Sister, whose skill was very great in all Sciences, by whose counsell my Sister caused a goodly Pallace to be edificed, and a strong Tower in an Isle on the other side of this Castle, where afterward they made their continuall abiding.

During this time my good Father louing me dearly, so as he matched mee with a wealthy and Noble Knight, excelling in all perfections, but chiefly in Chiuallrie, by whome I had a Daughter a yere after our Spousal: but the more my griefe, my good Husband and Father both dyed, within short space after my Childes birth. Now my Daughter beeing come to the yeeres of Marriage, her Beautie made her desired of many noble Lords: but because I still reputed her too young, I denyed all her Suiters, which afterward turned to my very great detriment. For my Sisters Aunte had a Sonne, the most mis-shapen, deformed, and worse conditioned Knight, as all the Countrey could not shew such another, yet became hee so amorous of my faire Daughter, as hee requested his Mother to demaund her of mee for his Wife: but when I heard thereof, you may well perswade your selfe that neuer Woman disliked any thing more, and yet to this time doe as much as I then did: So that I made her answer, how that I would rather desire my Daughters death, then so to dishonour her, because hee was altogether unworthy of such speciall fortune. Notwithstanding this sharpe repulse, hee continued his Amorous desires to my Daughter, so that hee earnestly perswaded his Mother to permitte him to take her away from mee by force: to which suite the indiscreet Mother con-

THE HISTORIE

consented, either moued with pittie, or overcome by the importunate soliciting of her, so that one day (vnder colour of a friend meeting me to be merry) he robbed me of my daughter. This wicked traitor, had long before that time intended this trechery, compacting the matter secretly with villaines and thones, by whose assistance he carryed away my Daughter, shutting her vp in a strong Tower, whereof I told you. And because he feared that I would gather some strength to rescue her, considering how well I was beloued of my neighbours, he preuented me by a strange enchantment, environing the Castle and the Tower with such a maruailous water, as no Knight should enter vpon them without their consent.

Now that themselves might come forth and return again at their pleasure, they deuised a litle Boate, which is guarded by two fierce Lyons, and a puissant knight that had charge of them, so that none comes to them but whome they list. Since this unhappie time did I neuer see my Daughter, whom this damnable villaine (which most of all grieues mee) immediatly violated and rauished at his pleasure, swearing now neuer to take her as his Wife, but to vse her as his Concubine: and besides all this, the false Traytour in despite of mee, and to reuenge the wordes I gaue him, doth monstrously abuse her, and most (vnrmanly,) whippeth her daily with Roddes, which my Sister hath often intreated to be spared, but he by no means will be perswaded. Thus seeing my selfe out of all hope to recouer her againe, haue euer since continued in earnest Inuocation to Heauen, that some notable vengeance might punish this Villain: and such fauour haue I found in my deuout Imprecations, as first of all, his olune Mother was chastized with a cruell disease called Saint Anthonyes fyre in one of her Legges, which so so grievously torments her, as no remedie can be found to alioage the veration. Her Sonne vnderstanding heereof, would haue slaine my Sister, accusing her to procure his mothers infirmitie by her Learned knowledge: Wherevpon my

OF PALMERIN D'OLIVA.

my Sister fearing her life, and watching time conuenient for her purpose, made an escape from the Villain hither to me, being sorry that her Aunt should thus Inuiously deale with me, and promised to worke the meanest, that I should recouer my Daughter. These good wordes not a little pleasing mee, I would needs know how I should come by my Daughter againe, whose misfortunes had bene so ykelome to mee, whereto she thus answered.

It is so good Sister, that I cannot now reuerse the forcible Enchainments I haue already made for your Daughter, (though gladly I would) if it laye in my power, wherefore you must attende the coming of a Knight, who exceedeth all other in Valour, Vertue, and Prowesse: for he shall passe the Water, kill the Knight, enter the Tower, and deliuer my piece your Daughter againe into your custodie. As concerning the Knight: good Sister, that shall so valiantly passe the Water without feare, and fully accomplish my former Enchantment: For him will I leade with you an excellent good Sword, a very sumptuous Armour, with diuers other gifts to bestowe on him, because my selfe shall not liue to see him, which came to passe, for very shortly after my Sisters dyed. Now knowe you Sir Knight, what is preordained for you, therfore take some pittie on mee a poore desolate distressed Mother, and boldly Adventure your selfe in this Honourable cause, as bounden heereunto by Vertue and needfull occasion.

Betwixt me Madame (saide Palmerin) your discourse hath bene straunge, and good reason moueth you to request vengeance, because your wrongs are the greatest that euer I hearde of, which may in some sorte perswade you, that the Offender cannot long escape, without shame answerable to his cursed Willamy, for Heauen will not suffer it, by assistance whereof I hope to reuenge your Daughters Rape. And trust me deare Ladie, I am sorry I came not in your Sisters life time, because shee could haue resolued mee in a doubtfull matter: Yet neuertheless, I will doe so much for you, as if

the

thee were living. But I much marvel what is become of the knight that slew my Horse, and the Damosell that conducted mee hither. As for the Damosell (quoth the Ladie) thee shall come anone to attend vpon you: but the knight was onely a matter of Enchantment, deuised by my Sister, to discover the man that shoulde finish this Adventure. And the Damosell whereof you speake hath brought hither many knightes to this Lake, but when they Horses were slaine, none of them durst bee so hardie as once to enter the Water, but onely you, being predestinated to this Adventure. In this and such like talke they spent the day till Supper time, and afterwarde was Palmerin conducted to his Chamber, and being layde in Bedde hee could take no rest: First, for grieve that hee had not slayne Fryssoll, and then againe, by the strange tale the Ladie tolde him: Wherefore rising the sooner in the Morning, hee went with the Lady to heare diuine Service in her Chappell, where hee desired of God that he might preuaile against these Coniurations, and banquish the knight that hadde so much abased his Word.

Returning from the Chappell, the Ladie among other talke thus saide: I see Syr knight that your Armour is broken and much defaced, that one may iudge you haue not kept it vyle in your Armoire, wherefore I thinke you met not with your friend, when you were enforced to so dangerous tryall; But as I vnderstand by the Damosell that was your guyde hither, you returned him sound payment for his paines. To supply your want, I will bestowe an Armour on you, which my Sister long since prouided for you, and with carefull regard kept close in her Chest: therefore let mee intreate you not to refuse it, in respect it was not prouided but for speciall purpose: being needefull for the present occasion you must now Enterprise. Palmerin would not refuse her courteous offer, wherefore opening the Chest, there lay the Armour, couered with white Taffata, whereon was written in Letters of Gold this Inscription: These Armes were made for the good Kai: Palmerin d'Oliua, sonne to the most royal King
that

that at this Day liueth in all Greece. That was the present greatly delighthd Palmerin, because heerein his desire was somewhat satisfied, which was to knowe the estate of his Father: Wherefore in midst of this pleasing humour hee saide, to his Ladie, I perceiue fayre Madame, that your Sister knewe more of my Destinie then any other: For seeing she could so truly describe my name, I neede make no great doubt of her further Iudgement. So taking away the silke, behelde there a more sumptuous Armour, then that which halting Vulcan made for Achilles, at the earnest intreatie of Beautifull Theris, being most curiously chased ouer with flowers of Golde, and the Shielde of Steele, all engrauen with rare Deuises, such as well might beseme the greatest Prince in the World. Palmerin presently put off his owne Armour, and inuested himselfe with the Ladies gift, which so well agreed with him in euery poynt, as the like could hardly be framed for his bodie.

When hee was thus Armed, he desired the Ladie to shew him the way, that might conduct him to the place where hee shoulde discharge his promise, for that hee would delay no further time in a matter of such weight. The Lady commanded three of her Squires to conduct him, who ledde him along a narrow Path-way, which brought him to the Enchaunted Water, so deepe and dangerous, and there they theined him the Boate to passe ouer in, which was fastened with a great Chayne to a Tree, wherevpon Palmerin sought the meanes to vnder it: But so soone as he layde hand on the chayne, to plucke it towards him, there rushed presently forth of the Enchaunted Water two mightie Lyons, who violently assaulted Palmerin in such forcible manner, as they got him down on the ground vnder them, yet he recovered himselfe quickly, and valiantly encountred those hydeous Monsters, who had such a Diuellish Charme on them, as that no Sword could any way hurte or wound them. Palmerin perceiuing that all his valour was in vayne, called to Heauen for help, in this great necessitie, and commending his abilitie to the Highest

Protection, and his heart to the gracious regarde of his Gyftee: He gaue one of the Lyons such a cruell stroke betwixt the Eyes, as hee tumbled headlong into the Water, and was afterwarde scene no more, and soe after him hee sent his other fellow for companie: But hadde not his Armour bene of extraordinary Vertue, doubtlesse this should haue bene his last Adventure.

Not a little ioyfull of this happy Victorie, hee entred the Boate, and with one of the Dares he beganne to rowe, but now he was he surprised with a wonderfull danger, for the Water arose in huge Willowes, beating and tossing the Boate so fearfully, as he had very much ado to saue and keepe the bottom from turning upside downe. In this perplexitie, which hee could not deuise how to mitigate, a matter of greater misfortune yet befell him, for suddenly a marvellous great, huge, and ouglie Monster started out of the Water, which laboured by al the meanes he could to ouerwhelme the Boate. So that now was hee contrayned to forgoe his Dare, and drawe his weapon to resist this Monster, which terrified him so cruellly on the one side, and the Waters so dangerously on the other, as he was not in the like hazarde, when he fought with the Serpent on the Mountaine Arcieria.

To comfort him in this contagious extremitie, hee implored his Diuine assistance, whose onely prouidence must now defende him, else had the raging and distempered Water, or the rauensons Monster that gaped for his life, deuoured him. But he that in greatest perilles, was euer of vndaunted spirit, made such harde shifte to rowe with his Sworde, as in despite of the Monster, and the huling waues of the Water, hee landed on the other side: when immediatly all the conuulsion ceased, so that neither Water, Monster, Boate, or any thing else might then be discerned. I leaue you to imagine, whether Palmerin were gladd or no, that he had so happily escaped this danger: for ioye whereat he fell vpon his knees, and with hea-

ued

ued hands and eyes to Heauen, gaue thanks vnto the Highest, for his deliuerance. His prayer being ended, he went to the Castle, where he heard a most grieuous and dolefull complainte of a Lady, saying:

Unhappy be the houre of my patiuitie; Alas, is it possible that in all the whole Worlde, any Ladie may compare with my miseries: Palmerin attentiuely marking these speeches, knewe well it was the Imprisoned Ladie: wherefore moued with compassion, hee called with aloud voice for one to come open the Gate, and so long hee called, that at last the Knight hearde him, who looking forth at a window of the Fosteresse, saide: In an euill houre (Knight) comest thou hither, and I much maruell what foolish presumption hath garded thee to this place, seeing thou canst no way escape my hands: but in my courtesie it remaines, eyther to spare thee, or put thee to a most cruell Death, although my Enchantment hath hitherto suffered thy Passage: Thou art marvellous hardy (quoth Palmerin) there at the Windowe, but if thy courage bee such, as to deale with mee hand to hand, I shall make thee vnderstande, that thy losse wordes cannot helpe thee from my Sworde: For I will pull downe that stomacke, and reward thy inextinguishable Tyrannie, to that good Ladie I hearde complaine, whome like a Villaine thou tookest from her Mother. Come downe I pray thee (if thou be not affaide) and thou shalt see what entertainment I giue to such as thou art.

Are you say (quoth the Knight) such a corrector and reformer of Vices: Darest thou but tarry til I come downe, I shall teach thee the way to be better aduised. So Arming himselfe presently, hee mounted on Horsebacke, and came forth at the Castle Gate: Wherevpon Palmerin thus spake to him. There is ouer great oddes, say Knight, you to be on Horsebacke, and I on foot, you shall shewe small knighthode in offering me such wrong: I pray thee (of courtesie to alight) otherwile I shall bestowe such a currying on your Backe, as your Seruant afterwarde shall take but small paynes with

THE HISTORIE

with him. The knight of the Castell made as though hee heard him not, and ranne fiercely with his Launce against Palmerin, who escaped his Enemie, with his Sworde gaue his Horse such a stroke on the legge, as hee past by him, that the Bone being cut in twaine, hee fell to the ground, hauing one of the knightes legges so fast vnder him, as hee was not able to recouer himselfe. Palmerin willing to helpe him by againe, gaue him halfe a douzaine such raps about the pate, as he lay quiet enough, without any moouing: Whereupon he vnclasp'd his Helmet, when the knight hauing some airc, beganne to grapple with him, and drawing his Pocket-dagger, gaue Palmerin a shrewd wound therewith in the right thigh, in recompence whereof, at one stroke hee took his head from off his shoulders. The Squyres and Seruants that belonged to the Castell, who came forth to see the issue of the fight, ranne apace backe to the Castle againe, to shut the Gates for theyr owne safety: But Palmerin (albeit hee was hurt, preuented them, laying about him so roughly on euery side, as hee swore, that if they would not bring him to the Imprisoned Lady, they should all presently dye the death. Many of them with feare, tumbled headlong into the Ditch, others on their knees asked for merce, promising to do what euer he commaunded them: whereupon hee said to him that had the keyes. Arise quickly Villaine, and conduct me to the Prison, or I shall paye thee for thy lazinesse. The poore fellow almost frighted out of his wittes, brought him directly to the Tower where the Ladie was, whome they found naked from the middle vpwards, and so grievously beaten, as all her Bodie was goze blood, which the knight had done that morning, for a dreame he had the sight before, howe her Mother would sende a knight that should take her thence perforce, and murther him, in which opinion he came to the Ladie, saying. I perceyue that thy Mother and friends labour to get thee from mee, and practise my destruction by all the best meanes they may: but now for theyr sakes thou shalt deere-ly abye theyr dealing. And with these wordes the Villaine

to

OF PALMERINDOLIVA.

so cruelly whipped her, as shee was ready to giue vpp the ghoste, and so left her in hope she would haue dyed. Palmerin finding the Ladie in this lamentable plight, sayde. Arise good Ladie and leaue your sorrowfull acclamations, for the villaine that thus misused you, hath had such absolution for his deserts, as he hath left his hease in signe of his penance: and if you will depart with me towarde your Mother, I will shew you the Traytour where hee lies now quiet enough. Ah my Lord, (quoth the Ladie) is the Trayterous Scoloro deade, that so monstrously wronged me? He is Ladie, sayde Palmerin, you neede feare him no more. Then Heauen be prayesd (quoth she) for this happy daye, and among all knightes be you the most renowned, for euer, with which wordes she arose, and wrapping a furred Mantle about her, without any other garments on her body, shee went with Palmerin, and passing by the place where Scoloro laye staine, lifting her eyes, and hands to Heauen, she sayde. O my God, how is thy name to be prayesd, so iustly punishing the trecherie and disloyaltye of this villayne: Ah Traytor, how woorthily hast thou recoued this death, which is not rygorous, as the mercilesse tyranny hath bene to me.

Where you must note, that so soone as the knight was deade, all the enchauntments about the Castle were presently finished, the great Lake beeing consumed after Palmerins passage, so that the Ladies Mother aduertised thereof, came to meete Palmerin: embracing her daughter with such exceeding ioye, as they could not speake to each other theyr teares so hindered them, at length the Mother kneeled before Palmerin with these wordes. Ah worthy knight, how happye haue you this day made mee: all my former greefes (by your meanes) beeing now conuerted into singular contentation. As she would haue proceeded in her gratulations, she perceiued the bloude to trickle downe Palmerins Armour: which shee sorrowing to beholde, sayde. Methinkes Syr knight you are very

to

THE HISTORIE

fore wounded, I beseech you grant me so much honour, as to repose your selfe a while within my Castle, where I doubt not to see such diligent care, as you shall be whole and sound in very short time. Palmerin not minding to refuse her offer, returned with the Lady, and being vnarmed, was brought to his Chamber, where the Lady dressed his wounds, and he was so well entertained as heart could deuise. Then went the Ladies Squires and Seruants to Sclotos Castle, from whence bringing all things that were of any value, they burned the Traitors body, and putting his head on the poynt of a Lance, they placed it on the top of the Tower for a perpetuall memory. The next day came people from all parts of the Island, to see the Knight that ended the enchauntments, and among other, the Damosell that conducted him thither was one, who on her knee thus spake to him. Now am I satisfied Sir Knight, and you discharged of the promise you made me, which was onely for the deliuerance of this Lady, whom you haue valiantly conquered from the tyrant that tormented her. I beseech him, who euermore hath regard of the poore afflicted, that his pleasure may be to send you like, or a better aduenture, whereby you may accomplish all your haughty enterprizes. So will he I doubt not, said Palmerin, and that was one from which you diswaded me: but I shall neuer be merry till I find him againe, though then at your intreaty he escaped my hands so well. And fortune speede the matter so happily, quoth the Damosell, as Peace and Friendship may be united betweene you: for if either of you miscarry, it were great pittie, considering the great valour wherewith you are both nobly furnished. Let come what wil sayd Palmerin, neuer shal other agreement be betweene vs. With these words the Damosell held her peace, for she perceived by his answer, that he was not halfe pleased with the offer Knight.

CHAP.

OF PALMERIN D'OLIVA.

CHAP. LVI.

How Palmerin traouailing through a great Forrest, espyed a Dwarfie enter into a Cane, whom hee followed, and found there a knight, with whom he had much conference.



Long continued Palmerin in the castle with the Lady, till his woundes being healed, and he able to beare Armour, hee sayd to the Lady, Madame, by the helpe of God and your diligent endeauour, I find my selfe in good constitution of body wherefore with your fauourable licence, I meane to morrow to depart hence, because occasions of great importance so commaundeth me: yet this assurance will I leaue with you, that in any place where I shall come hereafter, your wonderfull courtesie hath gained such power ouer mee, as at all times I remaine to doe you any pleasure.

The Lady right glad of Palmerins noble offer, and her Daughter thankfull for her benefit receiued, returned him many thankfull gratulations: but seeing they could no longer detain him, for his speeches were such as he would needs be gone, she said:

Gentle Knight, seeing it likes you no longer to sojourn here, but that you think it expedient to depart, I would gladly present you with a simple gift, not as recompence of your painefull traouailes, but onely that hereafter you might remember from whence it came.

THE HISTORIE

Then tooke shee out of a Coffer two rich and precious Ringes, and presenting him one of them, she sayde. You shall giue this Ring to her whome aboue all other you most esteeme, the Ring containing this speciall vertue, that the longer shee weares it, the more shee shall loue you, and day y shall her loue so vehemently encrease, as all aduersities and troubles. shee shall beare with patience, that by meanes of your loue maie any way endaunger her.

This other Ring is of a contrary vertue, which you must giue to the Ladie your deere frāde beloued, and to him may you safelie say, that any occasion whatsoeuer, cannot plucke it from this Ladies finger: for this is the nature thereof, that the Ladie which weares it, shall not bee disparaged, and neither intreaties, giftes, or whatsoeuer besides, cannot compell her, to doe any thing contrary to her liking. If it come so to passe that shee were beloued by any other, then him shee now affecteth, shee shall bee able by vertue of this Ring, to quench all such libidinous desire in her sollicitour, and cause him neuer afterwarde to mooue her with any dishonest request. As for these stones of so rare and excellent qualitie, you must note that they were precisely chosen for you by my Sister, and placed as you see them, by her superficial knowledge in the Magickall Sciences, that in time to come they shall doe such seruice, as no Jewels (of what value soeuer they were) might bee able to doe the like.

Besides these, shee gaue him diuers other Jewells to carry to his Lady, for which hee humbly thanked her, and taking his leaue of her and her Daughter, who shedde many teares for his departure, hee mounted vpon Horsebacke, and traouailing thorow a great Forrest, hee espied a Dwarf, whom hee iudging for to bee his Seruant Vrbaniillo, because hee waas of his stature, and very much resembled him, he called aloude, *Heare a thou tall fellow,*

OF PALMERIN D'OLIVA.

how camest thou in this place, so unfrequented and inhabited: The Dwarf being in a great feare, ranne so fast as he could into a great Cane betwene to Bulthes, which made Palmerin alight and follow him, and very farre went hein to the Cane not seeing any body, till at length he came in to a little Rhome, as it had bene cut out of a Quarrie, which had light into it by a little chinke cut thorow a Rocke: and here hee found a young Knight layde vpon a bedde, at whose fete lay the Dwarf, all quaking and trembling with his late feare, whom Palmerin now saw that hee was not Vrbaniillo, wherefore hee saluted the Knight, saying:

I must intreate you Sir Knight to pardon me, because I entered so boldly, neither knocking first, or calling for any of your Seruants: Albeit I desired to speake with this little man, but nothing could induce him to carry my coming, for he fled from me as I had bene a Diuell. Whereupon perswading my selfe, to finde some other body here more courteous, I followed him at the harde heeles, with no other intent, but onely to know how I might possibly get forth of this desolate Forrest, wherein by misadventure I haue lost my way, for I would not willingly stray too farre, least I should bee forced to remaine here as an holy Hermite, considering my profession is cleane contrary. To preuent such chance, I thinke it was Gods will I should follow your Seruant, let mee therefore intreate you, to know what you are, and wherefore you liue here so solitary, shunning as it seemeth the company of men: protesting to you, that if I may in ought assist you, whereby to draine you from this obscure life, I will with all my heart accomplish it, though it were matter that should concerne my life.

The Knight raysing vpe himselfe, and sighing so bitterly as life and soule would haue parted in sunder, answered. Alas noble Knight, seeke not to vnderstand the

THE HISTORIE

the depth of my sorow, in respect the remedy is all together impossible: yet in that your demand proceedeth from such a gentle Spirit, as pittie the miseries of despised creatures, I will acquaint you with some part of mine estate.

Unto then gentle knight, that I am the most forlorne Varnan, whose vnfortunate life excédeth all mens whatsoeuer, for this world affordeth me nothing but mishappe, disgrace, contempt, and all tormenting griefes, as for delight and pleasure, they are lothsome to me, my Moneths, Weeks, Daies, Hures and Minutes, being continually accompanied with all erereame passions. My greatest ease consisteth in dolorous Lamentations, remembrance of passed infortunes, sad Regreets, and insupportable Melancholy. In briefe, I am onely he, whose companions are, a troubled spirit, thoughts confounded with frustrate hope, hauing vtterly lost the light of those glad some Sunnes, whereof the one shined in my face, the other in my heart, that now nothing is left for me but a life despised, yet welcome to me that one so disdained.

These wordes were vttered with so many sighes, such floods of teares, and halting his flesh with such impatience, as would haue relented euen a heart of Adamant, which moued Palmerin by gentle perswasions, to request of him the cause of his disquiet: and so long he continued his importunate intreaties, that the knight at length thus answered. Gentle Syr, so well contentesth me the sorowes which I suffer, that in hope of any remedie, I would not betray them: but seeing Fortune hath thus conducted you hither, in respect of your gracious and affable nature, as also that you shall not repute mee vndiscreete and misgouerned, I will satisfie you in the cause of my sadnesse.

True it is, Syr knight, that I haue hitherto, and euer shall, Loue a Ladie, Daughter to a knight my neighbour,

OF PALMERINDOLIVA.

hour, she being (in my iudgement) one of the fairest Ladies in the whole world. And now perceiuing by her behauiour that she loued me as well, or rather more, which indeed she did not: for her I accomplished all things that a knight could for his Ladie, aduenturing mine honour, and my life in all daungers for her sake, yea, nothing might be refused for the diuine Mistresse of my thoughts. Perceiuing my selfe to be so equally loued, and my passions to grow beyond my ability, finding occasion to acquaint her with the secrets of my heart, I desired her to pittie my oppressions, which if she refused to doe, shee would lose her loue, and his life withall. For I was so solemnely vowed to her service, as shee could not commaund any thing so hard and dangerous, but by her fauourable regarde would bee most easie to mee. These wordes could drawe no pittie from her, but displeased and in great anger shee answered. That I might not be reckoned among those knights, who deserued the loue of a Ladie of her calling, and thenceforth I should not be so hardie, as to speake to her, or come in her presence. Goe quoth she, and follow her loue that gaue thee thy Faulcon, wherein thou takest such pleasure, and neuer maist thou turn againe to me.

With these wordes shee frowne from me to a window, where I was wont alwaies to stande and talke with her, beguiling the time in no lesse contentation, then those happy soules in the Elysian fieldes, such was the rare beautie, good grace, and singular courtesie of my (sometime) beloued Lady Valerica. I cannot denie, but that a Ladie bestowed the Faulcon on me, but in any such respect as my Ladie imagined, God knowes is most vntue, nor could death compell me so much to abuse my chosen Mistresse.

Seeing my Ladie then so rigorous, and her answer so seuer, yet assured of mine owne innocencie and loyalty: I was surprized with such surpassing heauinesse, as

THE HISTORIE

every houre expected when my feeble spirit would forsake his long despised habitation. My Lady being thus resolute in her owne opinion; and disdainning all meanes I shewed to perswade her, despairing likewise of any after hope: I determined with my selfe, to abandon all company, as unworthy of their societie, and then betooke my selfe to this brutish kinde of life, where I might without any impeach, breathe forth my continuall complaints.

In this resolution I came to this place, without the knowledge of my Lord or any other, this Dwarf onely excepted, who evermore hath bene my most trustie Servant, and fetcheth my necessities at a village inere adjoining, and by his honest perswasions, hath many times withheld me from committing violence on my selfe. Thus have you heard in briefe the cause of my sorrow, the depth whereof cannot be considered or valued, but by such as have in like manner tried and suffered, the disdain and ingratitude of Unconstant Ladies.

Palmerin having heard the fortunes of the Knight, repeated to him the graces and favours of his Lady Poly-narda, what honour shee did him in her Fathers Court, and how hee was in danger to receive the like reward, as the Knight did of his Valerica: and fearing in dede that his mishap would sorte to that issue, hee fell downe at the fete of this poore refused Lover. The Knight perceiuing, that the repetition of his misfortune was cause of this alteration, breathing forth a vehement sigh, hee said:

Alas wretched Caitiffe that I am, hath my destiny made mee so unhappie, that enduring an extremitie worse then death, I cannot die, and yet hee that did but heare my misery hath lost his life: I will not live any longer to preiudice any other man, but will now make way to the ende of mine owne troubles. So then he drew forth Palmerins sword, and offered for to thrust it into his

OF PALMERIN D'OLIVA.

his body: but Palmerin receyued to his former estate, started suddainely uppe, and catching him fast in his Armes, sayde.

How now my friende? Will you be so inconsiderate, that for such a little tempozall paine which your body endureth, for to condemne your soule to everlasting perdition? And though your Passions touch you so severely, as that you will not afforde any pittie to your selfe: let me now intreate you to forbear this bad humour. For not without great reason have I sustained this sudden motion, remeinbring the unspeakable comfort I received by one, who by false suggestions, or slanderous reports (which woundeth more deepe then the fatal weapon) may in like sorte be chaunged into such concepte, as her Iudgement may exceede a Hell of torments.

Yet can I not denye (your Ladie having with such open shame refused you) but you have great occasion to grieve thereat, yet not to stretch the extremitie so farre as to dispaire, or worke iniurie to your calling to memory howe light the opinion of a Woman is, how suddenly she will alter, and how prompt shee is to Jealousie, especially when shee loveth effectually. And if heretofore shee loved you fervently, it is impossible but she should feele some part of your anguish, and more violently (I thinke then your selfe can. Trust then in him that hath all hearts at command, repose your selfe constantly on his good Providence, for he will not leave you frustrate of your honourable intent, standing with Justice, and perfect integritie.

As Palmerin continued these comfortable perswasions the Dwarf covered the Table, and then sette before them such a small proportion of Pittance, as he had provided, and when they had well refreshed themselves, Palmerin took his leave of the Knight, promising him (if hee could by any good meanes) to give some ease to his oppressions. Varnan returned him many thanks, commaunding his Dwarf to conduct him into the High-waye, beeing not a little sorrowfull

THE HISTORIE

to be full to leaue his companie, who then had so well aduised and comforted him. Palmerin beeing come into his ready way, sent backe the Dwarf, and rode on till he was got out of the Forrest, intending to finde out the Castle where Valerica remained, because hee would somewhat sollicit the cause of the poore solitary Varnan. So riding along in this determination, he espied a knight and two Squires before him, the knight thus speaking to one of his Squires. I knowe not whether it bee time as yet to enter the Garden: or if Madame Valerica be as yet come thither: Goe see if that shee be there, and make thy return quickly to me againe. Palmerin hearing the name of Valerica, knewe well that it was she for whom the solitary knight liued in such penituentness: Wherefore being moued with pity of his miseries, he sayde to himselfe: See here the false treacheryes of a trothlesse Woman, so vnhonourably to forsake the man that loueth her so dearly, and now to preferre the villany of this intercepting Traytour: But I shall teache him ere I goe, what a penalty belongs to the preventing of a loyall knight, and comming to the knight, hee sayde thus. Art thou a man Villaine: that would forsell all the Loue of the best knights in England: Now by my Sworde, thou shalt dearly pay for thy disloyaltie. With these wordes, hee lent him such a sound stroke on the head, as hee cleft it therewith to the very teeth.

The two Squires seeing theyr Maister slaine, beganne to haste away: but Palmerin caught him that was sent to the Garden, to whome he sayde. Come on Syrcha, if thou lovest thy life, bring me where the Lady is: If thou doest not, thou shalt neuer followe thy trade any longer. The Squire by no meanes durst do otherwise: So he brought him to the Wicket, where Valerica was wont to receiue in her Louer, and knocking with his finger, as his Maister was accustomed: Valerica opening the doore, and thinking it had bene her friende, cast her armes about Palmerins necke, who brought her in his armes forth of the Garden, commaun-

OF PALMERIN D'OLIVA.

ding the Squire presently to followe him. Valerica much abashed herewith, sayde. How now sweete friende: whether will you carry mee: knowe you not, if my father hearde hereof, that neyther of vs durst approache before him:

Thus Madame (saide Palmerin, these are but words, there is no remedie, but you must goe with mee. So that neyther with teares nor request would hee bee intreated, but presently mounted on Horse-backe, causing the Squire to helpe the Lady vp before him, because he would be sure shee should not make an escape from him, and riding away towards the Forrest, because the darke night drewe on, hee left the roade way, seeking some fitte place where they might conveniently repose themselves for that night. At length he found out a little Thicket, where they alighted, and hee turning forth his Horse to Pasture, took off his Helmet, and came to the Lady, desiring her to be contented with such harde Lodging for that night: But when she beheld that it was not her friend, wringing her hands she thus exclaymed, Alasse, vnhappy wretch that I am: How treacherously am I thus deceiued: What mischance may be comparable to mine, hauing lost my deere friende, and abyding at his pleasure that hath cruelly murdered him: Ah harde Fortune, why art thou so inconstant, to exchange my former pleasures into this greiuous Stratageme.

Palmerin hearing her so impatient, sayde: You must thinke Lady, that what hath happened, is by Diuine permission, who hath thus appoynted this contrarietie, to punish your losenesse, and your exceeding disloyaltie to wardes him, who loues you deerer then his owne soule: and for your loue leades a most austere life, in the very desolate and vncomfortable place of this Worlde. And seeing he hath thus long endured such hardnesse for your sake, it is good reason that you should in some sorte participate with his miserie. Feare not therefore, for I haue spoken nothing of him, but what I haue scene: and that by great chaunce haue I thus brought you away from your fathers house, meaning by Gods good fauour

(this

THE HISTORIE

(this humor forgotten) to cause you match with him, whose true love above all other hath deserved you. Ah misery incomparable, said the Lady, I see now it is in vaine to shunne what the destinies haue appointed, how falls my fortune from ill to worse: Must I now goe with that coward Varnan, whom hitherto I haue continually despised: I had rather die a most shamefull death.

I know not Lady what you thinke, said Palmerin, but in my opinion, Varnan is much better then you esteem him, and a better knight then he, that could defend his state with no wiser policie: worthily may you call him coward, and loue the other that liues to do you service. So long they stood on these tearmes, until a knight passed by them, to whom Valerica cried, Helpe gentle knight, for God sake pittie mee, and deliuer mee from this traytor, who falsely hath beguiled me, and violently brought me hither against my will. What art thou said the knight, that thus dishonorest this Lady: I shall teach thee better knowledge of thine order before wee part. Palmerin quickly bziding of his Horse, & claspings on his helmet, said to the knight. What art thou that wouldst take her from me, whom I conquered euen now by my sword: follow thy way, or I shall shew thee what discipline I vse to soles, that will meddle with matters about their capacite. Dost thou so obstinately stand in thy trechery: saide the knight: Marke what will be the end of thy presumption.

CHAP.

OF PALMERIN D'OLIVA.

CHAP. LVII.

¶ How Palmerin haung thus brought away Valerica, conducted her to the Caue, to her beloued Varnan, and there confirmed the agreement of theyr Loue.



Before we passe any further, you shall vnderstande that the knight thus contending with Palmerin, was Hermes, one whom the King sent after the Lady with Frycoll, to make deliuerance of the Castle, as you haue heard before: he being Palmerins friend, yet neither knowing other. For Hermes toke such regard of the Ladies complaint, as he marked not Palmerin before he put on his Helmet. Palmerin seeing that Hermes would needes trye his Fortune, encountred him with such a rough stroke, as downe he fell to the ground, Hermes thinking his head was shiuered in a hundred pieces: So Palmerin called Hermes Squyre, commaunding him to helpe vp the Ladie, or else hee would send him after his Maister. The Squyre alighted and holpe vpp the Ladie, rewarding her with an infinite number of curles, because his Maister had spedde so ill by her meanes.

Trust me Lady, (quoth Palmerin) though you thinke my labour but yll bestowed, yet such is the regarde of the solitary Varnan, as to finish that Hell of torments which hee suffers, I must needes holde better opinion of my paines. With these and many such like speeches he beguiled the time, till they came nere to Varnans Caue, who to take the Ayre, stwas there walking vnder the Trees: but when hee sawe Palmerin returned, and a Lady with him, yea, perceiuing wel that it was faire Valerica, they were no souer alighted, but he

(this humor forgotten) to cause you match with him, (whose true love above all other hath deserved you. Ah misery incomparable, said the Lady, I see now it is in vaine to shunne what the destinies haue appointed, how falls my fortune from ill to worse: Must I now goe with that coward Varnan, whom hitherto I haue continually despised: I had rather die a most shamefull death.

I know not Lady what you thinke, said Palmerin, but in my opinion, Varnan is much better then you esteem him, and a better knight then he, that could defend his State with no wiser policie: worthily may you call him coward, and loue the other that liues to do you seruice. So long they stood on these tearmes, untill a knight passed by them, to whom Valerica cried. Helpe gentle knight, for God sake pittie mee, and deliuer mee from this traytor, who falsely hath beguiled me, and violently brought me hither against my will. What art thou said the knight, that thus dishonorest this Lady? I shall teach thee better knowledge of thine order before wee part. Palmerin quickly bysiding of his Horse, & claspings on his helmet, said to the knight. What art thou that wouldst take her from me, whom I conquered euen now by my Sword: follow thy way, or I shall shew thee what discipline I vse to foles, that will meddle with matters above their capacite. Dost thou so obstinately stand in thy trechery: saide the knight: Marke what will be the end of thy presumption.

CHAP.

CHAP. LVII.

¶ How Palmerin haung thus brought away Valerica, conducted her to the Caue, to her beloued Varnan, and there confirmed the agreement of theyr Loue.



Before we passe any further, you shall vnderstande that the knight thus contending with Palmerin, was Hermes, one whom the King sent after the Lady with Frycoll, to make deliuerance of the Castle, as you haue heard before: he being Palmerins friend, yet neither knowing other. For Hermes took such regard of the Ladies complaint, as he marked not Palmerin before he put on his Helmet. Palmerin seeing that Hermes would needes trye his fortune, encountred him with such a rough stroke, as done he fell to the ground, Hermes thinking his head was shiuered in a hundred pices: So Palmerin called Hermes Squire, commaunding him to helpe vp the Lady, or else hee would send him after his Maister. The Squire alighted and holpe vpp the Lady, rewarding her with an infinite number of curres, because his Maister had spedde so ill by her meanes.

Trust me Lady, (quoth Palmerin) though you thinke my labour but yll bestowed, yet such is the regarde of the solitary Varnan, as to finish that Hell of torments which hee suffers, I must needes holde better opinion of my paines. With these and many such like speeches he beguiled the time, till they came nere to Varnans Caue, who to take the Ayre, alwas there walking vnder the Trees: but when hee sawe Palmerin returned, and a Lady with him, yea, perceiuing wel that it was faire Valerica, they were no sower alighted, but he

he caught her in his armes, saying: Is it possible swete Fortune, that after so long mishap, and when all hope was utterly gone, thou canst afford me this gracious fauours? Ah happy Eyes, that haue pained with such showers of teares, what felicity may compare with yours, contemplating now the rare beauty of your Mistresse? May it be, that after so many insupportable torments, the meane thereof should returne such pleasure, comfort, and solace? Depart then teares, pack hence lamentations, griefe, torments, and all melancholy conceits, get you elsewhere, & in the most Barbarous countreys of the world make your abiding, for she commands you hence, in whom consists my special contentment. Oh fortunate Knight, how may I recompence this inextricable kindness, surmounting all other that euer was heard of? Impossible is it for me to requite this fauour, though all my Possessions, life, bodie, and spirit, were bound to your seruice. But Heauen will supplye my want, and continue you in as great happinesse, as your noble Wountie hath brought me comfort.

Forbeare these speeches (said Palmerin) albeit I had done a thousand times as much, yet should I but accomplish what one Christian owes to another. I pray you therefore let vs goe into your Cave, least we be espied, and so prevented, beside, I am so ouer-watched, as I cannot stand on my feete, through the very want of sleepe. Valerica seeing her selfe in such an vncomely place, and in his custodie the most detested, her angry stomacke would not suffer her to speake one word: but when she hadde a while rested her selfe, on a seate of fragrant Hearbes and flowers, which Varnan diligently prepared, Palmerin saide: Beholde Madame Valerica, sit in what place, in what solitarie, austere, and sharpe kinde of life, your Varnan liues by your commandement, now seeing time and fortune is so fauourable, let not your rigour and disdain euen theyr mutabilitie. Consider a little, what griefes he hath endured in this comfortlesse place, which verily haue bin so great, as all the pleasures in the world, cannot recompence the very least of them. I beseeche you then, if heretofore you haue

haue bound him hard liking, let it not be forgotten, and if vnadvisedly hee hath any way offended you, let his long torments and surpassing loyaltie serue now for satisfaction, and take him to your Husbande, as the most perfect and faithfull Louer in England. You likewise Syr Varnan, without remembrance of your passed miseries, or her too rigorous refusals heretofore, take her as your Lady and wife, and in all honour unite your self to her by present speeches: for seeing I haue brought her hither, it will remaine a continuall reproch to me, if you would not accept her as your Spouse and wife. Ah my Lord (quod Varnan) with right good will shal I accomplish your command, so may it stand with my Ladies liking, for heerein consists the whole summe of my desires. Ah miserable beyond all other (saide Valerica to Palmerin) must I by a barlet be subiected to so vile an extremitie, and constrained to take him for my Husband whome I cannot affect, hee being the most false and cowardly Knight that euer I knewe: Must I against my Fathers will, and by my Traytors procurement, that hath so much abused me, as no vertuous Knight would so haue wronged a Lady, be thus compelled to my Marriage: heauen cannot like heereof, and rather will I die, then do the thing shall returne me such reproch. Then striked she so pitifully as though she had bene quite distraught of her senses: which Varnan beholding, beganne thus to complaine. Ah gentle Knight, what griefe is it to heare her in these torments, whom I loue much better then mine owne life: and for whom I rather desire to die, then not to enioy her with her owne liking. I cannot line seeing her in these afflictions, and therefore conuey her againe to her fathers house, and no sooner shall she be departed hence, but life will forsake this forlorne Carkasse, then shall my death assure her how faithfully I loued. Palmerin seeing the obstinacie of Valerica, sayd. By God Lady, I thinke in all the world is not a more cruell and disloyall woman then you are, perswade your selfe, that if I take the paine to carry you againe to your fathers Castle, I shall do your errande there

THE HISTORIE

there in such sort, as all your life time repentance will hardly excuse you. And to speake the truth, Varnan doth much more then you deserue, if you well remember your selfe, and for you are so stubborne, I shall giue you the desert (offering to draw his sword) that such ingratefull and trecherous women woorthily merit. Valerica aske de when she saw him in such choler, and doubting he would discouer her incontinent loue past, threw her selfe at his foete, desiring him to appease his anger, and she would obey what ere hee commaunded. For (quoth she) seeing my fortune hath brought me into his company, who for his vnfeigned loue to me, hath so long suffered wonderfull calamities: well might I be esteemed of brutish nature, if I did not acknowledge it, therefore I will be his wife, and giue him my faith here in your presence. Palmerin well pleased with this aunswere, toke her by the hand, and taking Varnan by the other, espoused them there together by soleinne promises, and afterward laide him downe to rest himselfe a while. Then Varnan taking Valerica in his armes, with sweete kisses and amorous speeches, expelled all former heauinesse, esteeming himselfe the happiest knight in the whole world, hauing now at length obtayned the fauour of his Mistresse, giuing her to vnderstand, how acceptable the gift of pittie was, coming from so rare a creature to her languishing beloued. Palmerin seeing them so well agree, would now depart and leaue them to their fortune: but by earnest importunitie of these louers, he stayed there longer then he intended. Now was the loue betwene these twaine, far greater then they hatred had bene, so that after they had stayed three or foure dayes in the Caue, with such entertainment as the Dwarfes could make them, they departed to one of Varnans Castles, and there obtained peace with the said Parentes of Valerica, continuing long time together in comfort of their loue, and ending their liues in loyaltie thereof.

CHAP.

OF PALMERIN D'OLIVA.

CHAP. LVIII.

How Palmerin, after he departed from Varnan and Valerica, met with two Ladies in chase, one of them giuing him a Faulcon. And what happened to him against the Duke of Gaule his twelue Knights, out of whose hands he deliuered Hermes.



When Palmerin saw Varnan and Valerica so well contented, after many offers of their seruice, and kinde adieues deliuered on all sides, he left them in their Vault, and set forward on his iourney, lodging that night in an auncient knights castle, where hee vnderstood, how the brethren of the same knight, besieged Valericas father in his Castle: Wherefore he turned an other course, and leauing the broad way that guided to London, he met two ladies accompanied with three squires, who had cast off a faulcon and a Martin to flie, the sight whereof so highly contented him, as he would needs tarry to see the end thereof, which made one of the Ladies thus speake to him. I see sir knight you haue no hast on your iourne, because you stay to behold our pastime, therefore if you will go with vs to a water here by, you shall there see a braue sight indeede, such worthy game is there so plentifull, & my faulcon so good as she will neuer faile. Palmerin who aboue all pastimes loued Hawking, rode with the Ladies to the Marshes by their Castle, where they had such excellent sport at Heron, Duck & Mallard: as the day beguiling them, Palmerin was forced to stay with them that night. When they were come to the castle, Palmerin

THE HISTORIE

merin manned the Ladies Faulcon so well, as though all his life time he had practised to be a Faulconer. The Lady seeing him so braue a Gentleman, so courteous, affable, and comely in behaviour, and that hee tendered her Hauke so gently: was immediately surprised with his Love, so that she desired to knowe of whence he was, whom she could so gladly afford to chuse for her Beloued, and hauing long earnestly beheld him, she said. Syr Knight, that I might entertaine you as your estate becometh, I pray you tell me your name, and whither you trauell. Lady (qd. Palmerin) I am a mere straunger, who by Fortune on the Sea was brought to this Countrey, and because the King had warre against the Emperour of Allemaigne, I remained a while here as a Souldiour, attending a prosperous winde, to transport me home againe into my Native Countrey. The Lady hearing this, and iudging him one of the Famous Knights, that came to the Court, loved him more earnestly then she did before, providing such surpassing delights and delicacies for him, as she wished that Night had bene a yere in length. The Tables withdraue, and many pleasant speeches past betwene Palmerin and the Ladies Daughter, shee conducted him to his Chamber, wishing (if her Honour might so auouch it) that Palmerin neuer might haue any other Bedfellow. But leauing him to his good rest, she departed to her Chamber, where small sleepe sufficed her that night. In the morning, Palmerin called for his Horse to be gone: the Lady very sorrowfull so soon to forgoe his company, but seeing shee had no meane to holde him, she said e. Seeing your departure Syr may not be denied, I would present you with the Faulcon, which yesterday did so specially content you, which if you so please to accept for my sake, I shall not be vnnecessary of the honour you haue done me, chiefly, that you touch safe to staye here this night, being as welcom hither as the King himselfe.

Seeing it is your pleasure (said Palmerin, to bestowe your Faulcon on mee, I accept it as the onely thing you could giue me, and by the faith of a Knight I promise you, that

OF PALMERIN DOLIVA.

that I will keepe it for your sake, and neuer part therewith, if by force or villany it be not taken from me. The Lady so ioyfull hereof as might be deuised, caused the Faulcon to be brought to him.

Here must you note, that this is the selfe same Lady, which sent the Faulcon to Varnan, and loued him so dearely as after shee understood hee had forsake the Countrey, shee gaue her selfe altogether to this recreation. Her Father perceiuing she was affected, suffered her to take her pleasure, sending her euermore the best Haukes that could be gotten. But it came so to passe, that two Faulcons so friendly giuen, and in the like sort taken, proued very vnforsunate to both the Knights, causing them to curse the houre, that euer they accepted the Ladies liberality, came neare her Castle, or saw her Haukes, as you haue already heard by solitary Varnan, and hereafter shall perceiue in Palmerins fortune, he being departed from the Lady, rode two dayes together without any aduenture, till at length he came to the Tent, where the Duke of Gaules Knights guarded the passage, which scant pleased Palmerin, because he imagined if he fought with them, he should be deceiued in his intent, and not see Trineus so soone as he would, whom he left at the Court expecting his coming, wherefore he would haue turned another way, but one of the Knights called to him. A returne toward returne, thou shalt not escape without tryall of thy manhood, for we must make prooue whether there be any in thee.

Palmerin not knowing where to set his Hauke, and very loth to lose her, was not desirous to fough: but seeing that with honour he could not refuse it, answered. It is small courtesie Sir Knight to challenge the man that hath no will to your sport: but if there be no remedie, your will be fulfilled, albeit I hope you will first repent. I see thou canst prate well, quoth the Knight, and beleue me thou wilt be wise if thou couldest so escape: but seeing thou art so long before thou art ready, He being thee to such a place where haukes shall not hinder thee, and in one yere thou shalt space

OF PALMERIN DOLIVA.

the wearing of Bootes and spurres in such a comfortable place, as the Sunne nor day light shall offend thine eyes. I hope I haue learned, said Palmerin, to keepe my selfe from such places: but I would faine know the gentle Chamber Page, that is so skillfull in waiting with his Pantofles, as he can teach knights errant how to weare them. The knight being angry, called forth the rest of his companions, among whom he espied Hermes prisoner, his Helmet lying by him, and his armes pinnond: therefore to reuenge his wronge, he called his Squire, saying, I pray thee my friend looke to my Hauke a while, for I am come to defende thy Maisters honour, and calling to the Dukes knight, saying, Come sir let vs dispatch quickly, for I haue earnest busines in another place: the knight laughing at him, answered. Why hold now Captaine? thinke you to passe hence so easilie? There are sufficient to stay your hasty iourney, eleven more must talke with you, the worst of them able to abate your pride, for your horse lackes a stable, and we will prouide him one. So couching theyr Launces, they met together with such force, as the Dukes knight was throwne from his Horse, his shoulder being broken with the weight of his fall: Palmerin arresting the knights horse for his owne, gaue him to Hermes squire in keeping, saying, Because the knight is not willing, to get on horse-backe againe, helde this for me, and I may lye at ease to see the fortune of his fellows. When came another knight from the tent, whom Palmerin welcomed in so friendly manner, as hee lay not able to stirre hand or foot: with this one Launce he unhorsed foure more, and brake it so bakantly on the sequenty knight, as while he liued he meant to ioust no more. With a fresh Launce he dismounted all the rest, none of them being willing to deale with him any further: wherefore Palmerin came to Hermes, saying, What do you sir knight? Why take you not the best Horse among all the dozen? What shall I Sir, seeing you commaund me, albeit not long since you serue me as these knights are: yet God be thanked

that

OF PALMERIN DOLIVA.

that by your meanes I am deliuered from imprisonment: wherein these knights intenden to keepe me, because I unhorsed foure of them, and at the first encounter my horse was killed, which was the cause of my foyle and taking. The knights (quoth Palmerin) haue now leysure to rest them, for they were troubled before with watching for passengers: I doubt not now but we may quietly passe the bridge, for I see none of them offer to hinder vs. Hermes mounting on horse-backe, commaunded his squire to take a fresh one for him likewise, and so they rode on together reioycing at this good fortune. They had not ridden the space of a mile, but Hermes demaunded Palmerins name, which when hee knew, in great reioysing hee sayde: Ah worthy knight, now is my trauel ended in search of you: trust me, I would refuse the best citie in England, in respect of the great friendship I haue found at your hands, as also for the comfort your presence will bring to our bread Lord, and your noble companions, who long time haue expected your desired returne. As they rode on in these speeches, they came to a fayre fountaine, where Palmerin would alight to refresh himselfe, and to bind vp such small wounds, as hee had taken in iousting against the knights of Gaule.

X 3

CHAP.

CHAP. LXI.

How Frysol was deliuered out of Palmerins handes, by the meanes of Colmelio his Squire.



The same day that Palmerin iousted with the knights of Gaule, the duke himselfe was gone on hunting, by meanes whereof, hee lost the sight of the pastime, which afterward he repented, because he had with him the most part of his knights, so that no one was left in his Castle but Frysol, that might be counted of any value, who beholding so many knights toyed by one, marvelled not a little what hee might bee, and after long consideration of his haughtie exploits, hee saide to himselfe, I cannot thinke this knight to bee the man, against whom I combattes sometime in Fraunce. yet know I no man living but hee, that could perfoyme such rare chivalrie. Now, because Palmerin had changed his armor, he verily imagined that it was not he, yet was he desirous to know, but doubtfull to follow him by reason of his former experience: againe, if hee should suffer him to passe without some triall, he iudged it would returne to his great dishonour, wherefore hee resolved to adventure his fortune. And in this determination hee came to the dukes sister, who loued him intirely, as you heard before: she beginning with him in this manner. I cannot sufficiently maruell sir Frysol, how you haue suffered in your chone victorie, my brother's knights to be so shamefully conquered by one passenger: I desire you shouldestend, if ever you take launce for a Ladies loue, that for my sake you

will deale with that proude knight, and make him know that you can abate his courage, were his head framed of the hardest hammered brasle. If you fulfill my request, you shall do an acceptable deed to my brother, and to me such service, as I shall hereafter requite to your owne content. Dame (quoth Frysol) I did intende to fight with him, but seeing it pleaseth you so graciously to commaund me, no danger can withhold me, because the world can witness, what great assaile so honorable a Ladies fauor is, to the knight that liues to renewe her name. So departing from his lady he presently armed himselfe, and mounting on a lustie Courser, followed the way that Palmerin was gone: the 12. knights not a little glad thereof, well hoping that he would reuenge their dishonour. Frysol continued his trauaile so long, til at length he came to the fountaine where Palmerin refreshed himselfe, who had no sooner espied him, but surprised with great ioy, sayd to Hermes, I am sure this knight comes hither is to seeke me, wherefore I intreat you by the reuerend loue you beare to your best beloued, not any way to hinder that fight betwene vs, til the end deliuer victorie to one side or other: for he thinking to reuenge the reproch of his fellow, hath followed me to perfoyme what they were not able. Then Palmerin sodainly clasping on his helmet, mounted on horsebacke, and taking advantage of the plaine field, because it was most conuenient for the combat, which Frysol perceiuing, scornefully sayd, I thinke Sir knight, you are some kinde of prophet, because you deuine so well the cause of my coming: unhappie was it for you to preuaile in such sort against the duke of Gaules knights, which you must now pay for with to late repentance. If I did them any harme, sayd Palmerin, it was their owne seeking, and by your arrogant speeches it may be presumed, you are one of the same company: but the loue of the Dukes sister, cannot shelde you from your deserved recompence. At these words, Frysol well perceiued, that this was the knight hee so much doubted: neuerthe-

OF PALMERIN DOLIVA.

lesse his courage was so good, as remembering the promise he made to his Lady, gaue spurres to his Horse, and they encountered with such braue chivalry, as the shivers of their Launces flew vp into the aire, and then they assaulted each other so roughly with their Swords, as well they might be esteemed right valiant Champions. No mercy was intended on either side, for Frysol was determined to die or conquer, and Palmerin held the same resolution, so that the ground was coloured with their blood, their armour and shields battered in peeces, and no hope left on either side of life. But as alwaies some mischaunce or other followes a noble mind, so fell it out with Frysol, for in their close buckling together, Palmerin had got surchold on his shield, which Frysol struing forcibly to recover, the buckles brake in sunder, and with the sodaine breach thereof he fell downe backward, when Palmerin leaping from his horse, said. And let me neuer hereafter bee called Palmerin, if now I do not reuenge my selfe sufficiently. Which words when Frysols squire heard, he came hastily and fell at his feete, saying. Noble knight, I beseech you for the honour you beare to arms, to pause a while, & tel me if you be Palmerin D'Oliua, for if you be, I am your brother, who haue suffered great paine and trauaile to finde you out. Palmerin presently knew Colmelio, the sonne of Gerrard his foster father, whose sight was so ioyfull to him, as casting away his sword, he ran and embraced him about the necke, saying: My deere friend Colmelio, the most welcome man in the world to me. How happie may I account my selfe quoth Colmelio, to finde you when all hope was past: hauing trauailed so many countreyes, and all in vaine: if then you loue me as you make protestation, let me intreate one fauour at your hand, that you forget your anger towards my maister Frysol, and giue ouer your fight, for long time haue I serued him as my Lord, and well hath hee deserved much better service then mine. Colmelio, sayde Palmerin, the thing thou demandest is inuoluntarie great, ne-

uer:

THE HISTORIE

nevertheless such is my comfort hauing mette with thee, as I graunt thy request, and happily hath hee now escaped with life, considering what occasions haue past vs heretofore. So taking Colmelio by the hand, he said to Frysol, My knight, at your Squires intreate, I suffer you quietly to departe, and mete with mee againe at any time you thinke good: but you shall goe take another Squire, for Colmelio at this time shall goe with me. Frysol being wounded in many places, and very faine with losse of his blood, might easily be induced to this agreement of peace: But coming to Colmelio, he said: Wilt thou forsake thy Maister, and goe with his enemy: Trust me My (quoth Colmelio) you must needs pardon me, if in this matter I chance to offend you: for to seeke him I forsooke my Fathers house, and haue continued a very laboursome search. If thou wilt needes goe (said Frysol) and that my intreaties may not diswaide thee, I will pray for the successe of thy desires, and thy Advancement to honour, and while I live I will make account of thee as my friende and brother. So returning as he came, he beganne in this manner, to exclaime against Fortune. Ah cruell and inconstant Lady: sufficed it not thee to dishonour mine before mine enemy, but thou must now robbe mee of my Squire I loued so dearely: but so hast thou dealt with them of highest Calling, for infinit Kings and Potentates hast thou deceived, and before their chiefest enemies dishonoured: such hath bene thy treachery to mee now at this instant, that I may iustly complaine of thee while I live. As he continued these complaints, he mette diuers armed knights that came to assist him, and the Duke himselfe in companie among them: who demanded of Frysol, whether his enemy were slaine, or sent away vanquished: Vanquished (saide Frysol) thinke you so good a knight may be so easily vanquished? Then he discoursed his whole successe: which the Duke hearing, exclaymed on his hunting, that hee was not in presence when Palmerin passed: wherefore hee would needes followe him, but onely that Frysol intreated him to the contrary, because the sight

ap.

THE HISTORIE

approched so nere, as it was impossible for him to ouertake Palmerin. The Duke in a marvellous rage, for that his enterprise fell out no better, returned with Fryfoll, and an houre within sight they came to his Castle, where he called for his best Chyrurgions, charging them to give diligent attendance on Fryfoll. When the Dukes Syfter heard the misfortune of her friende, she came hastily to him in his Chamber, and after many sweete kisses, saide: I beseeche you my Lord forget my folly, for I was the cause of your mischaunce.

Madame (saide Fryfoll) where no offence is committed, what needs any remission? If my fortune haue bene ill, it is not for mee to complaine on you, for your request tended to myne owne honour: but I must be content with my happe, though it hath sortd to so bad effect, and this doth yet comfort me, that I receyued my soyle by the onely Knight in the Worlde. And if the Heauens please to lengthen my dayes, I shalbe desirous to do him seruice, for there is no man liuing to whom I could better affoord it. Nowe neede I not mislike, hauing tryed him so often) if hee be worthy the loue of diuine Polinarda, for hee (beyond all others) doth best deserue it.

Why, how now? (quoth the Lady) are you so vnwise, to honour him so much, that hath so iniuried you? and which is most childish, to desire his seruice? Goe then and sake him whom thou so louest, for by my mine honour, I more despise thee now then any man in the Worlde, thou making such reputation of him, whom thou oughtest to pursue with mortall hatred. Fryfoll smiling thereat, said: Madam I must needs say so, seeing no ill words can amend mischaunce: So without any answer, shee stoung forth of his Chamber. The next day, the Duke callyed all his Knights, commaunding them to restraine the passage no longer at the Bridge, intending to go to the Court, so soone as Fryfoll had recovered his health.

CHAP.

THE HISTORIE

CHAP. LX.

¶ How Palmerin, Hermes, and Colmelio, returned to London, and the good Entercayment the King of England made them.



After that Fryfoll was returned from the Combat, Palmerin after many and sundry embracings of Colmelio, went with him to the fountaine, where he left Hermes, all three together, making no small ioye, Colmelio for his happie finding of Palmerin, and hee for the loue of his supposed Brother, and Hermes, for the comfort he should bring the King his Maister, being able now to acquainte his Highnesse with Palmerins name, which hee was loathe that any in the English Courte should knowe, wherefore he saide: Nowe can you not (my Lord) heereafter hide your name, though you haue bene daintie of it all this while. It is true Syr (quoth Palmerin) albeit I little thought to bee discovered so soone: but seeing it is so come to passe, my hope is in the Highest, who will defense mee in all mine attempts. Now tell mee Colmelio, what newes in Greece? Truly my Lord (quoth hee) the discourse will be long and tedious: therefore if you please to mount on Horsebacke, it will serue well to shorten the thought of our Journey. So as they roade towardes London, hee beganne to discourse, in how many places hee had made search and sought him in Greece, and how at length hee heard of him at Macedon, by report of his conquest of the Serpent, at the mountaine Artiferia, which was the meanes that had restored the King of Macedon to his former health. And afterwarde,

how

THE HISTORIE

how hee left Greece traueiling into Allemaigne, and from thence into England, at what time the Emperours power was discomfited: and hearing great fame of Fryfoll his late Maister, hee spent some time in his seruice, not doubting but by his meanes to finde the man hee looked for. Palmerin was somewhat moued, hearing Colmelio so commend Erisol, wherefore he demanded of him, if hee knewe any thing of that knights lignage. For my Lord (quoth he) but I can assure you, that hee is one of the most gentlest knights in the world, and hee concealeth his Parentage very secretly, which makes me iudge hee is descended of royall birth. After Colmelio had ended his discourse, hee repeated to him some parte of his fortunes, in the ende perswading him that hee would remunerate his paines in seeking him, and in time manifest the loue hee bare him. At this time they were come to the City of London, Hermes riding before to the Palace, where hee aduertised the king, howe Palmerin was returned to the Cistie, which felues so highly contented the king, as oftentimes he embraced Hermes, for bringing the man he long desired to see: but Trineus and Ptolome exceeded him in ioye, and presently both mounted on Horse-backe, to goe meete with theyr friend, when so many Embracings, Courtesies, and kinde Gratulations had passed between them, as is vsual at the meeting of long absent Louers: At my good Lord and friend (quoth Trineus) how long hath hard fortune kept you from mee: and why did you departe, not vouchsafing a farewell: What earnest occasion might cause such an unkinde departure: Trust mee, I perswaded my selfe in respect of the long continuance of our Amitie, that death could not procure such a seuerer Enterprise. My deere Lord (quoth Palmerin) it seemeth you haue some cause to complaine of mee: but when you vnderstand how matters haue happened, you will not condemne me altogether. For at the time of my departure, I thought verily to returne the next day following: but such importunate affayres continually fell out, as that I could not returne untill this very instant. Ptolome saide as

much

THE HISTORIE

much as Trineus did, notwithstanding, this fortunate meeting forbade all further accusations, and they became as good friendes as euer they were. So rode they to the Pallace, where the king attending theyr comming, perceiued at length they were entred the Hall, when Palmerin falling on his knee, kissed his highnesse hand, who very honourably embracing him, saide, Where hath my noble friend bene so long: What crooked fortune hath caused your so long absence: you departed from vs in blacke Armour, I pray you tell vs, where did you conquer these sumptuous Armes: by the loue you beare to chiuallrie and to mee: satisfie me in my demand. Palmerin seeing the king conuincd him so straightly, reported the truth of all his aduentures, how he had that armour of the Ladie whose daughter hee deliuered, and left his owne there broken in peeces. The king embracing him againe, saide: I cannot be perswaded, but all especiall aduentures, high good fortunes, and cheefest honours in the world, are onely reserved for you, and among all the rest, most maruailous is this of the Castle in the enchanted Lake, which many knights haue heretofore attempted, but returned with the losse of theyr Horses, Armour, and with great dishonour. Whise welcome are you for these happie tydings, as also for your gentle courtesie to Frisoll, who is a knight of most honourable reputation. But in regards of your wearysome trauels, it is very requisite that you now should goe to rest your selfe: therefore lette some bodie helpe to disarme you, and betake your selfe (on Gods name) to your Chamber, Palmerin reputed the kings Counsell most expedient, and therefore did accordingly as he commaunded him: So heuing repased himselfe a while, hee came to see howe the Quene and her Daughter fared, who would not suffer him to depart thence, before he had likewise acquainted her with all his fortunes: especially the whole circumstance of all his Trauels at the Castle of the Lake. But Night being come, and euery one betaking themselves to rest, Palmerin demanded of the Page howe he follo-

ed

ed his desires, and what he had concluded as concerning his loue: Ah deare friend, said Trineus, why aske you mes that question: do you not thinke that hauing so lost you, I likewise was disappointed of any meane to helpe mee: know then, that at this instant I am in the midst of all my misfortunes, for so badly hath it happened, that I am now further from Agriola then euer I was, and I shall tell you how. Not many days since, as I was familiarly deuising with my Ladie, the Duke of Gaules daughter chanced to heare such amorous speeches as passed betwixen the Princesse and me: wherby she gathered, that Agriola made som estimation of me whereupon she laboured to cause my Distresse in short time milike what I had so long trauelled to perswade her with as thus.

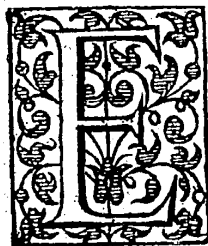
That ill belomed a Princesse of her account, of so gracious descent, and daughter to such a mighty King, to conserre with strangers, or bouchsate a listening to any thing they sayd: for they were none such as she reputed them, but after they had brought a Ladies honour into daunger, they then were satisfied, as they vsed it for a custome among their companions. And so well could she, feede the Princesse humour, with these suborning and spightfull detractions, which seemed vnto her as swete and friendly persuasions, that in steade of the little loue I lately conquered, I finde nothing but froknes and disdaine, that she will scant affoord me a looke. Which discourtesie hath well neare driuen me to dispaire, in regard of her slender opinion of mee, as being so hindered onely through your absence. Often I determind with Ptolome, to leaue the Courte and follow you in trauaile: but the King by no meanes would permit mee, sending many of his owne knightes, because I should not goe: yet was I resolved, that had you not come, no displeasure whatsoeuer should haue held mee here: but to finde you I intended, or loose my life. This falleth out verie hard, quoth Palmerin, for by these meanes we shall stay here God knoweth how long: beside. Hgrmes knoweth my name,

name, which makes me doubt least we shall be reuealed: the Emperour likewise may be offended at our long tarriance. In regard of all this, good Prince, I thinke it best, that we send your Squire and Vrbaniillo my Dwarf, to aduertise his Maestie of our affaires, and how by reason of the tempest, we were cast quite out of course so farre, as we could not by any meanes assist his Armie, not doubting but to see his Highnesse in very short time. In the meane while, we may practise meanes to win the Princesse fauour againe, and so in good time depart hence, with the honourable prize that we came for. Trineus was newly reuiued with these speeches, wherefore he desired, that betimes in the morning he would dispatch their Seruants to wards Allemaign. Which Palmerin failed not to do, in respect of a dreame he had the night before, for he imagined that he saw his Lady Polynarda in maruailous heauinesse, and that she sayd to him. Alas my Lord, what shall become of me: For I am narrowly sought to be separated from you. This fearefull vision so discouraged him, as he sent thence his Dwarf, to shew her what trouble he had with his dreame, and how constant he remained in his loue to her.

THE HISTORIE

CHAP. LXI

How Palmerin promised the Princeesse Agriola, to conuay her out of England, with his friendes, which hee performed to the speciall content of the prince Trineus.



Early on the next morning, Palmerin arose, and wrote a letter to his Lady Polinarda wherein hee secretly put a ring, which shee gaue him when hee departed from her, straightly commaunding Vrbanello that hee should diligently attende on the Princeesse till hee came, which should bee with all the speede he could possible. Proleme likewise wrote to his Ladie Brionella, and these Letters dispatched, the Messengers immediatly sette forward on their iourney. From this time Colmelio was Palmerins Squire, which pleased him very well, because hee knew that Palmerin was nobly borne, so that by his meanes in time hee should rise to preferment. This day the king would ride abroad a Hunting, which gaue Palmerin occasion to see the faulcon die, being reputed by the king and all his traines, to be the best that euer flew. In this time of recreation, Hermes reported to the king, that the knight so long absent was named Palmerin, and the same knight that wonne so much honour in Fraunce, which so well contented the king, as he more and more desired his companie: summoning all his Barons and Lordes to his Court, where he made such feastes, triumphs, and other sportes, for the honour of the noble Palmerin and his

com-

OF PALMERIN D'OLIVA.

companions as the like had not bene of long time before.

At night, when the Maskers, Drummeries and Dancers were in presence, that Palmerin espyed convenient time to talke with the Princeesse, he toke her aside to a Window, and thus began. Madam, before I begin what I haue to acquaint you withall, I must giue you this ring, as I was commaunded by the Lady of the Castle in the Lake: the singular vertues thereof are such, as I intreat you to keepe it continually on your finger: which Agriola receiuing, with a courteous reuerence, faithfully promised to accomplish his request: then Palmerin, with earnest affection on his friends behalfe, thus continued his discourse. I cannot but maruell, saye Princeesse, you being a Ladie of so speciall qualitie, renowned among the most vertuous creatures in the world, for your rare integrity and profound iudgement, that you will be gouerned by the vnadvised perswasions of other: which I would not beleue, had not the Prince Trineus certainly assured mee, how since my departure, in stead of fauourable countenance, and the intreatance becoming so great a Lord, he can haue nothing but scoldes, disdain, and coye regarde, which is as easie for him to indure, as a thousand deaths one after another. Assure your self so farre beguiled, as your counsellors dissuade you from your chiefeest good, desirous to withhold you from the height of honour, whereof you cannot sayle being matched in Marriage with the most vertuous and worthy Prince Trineus. Make you no small account, that hee being one of the most Noble States on the Earth, hath lost his Parents, his Friends, and Countrey, hath past so many solitary, strange, and vncomforthfull Regions, hath aduentured the iury of the Seas, beaten with so many bitter blasts, and raging billowes, every minute in danger of Shipwracke, and all for your Loue: Thinke you that hee being Sonne to the Emperour of Allemaigne, attending euery day the rule and gouernment of the Empire, that he came hither to you in hope of your rich dowrie? No trust mee, Madame, and I thinke your owne Conscience doth so resolue you, that neuer home

THE HISTORIE

hee could haue found other, endued with larger possessions then this Realme affords you. But hearing the fame of your manifold vertues, rare life, choise beautie, and all other good gifts, hee was willing without regard of his owne estate, to thrust himselfe in danger, yea, to forget himselfe for your loue, which hitherto hee hath with religious seruice intreated, and except you intertaine him with more gracious fauour, hee is in danger of life. Which if it should happen by your occasion, for euer you shall bee noted of monstrous ingratitude, and Christendome should sustaine a losse vnicouerable. How far such a thought ought to be from you, I leave to your owne construction. If hitherto you haue knowne mee, a knight readie to support the causes of Ladies far beneath your height, thinke you I haue not greater reason to honour you? yea not to moue you with any request, but what may euery way aduance your credite. And though my Lord Trineus were not of the blood imperiall, yet might his gentle heart, vnfeigned loue, and surpassing humanitie, cause you to make choise of him, aboue all other whatsoeuer they be. But seeing it so fallles out, that you will not regard good counsell, following rather the perswasion of meane capacities, whose iudgements may not reach to so high occasions, continue in your obstinacie, and marke the end of such indiscreet censures. I see that our company is ykesome to you, therefore (sooner then you imagine) we will remoue that occasion. I know well enough, that you intend to match with the duke of Gaule, who is but your fathers subiect: so refusing the degree of an Empreesse, you shall tarry in England, and bee a Duchesse. Thinke you, that if my Lord matched not with you, the greatest Princeesse in Europe, would not triumph in his loue? Yes certainly Hadam, when you may at leysure sit do alone and recount your losse, which you sustained by flatterers and parasites. Thinke what will be the danger after our departure, the Emperour his father, not minding so particularly the losse of his late armie, will send such a puissant strength

OF PALMERIN DOLIVA.

strength into England, as the King your father, nor the duke your husband that must be, will scant excuse the whole ruine of this countrey. The means to prevent this mishap, and assure your continuall tranquillitie, is in entertaining the counsell I haue given you: where otherwise your selfe conceite, makes way to manifold misfortunes and dangers. Thus concluding his speeches, in great heavinesse he turned from her, whereat the Princeesse inwardly grieved, for the King which he had given her was of such vertue, that after she had put it on her finger, shee was wonderfully affected toward Trineus, as she could not thinke on any other: wherefore in this sudden change, and trembling with the doubtfull conceit of her owne spirit, shee called Palmerin to her, thus answering. Alas my Lord, and snely comfort in these heauy passions, what feare hath these hard and rigorous speeches brought me into? It is very true that following the counsell of young Ladies like my selfe, haue bene perswaded to cast off the Princes loue, accounting him but a simple knight errant: but now being assured of his nobilitie, loyalty, and great gentlenesse, and that he would not request (as I hope) any thing contrary to vertue and honour, I beleue what you haue said, and submit my selfe to your discretion, as willing to obey any thing you shall commaund me. Yet this I must request, that aboue all things mine honour may be defended, for rather would I suffer mine owne losse for euer, then this famous realme of my father should be any way endangered. Beleeue me Lady, quoth Palmerin, if thus you continue, you may well venture to gaine this generall benefit, for henceforth there will none be so hardy, as to molest your father with warre, hauing matched his daughter with the great Emperours sonne of Allemaigne. To confirme this promise, you shall giue me this swete hand which I kisse, as the hand of the soueraigne Lady and Empreesse of high Allemaigne, that you will not thinke hereafter from this honorable determination; but for your owne regard, you must

THE HISTORIE

conceale this Contract from your most trustie friends, and dispose in such sort of your selfe: for I hope to compasse the meanes and opportunitie, that you shall leaue England, and goe to the noble regions of your most worthy Lord and Husband. What I haue promised (sayde Agriola,) I will performe, and with what speede you shall thinke conuenient: albeit I repose such trust in you, that hauing bene so fortunate hitherto in your Enterprises, you will be most carefull in accomplishing these dangerous intentions. Thus befoze they departed, the marriage of Trineus and Agriola was concluded, and because they would not as then be suspected, they kept into the Daunce, next the young Prince, shewing very amiable and pleasant gestures: which Trineus (in his often turning) diligently noted: imagining that Palmerin had not so long conferred with his Ladie, but that some assured resolution was determined, yet hee dissembled his inward ioyes so cunningly as he could. Each eye was fixed on these two braue Knights, the Ladies and Gentle-women perswading themselves, that they neuer behelde more Noble personages: deserving like estimation for theyr speciall Chiualltie, as also for theyr Bountie and Courtey Civilitie.

Thus passed the feast in all kinde of pleasures, and these two Knights withdrawing themselves into theyr Chamber, Palmerin discoursed to Trineus his talke with Agriola, and how he had with such cunning pursued the matter, that in the ende he had obtayned what hee demaunded, reporting the sequelle of the gentle conclusion he made with the Princesse.

Those ioyfull newes draue the Prince into such a quandarie, as hee could not expresse his secreete content, wherefoze Palmerin awaking him out of his musing, sayde: As I am true Knight, I neuer thought that a man of your estate could be of so slender courage. What countenance would you be in a matter of sozeuill, when such dainty tydings make you so effeminate: Be of good chere Man: Agriola is your cōune, and none but Trineus must be her onely Lord and Husband. I must confesse my Lorde, (sayde Trineus,) that my beha-

uiour

OF PALMERIN D'OLIVA.

uiour, but little becommes my calling: but that cause therof is, that I know no defect in my selfe that may be esteemed woorthy the least fauor of my Lady. Beside, these newes brought me such speciall contentment, as I am no longer mine owne, but in her onely I liue, and shee holdes the ballance of my daunger or felicity, in that I was bozne to be her seruant. But now I desire you my Lord, seeing the occasion offereth it selfe, we hinder it not by any negligence: for if now we lose the fauour of the time, we neuer (I feare) shall recover the like, therefore let vs so soone as we can, prouide all things ready for our departure. Refer that to me, quoth Palmerin, be you as ready as I shall make prouision. The next day hee went to the maister of a ship, to know when time would serue for their secret departure, who answered him, that the time was then very conuenient, the winde seruing prosperously, and the Sea calme and nauigable, and hee would furnish him with all necessaries for his passage. Quoth Palmerin, see that your men and all things be in readines, that we may launch away vpon halfe an houres warning. So departed the maister about his busines, and Palmerin to the prince Trineus, whom he informed with these glad tydings, now nothing remaining but to know the princesse pleasure, she being likewise as ready to depart as the most forsoard. But (quoth Palmerin) how shall we safely get you forth of the Court? I will, sayde the Princesse, this night feigne my selfe sicke, and for my greater quiet, cause my Ladies to absent my Chamber, and so secretly will I escape disguised to the backe gate of the Pallace, which is not far from my lodging, whereto I may passe vnsene of any, and from thence goe with you safely to the Hauen. This practise was faithfully concluded betwene them, and Agriola withdrew her selfe closely to her chamber, where at night she began her counterfeited sickness, commanding her Ladies to leaue her alone, because she would see if shee could sleepe a little. Her Ladies little thinking of her secret deceit, went to their

THE HISTORIE

stone lodgings very pensive and sorrowfull, which Agriola, perceiuing, couered herselfe with her night mantle, and came to the place where the knights staid her coming, Palmerin taking her vnder his arme, conuayed her in that maner to the princes chamber, where they altogether laide downe the order for their embarking, Trineus extolling his happy fortune, seeing his Lady so ready to accomplish his desire. They arming themselves, and taking with them the princeesse costly iewels, wherof she had plentifully stored her selfe, they came to the haven, where they found the ship and mariners ready, and getting all aboard, the wind seruing for their auaille, they set saile, and before day they got farre enough from London.

CHAP. LXII.

How the king of England and the Queene were aduertised, how their daughter Agriola was conuayed away, and of their sorrow for her departure



The Duke of Gaules daughter, who continually was bedfellow to the Princeesse, absenting her selfe very long from bed, fearing to disquiet her Ladie, being sicke as she supposed: but coming at length to see how she fared, finding the bedde emptye, and Agriola gone, she presently made a great out-cry, whereat the other Ladies came, and altogether amazed at this sudden aduventure, went to the Quenes Chamber, where they reported how the Princeesse was gone. but how, or when, they knew not. The Quene at these tydings suddenly arose, and coming to her daughters

OF PALMERINDOLIVA.

daughters Chamber found it too true, which made her fall into such pitifull acclamations, farre surpassing those of Maguelona, when she lost her friend Peter of Prouince in the wood.

In these lamentings shee returned to the king, whose heauines exceeded iudgment, for the losse of his daughter, and then came diuerse lords and gentlemen, who declared that the strange knights were likewise departed. Which raised such a rumour throug all the Citie, that they had stolen away the Princeesse. The king vnderstanding the generall sorrow for his daughters absence, said. In sooth my friends, if these knights haue done such seruice for mee, they haue sufficiently recompenced themselves, in doing me the greatest dishonour they could deuise: yet will I not condemne them so much as my daughter, for that I am perswaded shee procured this mischaunce. But now I well perceine what credit a man may repose in his enemy: for Palmerin euermore serued the Emperour of Allemagne, then hardly could hee be true to mee. Yet is it in vaine for me to blame him, or his companions, if they took the aduantage of their owne intents. But now there is no remedy, my daughter is in the company of most cholen knights: if she haue done well, or ill, hereafter her desertts will answer her misdeameour. Thus the king would not suffer any pursute after them, though the Quene and her Ladies earnestly intreated him: hee answering that no such mone should be made, for a child so vngatefull and disobedient, but hauing committed an action so vile and enorme, she should no more account of her as her childe. And well may we (quoth hee) so refuse her, in that shee would leaue her parents, and depart with straungers: happie might we haue accounted our selues, if we had lost her in her infancie. The Quene seeing her lord so impatient, appeased his displeasure so well as shee could, because shee would not moue him too much. Within few dayes after the Duke of Gaule arriued at the Court, who most of all

THE HISTORIE

grieved at these unhappy tidings, wherefore hee perswaded the king to proclaim open warre against the Emperour of Allemaigne, assuring him, that the knight which most commonly accompanied Palmerin, was Trineus the Emperours sonne. When the king heard the Dukes speeches, forgetting his anger, he reioyced, esteeming himselfe happy, and his daughter wise, in matching her selfe with such a husband: and if she had made her choyse among all the Princes of the world, shee could not haue sorted out one comparable in hono^r. In b^riefe answered the duke, that for a daughter so lost, hee would not seeke the death of his louers and subiects: but being one of Fortunes changes, he could not withstand it, and thus the king wisely and patiently endured his griefe.

CHAP. LXIII.

How Vrbaniillo and the Prince Trineus Esquire, arriued at the Emperours Court, and what great ioy their coming procured.



In this place our history taketh this occasion, how the King of Fraunce daily expecting newes from Palmerin, as concerning his intent of marriage, betwene his daughter and the Prince Trineus: but seeing hee heard no tidings at all, hee determined to send his ambassadors to the Emperour, electing for chiefe in this embassage the Count of Arimanc, to whome hee gaue full power and authority to conclude the marriage betwene Trineus and his daughter Lucemania, as also of the

OF PALMERIN D'OLIVA.

Princesse Polynarda with his sonne and heire. The king dispatching all things for his Ambassage, sent many barons and knights of name to accompany the Count, to countenance the matter with more royaltie and magnificence, and in this manner they came to Gaunt, where the Emperour being aduertised of their arriual, made no great account thereof, such was his griefe for his sonnes absence and Palmerins, of whom he could not heare any tidings, as also for the foyle his Armie sustained in England. But while the messenger from the Ambassadors of Fraunce stayed with the Emperour, Vrbaniillo and the Princes Esquire entered the hall, whose presence highly contented the Emperour, as embracing them very lovingly, he demaunded for Palmerin and his sonne Trineus, when they deliuering their letters, and the Emperour perswaded thereby of their speedy returne, was greatly contented, saying to the Ambassadors messenger. My friend, seeing I haue heard such long looked for tidings of my sonne, you may returne to the Counte your Maister, desiring him to come when hee thinks conuenient, and he shall be heartily welcome to mee: with this answer the messenger departed. When the Emperour taking Vrbaniillo by the hand, said: Tell me now I pray thee, how fares thy Maister: where is he? is my sonne with him? My gracious Lord, quoth the Dwarf, where your noble sonne abideth, there is my Maister, both of them in good disposition, and highly honoured. And hereof I can assure your Maiestie, that you haue a sonne, who good reason ought to bee numbred among the best knights liuing, for such honourable experience hath hee made of his worthinesse, that perpetuall memorie will record his deedes of chivalrie: what else remaineth you shall know at their coming, which will be soone so as they can possibly. I neuer perswaded my selfe, said the Emperour, that in the company of so good a knight as Palmerin, my sonne could not but purchase credit and honour: therefore seeing they haue such prosperitie of health, I care the lesse for their stay, but welcome are

THE HISTORIE

are they whensoever they come. By this time Polynarda heard of the Dwarfs arrivall, which greatly pleasing her she sayde to Brionella, I pray the sweete friend go speedily and seeke the Dwarf, that wee may knowe what is become of our Lords and my brother Trineus. Brionella, who longed to heare of her loue Sir Ptolome, whom well she knew to be one of the company, with all speede accomplished the Princesse commandement, and found the joyful messenger with the Emperour, who tooke great delight in the Dwarfs reports: but his Maestie perceiving with what cherefull countenance shee came to bring Vrbaniillo to her Ladie the Princesse, bad him go with her, hoping by his meanes his Daughters extreame sadness would be comforted. Brionella having forth of the Emperours presence, embraced him many times to know his tidings, when the Dwarf not ignorant of the Ladies passions, deliuered Ptolomes letter to chere her: but when the Princesse saw Vrbaniillo coming, with the teares in her eyes she ranne apace to meete him, and casting her armes about his necke, embraced him very often, saying: Tell me Vrbaniillo, tell me, how fares my brother and the Maister Palmerin? Madame, quoth the Dwarf, so well as your owne heart can wish, and will ere long be here with you. Then deliuered he the letter from Trineus, which certified her of his short returne, and that he would bring with him the thing she most esteemed. But the wag knowing she expected other matters, and that her brothers medicine was not sufficient for her cure, he gave her his masters letter, when she hastily breaking open the seale, found the ring which her loyall friend had sent her, and after shee had welcomed it with many deuout kisses, she put it on her finger, with these words. I charge thee keepe this token safely, in witnesse of the knights gentlenesse that sent it, whom my heart hath made speciall choyse of aboue all other. When reading the letter, and discretly considering (not without great effuse of teares) the sweet words, hum-
ble

OF PALMERIN DOLIVA.

ble supplications, entire excuses, and extreame passions, that her friend continually suffered for her loue, deliuering many bitter sighes, she said: Ah my true and loyall friend, I beleue well, and take in god part your cause of absence, being assured, that if possibly you could returne soner, nothing should stay you from the place, where the onely remedie of your dolorous graces abideth. But seeing for my loue you may not forsake my Brother, I pray you for your continual safetie, and speedy conduction to your longing desires, that mine eyes ouerwatched with tedious expectation, and my heart nere tyed with bootlesse wishings, may by your presence be thorsely comforted. Afterward Vrbaniillo briefly reported to her the noble actions of his Lord and Maister, the loue of Trineus to the Princesse Agriola, describing her beautie and rare perfections, whereupon Polynarda thus answered:

Believe me Vrbaniillo, if the Princesse be so faire as thou saiest she is, her great vertues and firme loyaltie likewise comparable, enuy and false report shall not impeach her, to be reckoned among the most happy Ladies of the world, and her desires will be as honorably effected, as with vertuous thoughts she first began them. The like I doubt not will happen to thy maister, for fortune hath euermore so specially fauoured him, as now it were against reason she should alter her countenance. So departed the Dwarf from the Princesse, returning to the Emperour, who by no meanes could get any other tidings of his son then what you haue heard, which made him doubt the Dwarf iuggled with him. The next day the Emperour sent his chiefest Lords and Barons, to conduct the French Ambassadors to Court, which was sumptuously hanged with Tapestrie, especially the great hall, which was adorned with costly cloth of gold and rich Purple, as it had bene the Pallace of Salomon. The Ambassadors entertained with marvellous royaltie, and having deliuered the summe of their Ambassage, the Emperour answered, that hee would conferte thereon with his Councell,

THE HISTORIE

Councell, in me any while they might returne to their lodgings. After they were departed the Hall, the Emperour demanded of the Princesse, Electors, and the rest of his Nobilitie, if these marriages of his sonne and daughter, with the heire and Princesse of France, might not bee graunted, as well for the utilitie and honour of the Empire, as for the generall benefit of Christendome, commaunding them to speake their iudgements without feare. The Lords altogether answered, that the motion was so good and the alliance so honourable, as it was no way to be misliked. I will then (quoth he) talke with the Emperesse, that she may vnderstand her daughters opinion, & then my Lords of France shall be answered. So leauing them he went vnto the Emperesse chamber, to whom hee reported his agreement with his Councell, which pleased her likewise maruailous well: but when she had a little considered on the matter, she answered, that but little could be said before Trineus returned home againe. You reason well, quoth the Emperour, but in meane time I pray you sound your daughters iudgement that we may returne our brother of Fraunce some certaine answer. Which she promised to doe, and so departing from her Lord, she went to her daughters chamber, where hauing commaunded her Ladies aside, she thus began. Faire daughter, it is the Emperours pleasure and mine, that you marrie with the eldest sonne and heire of Fraunce, and your brother Trineus with his sister, for he is one of the most renowned Kings in Europe, and his son recounted among the best knights of the world: for which good fortune you may thanke the heauens, that so great a Prince offers his Sonne to be your husband. Aduise your selfe of your answer, for by your opinion must the Ambassadors be dispatched hence, who came to the Court for nothing else but to conclude these honourable marriages. Polinarda hearing the words of her mother, was surprized with such sodaine heauines, as she could not tell what to answer: but fearing the Emperesse should perceiue that her loue was alreadye de-

termined

OF PALMERIN D'OLIVA.

termined, with a sadde countenance thus replied.

Madam, you know what promise I made my brother, the day when he departed from the Court, in the presence of you, and all the Nobilitie, that I would not marry before his returne: and me thinks I were greatly to be blamed, and well worthy grieuous reprehension, if I should so falsifie my word, which I cannot doe, without impeaching of myne Honour. And herein shall I follow the lausable vertue of the Emperour my Father, who euermore esteemed his Promise above all earthly possessions. Beside, I can assure you that my brother will neuer marrie with the Princesse Lucemanie: For hee Loues one many degrees beyonde her, and (may I speake it without offence) one of the most beautifull Ladies that euer Nature framed. Thus Madame, my Father and you haue excuses sufficient and auailable, wherewith to answer the King of Fraunce. It may bee (quoth the Emperesse) that your Brother loues else-where: but I can tell ye, that neither hee nor you shall doe any thing, contrarie to the Emperours commandement. Polinarda, seeing her Mother persist in her opinion, bitte in her sorrowes with many secreete sighes: yet knew she so well how to dissemble her passions, as the Emperesse could not discerne her priuate meaning. So returned shee to the Emperour, aduertising him of her Daughters answer: wherat he was so offended, as in great anger he came himselfe to his Daughter, saying: Why, how now Daughter? Are you so bolde to disobey my commandement? Darest you repugne against my will? All is to no end that you haue doubled with your Mother: For (will ye or no) it shall be as I haue appoynted. I knowe right well dread Lorde and Father, (quod she) that I ought no way to deny your good pleasure: But yet rather will I dye a thousand deaths, then consent to matche with the Sonne of Fraunce, considering what promise I haue made vnto my deere Brother: And if I should but once so farre dishonour my selfe, as not to regard what I haue promised, I should thinke my selfe vntoworthy hereafter to be called your Daughter. Thus stood she resolute

in

THE HISTORIE

In her answers, and therewith shedde such a boundance of teares, as the Emperour was contrayned to tell the Ambassadors; that the marriages could not bee concluded till the returne of Trineus, notwithstanding hee granted all the articles of their embassage. The princeesse quallifying her græfe as well as shee could, sent for the Dwarfe, and taking him by the hand, sayde. Alas my friende, I am now in the greatest perplexity in the world, neuertheless, one thing comforts me: that thou beholdest the true loue and loyaltie I beare thy maister, which neuer shall be broken, what euer become of me. And would to God hee were now heere, then would I speake it openly without feare of any, that I am his, and he myne. Madame, quoth the Dwarfe, if you continue faithfull to my maister, perswade your selfe of his assurance, for he building on your constancie, takes such continuall pleasure in remembryng you, that it is the onely meane that preserues his life: and you may bee bold to credit me, that if your brothers loue did not withhold him, hee would haue bin here long ere this, but he will come sone inough (I hope) to end this doubt. As for me, I am of the opinion that heauen will not suffer so good a knight to die, but first will permit him to see his mistris. Die? quoth the princeesse, sooner let all the knights in the world endethere dayes, and the eldest Sonne of France likewise, though hee loue mee so deere, so might I be rid of these importunate Ambassadors. The Emperour seeing hee could get no other answer of his daughter, concluded with the French ambassadors, that so sone as his son was returned, hee should be aduertized, and so for that time they might depart: but the emperesse and hee first bestowed on them many rich presents, and so in short time they arriued againe in Fraunce, where great ioy was made in hope of these marriages, albeit they little thought the Prince Trineus would tarrie so long. Above all other, the French prince was most ioyfull, hearing the Countie of Armignac report the wonderfull beauty of Polinarda: but shee

OF PALMERIN D'OLIVA.

the good Lady was of an other minde, for shee had rather be take her selfe to a Cloyster, then to breake her faith to Palmerin, whom shee loued so constantly. Thus leaue wee her conferring with Vrbaniello, returning to Palmerin, and the Prince Trineus.

CHAP. LXIIII.

¶ How Palmerin beeing thus on the Sea, caused Trineus there to marrie the Princeesse Agriola.



His Noble company beeing thus on the Sea, hauing wind at will, sayled with such expedition, as in foure daies they had gotten farre enough from England, and the Prince seeing the Princeesse Agriola very pensine and sadde, comforting her with many sweete welcomes and kisses, and taking her by the hand, thus spake.

O Soueraigne Creatour, howe shall I render sufficient thanks and praise to thee, in granting me the onely thing I desired? Ah sweet Madame, and my onely deere Mistresse Agriola, how much is your Seruant indebted to you? Hath any knight more cause to honour and extoll his Lady then I? Belieue mee sayre Princeesse, such are the rare effects of your gracious nature, and I so ioyfull of my happy fortune, as neyther friend or father shall fetch you againe from me. If my life might endure the length of ten mens, and every day I should accomplish wonders in your good Service, yet could I not remunerate the least parte of your Princelie deserts. But if your Loue be such to mee, as I am right well assured it

THE HISTORIE

It is, let me intreat you to forbear this heaviness, and banish from your thoughts your melancholy humours: for seeing you so sadde and pensive, I suffer a torment worse then death at false. For let me perceue (how little soever it be) that my presence may bee to your liking, and our present Enterprise somewhat more pleasing: I flye to the Heavens with conceit of happines, and value my fortune above the reach of humane capacity. In stead of teares, let vs be quainte tearms, and for the dumps, pleasant imaginations: perswade your selfe Madame, you are now in his custodie that honours you for your vertues, reuerence you for your diuine perfections, extolleth you for incomparable merites, and liueth for you, with his very uttermost endeours. Thinke not Madame, though you haue left your Parents, the fault is not pardonable: For the new allyance wherein you haue combined your selfe, shall one day glad you with your speciall content: that what you doe imagine now a dangerous offence, will bee imputed an act of prouident and Princely discretion. When shall you finde it true, what Palmerin hath spoken, and his promises of preferment, and Imperiall dignitie, shall be both rightly and sufficiently performed. Let these perswasions, if not my intreatyes, excell these Passions, and procure better comfort. Madame (quoth Palmerin) though you haue left your Native Countrey, consider the occasion, the loue of a mighty Prince, and the Heauenly appoyntment, that your noble vertues should be coupled together, hath brought you from England, to sit on the Imperiall seate in Allemaigne.

How carefull haue we haue bene of your honour, your selfe can witnesse, no motion being offered to preiudice your liking. That you are contracted before the onely Immortall witnesse, you will not denie: Therefore to prevent all ensuing daungers, the actuall Ceremonie shall be here celebrated, and the Royaltie thereof duely Solemnized, when wee shall come into Allemaigne. So if Hymen claimes his due, you may graunt it without any reproache, and Iuno will as well smile at her sacred Offering here, as if it were in Botwer, or Hall,

THE HISTORIE

hall. The credite of Princes, are chatie, and angrie Parents: may hinder, what heauen doth further: but the deede done, if cannot be recalled, nor can you be diuorced but only by death, and pittie were it, loue so well begun, but should continue, therefore (so please you) let it be performed. The Princes both agreed, they were married requiting their chaste leue, with a sympathie of vertuous desires: but this time of delight and pleasure had small continuance, for fortune enemy to prosperitie, accompanied with her eldest sennie Mischance conuerted their ioyes into sorrow, teares, and pains unspeakable, as you shall reade hereafter.

These Louers thus riding merrily on the streame, suddenly the Sea began to swell, the winde changed roughly, the Skies were troubled, and such a dangerous tempest beat upon their ship, as the Pilot, Maister, and Mariners knew not what to say, and firs dayes together they were in this perplexitie, sometime forward, then againe backward, that no hope of life was expected, but euery one prepared themselves for death, the implacable messenger of God, for they could desire no other remedy. Agriolanot accustomed to these dangers, was maruellously discomforted: but Trineus perswaded her with many examples, in that such stratagemes were vsual on the Sea, albeit, she to end the feare she saw before her eyes, would often times haue cast her selfe into the raging waters. At length the tempest ouerpassed, they descried an Island, whereto with the helpe of their Dares they coasted, shrouding themselves vnder the sides of an high mountaine: and although the place seemed casuall, yet there they determined to cast Anker, untill the Seas were more calme and quiet. Being thus vnder the Lee, and defended from the winde with the huge Rocks, Palmerin came vpon the hatches, to see what iudgement he could make of the Island, and so delectable the country seemed vnto him, as he was desirous to goe on shore, taking his Faulcon on his fist that was giuen him in England, so with no other defence but his Sword, he went to view the soyle, not suffering any body

THE HISTORIE

to beare him company. Trineus and Agriola perswaded him to the contrary, but all would not serue: for the situation of the Countrey pleased him so well, as he walked on in great contentation, not minding to returne againe to the ship, till toward the euening.

CHAP. LXIII.

How Trineus, Agriola, Prolome and all their Marriners, were raken by the Turks, after that Palmerin was gone to view the Island.



The Historie reporteth, that while Palmerin was thus absent, there arrived foure or five Turkish Galies, who like wise glad to shun the tempestuous weather, cast Anker nere to Trineus ship, and seeing nobody on the decke of this strange vessel, because (feareing no harm) they were all at rest: they enuironed it about, and hauing boarded it, the Captaine of the Turks called to them, saying: What are ye asleepe within, that ye let vs board ye without any resistance: by the reuerence of our gods we shall also take ye: but little to your ease. So came the Souldiours on board after their Captaine, who put the Pilote, the Painter, and many of the Marriners to the sword, sparing none but such as they pleased to ransom. When searching the Cabins, they found Trineus, Agriola, and Prolome, whom they tooke prisoners, by reason they were unarmed, as also somewhat sickely after their rough passage. The rouing Captaine or Pirate, named Olimael, noting the

THE HISTORIE

the singular beauty of Agriola, commaunded her to be carryed on board his Galley. When the Princesse sawe her selfe so hardly handled, and that her Lord was prisoner with these villainous Moores, so that perforce they must abandon one another: she brake forth into pittifull acclamations, and looking on her husband, thus spake. Ah my Lord, how hard and strange is this fortune: haue we escaped a tempest so dangerous, now to fall into this mercilesse extremitie? Oh that you and Syr Prolome had bene Armed, that these Moores might haue bought our liues with the sword: But despiightfull chaunce hath so thwarted vs, as no meane is left to prevent our perill. Ah Palmerin, how greuous is thine absence, and how displeasing will our mishap be to thee: how much would thy valour now auaille vs, being utterly destitute of any succour or refuge? I know our mishap will so offend thee, as I feare thou wilt do some outrage on thy selfe. With these words she fell downe among them in a dead trance, the sight whereof so enraged Trineus and Prolome, as snatching weapons out of the Moores hands, they laide about them so lustily, that in short time they had slayne halfe a score of them. But unable were they to contend against so many, wherefore being taken againe, they were bound so cruelly with Cords and Chaines, as rent their tender and delicate flesh in many places: and being so conuayed into another Galley, their Squires likewise prisoners with them, the Moores tooke what they pleased out of the ship, and when they had done, set it on fire. When presently they weyed Anchor, and launching away, made haste, least any reskew should follow them, so that quickly they lost the sight of the Island, and Olimael returning to see Agriola, assayed by any meanes to assuage her heavinesse, embracing her in his armes, and promising her great riches if she would be pacified. But all his speeches were in vaine, for shee seeing the Moore embrace her, with angry stomache like a Lyon enraged, caught him by the haire and the throte, saying: Thou villaine Dogge, thinkest

thou I take any delight in thy company? How darest thou traitourly these lay hande on mee? And so roughly did she struggle with Olimael, as if his men had not assisted him, shee had strangled him: notwithstanding hee took all patiently, perswading himselfe, that by gentle speeches, smooth flatterings, and large promises, hee should in time win her to his pleasure. So came he forth of the cabin, with his throat and face brauely painted with Agriolae nayles, washing away the blood, which made comely circles about his phisnomie: then called hee the Captaines and chiefe of his company, willing them to share the bootie among them, and hee would haue nothing but the Princeesse for his parte, for hee was so inueigled with the beautie of his prisoner, as he had no delight but onely in beholding her. In this manner then he bestowed his prisoners, Trineus hee gaue to one of his Cozins, and Ptolome to a knight that serued the Soldaire of Babilon, the Squires and the pelse hee gaue among the common Souldiours. But when the Prince saw hee must needs leaue his Lady, and each man would carry his prisoner whether him pleased: his græse for his wife, and for reuenge for his friendes, I leaue to your iudgement, as not able to be expressed. Yet some hope of comfort hee reposed in Palmerin, that by his meanes (being escaped theyr hands) he should get againe Agriola, else was there way lesse to helpe him. Ptolome who deuely loued the Prince, before they parted, thus began. Why how now my Lord? Where is your wonted prudence and discretion? Where is that constant magnanimitie, which in so many fortunes heretofore you vsed? What? is it lost, or haue you forgot it? What meane ye? Will ye be subiect to passions, as a weake effeminate person? You that are sprung from the most ancient noble and generous race of Chyristendome, esteemed for a most courageous and vertuous knight, will you be dicken into these sad and desolate opinions? What then would a Turke, Moore or barbarous Myrmidon doe in like afflictions? when he that hath assurance of his God, knows that

that all persecutions, fortunes and mishaps, are proues of his fidelitie, and the meanes to attaine eternall quiet, shewes these vndutifull behauiours, as though he had lost all meanes of hope and comforte. If the body be afflicted, let the spirit be animated, and armed with patience, against all infirmities of the flesh. Leau these soft countenances for Women, and if you will not perswade yourselfe, that these troubles happen for the encreasing of our ioy, it may bee the meane that God will forsake vs. When neyther feare or displaye I pray you, for hee that suffered vs to fall into those Moores handes, both can and will deliuer vs againe. As for your Lady Agriola, doubt not of her vnconquerable loyalty, for shee hath in her custody a iewel of such vertue, as no one can dishonour her against her owne liking. Comfort her selfe then in the power of the highest, and repose your selfe on the constancie of your Lady, with this certaine perswasion, that this crosse and aduersitie hath fallen vpon vs, for our greater good and aduancement hereafter. Then came Olimael, and interrupted theyr talke, commanding nine or ten of his people, to conuay Trineus into another Galley, and Ptolome into that where his Maister was, that so they might depart, to recouer the rest of theyr Gallies, which were scattered from them by reason of the tempest. And so they departed one from another, the Galley wherein Trineus was discrying a goodly Ship of Chyistians, whereof they beeing glad, sette sayle with the winde towards the Chyistians, who rode away so fast as they could, and had escaped, but that they met full with certaine Pyrates of Natolia, who ioyning with the Gallies, in the ende boarded her, and parted the spoyle among them: the winde suddenly beganne to chaunge, so that they were constrained to fyre for succours to an Illande in the Kingdome of Portugal, which they reached in good time, glad to shew themselves from daunger: These Pyrates thus come to land, went all on shore to refresh themselves: but they had not looser sette fote on land, such enchantments were cast vpon

OF PALMERIN DOLIVA.

peared through the whole Isle, as they presently knewe not one another. But to acquaint you with the manner of these Enchauntments, you must note, that the Isle where they landed was called Malfada, which name was giuen it by the Lady thereof, which was called likewise Malfada, the moste subtil Magitian of her time: so that we may say of her, as the Poets feigned of the auncient Circes. And albeit she was issued of Christian Parents, yet having such familiarity with the Diuel and his malignant spirits she would not acquainte her selfe with any goodnesse towards Christians, but daylie practised theyr harne and destruction. And for this intent, she had of a long time before Enchaunted this Island with such Charmes, that what Shipping soeuer arriued there, could neuer depart thence againe, much lesse such as once entered within the Island. They being thus stayed, Malfada would come her selfe, and chose such as shee liked, therest she transformed into Harts, Wolves, Dogges, Beares, and all manner of Beasts. Such likewise as shee took with her into her Foxceresse, when he hadde abused them to content her owne pleasure, shee would cast them forth, transforming them as shee did the other: In briebe, shee was worse then a Diuell, this Island was a very disguised hell. This wicked woman knowing that more vnfortunate people were landed at the Hauen, called her Seruants, and came to see them: but she made no great account of them, wherefore shee commaunded her trustiest Seruants to take away all the riches forth of the Shippe, connecting it by her Enchantment, that it seemed like a bottomlesse gulfe. Afterwards at her pleasure, she transformed them that came into it: Among whom Trineus was changed into the shape of a very fayre Dogge: not that hee was so, for that is a thing against nature, and which God no way will permit that Man shall take any Beutish shape, or a brute Beast assume any humane forme. For the Magicians dispositions thus holde theyr Arte, that the Enchaunted become themselves Beastes, and of that was this disguised Partue: notwithstanding, these distressed Captiues had

OF PALMERIN DOLIVA.

naturall reason and humane power, but the benefit of speech was taken from them. And thus was Trineus transformed, which he seemed not to mislike, for not remembring himselfe, he forgot all his heauie passions maruelling only at his sad-daine mutation. And here will we leaue him in his strange desolitic, to report what befell to the Princesse Agriola, after that dolorous separation betwene her Lord and her.

THus Gentlemen haue we left the Prince Trineus transformed into the shape of a Dogge, in the Isle of Malfada, by the Enchauntresse: the English Princesse Agriola, in the custody of the Turkish Pirate Olimael: Ptolome and Colmelio carried into Aethiopia, and Palmerin raunging in the Islande with his Hauke for his delight. Right strange will be the meeting of all these friendes againe, after the hazards of many perillous fortunes. For Agriola thus separated from the Prince her husband, is married to the great Emperour of Turkie: how wonderfully the ring which Palmerin gaue her, preserues her chastitie, will bee worth the hearing. How Palmerin counterfeiting himselfe dumbe, doth many rare exployts in the Isle of Calpha, will be as acceptable. How Palmerin gaines his Polinarda, Trineus his chaste wife Agriola, Ptolome his Brionella, and all Honors meeting together in the Emperours Court of Allemaigne, will be so strange as the like was neuer heard: and all this performes the second part, which shall be published so soone as it can be printed.

FINIS.

A. Mundy

Honos alit Artes,

THE
SECOND PART
OF THE HONOURABLE
HISTORIE, OF PALMERIN
DOLIVA.

Continuing his rare fortunes, Knightly deeds of
Chivalrie, happie successe in loue: and how
he was crowned Emperour of
Constantinople.

*Herein is likewise concluded the variable troubles
of the Prince Trineus, and faire Agriola the
Kings daughter of England: with their
fortunate Marriage.*

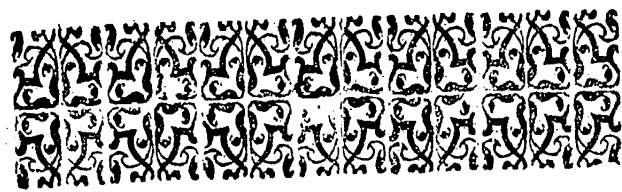
Translated by A. M. one of the Messengers of
her Maiesties Chamber.

Patere aut abstinere.



LONDON,

Printed by T. C. and B. A. for Richard Higgenbotham and
are to be solde at his shop, at the signe of the Car-
dinalshat without Newgate, 1616.



TO THE RIGHT

HONOURABLE AND HIS

VERY GOOD LORD EDWARD

DE VERE, EARLE OXEN-

ford, Viscount Bulbecke, Lord San-

ford of Badelesmere, and Lord

high Chamberlaine of

England.

*A.M. wisheth the full issue of his
noble desires.*



Fromise is debt, my good Lord, as
the Prouerb anoucheth, & debt must
needes bee paide, as reason requi-
reth: the one not arguing so much
liberalitie in speech, as the other
doth vertue in accomplishing. Whē
I presented your honour the first
part of this Historie, I promised to hasten the other
to the selfe same Patrone: whereto I haue bene vehe-
mently induced, by the gracious and affable receite of
the former, and therefore (kissing your hand) I offer
the conclusion of worthy *Palmerin*. Nor hath it beene
so tedious and troublesome to mee in the translation,

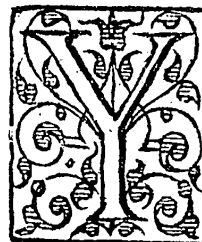
The Epistle Dedicatorie.

as I hope you will conceiue delight thereby in the reading: howsoeuer it prooue, I neede not despaire, hauing a Iudge so honourable, who measureth good will farre beyond abilitie.

*Your Honours in all
humilitie. A.M.*



TO THE FRIENDLY READERS.



Though long, yet at length Palmerin is finished, and hauing endured so many bitter brunts in search of aduentures: after all, now remaineth either to bee commended or condemned by your censure. Condemne him you cannot with reason, considering all his actions haue beene so honourable: as too malicious were the man would deale so hardly with him that hath giuen no occasion of offence. Commend him then you must, in respect of his manifold vertues, thrust all together in the face of Fortune, onely for your delight and recreation.

As concerning his sonnes Palmendos and Primaleon, the one is kept vnder his Mothers wing the Queene of Tharsus, and the other sporting in the Court at Constantinople: not daring to set foote in the stirroppe after Knightly exercises, till they heare how their father speeds. If he haue that fauor his deeds deserued, then on goes their Armour, and in the chiefeest places of Christendome will they shew themselves, with repetition to the world of wonderfull aduentures.

But while they expect good newes or bad, Paladine

A 4

sonne

To the Reader.

sonne to the king Mylanor of England, is posting to you: what he and the noble Prince Manteleo of Millaine doe, in knightly affaires of most noble Chivalrie, the Historie shall deliuer: which is already on the presse in good forwardnesse. From my house at Cripple-gate this ninth of March. 1588.

Yours to his vttermost
Anthony Monday.



THE SECOND
PART OF THE AVN-
TIENT AND HONOVRA-
ble Historie of *Palmerin D'Oliua.*

Continuing his rare Fortunes, Knightly deedes of Chivalrie, happie successe in Love, and how hee was crowned Emperour of Constantinople. Herein is likewise concluded the variable troubles of Trineus, and faire Agriola of England, with their fortunate Marriage. &c.

CHAP. I.

¶ Howe Olimael presented the Princesse Agriola to the great Turke, who immediately became amorous of her: and what rewardes and preferment the Pyrate receyued for his gyft.



Yet I am sure you cannot chole but call to your memorie in the first parte, howe the Pyrate Olimael divided his Prisoners, reserving for himselfe none but the King of Englands Daughter, hoping in time to purchase her liking. And being alone with her in the fairest Cabin in the Galley, he devised by all the best meanes hee coulde to comfort her: But yet all his

THE HISTORIE

his labours were lost, and bestowed in vaine, for she would not receiue any kinde of succour, desiring euery houre to dye, hauing so lost her Lorde Trineus. Hee seeing that fayre speeches, offers, gifts, & other enticements proper to perswasion, could not compasse y^e thing he desired, he grew into Choller, intending to gaine his pleasure perforce, so that after many threatnings, with rough violence he would needs rauish her. Agriola seeing that her feeble strength could not long withstand this cursed Turk, albeit she straued and rested so well as she could: therefore with deuout prayer she called on God, desiring him to take pittie on her, and not to suffer that villainous Ruffian to dishonour her.

Her Prayer being ended, Olimael beganne in such sort to tremble, as he staggered back wards foure or fife times, and so exceedingly was he surprized with feare: as hee was constrained to leaue her, and withdrew himselfe into another place. The Princesse, though she were amazed at this sudden change, and noting with what terror the Captain departed: yet was she greatly comforted by her happy deliuerance, imputing the whole work therof to the Almighty prouidence, and the vertue of the King that Palmerin gaue her: wherefore with a thankfull heart, and eleuated eyes to Heauen, she said: Oh celestiaall Father, how great and infinite is thy Goodnesse: how happy is the Creature whom thou regardest with the eye of pittie: assuredly I now perceiue, that such as in extremitie haue recourse to thee, shal no way perishe. Then taking the vertuous King, and kissing it many times, saide:

Unualluable Jewell, giuen mee by the best Knight in the world, how carefully wil I keepe thee: how true is that saying: That great persons, giue great presents; Henceforth shalt thou be kept (for the loue of him that gaue thee, and for thy singular Vertue) in the place where I usually store things of greatest price. So taking a little Chayne of Golde, which serued her as a Bracelet, she fastened this worthie Jewell thereto, and put it about her Neck, so that the

OF PALMERIN D'OLIVA.

the sumptuous Stone laye glittering betwene her Pillke-white Breests, a prospect so rare and delicate, and of no lesse power to drawe the beholders eyes then the Adamant, the Amber, or the Teate can by their Vertue: Beside so wonderfully replete with sweete regard, as I dare affirme that the moste cruell Tyrant in Turkie, would stand amazed at those two daintie Mountaines, more mortified and humbled then the Aged Hermites of Thebaida. Olimael yet quaking at this sudden alteration, durst presume no more to offer her villainie, but by rich gifts and presents sought to perswade her: All which auailed not, for as hee got but little profite by his violence, so tooke he much lesse by his treacherous offerings. So sayled they eyght dayes together, Olimael not able to compasse Agriolas loue, nor hearing any tyding of the Vessells that were lost, neyther of his Cousin who had Trineus captiue, which grieved him as nothing could do more, in that hee was so unprouided, as wel he could not present himselfe before his Lord, to whom he had promised to bring store of Christian Prisoners, and now in his bootlesse Loue so lost his time, as eyther the Tempest or shipwracke, had spoyled him of his owne companie. In this doubtfull opinion, he debated with himselfe, that the great Turke did earnestly affect fayre Ladies: so by the meane of his beautifull Prisoner, he imagined to be entertained with good countenance, and his losse would be past ouer with forgetfulness: Wherefore he commanded the Pilot to make toward the Port of Ottobant, where as then the great Emperour of Turkie sojourned, and thither they came in short time after. Notwithstanding, as a Seruaunt well instructed, not daring to abuse the familiarity of his Lord, hee sent one of his knightes to excuse his cause, and to report, that by casuall mischaunce hee had lost his men and Gallies: but if his Maestie pleased to forget his misfortune, and receiue him into his accustomed fauour, he would bring him one of the fairest Ladies in Christendome, and descended of most Royall Parentage. The

THE HISTORIE

Emperour being lasciuious, and more addicted to vncleane desires then any in his Domiaion, hearing this Message, was surprized with the onely report of her Beautie, as immediately he became passionate for her Loue: sending the private word that hee could not bring a more desired present, and therfore remitted all his offences, promising him greater fauour then euer he had. And because no contrary occasion may hinder his conuining (quoth the Emperour) thou shalt carry him this Letter, sealed with mine own signet, that hee may no way doubt of his assurance. The knight taking the Letter, and kissing the Emperours feet, according to the custome, returned to his Bailiff, deliuering him the answer he had receiued. Olimael ioyfull thereof, caused Agriola to clothe herselfe in her most sumptuous Garments, and so with all his men set forward towards the Court. Now although the Princesse was all blubbered with teares, and halfe dead, to see her selfe in the power of these Strangers, professed and sworne Enemies to her faith and religion: yet could not the rare perfections of her Beautie be shadowed, but the glimse thereof set euery Eye to wonder. And as she looked about her, to see if any of her company were landed with her, she espied Ptolome, whom they minded secretly to conuey from her: but she beholding him so sadde and sorrowfull, stept towards him, saying: Ah my deere friende Ptolome; what dreadfull chaunce hath Fortune throwne vpon vs: but well may I content my selfe, for this is a iust scourge for mine offence, and vndutifull obedience to the King my Father. Ah my Lord and loyall Husband Trineus, neuer shall I see thee againe, for God doth know whether these villains haue sent thee. Ah noble Palmerin, who was wont heretofore to comfort mee, too much hast thou sayled vs, all thy former promises are now altered: for in steed of Imperiall soueraignty, pleasure & honor, I am requited with pouerty, griefe, shame, & mockery. Ah Death, sweete death, too long desired death: why comest thou not to ende all these miseries? But God will not

per-

OF PALMERIN DOLIVA.

permit thee, because by my tormenys and afflictions, I may feele the weighty burthen of my offences, and large hauntie of his merries.

Ptolome seeing her in this mournfull beration, saide. It is no time now (Madame) thus to disquiet and offende your selfe: but rather (as wise and well gouerned) to beare these aduersities, euen with as great content as your former prosperities, taking in good part whatsoever shall happen, for I am in good hope, and my minde perswades me, that I see shall be deliuered by noble Palmerin, who I am well assured endureth greater griefe in his libertie, hauing lost vs, then we can doe in this our imprisonment. Olimael exceding angrie to see Agriola wepe, violently puld Ptolome from her, charging his men, not to suffer him once to come within her sight, which he suffered patiently, because he saw it was in vaine to riue against the picke. When they came to the Pallace, and admitted to the Emperours presence, Olimael kneeling downe before him, and kissing his fote, presented Agriola to his Maiestie: who seeing her of such a rare and wonderful Beautie, saide to Olimael.

This Present (my friende) is of such surpassing value, as thou couldest neuer honour me with the like: Good reason is it therefore, that a gyft so precious, should be rewarded with like recompence, and so perswade thy selfe I will, that thou shalt say the Emperour is bountifull. As for the Ladie thou hast giuen me, I perceue is so faire and gracious, as I intend neuer to haue any other Wife: and that I may espouse her with the greater magnificence, I will stay till the hallowed day of my Coronation, when all my Princes, Barons, and knights, will be heere assembled, and then in their presence shall our Nuptials be solemnized. Now had the Emperour a woman captiue, named Hyppolita, who was a marchants Daughter of Scicilie, and better child in all Languages then any Ladie in the Courte, for which hee made speciall account of her, reposing great confidence in her, and acquainting her with his chiefest secrets: wherfore hee sent for her before

Agriola,

THE HISTORIE

Agriola, and saide: Hyppolita, I giue you this Ladie in keeping, commaunding you to intreate her as our owne person, and that all meanes may be practised, to cause her forsake this sadde Melancholie. In conference you may shew her what Honour and happinesse shee shall receyue by falling into our hands, and what incomparable Fortune it is to her, whome we shall please to accept for our Wife. All which Hyppolita (with great humilitie) promised to accomplish, and so conducted her into a most Princely Chamber, the floore couered all ouer with cloth of Tissue, and hung about with most sumptuous Tapistrie and cloth of Gold, as hardly might the riches thereof be valued. There Hyppolita caused the Princesse to sitte downe in a Chayre of estate, which was purposely provided for her, demanding her Name, and of what countrey she was.

The Princesse answered, that shee was of England, but further of her state she would not be tray. Hyppolita speaking perfectly the English tongue, tooke great delight daily to commune with her, and because Agriola shoulde the better like of her conuersation, shee tolde her that she was likewise a Christian, but that by constrainte shee followed the Law of Mahomet, and his Alchoran. In further speeches, shee acquainted her with the estate of the Sulcanes, in the Court of the great Emperour of Asia: which communication serued well to weate away the time, albeit the Princesse tooke small pleasure therein, Olimael in consideration of his Noble present, was created high Admirall of the Mediterranean Sea, and furnished with greater floz of Forsses and Galleges, then he had before.

CHAP.

OF PALMERIN DOLIVA.

CHAP. II.

¶ How the great Turke summoned all the Kings and Princes his subiects, because hee minded to holde open Court: and how hee married with the Princesse Agriola his Prisoner.



Hyppolita being daily conuersant with the Princesse Agriola, because she had so good knowledge in her Language, at length the Emperour himself came to her Chamber, and to the ende hee might the better behold the Princesse, hee sate him downe in a Chayre opposite to her, and there hee sate a long time, not able to content his Eyes with looking on her, and beholding her excellent Beauty: for speake to her he could not, because shee vnderstood not the Turkish language. Wherefore hee commaunded Hyppolita to request her name, and what her Parents were: which to satisfie his Paier, shee did: Agriola thus answering her. In vaine Ladie, saeke you to knowe of me, the thing which death cannot force me be tray: Let it suffice you that I am a poore Gentle-woman, the moste vnforsunate that euer liued: with which words shee wept very grievously. The Emperour moued with pittie, departed to his Chamber, so surprised and inflamed with her Loue, as hee could take no rest one minute of the night: considering with himselfe, that seeing shee esteemed so little of the riches she saw in his Wallace, and refused the offers made her by Hyppolita, that doubtlesse she was extract of some Noble Linage.

The next morning hee called his foure Secretaries, commaunding them to write to all the Princes of his Empire, that

THE HISTORIE

that they should not faile to honour the day of his coronation with their presence, and to bring with them their Quenes and Daughters, and this they should do on paine of his displeasure: all which was performed with present expedition. In the meane time, he caused diuers sumptuous ornaments to be prepared, with all manner of precious Jewels could be deuised, and these he daily sent to Agriola, but all these presents, promises, and manifest entertainement, could no way moue her, not so much as to graunt him a gracious countenance. He likewise sent for the best Ladies to his Court, that they should keepe the Princesse company: but she would be conuersant with none but Hippolita, of whom she had so pretily learned the Arabian tongue, as many times she could indifferently answer the Emperour. But when he be-held her continually pensive, and that by no means she would be comforted: he doubted least his presence did offend her, and therefore he forbore so often to visite her. For so dearly he loued her, as for the halfe of his Empire, he would giue her no occasion of discontent, hoping in time (which is the Lord and Conquerour of all things) to alter that humour, and purchase her loue, which he desired with earnest affection. But now at this day, where may we find a Lady so vertuous & well gouerned, since captiue as Agriola was, & could not be won by such a mighty Emperour, considering her youth and beauty, & the wonderfull riches incessantly offered her. Yet the highest Lord so protected her, that the more liberall the Turke was in honours and persuasions, the more loyall continued her loue to Trineus, whose perfect image was engraued in her hart. And not fearing torments or death, she boldly answered the Emperour, that he trauailed in vaine, for she might not loue him, in that she was married to an Husband, more noble euery way then he, and none but him she would loue while she liued: yet made he no great account of her words, considering what scaltie commonly is in women. The day being come of this great preparatiō

and

THE HISTORIE

and at the Princes present to vnderstand their soueraignes will: he being placed in his imperiall seate, said, That he intended to take to wife, one of the most beautiful Ladies in the world, and for that cause he sent for them, to vnderstand how they liked thereof. Their answer was, that they liked well thereof, and would gladiely honour her as well as seemed them. Then sent hee for Agriola, and before them all, saide vnto her, that it was his pleasure to accept her for his wife, and therefore she should prepare herself on the morrow to be married. The Princesse abashed at these speeches, fell downe before him in a dead traunce, wherupon, by the Quenes and Ladies present, she was conueyed into her Chamber, where being againe reuiued, she began most pittifull and dolorous lamentations: so when all the company had left her, that she was alone with Hippolita, falling downe on her knees at her beds fete, she thus beganne.

O my God and benigne Father, pittie the poore distressed creature, and forget the offences I haue heretofore committed: for what is a sinner, vlesse thou in mercie suffer her to come before thee? Wilt thou then vouchsafe (O wonderfull workeman of the whole world) one eye of pittie vpon thy humble forsaken seruant: and suffer her not to fall into subiection, to the vowed enemy of thy holie word, arming me so strongly in this temptation, that I no way inurie my Lord and Husbande Trineus, but rather graunt this desolate spirit, may leaue this body and the world together. Ah my honourable Lord Trineus, where art thou now? that thou art not heere to defende the shame and wrong this Tyrant offers thee: what, art thou dead? or hast thou forgotten me? No, no, so well am I assured of thy fidelitie, as no torment can diuert thee from me. Yet if I knew direlie that thou art not liuing, the lesse would be my feare to follow thee: for then the greatest pleasure this Pagan could doe me, were to make mee happie onely by death. But for the matter is vncertaine, and that I liue

15

un

In hope since more to see this: I will patiently endure all afflictions whatsoeuer, for so small a reward as is the loue. These sorowes of the Princeesse to grieued Hippolita, as one could hardly iudge who was most passionate, yet at length she thus spake to Agriola, I beseech you good Ladie to leaue these grieuous lamentations, and regard the high estate, honor and dignitie, that you shall haue in marrying with my Lord. I neuer perswade me (quoth the Princeesse) to manifest disloyaltie: for such preferments, if they be not gotten iustly and by vertue, they ought not to bee coueted, but to be shunned as diuillish Serpents. Thus spent they the whole night, & in the morning came the Queenes and Ladies newly come to the Court, to bid the sorrowfull Bride good morrow in her Chamber, attyng her in wonderfull gorgeous bestures, after their Countrey maner, farre beyond the royaltie of Helena, after her arrivall at Troy. Betwene foure Kinges shee was brought into the great Hall, and from thence conducted to the Temple, where they were espoused by the Most. To recount here the royall solemnities in the Temple, the Beautie and unspeakable dignity at the Pallace, the excellent Comedies, rare triumphes, Balques, Pomeries, Boylscoes, & such like courtly pleasures, would be a matter too proluxious: for they are not to our purpose. Let it then suffice ye, that after they were magnificently intreated at Dinner and Supper, the dauncing began, & God knewes how the Turkes, Moores, Arabes & Medes, sette forth themselves in their deuities and sports before their Ladies, much like the Satyres and horned Faunes, giuing new inuasions on the Pinches of Diana. But all these meruailes, ioyes, and folkes, could not chaunge the Princeesse countenance, for she continuing in her pensiuenes, these sports were worse to her then the tormentes of death: above all, fearing the losse of her chastitie, which was a Jewel neuer to be reconcured. The pastimes ended, by the Queenes and Ladies she was conducted to the nuptial bedde, so braue and stately, as the Prince

Aeneas

Aeneas when he came to Quene Dido of Carthage, and there was the vnsfortunate Bride committed to her rest. Soone after came the haughty Bridegrome, calling for Torchies that he might behold the Goddess he honoured, and as he was preparing himselfe to bed, he was troubled with such feares, passions and apoplexie, as now he seemed more like a ghost then a man. Perforce he was constrained to forsake the Chamber, when the extremitie of the fit soune what asswaging, and his former loue passions freshlie assailing him, comming to the Princeesse againe, heauily & thus spake.

Oh Agriola, Ladie and sole Mistresse of my heart, I thinke thou art some Goddess, or (at least) exceeding all humanitie: so strange is this aduenture, as neuer any man (I thinke) heard of the like. Alas, cannot thy anger be appeased: nor thou induced to leue him, who for thy sake endures most horrible tormentes? I pray thee be not the cause of my death: or if thou needes wilt, suffer me first to enioy the fruites of my desires. Know my Lord answered Agriola, that with my wil you neuer shall enioy it, & if perforce you seeke to dishonour me, assure your selfe I am resolu'd, rather to suffer endlesse miseries, then to violate my faith to my loyall Husband: for such is my trust in God, that hee will not forget such as call on him. But in respect thou hast not bene cruell to me, nor hast exercised mee with any tyrannie, I shall suffer thee to lye vpon the bed by mee, as my Brother might doe, and sometime (though it be more then modestie) embrace thee in mine armes: but if further thou presumest, thou maist not be permitted, but shalt loose that fauour, thy selfe, and me together. Madame, quoth he, in granting me that courtesie, you saue my life, for I haue many Concubines to quallifie those passions, and neuer will I attempt your dishonour while I liue, if I but offer the motion, refuse me for ever. I shall therefore account of you as my Sister, and death shall not make me do contrarie to your appointment. The yong Princeesse glad of his

solemn promise, gaue him a kisse or twoaine, and suffered him to embrace her: but other kindnes could he neuer obtaine, contenting himselfe with this, because he loued her so speciallie. At fifteene daies end, the feastes being ended, the Princes took their leaue of the great Sultane, who with manie rich presents sent them home into their Countries. Thus remained Agriola with the great Turke, and the knight to whome Olimael, had giuen Prolome and Colmelio, sailed with his prisoners into Aethiopia: and thenceforward vsed them not as slaues, but as Gentlemen of good qualitie, especially Prolome, whom hee reputed a hardie knight, and a man bozne to great enterprises.

CHAP. LXII.

How Palmerin after his recreation, returned to the seaside, and seeing the Shippe and his company gone, made great lamentation, and what after followed.



Before in this Historie you haue heard, how Palmerin walking on shore with his Faulcon on his fist, desired to see the pleasantnes of the Ile, and finding so many delights to withhold him, returned not toward the Ship till it was neere night: but when he came thither againe, and could not see the Ship nor any one to question withall, he was greatly amazed, running heere and there, yet all to no purpose. Sometime he imagined that Trineus had betrayed him, because he had acquainted him with his loue towards his Sister: and then againe resolved himselfe on the contrary. All about he looked

ked for his companiōs, not knowing what to think: whether they were carryed away by Pirats, or taken Prisoners by the Inhabitants of the Island. In the end, hauing compassed in his minde all imaginations he coulde, and seeing that by his reuward of pleasure he had lost his friendes: he entred into many sorrowfull lamentations, farre exceeding Cadmus when he lost his Souldiours by the horrible Serpent, cursing and exclaiming on himselfe, as he had bene guiltie of the death of his father. Alas (quoth he) why did I not remember these wretched misfortunes by poore Varnan? whose sorowes was likewise procured by a Hawke, in an haplesse houre was this wicked Wyrd giuen me. Ah trecherous and deceiuing strumpet, I thinke thou art some incorporate fiende sent from Hell to inuere the most constant Louers: and therefore gentle Diuile, or rather enchaunted diuell, thou shalt neuer hereafter displease any other, so taking her by the necke, he pulled her in places, and said.

Ah swete Ladie Polynarda, how contrary is Fortune: and how unhappely our desires prevented? Well am I assured, if Trineus come to the Court without me, it will endanger your life, and the onely thing that shalbes mee fro death, is comfortable hope to see you once again. Therefore diuine Mistresse, I call for your succour, that by your gracious assistance, I may endure these vehement occasions. Ah gentle Princesse Agriola, how haue I deceiued you: but in requitall of your wrong, no rest nor ease shall possesse my soule, till I haue brought Trineus and you to as great ioy, as by my meanes you haue receiued discomfort. In these complaints he laye him down vnder a Tree, and so wasted the time till morning came, when seeing no creature to speake withall, nor any meane for him to passe the Sea: he determined to trauaile through the Island till he might meete some bodie to conferre with. Thus hauing no defence, but his Sword vnder his arme, hee walked along, and at length he met a Grove with foure Spanielles,

and a Harlin on his fist: whom hee humbly saluting, demanded the name of the Countrey, and if there were any shipping neere for his passage. The Dore perceiuing by his language, that he was a Christian, in great anger answered, Art thou come so farre to seeke thine owne misfortune: by Mahomet I shall welcome thee hither with a vengeance. So laying hand on his Semitary, Palmerin perceiuing by his gesture (though he understood not his talke) that he wished him no good: wherefore drawing his sword, he gaue the Dore such a stroke on the head, as he cleaued it to his very teeth, and said, By God villaine, thou shalt not take me prisoner, or send me into the Sea to seeke my ransom, and so may all discourteous varlets be serued, as resemble thee in conditions. Thus leauing the Dore dead, he tooke an other way, least if he should bee followed, hee might fall into daunger: but seeing he was vnarmed, and could not speake the Arabian tongue, hee imagined that at length he must needes be taken. Hereupon he returned backe to the Dore, and taking his garments, left his owin there, and thence forwarde determined to counterfeit himselfe dumbe: by which subtiltie hee thought to escape vnknowne, and preuent his imprisonment, till he founde meanes to returne towards Allemaigne againe. The day stealing on apace, and darke night approaching, he came to a faire fountaine, of the cleereest water (in his opinion) that euer he saw, where he laying him downe to rest, consumed the night so quietly as he could. On the morrow he began to remember his miseries, his dangers past, and such as were imminent, the conceit whercof made him very melancholly: so after he had eaten a little breade, which hee found in the Dores budget, according to the manner of Diogenes, he laid him downe againe and slept.

CHAP.

CHAP. VII.

How Palmerin counterfeiting himselfe dumbe in the Isle of Calpha, was found by certaine Turkes, as he lay a sleepe by the Fountaine: and how he was receiued into the seruice of Alchidiana, Daughter to the Soldane of Babilon.



NOW that you may the more easily vnderstand, in that which followeth, the full intent of our discourse, you must call to memorie, how Gamezio, who was slaine before Constantinople by the Prince Florendos, as you haue heard in the first part of this History: was Son to y^e Soldane of Babylon named Mysos, & Brother to Maulicus, who at his death was a very yong Prince. Mysos vnderstanding by his Subiectes y^e Gamezio, the hope of his declining age, was gone by the summons of Atropos, to the habitation of his Gods, could not afterward enioy any health of body, or quiet in mind, and therefore ere a yere was fully expired, he went to seeke his Sonne among his equalles in the fieldes of Elysiu. Before he toke this iourney, wherein no creature returneth againe, hee charged his succeeding Sonne Maulicus, to reuenge his Brothers death: being perswaded, that himselfe should not be discharged of his infortunate remembrance, in the other world, if he failed to accomplish his latest commandement. Maulicus, not to hinder his departure promised he would, yet could he not fulfill it, being troubled in his owne Kingdoms, more then 20. yeres after.

THE HISTORIE

But after he had reduced the rebellious Provinces into obedience, he married with the King of Armeniaes Daughter, by whom he had the Princesse Alchidiana, one of the most beautifull and gracious Ladies in her time: who being come to age of experience, was so loued of her Father, as he would neuer suffer her out of his sight, so that he made denyall to all such as requested her in marriage. Alchidiana, when she vnderstood her owne singularity, desired the company of the most beautifull Ladies in Asia, because she held this opinion, that when y^e fairest were present, beauty would then be most splendant. For this cause she sent to Prince Guilharan, Sonne to Polidia her Mothers Sister, that hee should bring his Sister Ardemia to the Court, who was counted the Paragon through all the Monarchie of Babylon.

She being come to the Cittie of Calpha from whence the name of the Island was deriued, her Cozin Alchidiana deuised all the meanes she could to entertaine her withall, and among other Courtly recreations, they daily vied hauking and hunting. It so came to passe, that these Princesse and Gallants of the Soldans Court, now ryding to theyr pleasure, the Knights delighting the Ladies in beholding the braue voltages of their Horses, and their swiftnes in course like the winges of Pegasus: after choyle of many places for game, they came by the fountaine where Palmerin lay a sleepe so soundly, as he neither heard theyr horns nor halloving. Which when one of the Horses perceived, intending to make all the other laugh, hee allighted from his Horse, and coming to him that meant no body harme, sayd. By Iupiter this sleepe fellow is drunke, but I will awake him, that hee may iudge the prize of our course: with which wordes he gaue Palmerin such a blow on the eare, as made him turne his heade on the other side. Palmerin suddainly starting vp, and seeing him stand scorn- ing that thus had strooken him, he drew his sword, and therewith sealed the Horse a quittance for his life, whereat the

OF PALMERIN DOLIVA.

the other Ambushed, came to reuenge theyr companions death: but Palmerin casting his Mantle about his arme, layd about him so lustily, as he sent fire more after their fellows, and any one that came nere him, he layde at his foote, eyther maimed or slaine outright. Alchidiana maruelling at this stratageme, as also to heare the outrageous noyse of the Horses, came riding towards them, demanding what hee might be, that made such hauock in her presence: The Knights gaue place to the Princesse, so that she came very nere to Palmerin, who intraged like a saluage Boare in the wood, made a bloody massacre among the Horses, & whē she beheld his braue and comely featured bodie and hardy courage, she perswaded herselfe that he was descended of high and noble birth, and if she sought not means to cease this turmoyle, it would procede to a greater daunger: therfore (moued with pittie) she commaunded her people on paine of theyr liues, to holde themselves quiet while she demanded the cause of this tumult..

Palmerin well pleased that the Princesse so succoured him, imagined by her exceeding Beauty, and sumptuous ornaments, that shee was theyr Soueraigne, wherefore casting himselfe at her foete, offered her his Sincere: which courtesie not a little contenting her, saide: I know not my friend, whether thou be Knight or Squire, but whatsoeuer thou art, saying (of thine owne good wil) thou hast thus yielded to me, I will defend thee against all other. Therefore tel me what hee was, that against my will did first assaile thee? Palmerin with reuerent obeisance, made signes of his thankfulnesse, and with such good countenance dissembled to be dumbe, as one would haue iudged hee had neuer spoken. This poynt man (quoth Alchidiana) the Gods offered great wrong, in depriving him of speech: for this I wil say, (hadst thou vtterance) thou wert one of the brauest accomplished men of this world, both in sweete complexion, courtesie and hardinesse. Notwithstanding, thou must needs be high in theyr grace, being able to encounter with so many,

and defend thy selfe so worthily as thou hast done. Then was she certified by an ancient knight, that one of the Squires of her Chamber smote him, as hee lay a slepe, which he reuenged in such sort as she had sene. Trust me (quoth she) the dumbe man did as well belamed him, wherefore in respect of his ciuilitie, and that he can so well correct the overboldnesse of foles: I will entertaine him as one of our Court, forbidding any to wrong him, as they tender my fauour and their owne liues. So commanding buriall for the dead, & prouision for the wounded, she went to her Daullion, which was not farre off, willing Palmerin (by signes) to goe with her, deliuering him his Sword againe, and saying he would be her seruant. Humble graces did Palmerin requite her withall, and in signe of his obeyesance offered to kisse her sate, but she would not permit him, and taking him vp by the hand, sayd: Loke that hereafter thou go not from me, whereto by signes he consented, knowing that by her meanes he should be safely protected. While these courtesies on either side endured, the Princesse Ardemia & the other Ladies entred the Daullion: but Palmerin earnestly beholding Ardemia, was amazed at her wonderfull beautie, imagining that she much resembled his Ladie Polynarda, so that breathing forth a beheiment sigh, he could hardly with-hold himselfe from speaking. The tables being couered for their hunting banquet, very choyce delicacies were serued in on great plates of Gold, garnished with very pretious and costly stones, which caused Palmerin to maruaile not a litle, who the Princesse seeing so sad, said: How now my friend? dost thou not thinke thy selfe safe in my presence? Welcome me on my word, if any one displease thee, he shall presently die the death. So causing him to sit by her at the table, instructed him so well, as he had bene one of the chiefeest Barons in her Fathers Court. The Tables withdrawne, the Hunters had started the Hare: which was so narrowly pursued by the Hounds, as to saue her selfe, she ranne into the Prin-

Princesse Daullion, but the Greyhounde was so speedy of pace, as he caught her in the presence of Alchidiana, who with her owne handes took her from the dogge, and gaue her in keeping to one of her Pages. By this time it drew towards night, wherefore each one mounting on their Horses, set forward to the Citie: the two Princeses having no other talke all the way, but of the singular behauiour of the dumbe knight. They riding faire and easily, because Palmerin trauelled by them on foote, Ardemia beholding his goodly Sword, demanded of him if hee were a knight, which he by signes made known vnto her, wherof Alchidiana very ioyfull, said, that shee would present him to the Soldan her Father, and for this cause, the more she beheld him, the greater pleasure she conceived in him. Being now come to the Gates of Calpha, there stood many knights ready with lighted Torches to conduct the Ladies and their traine to the Pallace, which was so rare and sumptuously edified, as Palmerin was amazed to see such roialtie.

All the way Alchidiana had the dumbe knight by her side, giuing him her hand to allight fro her Horses, which he did with exceeding reuerence, and nothing discontented with his office: but many knights and Princes there present, murmured thereat, thinking him not worthy to come so neere her, nor mighe he be so suffered, but that the Princesse somewhat enamoured of him, would suffer none to contrary her pleasure: had leaned on his arme all the while she went vp the staires of the Pallace, to giue the good euen to the Soldane, who staied his daughters returne in the great Hall. Still leaned she on Palmerin, till she came to her Father, who sat in a magnificent Chaire of estate, hauing the resemblance of the Armaiment ouer his head, (after the Turkish maner) so garnished with Rubies and Diamonds, which with the lights of the Torches shined most gloriously: whereat Palmerin wondered, conducting the Princesse with so haue gesture, as many reputed him some

THE HISTORIE

some Noble personage, and others (enniously) thought the worst of him.

The Soldane, who loued his Daughter as you haue heard before, arose from his Chayze to welcome her home, demanding what spoyle she had on Hunting, and if she had brought any Prisoner home with her: Certes my Lorde, (quoth she) we haue better fortune then you thinke on: but before I declare the manner thereof to you, will it please you to giue me what I haue founde this day: The Soldane, not able to denye his Daughter any thing, liberally graunted her request. A thousand thanks, good Father (quoth she) this dumbe knight hath your Mercie giuen me, who (in his owne Defence) hath this day slaine certaine of your knights, and hereof you may assure your selfe, that hee is one of the most hardiest Gentlemen that euer came into these partes. Seeing it is your request Daughter (quoth he) I could be well contented to graunt it, but how shall I answer the friends of the murdered, to whom I haue already promised, that for his offence he shall be deliuered to the Lyons: So, which of these graunts ought best to be kept, yours, being my Daughter, wherein Nature ruleth, or theirs being my Subjects, which the Lawe commandeth: I may not be iudge herein, saide the Princeesse: notwithstanding, mee thinks (vnder your Highnes correction) that you haue bene but hardly counselled, to giue a sentence so cruell, hauing not yet heard or seene the partie. And albeit hee were guiltie of blame, as hee is not, but before his condemnation, hee ought to be heard how hee could cleare himselfe, but if hee must dye, I hauing assured him life, and taken him into my defence, the disgrace is so great to mee, as mine Honour must remaine for euer condemned. And you my Lord and Father, whose Authoritie may discharge me of this reproche, if you refuse now to assist me, the griefe hereof will be my death. These words she spake with such affection, and so heauilie weeping, as would haue moued a stony heart to pittie her: wherefore Maullicus touched with

naturall

O F PALMERIN D'OLIVA.

naturall remorse, sayd. You shall perceiue Daughter what I haue deuised, to the end my word may not be impeached: He shall be put into the Lyons Denne, and suddainly taken out againe, by this meanes I shall keepe my promise to his accusers, and satisfie your earnest desire. And the better to content you herein, his enemies shall be perswaded that he escaped the Lyons with life, and then will I giue him safety thorow all my dominions. The Princeesse fearing the blood thirstie desire of the Lyons, could not so content herselfe, which Palmerin perceiuing, that the Father and Daughter thus contended for him: fell downe on his knees before the Soldane, making signes that he should accomplish his promise, for he feared not the danger of his life. Maullicus maruailing hereat, perswaded his Daughter that being so hardie, he might escape: therefore to content herselfe, for things should be handled in such sort, as the knight should no way be endangered. These wordes somewhat contented the Princeesse, caused Palmerin to be conducted to his Chamber, charging him that was appointed to attend on him, to see that he were very honorably vsed, and in the morning to bring him againe before her Father. The Soldane and his knights spent all that evening, in diuers iudgments on the dumbe knight, each one being glad of the Soldanes sentence: but Alchidiana was so peniue (considering the dangerous hazard hee should passe) as she stong to her Chamber, refusing all suite, naunce, and spending the time in dolorous complaints, desiring rather her owne death, then the dumbe knight should be any way harmed.

CHAP.

CHAP. V.

How Palmerin was put into the Denne among the Lyons and Leopards, and hauing killed three of them, escaped valiantly.



Palmerin being brought to his Chamber, which was one of the most sumptuous in all the Pallace, according as the Princeesse had appointed: he made signe to the Gentleman that attended on him, to withdraue himselfe, for hee was accustomed to be alone in his Chamber, which he immediatly did, being loth

to offend him. Palmerin being alone by himselfe, gaue thanks to the God of heauen, who in midst of his misfortunes, caused such a gracious Ladie to fauour him so kindly, as defended his life when he was in daunger, and by whose meanes he conceiued god hope to escape his enemies handes, and to returne safely towards Allemaigne. His meditations ended, he betooke himselfe to rest, and in the morning, Linus the Gentleman that had him in charge, came and presented him befoze the Soldane, who commaunded him to be caried presently to the Lyons. Alchidiana vnderstanding that the dumbe knight was with her father, sent him a rich Mantle of Scarlet, desiring him to were it for her sake: which hee putting about him went frankly with his keeper to the Lyons Denne, where the doze being opened, he boldly entred, desiring God to assist him in this perrill. Palmerin being in the Denne, becase none of the Lyons should get forth to hurt any other, how euer
God

OF PALMERIN DOLIVA.

God disposed of him: made fast the doze after him, and with his sword dyalune, and his Mantle wrapped about his arme, went to see how the Beastes would deale with him. The Lions coming about him, smelling on his clothes would not touch him: but (as it were knowing the blood royall) lay downe at his feet and licked him, and after ward went to their places againe. But there were among them three Leopards, that furiously came and assailed him, the foremost wherof he paunched with his sword, that he was able to doe no more harme. The other two, although they had toyne his Mantle, and put him in very great daunger, as they that looked in at the windowes and creuises perceived: yet to their no little admiration, in the end he slew them both, and so went forth of the Den again, to whom Linus came and louingly taking him by the hand, brought him to the Soldane, to whom hee discoursed his fight with the Leopards, and how gentle the Lyons had beene to him.

The Soldane greatly astonished hereat, made more estimation of him then he did before, and because the Lions refused to touch him, reputed him of royall parentage. Whereupon he sent for his Daughter, praying her to intreate him not as a knight, but as a noble and vertuous Prince, considering his behaviour so well deserued. The Princeesse entertained him very graciously, and hearing the successe of his happy fortune, spake thus in the hearing of them all. Because euery one shall know, Sir knight, how much I honour your good gifts, I will cause my father so well to loue you, as hee shall repent himselfe a thousand times of the daunger he put you to: and so very louingly embracing him, desired pardon on her own behalfe, because she suffered him to be thrald to the Lions. Palmerin in signe of attonement, & that he was nothing displeased, kissed her hand, and sitting down in a Chaire by her, beheld Ardemina, who resembled his mistress so equall in beauty, and could not hold his eye from her, so that hee conceiued such
pleasure

pleasure in his regard, as he indged it sustenance enough to maintaine life. But she that was ignozant of the cause, presumed that he loued her, wherfore thence forward, she began so amozously to affect him, as she enioyed no rest but in his presence. Thus were these two Ladies Alchidiana and Ardemia touched with one disease, and that so sharply to the quick, that the least torment they endured (seeing he could neither speake nor vnderstand their language) was worse to them then death. And so it fell out, that each of them thinking herselfe best beloued, cōcealed her thoughts from the other, and would in no case be reputed amozous, least so her desires should be discovered. Alchidiana for arguments of her loue, gaue him Horses, Squires, Seruants & Pages, so that the greatest Prince in the Court was no better equipped then he: & in this fortune such was his minde, that for all the honoz and fauour y^e Soldane and his Daughter bare him, he did not outreach himselfe in behauiour, but was so benigene and full of courtesie, that each one loued & desired to be familiar with him. And if any enterpryse of Ioustes or Tourneyes were in hand, Palmerin was y^e foremost in the field, and caried the prize away from all what soeuer, which incited Maucius to loue him in such sort, that he entertained him into such special credite, as he wold neuer resolve on any matter of importance, without his shew of good liking. And albeit the Princes of the Court shewed him good countenance, yet Enuy (that neuer can rest in ambitious hearts) caused them in the ende to raise slander against him: which Palmerin perceiued, but being unable to remedie, alwayes conuenient time for his departure, notwithstanding the earnest affection Alchidiana bare him. He knew likewise so well to disguise his matters, that so often as the Princeesse would hold him in talke, hee still feigned not to vnderstand her: which made her iealous towards Ardemia her Cousin, who by Alchidianaes injuries, and Palmerins refusal of her loue, lost her life, as you shall read in the Chapters following.

CHAP. LXII.

How the Prince Maurice sent his Ambassadors to the Soldane, to desire safe conduct for his comming to the Court: to try if he could find any knight there, able to deliuer him of an extreame trouble, that hee endured by enchantment.



During the time that Palmerin was thus esteemed and beloued, in the court of the great Monarch of Assiria, upon a Sunday after dinner, as the Soldane was in the great hall conferring with his Daughter, and many other great princes and Lords present: there entered a More knight arme, except his Helmet, Gauntlets, which were carryed after him by two Squires, and making his solemn reuerence, humbled himselfe at Maucius feet, saying: most high and redoubted Monarch, my soveraigne Lord Maurice, sworne Prince to Palmeria, kisseth your highnesse hand, sending to require your gracious safe conduct, that himselfe may come to your Court, to trie among all your knights, if there be any one so loyall and valiant, as can deliuer him from a torment he endures, the most cruell and strange that euer was heard of, and happened to him in this sort.

The King Palmeria, great Gouvernour of the Mores, and Father to my Lord, being vnable (through extreame age) to wield the government of his Realme, gaue the administration thereof, and made his Lieutenant generall
my

THE HISTORIE

my Lorde Maurice, a knight so hardie and puissant as any of his time, and so renowned for his bountie, sagacitie, and brave lineaments of bodie : as there is none of the kings of Iudea, Egypt, Ethiopia, and neighbor Countreys round about, but gladly desire his Alliance and Friendship. So that many haue sent their Embassadors vnto him, presenting their Daughters and Kingdomes to him, the greater part whereof he hath hitherto refused, excusing himselfe by his fathers age and his owne youth. But as often times it happeneth, fortune enemy to all good endeavors, not suffering him to remaine in quiet, permitted that the Quene of Tharsus, the sayrest in all the Orientall partes, a young Widow and rich, as is very well knowne: after shee had sent him many presents of incomparable value, intreated him to come and see her, shadowing in this message, the great desire shee had to match with him. The Prince being benigne and courteous, would not deny her, but in short time after iourneyed to her. The Quene entertaining him with great royaltie, and seeing in him farre more gracious and beautifull gifts, then before she heard reported : was so surprised with Love, as in steede of looking to be wooed, herselfe was constrained to demaund, knowing so well to declare her desirous and affectionate passions, as the Prince moued with amorous pittie, graunted what she requested, without any further condition or promise, presuming on himselfe, in respede of her great and fauourable entertainment, that he would not leaue her for any other. But herein was shee deceived, for the yong Prince hauing staid with her tenne or twelue dayes, desired leaue to depart, saying : that he had receiued Letters from his father, which commaunded his speedie returne home againe, promising her, (if so his father consented) to take her in Marriage, and that with such expedition as might be. The Quene somewhat contented with this answer, thinking he would performe what he promised, let him departe. He being come home into his owne Countrey, forgot his Loue to his new

Friend,

OF PALMERIN D'OLIVA.

friende, and by his fathers commandement, married with a young Princesse, Daughter to the king Lycomedes. The Quene hearing these newes, was almost dead with very conceite of griefe, and conceived such hatred against the Lord Maurice, as she determined to be reuenged on him, whatsoeuer came after. And the better to compass her intent, she sent to search out one of her knights, a learned Magician, promising him, if hee would helpe her to be reuenged on him that so deceyued her, she would make him one of the chiefest of her Realme. The Magician who euermore was desirous to please her, promised her to worke such a deuile, that Maurice should endure such cruell torments, as herselfe should be constrained to pittie him. And to accomplishe this practise, hee only desired the king her fathers Crowne, which was one of the richest in the whole world : which Crowne hee Coniured in such sorte, as the Diuell himselfe coulde not imagine the like, and comming therewith to the Quene, saide :

Madame, you must sende this Crowne to the Prince of Pelmecia, desiring him for your sake he will weare it on his head, in the chiefest affayres of his estate, which he immediately will accomplishe : but this I dare assure you, that hereby he shall suffer so many vexations, as he would endure a thousand deaths if hee could possible, to be deliuered from this torment, which he shall neuer be, till the most loyall louer in the world take it from his head. The Quen so ioyfull hereof as could be, sent the Crown to the Prince, who receiued it thankfully, and beholding it so sumptuous, suddenly put it vpon his head : But presently felwe out of his head such a flame of fire, as it had bene the blaze that cometh from a discharged Cannon. Then called hee for ayde and succour, making the greatest lamentations that euer were heard : but all was to no ende, for no knight or Lady there could doe him any good : and so all the whole day hee remained in this cruell martyrdome, burning aliuie, yet not perishing, resembling the Salamander in the extreame fire.

fire. When his people saw that they could procure him no ease, they sent two of the greatest Lords of the Realme to the Quene, who humbly intreated her to pittie the Prince: and to recompence the faulte he had committed, hee should take her to his Wife, and endowe her with those honourable possessions belonging to him. The Quene enterfayned them very poblely, and after shee had vnderstood theyr message, answered:

My Lordes, the marriage betwene your Maister and me is intollerable, and no way can hee now Contract himselfe againe: For I remembryng his disloyaltie, and the torments he suffers by my meanes, it were impossible that we should louingly liue together, therfore in this matter you shall excuse me. And let him know, that seeing hee was so presumptuous, contrary to his faith and promise, to refuse me for his Wife, I now so much disdaine and contemne him, as my heart by no meanes can bee induced to loue him. And no other remedie, therefor his torments, but that hee seeke through Asia, Europe, and Affrica, a Louer so perfect, who by his loialty may ease the paines he suffers, for his treachery and treason. With this short answer depart my Countrey: for your Maister is so vnworthy of fauour, as for his sake, I hate his people.

The Embassadors maruelling at this ffall destiny, returned to theyr Lord, to who they reported the Quenes answer, and what remained to ease his affliction, which more and more encreased his grieve: wherfore seeing what he was enioyned to do: The next day he left the Court, intending not to stay a day in any place, till hee should finde a Knight so vertuous & loyall. Thus hath he travelled Echipia, India, Tarraria, and the greater part of your Dominions, but as yet he hath found none to remedie his misfortune: but if any other disloyall Knight in triall touche the Crown, his verations are far more greater then before. For this cause most mighty Lord, hauing heard the great fame of valiant Knights in your Court, especially of a stranger Knight

A knight being dumbe, who came hither but of very late time: hee desires your Maistie, his assurance granted, to suffer him to trie his fortune here, if in your presence he may finde any helpe, or else to seeke further in other Princes Courts. These are the principall points of my charge, may it please your highnesse to consider of mine answer, whom I shall returne and certifie my Maister, that you may likewise see an aduenture most marvellous.

CHAP. VII.

How the Prince Maurice came to the Court of the Soldan of Babylon, where he was deliuered of his burning crowne, that tormented him, by the loyaltie of Palmerin.



Molicus, wondering at this strange discourse, thus answered the Poete. You may (my friend) returne to your Maister when you please, and say from vs, that he shall be welcome to our Court, with as safe assurance as our owne person: as well for his valour and bounty which I haue heard greatly esteemed, as for that we are desirous, to see so strange an aduenture ended in our presence. And we cannot sufficiently maruaile, how he could be so forgetfull of himselfe, that after his faith broken, he could extinguish her remembrance that loued him so vnfeignedly: but herein may we behold the soueraigntie of confident louers. Go then and certifie him of our pleasure, and that we

We pray our gods his coming may be in such an houre, as he may depart to his content: yet am I greatly afraid that he shall not finde any knight in our Court, but that either he faisted or failed toward his Ladie. The more kissing the Soldans hand, and humbly taking his leaue, returned to his Lord, leauing the Soldane and his knights admiring this rare accident, so that he exorted euery one, to aduenture his fortune at this Crowne, to giue the greater assurance to their Ladies, of their loyall fidelitie: but many of them were herein deceiued, for in stead of prayse & glory, they receiued shame & reproch, as you shall see hereafter.

The Prince aduertised of the Soldans answer, in hope of good successe, set forward on his iourney, and the next day following he came to Calpha, where Mauleus caused him to be honourably lodged in the Cittie, because that day he would not come to the pallace. On the morrow after that Lethea wife to the Soldane, her Daughter Alchidiana, the faire Ardemia, with many other Ladies and Princes were come into the hall, to see the tryall of this noueltie: Prince Maurice vnderstanding how the Soldan with all his Courtly assistants stayd his coming, went to the Pallace, accompanied with an hundred knights, all clad in mourning blacke, in signe of their continuall sorrow for their Princes misfortune. There was he very royally entertained, the Soldane causing him to sit by him, in a sumptuous Chaire of estate, of purpose prouided, and after many welcomes and kinde gratulations, the Soldane demanded how he felt himselfe, and whether he sustained any ease of his torment. Ah my Lord, quoth the Prince, I cannot expresse to your Maiesty the pain which I feele, being a thousand times worse to me then death, & euery houre enforcing me to despaire, but I must endure it with what patience I can, till incomparable loyaltie discharge me of this burden. With these words he lamented exceedingly, so that each one was moued to pittie him, for such a burning flame continued in the Crowne, and so furious heate

proceeded from his mouth, as sette the Hall in mercurialous hotnes, yet consumed he nothing at all, but in euery part was so formall as any other man. Beloued Cozin, said the Soldane, for my selfe, I will not enterprise to meddle with your Crowne, for I do not imagine my selfe so fauoured of loue, as I can finish that wherein so many haue sayled, nor would I willingly seeke mine owne dishonour, being farre vnable to profit you: as for my knights, let them make proofe of their loyaltie and spare not, and see which of them can winne the honour of this aduenture. Hereupon Guilharan, & other to sayre Ardemia first entred, and coming to the enchaunted Prince, sayd. Trust me my Lord, since I began my profession in loue, I neuer committed any preiudice to my Lady, therefore will I try to ende this enchauntment.

Then earnestly beholding Alchidiana, for whose loue onely he came to the Court, he approached to the enchaunted Prince, and puld so hard as he could at the Crowne, but he crying aloud, sayd, For Gods sake Sir Knight strue no longer, for if by disloyalty I could be cured, I see you are able to giue me remedy. Alas, in all my life I neuer felt like payne, by any knight that tryed his fortune, great neede haue you to doe seuerer penance, if you will bee fauoured by loue any more, towards whom you haue so heynously offended, for my infirmitie may not be holpen, but by loyaltie, firmnes, faithfull pursuit, constant perseuerance, and such other honoured vertues esteemed in loue, whereof you haue not the least particular. Thus rettyred this new louer, more ashamed then a Virgin to bee seene lightly disposed, and so sette downe among the other knights, whose fortune proued as effectually as the first, to their owne disgrace, and great torment of the languishing Prince. The Kings and auncient Princes, seeing the yong knights could doe no good, put themselves in deuoir, each one conceiuing so well of himselfe, as if they fortune serued to ende the aduenture, they yeares should carry the honour,

THE HISTORIE

and they be reuenced for euer by their Ladies: but their baine conceit and desire to accomplish an impossibilitie, much abused them, so that they shamefully remained frustrate in their intents, and the paines of the enchanted Prince greatly augmented, who thus spake to them. Truly my Lords, it is the custome of your auncient and audacious opinions, to extoll your loues and valour: but for any thing I see, your olde yeres haue much lesse merited amorous mercy, then the indiscreet and vncoustant dealing of these yong Princes. When seeing that no other offered to proue his vertue, deliuering many gracious sighes, he said: Unhappy wretch that I am, how much more had it bene to my ease and benefite, if the Queene of Tharsus (whom I so heynously offended) would haue contented her selfe in her reuenge, as cause me to be pœcemeale tozme in sunder, then thus haue deliuered me into this insupportable veration, the ende whereof will neuer be accomplished, seeing that this honourable Court of my Lord the Soldane, I find no one can giue me comfort.

Palmerin hearing the Lamentation of this amorous Party, fell into a profound imagination, and after he had long regarded Ardemia, who so liuely resembled his Distresse Polynarda, said within himselfe: Ah sweet Madame and onely Distresse, vouchsafe at this instant to assist me, for by your succour I shall now make proue of my faithfull and inuicible loyaltie: which neuer in ought offended you, if not at Durace in affecting Laurana, whom I simply thought to be the Lady, who was so often promised in my visions. But seeing my thoughts neuer sorted to effect, as also that I was deceived in your name: that ought not be imputed to me for any trespass, and therefore diuine Goddess be fauorable to me. When surprisid with suddaine joy, he beganne againe earnestly to behold the Princesse Ardemia: who imagining herselfe cruelly beloued of him, cast forth a bitter sigh, and turning to Alchiana, sayd: Ah Madame and my deere Cozin, what great fault hath this

cruell

OF PALMERIN DOLIVA.

cruell Queene committed, appointing her Magique in such sort, as loyall and faithfull Ladies may not bee suffered herein, for deliuerance of this yong and beautifull Prince: doubtlesse he should sooner receiue helpe by them then by Knights, for much more loyally do they loue then men, and are in their affections firme and constant. Alchidiana, who felt herselfe touched with this intricate sury, whereof the faire Ardemia complained: suddainly coniectured, whereto her sighes and faulting speeches tended, which rayled priuate conceit, and such a vehement attaint of iealousie, as she would not answer any word, but feigning to smell some discontented sauour, turned her face the contrary way. Palmerin looking round about him, and seeing none would meddle with the aduenture: fell one his knee before the Soldane, crauing leaue by signes to try his fortune, which he granted, and in a laughter, said: Goe thy waies dumbe Knight, and in such an houre maist thou touch the crowne, that all the honour may fall to thy share. Then Palmerin hauing his eye fixed on her, who in beauty did paragon his onely Distresse, exalting his minde with an intire sigh, secretly sayd:

Ah mirrour of excellency, although my body bee farre distant from you: yet am I in spirit day and night in your presence, being so confidently assured of your loue, that is no iote inferiour to mine, which very thought makes me thinke you present before me. Wherefore these Distresse and Gouvernesse of my life, you shall now receiue the honor, that by the vertue of your faithfull Seruant you ought to haue: for I hold my selfe towards you, so innocent and pure, as needes must answerable successe repay so good deserving. Then laid he hand on the burning Crowne, which he toke from his head so easily, as though no enchantment at all had held it: and then ceased the vehement heate in Maurice, and from his mouth came odiferous and sweete saouours, as euery one present delighted to seele thm. The Prince so ioyfull as could bee for his deliuerance, as may well

THE HISTORIE

well be coniectured, prostrated himselfe at Palmerins fete, and with unspeakable ioye, thus saide: Most Noble and fortunate Knight, how much am I bound and indebted to thee: right happy was the houre of thy Birth, but much more happy my Journey to see thee: let my word suffice, I so farre deliuer my selfe yours, as my selfe, my subiects, my possessions, or whatsoeuer els is mine, I freely offer to your disposition. Palmerin, who euer bare the mind of a valiant knight, was displeased that so great a Prince should honour him with such reuerence, wherefore with great humilitie he took him vp in his arms, causing him to sit down where before he did: But the Soldane and all his Lords greatly amazed, not so much at his courtesie, as his gracious fortune, did him all the honour could be deuised: but hee bath full of this ouergreat kindnesse, knéled down before Maulicus, shewing by signes that himselfe was altogether unworthy of such honoz, but his Maiesty, to whome that rich Crowne worthily appertained, which hee presenting the Soldan knéled down to kisse his fete, but Maulicus would not suffer him, & taking him vp by the hād, said: Sir knight, we hartily thank you for the great pleasure you haue done vs, promising you by the faith of a Prince, that this crown shall be kept in our Treasure, in witnes that we had in our Court, the most loyall and honourable among all knights. In recompence whereof, wee giue you this Citie, with all th' appurtenances thereto belonging, and to morrow will we put you in possession thereof. Wh that it pleased the immortal powers, and their great prophet Mahomet, to deliuer you speech, whereof you are destitue: For I sweare by their high and immortal name, wee would make you the greatest in all our Kingdoms. Palmerin with humble gesture returned his thankfulness, signifying that he would haue neither Citties nor Castles, but that it sufficed him to be one of his knights: notwithstanding, the Prince by importunate meanes gaue him rich gifts, & for his sake stayed there more then two moneths.

CHAP.

OF PALMERIN D'OLIVA.

CHAP. VIII.

¶ How the Princesse Ardemia, enduring extreame passions and torments in Loue, made offer of her affections to Palmerin, which he refused: where-with the Princesse (through extreame conceyte of griefe and despight) suddenly dyed.



Asly may be coniectured, the great pleasure of the two fayre Ladies Alchydiana and Ardemia, beholding the only man whome they both loued as their liues, aspyring to obtaine the honour of the Enchaunted Crowne: For each of them seuerally perswaded herselfe, that hee had thus aduentured in honour

of her Loue. And as they returned from the great Hall to the pinate Chambers, Alchidiana came and took Palmerin by the hand, and walking on wards with him, thus spake:

Oh gentle knight, how are you to be regarded aboue all other? I know not why the Gods should deprive you of speche, except that in all things, this onely excepted, you should be perfectly resembled to them. Oh how happy is shee that might but aduenture to make you her Seruant: doubtlesse, if in her appeare so singular perfections, as apparently shewe themselves in you: Well might it be reputed a rare coniunction, when the Celestiall dispositions governing theyr humane affections, hath vnited you in so ameyable alliance.

The Gentleman that attended on the Princesse, greatly murmured at this pinate familiaritie: but she was so immoderate in her affections, as Virginall modestie was

new

THE HISTORIE

now forgotten, and carelesse of regarde, openly shewed her desires. Thus were these two Ladies now, much more amorous of the dumbe knight then before: So that they were not well, but eyther in his companie, or thinking on him. Alchidiana remaining tealous of her Cousin, seemed not to loue her as she was wont, but deuised all the means she could, that shee might be sent to her Fathers Court againe: yet she that little made account thereof, sought opportunity to bewray her Loue to Palmerin, and by happe seeing Alchidiana in the Gallery, conferring with two of her Ladies, shee entred alone into her Cousins chamber, where sitting downe on the Bedde, shee compassed manie imaginations, how she might discouer to the dumbe knight, the secreete fire that was kindled in her Breast. So long she stayed there, till Palmerin came, because about that time he was wont to visite the Princesse Alchidiana. Ardemia so glad hereof as could be possible, suddenly started vp, and saluting him with more then common Reuerence, taking him by the hand, and causing him to sit downe by her vpon the Bedde. Then enflamed with wonderfull passions, surpassing Pasiphaes desire to the brutish Bull, when she met him in the Wood made by Dedalus, shee beheld him with such a piercing countenance, as the least glimpse whereof, was able to confound the reason of the most constant person, as the aspect of the Sunne in the signe of Leo, doth the eyes of the beholders, & of force to warme the coldest complexion, although it were an Eunuche himselfe in her presence. Then deliuering three or foure bitter sighes, fetcht from the very bottome of her heart, as cruell as the striking pangs of death: she took a rich Diamond from her finger, and put it on Palmerins, with these words:

O sweete Friende, and onely comforte of my soule, let me intreate you to weare this as an argument of my loue, whereby to knowe, how well you esteeme of mee, assuring you, that I am so deuoted yours: as if you vouchsafe to saignt me the fauour & honour by journeying to the Court
of

OF PALMERIN D'OLIVA.

of my Father with me, I neuer will haue any other Husbande but you, and there shall such account be made of you, as well becomes a knight so noble and vertuous.

Ah diuine defence of my life, and more worthy to be beloued then Loue himselfe, misdeame not of these speeches so aduenturously uttered, by a young Ladie, and unmarried: for the seruient Loue I beare you is such, as I am constrained (forgetting the decent regard of a bashfull Virgin, who naturally is shamefast) to esteeme of you honestly, and as is conuenable to mine estate. When seeing the Gods, the place, the occasion, & the time permits mee to bewray, that which I dare not otherwise manifest: Haue then sayre knight some pittie on me, & let me enjoy assurance of that grace, for which I liue in ceaselesse torments. With which words she embraced him, & sealed so many sweete kisses on his hand, as apparantly deuiphred her earnest affection.

Polinarda amazed at this strange accident, because shee was a Pagan, and contrary to him in faith, that making no answere, but following the example of chaste Ioseph, who refused Zephirah Wife to Putiphar, great Prouost to the King of Egypt: started from her suddenly, and being moued with displeasure, departed the Chamber, thinking in himselfe, that such occasions more ouer rule the hearts of men, then all other matters that might bee deuised, and only the practises of hellish Pluto. When calling to his Ladie for assistance, said to himselfe. Ah sweet Distresse, succour nowe your Seruant, for I rather desire a thousand deaths, then to violate the chaste honour of my Loue, or to giue that fauour to this Lady which is only yours. Alchidiana, by chance seeing Palmerin when he entred her chamber, & perceiuing him to depart againe: imagined presently the truth of the cause: wherefore entering the Guardrobe, which was adioyning to her Chamber, she closely stood and hearde all that had passed, and at his coming forth stayed him in this manner.

Not without great cause (good knight) didst thou take
the

THE HISTORIE

the fatal Crowne from the head of Meurice, for in this is more firminesse and continencie, then is in the disloyall Ardemias vnchaste desires and villainy: but in an vnfit time did she rip open her vniadientlike affections, for I will publish her shame to euery one, and cause her to be lesse esteemed then a knowne offender.

Palmerin fearing that in her Choller shee would doe no lesse then she saide, fell on his knee before her, intreating her by signes to forbear, or otherwise it would be his death. Shee seeing him so fayre and gracious, and thus to humble himselfe at her feete, quallified her displeasure, promising to keepe it in secreete. So Palmerin withdrew himselfe to his Chamber, leauing the two Ladies now together: but Ardemia grieued at the dumbe knights refusall, would not reueale her wrong to Alchidiana, (who so some as Palmerin was out of hearing) thus beganne. Why: shamelesse Ardemia, thinkest thou thy Beauty of such value, that the knight, to whom my father and I gaue done so great honours, would leaue vs, and depart with thee: trust mee thou art farre from thine account: For if thou vauntest to doe him such honour in thy fathers Court, as his Nobility deserueth, it consisteth in my power to exalt him more in one houre, then thou canst doe in a thousand yeeres, mightest thou liue so long. I did neuer thinke that such audacious and incontinent tempting a man could euer enter thy heart: but if such be thy disposition, thou oughtest rather to contain thy selfe within thy fathers Court, where thou mayest haue leasure to follow thy base affection, with some Warlets or Youthes attending on thy father, then to offer such a motion here in my Chamber. Hence, hence, forth of my presence: For I will not keepe companie with such an intemperate Woman. What regard hadst thou of thy great lineage, or the place from whence thou art descended: Wea, what comfort wil it be to me when I shal heare, that a Lady issued of the blood royall, should be more shamelesse and impudent then a Trumpet, a villaine, or an highway beg,

OF PALMERIN DOLIVA.

begger: Many other such like hard speeches vsed Alchidiana, all which grieued her not so much, as to be despised of him, whom she reputed as passionate for her loue, as shee was for his.

These high words of the Princesse, caused the Ladies attending on Ardemia to enter the Chamber, which made her then breake off, because she would not haue euery one know the matter: and they seeing their Mistresse so sad and discomfited, brought her to her owne Chamber, where on her bedde shee sorrowed so impatiently, as each one feared she would iniurie her selfe, and faime shee would be, but that their presence hindered her, therefore shee deferred it till better opportunitie. And because we had spent the most part of her yonger yeeres, in reading the booke of Poets, as well Greekes as Arabians, shee remembered the mournfull Tragedie of Biblis: which caused her to frame a Dittie, that she had translated from the Greeke poeisie of Sapho, into her bulgar speech, and turning towarde her Ladies and Gentlewomen, she began in this manner.

The lamentable Dittie of Ardemia, dying for loue.

Muse not (faire Virgins) at Ardemia,
Although her end be hard and dolorous:
For death is pleasant as mine elders say,
To any Ladie sometime amorous.

For as the Swan in colde Meander glyde,
By mournfull notes foretelles her speedy death:
So my complaint doth bid me to provide,
For sweetest loue makes hast to stop my breath.

The

THE HISTORIE

*The yll that endlesse and vncessantly
Torments my heart, is faire and choiseft beauty:
And this unhappy awkward destiny,
Falls to my lot through spotlesse loyalty.*

*For fond conceit that ouer-rulde my witte,
More wretched then faire Biblis maketh me:
And he I loue more stony hard is knit,
Then Caunus, who could ken no courtesie.*

*Yet Biblis oftentimes could ease her heart,
By sweete deuising with her louely friend:
But he I honour, reckes not of my smart,
Nor will vouchsafe one gracious looke to lend.*

*And as her sorrowes chiefly did arise,
Because the secrets of her loue were knowne:
So I reueald, each one will me despise,
Which death can stint ere it to farre be blowne.*

*Vnhappy wretch, that could not this foresee,
And be more charie of so choyse a thing:
But all too late I wish the remedie,
Therefore my folly doth due guerdon bring.*

*If loue that is esteemd a power diuine,
Vnto his Seruants giue so sharpe reward:
What merit may vile hatred then resigne,
Vnto his vassalles that his Lawes regard?*

OF PALMERIN D'OLIVA.

*Oft haue I heard mine ancient elders say,
That such as loue not, are vnworthy life:
Yet doth my loue imagine my decay,
And throwes my hope into whole worlds of strife.*

*And yet the paines I wish for my mischance,
May not be valued with my present woe:
For to compare them is meere dalliance,
And neither sense or reason should I show.*

*Life is to me lothsome and burdalous,
All pleasure seemes to me tormenting hell:
Ah poore refused, and abused thus,
Must thou needs die for louing all too well?*

*O sacred Venus, patronesse of loue,
In this distresse wilt thou not pittie me?
And thy faire Sonne that thus his shaft did proue,
Will he forsake me in this ieopardy?*

*If you forsake me in this iust request,
And will not fauour what you did procure:
Giue leaue to him that bringeth all to the rest,
And he will ease the torments I endure.*

*You fatall Sisters that haue spunne my thred,
And now thinke good it should be cut in twaine:
Fulfill the taske as you are destined,
And let my heart abide no longer paine.*

THE HISTORIE

*Come sweetest Death, expected too too long,
Ende all the euills unhappy Loue begun:
If thou delay, I challenge thee of wrong,
Hast then good Death, that Loue and Life were done.*

Her complainte thus finished, shee commaunded her Ladies to departe the Chamber, and beeing alone by herselfe, shee againe beganne to consider, the rigorous refusall of Palmerin, the conceite whereof grieved her so extreamely, as also the reproachfull wordes of her Cousin: that making a conscience of her sorrowes, and raging with extremitie of this despight, brake the veynes of her heart in sunder, and the Arteries of her body, as the blood issued forth at many places abundantly, and therewithall in shorte time she was strangled.

The next Morning, her chiefest Lady that attended on her, and loued her exceedingly, came to the Beddes side, to see how shee fared: but finding her dead, and so besmeared with her olune blood, gave such a lowde shriek, as Alchidiana and her Damozels affrighted at the noyse, ranne in all haste into the Chamber. The Princesse knowing the cause of this mischaunce, was marvellous sorrowfull, assuring herselfe, that those wordes she spake in her anger, occasioned this bloudie stratageme. And the rumour of this mishap was so soon spread through the Pallace, as all the Ladies, Damozells, Knights, Squires, and others, came to behold the hard fortune of Ardemia. What Lamentation was made on all sides, is not to be expressed, especially the Ladies attendant on Ardemia, and her Brother Guiliaran, who brought her with him thither: but her Gouvernesse not able to endure the burthen of her heavinesse, without feare or dreade of any, thus openly complained. Ah sweete Princesse Ardemia, the flower of Beauty, how deere hast thou bought this precious gift: for I know assuredly, that for this

OF PALMERIN D'OLIVA.

this cause onely thy death happened: unhappy was the houre when thou didst leaue thy Fathers Court, to accompany the Princesse Alchidiana. After her noanes, the funerall pompe accomplished, the Soldane erected her a most beautifull Tombe, with a sumptuous Coronet on the toppethereof, being upheld by two inestimable Pillers of engrauen and guilded Alabaster, the like whereof were neuer seene, since the first King of Greece. Yet was he ignorant in the case of her death, and Palmerin not imagining whence this inconuenience did arise, was so sorrowfull for the death of the Princesse: as day and night hee mourned for her, and at length remembryng her wordes to him, and doubting his unkindnesse to bee the cause of her death, saide within himselfe.

Alas fayre Princesse, must I (at the first motion) drive thee to despayre: had I dissembled a little, or temporized the matter, thou hadst not fallen into this extremity, but my onely wilfull indiscretion, is cause of thy losse. O female sexe, how are you subiect to casuall passions: Yet neede I not wonder at this present mishap, or from the beginning of the World, the Woman hath bene so sudden and voluntary to the effect of her desires, were they good or euill, but especially in the action of loue, as neyther feare, honor, shame, torments, no nor death could diuert her from her indiscreete fantasies. Here of beare record Hypermetra, Myrrha, Deianira, Scylla, Phedra, Thisbie, Oenone Phyllis, Salmacis, Hero and Dydo, whose deathes were procured onely by lawlesse loue. O diuine wisdom, that hast suffered me to fall into this lucklesse accident, protect mee from any further disadvantage, seeing thou hast taken her hence, who gaue some ease to mine affections, in that so liuely shee resembled my sweet Mistresse, whom I desire to serue with continuall loyalty. I now perswade my selfe, that this loue was not accompanied with vertue, and that for my good it hath so chanced: forget mee not then, but so enable me, as in such bad occasions, I may not

THE HISTORIE

not from my dietie. And such is my confidence in thy promises, as no temptation shall preuaile against me: but this captiuitie once discharged, I hope to direct my course pleasing in the sight, and to performe such gracious seruice, as thy name shall be exalted and glorified for ever. So long continued he in this silent contemplation, as Alchidiana perceived him, which greatly displeased her: but fearing any way to offend Palmerin, she durst not say what she thought, living in hope, that her Cousin being dead, she should now compasse the effect of her desires. Ardemia entered in her honourable Tombe, Guilharan her Brother with his traine, and the Ladies that attended on his Sister, returned into Armenia, where great sorrow was made for the death of the Princesse, and the reuoltone of her beantie, blazed the report of her death through euery region.

CHAP. VII.

How Amarano of Nigrea, eldest Sonne to the King of Phrygia, vnderstanding the death of the faire Princesse Ardemia, who was newly promised him in marriage, made many greuous lamentations for her losse. And how Alchidiana discouered her amorous affections to Palmerin.



So farre was spread the report of the strange death of the Princesse Ardemia, as at length it came to the hearing of Amarano, eldest Sonne to the King of Phrygia, the most valiant & redoubted knight of that countrey: as well for his great prowes & daeds of arm, which he before that time accomplished in Asia, as for his affable nature

OF PALMERIN D'OLIVA.

nature, vertue & courtesie. This yong Prince, being in the King his Fathers Court, hearing commended beyond all other Ladies of the East, the faire Ardemia daughter to the King of Armenia: at the very sound of the Trumpe of this blazing Goddesse, and setting the news down for true, from her affecting speech, he became so amorous of her, as he had no content but in thinking on her. Whereupon, he sent his Ambassadors to her father, to request her in marriage, whereto right willingly he condescended, and now at the instant, when he intended to goe visite her, newes came to the court of her admirable death, which for a while was concealed from him, because each one doubted the conceit thereof would cause his death. For they knowing the loue he bare her to be so vehement, as he vnderstanding her straunge kinde of death, they thought it impossible, but it would arise to very scandalous inconuenience, yet in the ende hee heard thereof: but to set downe heere the griefe, teares, and complaint of this yong Prince, is more then I am able, let it therefore suffice you, that his sorrowes were such, as euery houre his death was likewise expected. It was likewise told him, how through the enuie of Alchidiana, she dyed, and that (for certaintie) she was one of the cheefest causers thereof: which moued him then into such an alteration, as he swoze by the great Prophet Mahomet, to reuenge her iniury, so that the Soldane should for ever remember the daunger in suffering so great a treason. In conclusion, he intended to take with him, two hundred chosen knights, all clad in mourning for the grasse of their Master, and foure of his brethren, knights of great hardinesse, and so well they iourneyed, as they came within twentie miles of the Soldans Court. But that we may not too farre swaue from our intent, Alchidiana, ioyfull (as you haue heard) for the departure of Guilharan and his company: from thenceforward sought all the meanes she could, to conferre with Palmerin alone at her pleasure. And labouring thus in her tormenting passions, as it is com-

men to all Louers, such account shee made of her Beauty and Riches, as shee imagined that Palmerin would not desire her: but rather would repute himselfe happy, to haue that at his pleasure, whereof so many Kings and great Lordes had bene denied. And in this opinion, the next time that Palmerin came to her Chamber, she beganne with him in this manner.

How saye I knight, what thinke you of the death of Ardemia, who falsely would haue seduced you to goe with her hence: Did she not committe great treason against mee if she had preuailed: but right well is she rewarded, and as I desired. Thinke then no more of her presumptuous folly, or the ridiculous conceits of her vaine Loue, which she had made her pretence, to cause you forsake my Fathers Court: where you haue receiued so many speciall honours, chieflie of his Daughter, who loues you dearly, and intendes to make you Lord of all her Possessions. Belieue me saye I knight, if hitherto I deferred to acquaint you herewith, it was in respect I doubted her: But now shee being gone, esteeme henceforth of me as your owne, and to beginne this our Alliance I honour you with all that is mine, and my selfe to be disposed at your pleasure. For my hart, which is onely subiect to you, applies it selfe to your liking, and can wish nothing but what you will commaund.

How long haue I desired this happy day: How often haue I centuried and despised my selfe, in not daring to breake the seale of my affections, which now I haue aduentured to your knowledge: As for that which now troubleth mee is only the want of your speache, which the Gods haue depriued you of, being enuious of your manifold perfections. Alas my Lord, why did they not endue thee with that benefite: that in declaring my desires, thy answers might returne reciprocal pleasures:

Some in their loue delight themselves with embracing, kissing, and such retentionall behaviour: as for mee, amorous, priuate, and familiar conference, I repute a chiefe

content. Yet hath Loue one that in his Diuiner more pleasing then all these, being the onely argument of each others resolution: in respect whereof I commit my Honour into your protection, prizing, esteeming, and chusing you above all men in the world beside. Palmerin exceedingly abashed at this answer, and hauing recourse to his only comforter, lifting his eyes to Heauen, thus priuately Inuocated. O God, deliuer me from this enemy, and suffer me not to fall in consent to this temptation: for I thinke her a Diuell incarnate, and sent to deceiue me. Impossible is it that a maiden, by nature modest & bashfull, would let slip such effronted and audacious words. The conceits heereof so bered and offended him, as the Princesse feared he would haue died: not with conceit that like hap might come to Alchidiana, as did to Ardemia, but because he should so wickedly sin against his owne soule, and falsifie his Loue to his sweetest Mistresse. Yet knowing that this sadness would not satisfie the Princesse, he faigned to swoone, his colour changing in such sort, as one would haue iudged him past recovery. Alchidiana was so grieued hereat, as she could not imagine what to say: but seeing that Palmerin seemed now not to vnderstand her, and before had by signes still reuealed his meaning, saide: By our great God it may well be said, that this man is a huge lump of flesh, which the diuell hath enchanted to torment me withall, or else some other shadow and resemblance: For hee refuseth what all men desire, yea, and often dispayre, because they cannot attaine it. But fearing least her ende would imitate her Coyines, or that the dumbe knight should dye in her presence, she durst presume no further: but threw herselfe downe vpon a Pallet, not able to speake, her stomacke was so enraged. Which Palmerin sone perceiuing, arose out of his feigned Traunce, and giuing a great sighe, departed the Chamber, and went to his owne. The Princesse seeing him gone, began to weepe and lament very grievously, and in midst of her

THE HISTORIE

her melancholly, fell into these speeches. You Gods, how can you suffer one so contrary to nature, as is this dumbe Knight, to liue among men? Can you behold that he whom I deliuered from death, brought into the grace of my Father, and to whom I haue done more honour then had hee bene mine owne brother: will not regard me? but against reason, disdaineth, refuseth, maketh no reckoning of my dolours, and setteth at nought my earnest intreaties? Ah but discrete and carelesse Girl, thy folly at this time too much ouer-ruled thee, that knowing thine owne estate and high linage, wouldest submit thy selfe to loue one vnkowne to thee, and of whom thou canst haue no answer, more then of a sencelesse stocke or stone. If I can now learne to hate thee, it will be some comfort to me: but the more he iniureth me, the more am I deuoted to his loue. Then againe she contrayned her self in this sort. Yet seeing it is so, ingrateful wretch as thou art, I wil cause thee (ere it be long) to repent thy villany. In this anger she continued all the day, not comming forth of her chamber, intending thenceforward utterly to despise him: but the first time she saw him againe, she reputed him so louely, faire, and gracious, that (to die) she could not with him any haime, but loued him much better then before. Yet to couer her owne inconstancie, she sent him no more presents, nor did him such honour as she was accustomed, which Palmerin well perceiues, but hee could dissemble it in such sort, as the princeesse hardly might decypher him. For he liued in hope of the Soldans promise, which he had made to his deceased Father, to send his Brethren to Constantinople, in whose company he might traualle thither, and so escape the Turks and Infidels.

CHAP.

OF PALMERIN D'OLIVA.

CHAP. X.

How Amarano Prince of Nigrea, came to the Soldans Court, to accuse Alchidiana, as causer of the death of the sayre Princeesse Ardemia her Cozin.



During the time that the Princeesse Alchidiana dissembled not to loue Palmerin, the Prince Amarano of Nigrea came within a daies iourney of the Ile of Calpha, where hee remained to rest himselfe a little. In meane time he sent an Embassage to Maulicus, crauing assurance for his comming to his Court, to accuse one that was nere about him. The Ambassadors arriued, and their message vnderstood, the Soldane answered, that hee should haue what securitie hee would demaunde: for to the Prince Amarano, quoth he, nor y meaneest of his people, shall any thing be misdone, nor to him or the that shall defende the cause of the accused. And greatly amazed was the Soldane at these tydings, considering the distaunce betwene Calpha and Phrygia: wherefore he supposed, that some body had iniured the Prince since his arriual. Notwithstanding (quoth he to the Ambassadors) that your Lord may stand in no doubt of treason, you shall haue our louing Letters to him: and let presently be proclaimed through the Citty, by sound of Trumpet, the safe conduct of the Prince and his trayne. The Ambassadors returned with their Letters to the Prince, who ioyfull of these newes came to the Citty: but before he would approach the Court, he went to the Tombe of the

THE HISTORIE

the Princesse Ardemia, and if hee made such lamentations, when he but heard of her death, what iudgment may be sette downe of his moones, being now at the Sepulcher of his best beloved. Ah inconstant Fortune, quoth he, why wouldest thou not permit mee to see her living? Ah Ardemia, accomplished with admirable beautie, great was her sinne, who envying thy perfections, procured thy cruell death: yet this is my comfort, that I shall find time enough to reuenge thy vndeserued mishap, and he that dare gaine-saie me, with her the authoꝝ of thy tragedie, shall receiue such condigne punishment, as shall remaine for euer in memory.

These complaints deliuered with exceeding sorrowe, his Brethren perswaded him, that such behaviour becommed not so great a Prince: therefore he shoulde refer those offices to effeminate persons, who make a God of their silent passions, as for him, he would thinke on nothing, but his most fall manner of reuenge. Amarano ashamed of his owne folly, mounted on Horsebacke, and came to the Palace, where he and his Brethren entred armed, and the Prince being a man of goodly personage, had so stearne and fierce a countenance, as hee was generally reputed a hardie knight and his Brethren very little inferiour to him. He being come into the presence of Maucius, saluted him with great reuerence, and not kissing his hande as others were accustomed, because he was not his Subiecte, neyther came for peace, but matter of fight and death: after long pause, in that the remembraunce of his griefe somewhat impeached him, he began to the Soldane in this manner.

Righte Lord, and redoubted Monarch of Asia, being assured of the equall iustice, which you afford to all persons without exception: I doubt not but you will punish the partie abiding in your Court, bee his or her calling neuer so great who by disloyall treason hath too much dishonored me. For which cause, reposing my hope in your noble vertue,

OF PALMER N DOLIVA.

I haue left my Countrey, and aduentured into your presence, to accuse your Daughter Alchidiana, whom (so please you) to call before this assembly, I will charge: that she by false and spightfull hatred, as a most cruell and disloyall Ladie, trayterously murdered her Cousin the Princesse Ardemia. And because this villainie hath hitherto bene concealed very secret, in respect it could not easily be verified: I am here ready to proue in open field, against any of your knights that dare maintaine her cause, holwe the treason before rehearsed, was committed by her, in reuenge whereof, she ought to be rewarded with sharpe and shamefull death.

The Soldane meruayling at this accusation, sayd. By the reuerence of all our Gods, Prince Amarano, I cannot be perswaded, that it coulde at any time enter my daughters thought, to perpetrate an offence so abhominable: but because reason commaundeth that I doe iustice, I will send for her, promising you, that if she be found culpable in your accusation, she shall haue such punishment, as your selfe shall rest contented therewith. When he commaunded two kings to goe fetch the Princesse, who being come, satte down by her Father, her accuser not deigning to salute her or once to moue from the place where he satte. This day had Maucius, for the better defence of his person, caused five hundred armed knights to attend on him, the greater part whereof (seeing the pride of the Prince of Nigrea) would furiously haue runne vpon him, saying, that hee should repent his folly: but the Soldane offended thereat, caused a Herald presently to proclaim, that on payne of death, no one should harme or offende the Prince, nor any in his company, and whosoever did otherwise, should presently die for breaking his commaundement, thus turning his speeches to the Prince, said. Amarano, now we maist thou behold my Daughter before thee: disburden the greife of thy minde to her, and iustice shall be done thee to thine owne desire. Imagine, quoth the Prince, that such as

known

know you Madame Alchidiana, will not a little mer-
naile, seeing you accomplished with such gracious beautie,
that you should so farre forget your selfe, as to commit trea-
son. But because a matter so unlikely, demaundeth as
hard a proofe, I will auerre with mine owne personne in
Combat, against any one that dare support your quarrell:
that you are guiltie in the accusation already alleadged,
and principall cause of the death, of the Armenian Prin-
cesse your Cousin. To reueng which famous wrong, I haue
forsaken my Countrey, traauailing night and day, and haue
presented my accusation befoze your Father, with this co-
dition: that if your Knight shall be vanquished, you are to
be punished as a cause so such weighty requireth. If it bee
my fortune to be sloped, and your Champion victor, I shall
yelde my selfe as conquered, and demaunde no better re-
compence, for it cannot geue me to remaine with her bo-
dy, whose very remembraunce keepeth me alieue: this said,
he went and satte downe againe. The Soldane, who was
a man of great wisdom, and well considering the mat-
ter, seeing the accuser persist so confidently in his wordes,
knew not what to aunswere. Yet as a vertuous Prince, he
spake to his Daughter in this manner. Alchidiana, you
haue heard the speeches of the Prince, aduise your selfe well
of your answer: for which of you both shall be found attain-
ted in the crime, be it Lese Maiestatis or other kind of trea-
son, shall be punished according as the cause requireth.

CHAP. XI.

How Palmerin seeing that none of the Soldans Knights
would aduenture for Alchidiana against Amarano, en-
terprised himselfe in her cause in Combat. And how
the Queene of Tharsus sent him a sumptuous Hel-
met.



Alchidiana having heard the accusation of
Amarano, and that hee had spoken so
slandercously of her in the presence of the
Soldan: incensed with maruailous an-
ger & disdain, returned him this answer.
Amarano, the most rash & indiscreet
Knight that euer I saw, I wonder how
thy folly could make thee so audacious,
to come and accuse me of treason (against all truth) be-
foze my Father and his nobilitie. But thy speeches well
noted and considered, shew nothing but carelesse youth,
arrogancie, and too baine glorious conceit: cheefely in this,
that thou Armed cap a pe, and accompanied with so ma-
ny well appointed Knights, comest in this sorte to
molest a poore Mayde, who neuer to thee or thine commit-
ted any offence, but all seruiciable honour, especially to her,
on whose behalfe thou offerest the Combat. As for the va-
lour thou reputest in thy selfe, that moitie which this slan-
der doth encourage thee withall, coulozing thy hardiness
and resolution of hart: thou oughtest rather oppose against
a Knight able to answere thee, then a feeble Virgin, who
hath no weapon but her Honour wherewith to defend her
selfe. I confesse I am a Ladie, but not trayterous or false,
as

THE HISTORIE

as thou anouchest, yet of so noble courage, as were I of thy sexe, thou neuer shouldst depart this Hall, before I had that conspiring head from thy shoulders, to witness the falshood and malenolent spirit. Notwithstanding, as I am, so please my Lord and Father, with a kitchen cudgell I shall let thee know, that thou dost in thy speeches, and against thine own conscience chargest me, with the murder of my Cozin. Examine thy thoughts, what likely reason might induce mee to such an offence? If shee was fayre, thanks to our Gods, mine own talent is so good, as I need not enuy her beauty. If she made account of her rich dowrie, I being sole heire to the Signiorie of the Soldane, might iudge my selfe farre beyond her, being desired in marriage by many Kings and Princes, whereof I am well assured shee neuer had the like. I know not then what cause should any way induce mee to request her death: but what need I make such protestations to thee? seeing that by some one of my Fathers Knights thy pride will be abased, and I reuenged of the iniury thou hast done me, Amaranano not answering her a word, spake to the Soldane in this sort.

It is not decent my Lord, that a Prince or Knight of quality, should stay on the wordes of a Woman so little considerate, who more by anger then vertue, thinks to reprove and annihilate a true accusation. Wherefore, according to the agreement before determined, call for y^e Knight that dare undertake the quarrell of your daughteer, to whom I will manifest in plain Combat, that what I haue said is truth: and if he be vanquished, your daughter Alchidiana and hee shall bee burned together, as the greatnes of the offence well deserueth: contrariwise, if fortune deny mee successe, I will request no other iustice, then what shall please you to appoint for me. Maucius seeing that well he could not denie the Prince, though to his grieve, pronounced the sentence, that his Daughter that day should present a Knight, to sustaine her cause, according to his conditions

OF PALMERIN DOLIVA.

tions alleadged. This hard prescription, made neuer a Knight willing to aduenture the Combate, so much they feared Amaranano, for the great report they heard of his prowess, but stood all silent, as though themselves were condemned to death. Alchidiana seeing the courage fayle of so many Knights, whom she esteemed for men of great account, knew not to whom shee should haue recourse, & therefore overcome with exceeding sorrow, but that her Ladies assisted her, had twice or thrice swowned before her father. Palmerin beholding her, and knowing that his refusall, was greater cause of Ardemias death, then the iniurious wordes of Alchidiana: pittying her estate, & hauing before his eyes the loue shee bare him, the great honour was done him for her sake, and the pusillanimity of the Soldans Knights, was so moued, as forgetting all daunger, and his dissembled dumbnes, which hitherto hee had so cunningly obserued, as though hee had bene born in that Countrey, he thus began in the Arabian tongue. Ah cowardly traitor, unworthy henceforth the name of Knights, how can your hearts endure, that a proud and presumptuous Prince shall come into your presence, falsely to accuse your Lady and Mistresse, and not one of you daring to defend her right? By the celestiall powers, well may you bee accounted heartlesse men, and (in suffering this wrong) to be deprived of all noble titles, and to bee sold in the market as slaves and villaines: thinke you the Prince Amaranano is come hither for any other intent, then to make triall of his great hardines? Can you bee destitute of reason, & so easily abused, as to thinke that the Princeesse Alchidiana whom nature hath so worthily enriched with beauty, and with whom no other may make comparison, could bee prouoked to murder Ardemia, for this only occasion, because she was fayre? And you Lord Amaranano, for a matter so slender, haue you enterprised to blame a Lady so vertuous, as is the Princeesse Alchidiana? I accept the Combat on her behalfe, vouching, that shamefullie and with

THE HISTORIE

without reason you haue accused her, behold me ready likewise, to maintaine in open field, that falsely and maliciously thou liest in thy throat: in witness whereof, there is my Gage, and I beseech your highnesse afforde vs presently Iudges, that may discern the issue of our Combat. I take thy offer, quoth the Prince, and before the Sun set will giue thee the payment that belongs to such a stollick companion.

Who can now imagine the ioy of Maucius and his Daughter, seeing him whom they reputed dumbe by nature, thus to recouer his speech: assuredly they were all so amazed, that they thought Mahomet, had come from the cloudes to performe this miracle. The Soldane thus surprised with unspeakable comfort, forgetting the maiestie of his person, caught Palmerin in his armes, saying: Ah good knight, how may this be: dreame I: or doth but my fancie delude me with your speech: O Mahomet, for euer be thou prayed for this great grace. By the highest God, I am more ioyful of this good fortune, then had I gained the fairest Island in the Mediterranean Sea. Now will I dismyne no longer of my Daughters fortune, seeing that you take her quarrell in hand, and for her sake will combat with Amarano: with all my heart I graunt you the field, and thinke that my Daughter will not denie it. But tell me noble friends, how haue you so happily recovered your speech: Palmerin abashed that he had so forgotten himselfe, knew not what excuse to make, neuertheless, seeing now there was no remedy, and that the stone throtone could not be recalled: imagined some likely similitude of his suddaine speech, saying. I promise you my Lord, that the certitude of your Daughters innocency, and the great griefe I conceived, seeing your knightes so cowardly and faint in courage, moued me into such choller, as the Catarre, which of long time hath hindered my speech, dissolued it selfe, and hath giuen my tongue liberty to reueale, what I was enforced to bewraye before by

signes,

OF PALMERIN D'OLIVA.

signes. And this is not a thing altogether strange: For I haue heretofore read in Hystories, that a knight called Egle Samien, dumb from his birth: when one of his companions would usurpe the honour of a victory, which iustly appertained to him: was so enraged and incensed with displeasure, as that very passion, with the helpe of the Gods, restored his speech. And thus hath it happened to mee, for which I honour they names with immortall thanks, not so much for my speaking, as that I may now declare my earnest affection to do you seruice, and saye Alchydia your Daughter, to whom I am so greatly indebted, for the manifold honours she hath done mee without desert, as I shall neuer be able to make recompence. Ah my noble friend quoth the Soldane, this liberall offer, for the defence of my Daughters honor, contents me in such sort, as both she and I remaine to requite your paynes. Amarano amazed at the braue disposition of Palmerin, but especially, at the great honour Maucius did him, knew not well what to thinke: and did not the feare of reproach ouer-rule him, I thinke he would haue deferred the Combate till another yeare. Notwithstanding to couer his new opinion, he bethought him of a prettie subtiltie, and saide: I beseech your Maestie to tell mee, of whence this Dumbe knight is, to whome our Gods (by miracle) hath restored such brauing language: It is necessarie that I knowe what hee is, and whence hee is descended, because the fight being enterprised for two such Princesses, as sometimes was the faire Ardemia, and your Daughter present: if hee be not the Sonne of a King as I am, he may not be permitted the field with mee. Amarano (answered the Soldan, I know not what hee is, for till this time hee hath continued dumbe in our Courte, to him therefore you shall frame your demaund: For this opinion I holde of him, that he will answer you nothing but truth. But if you goe about so craftily to excuse your selfe, each one may iudge that in you, which but ill becomes the minde of a Noble man, that is, to be double in your speech. And

¶

(which)

(which is more) hee being a Knight as good as your selfe, you may not refuse him, because you demanded the Combat against any Knight in my Court, and in your challenge made no exception. Perswade your selfe then (quoth the Prince) that if he be not the Sonne of a King, he shall not enter the field against me: therefore if he be none such, he hath not to meddle with Armes in this cause, and so the fight on his behalfe is finished. If thou make such doubt, saide the Soldane of him, aske him the question thy selfe: I hope he is able to resolve thee, in the subtilt caulls and sophisticated questions.

During this contention, there entered the Hall a fayre young Damosell, bearing betwene her hand a goodly Helmet, the richest and most beautifull that euer was seene, and falling on her knees befoze the Soldane, with such gracious salutation as stode with her due tie: she demanded which was Amarano of Nigrea, who of enuie had accused his Daughter, and which likewise was the dumbe Knight, who enterprised her Defence. Maulicus without any other inquisition, shewed them both to her: whereupon the Damosell arose, and coming to the Prince, thus beganne.

Amarano of Nigrea, the Quene of Tharsus, my Ladie and Distresse being certaine that this day thou be in this place, sent me hither to aduise thee, that the dumbe Knight is of higher linage then thou art: and such a one hee is, as the greatest Lord or Prince may not compare with him in Bountie. And if thou wilt know the certaintie of his descent, more then any other as yet doth: she aduise thee (for thy profite) to desist from the Combatte whereto thou hast challenged him, in defence of thy false accusation against Alchidiana. And further she also doth admonish thee, that if thou dost not as she commandeth, the Knight late dumbe, surpassing all other in knightly Chivalrye, shall overcome thee, and thou shalt not be able to stand against him. Damosell (quoth the Prince,) you may answer your Distresse, that ouerlate she sent mee her counsell, and I am not accus-

Comed

Comed to give credite to such Sorcerers: Besides, I will not lose mine Honour, at the simple wordes of a Woman I know not. And it doth not a little content me, that that this Knight is such a one as hee should be: wherefore being so sure of his Bountie, I am the more desirous to Combat with him, to make experience of his renowne: yet this I still maintaine, that what I haue spoken is true, and therefore on we will presently enter the field, so please the Soldan to give consent. Maulicus seeing that the day was too farre spent, adiournde it till the day following: Wherefore the Prince withdrew himselfe to his Lodging, reposing great confidence in his owne strength, and after his departure, the Soldane taking Palmerin by the hand, sayd. I knowe not my Lorde how I may acknowledge the honour you do my Daughter, to whom I esteeme as mine owne selfe: But if the Gods afforde me life, I will devise some such recompence, as I hope shall returne your owne content. Then the Damosell sent from the Quene of Tharsus, approaching to Palmerin, presented him the Helmet, saying. Noble and vertuous Knight, the Quene saluteth you with this token of her good Will, in remembrance of your speciall Loyaltie, whereby you deliuered the Prince Maurice: for which she so much remaineth yours, as you shall command her any seruice hence forward, albeit she could haue wished him longer torment, that proued so unfaithfull to her. She likewise desireth you, to weare this Helmet in fight with Amarano, for it will greatly auayle you, and more then any other: For such is her Hope, that after you know this present seruice, you will not denie her one request, which one day she intendeth to craue of you. Palmerin taking the Helmet, answered:

Fayre Virgin, most humbly thanke the Quene on my behalfe, and tell her that wheresoeuer I am, she shall finde mee ready to fulfill any thing she will commaunde. The Damosell departed, and made such speede, as in short time she came to the Quene her Distresse, whom she acquainted

THE HISTORIE

with her whole passage: whereof shee was very ioyfull, especially of Palmerins great courtesie, whome shee began to affect very greatly.

CHAP. XII.

¶ Howe Palmerin entred the Combatte with the Prince Amarano of Nigrea, whome hee slew, and of the great Honours which the Soldan and his Daughter did him.



The Princesse Alchydiana hearing of those reportes, which the Duane of Tharsus Damofell made relation of before the Soldan her father, being likewise mervellous glad, that Palmerin was descended of such Noble Parentage, and so much renowned in the Region farre thence distant: beganne to Love him more extreamely then ever shee did before, and resolved with her selfe, that seeing for her sake he undertooke the Combat, hee bare her more secreete affection then hee durst bewray: and in this opinion she practised how to conferre with him againe, which this day shee could not compasse, because hee was continually with the Soldan. But when Palmerin toke his leave for that night, the Princesse had a little leysure to thank him for his honorable kindnesse, and how glad shee was that the Gods had restored his speech againe. Some after shee sent him a most sumptuous golden Armour, desiring him (for her sake) to weare it in the Combatte, which Palmerin thankfully accepting, assured the Challenger, that hee would sufficiently reuenge his Ladies iniurie. In meane time, the Soldan commanded his Knight Barthall, to set the field prepared in

OF PALMERIN D'OLIVA.

in readinesse, and the Scaffoldes for the Ladies provided, and to haue two thousand Armed men in place, for defence of his owne person. All which the next morning was duly executed, the Soldan appointing two Kings, and Amarano his two Brethren Judges of the field, who going to their Tent, and all the Nobilitie to their appointed places, expected now the issue of the fight. The Ladies came to their standing: among whom Alchydiana shined like faire Vesper, among the other stars, and some after came the two Combattants, so brauely and richly appointed, as nothing wanted that could be imagined: especially Palmerin, before whome a King bare his Helmet, and the high Admiral of Assiria his Sword, and so brauely did hee mannage his Horse, with such lightly behanour, and gallant countenance, that each one iudged hee had learned his knowledge before he came thither into Turkie, and caused Maulecus to perswade himselfe, that the victorie was destined to him. In the ende, that they might the sooner begin the Combat, the Judges toke their seates, commanding silence through the field, which was pestered with wonderfull resort of people: and then the Herald fulfilling the charge, gaue libertie to the Champions to doe theyr deuoyze. Palmerin claspung his Helmet, gaue the Spurres to his Horse, and encountered Amarano with such furie, as they were bothe dismounted headlong to the ground: But Palmerin ashamed to bee so soyled before the Soldan, recovered himselfe quickly, and aduancing his Shilde, gaue Amarano such a sound stroke on his head with his Sworde, as made him stagger in great amazednesse. Notwithstanding, his courage and agilitie was such, as well declared, he had followed those affaires: So that the fight was so fierce and cruell betwixen them, as in many yeeres before the Assirians saw not the like: for Amarano was the most hardy knight in all those partes, yet Palmerin assaulted him with so many sharpe charges, as hee made him forget his cunning points of Defence, and with head and shoulders to awarde his

THE HISTORIE

strokes. Which when the Princes two Brethren beheld, they were marvellously abashed, for they imagined that though the East partes, no knight might bee found to equall him: wherefore one of them sayde: I thought my brother would haue dispatched this companion at the first encounter, but seeing he hath held out so long, no doubt hee is more expert in Armes, then we at first made account of him.

The two Kings were somewhat incued with these wordes, willing him to be silent, untill such time as the end was determined. Amaranos hearing what his Brother had spoken, offended with himselfe because hee could not overcome Palmerin, beganne to encourage himselfe, and albeit he was soze wounded in many places on his body, yet he followed his intent so nobly, as taking his sword in both his hands, hee strooke Palmerin so violently on the helmet, as made him set one of his knees to the ground to saue himselfe. But he perceiuing that if he had many such blowes, it would teturne his disadvantage, intended to play double or quitte, and remembryng the honour of his Distresse Polinarda, hee came with such valour on Amaranos, as cleauing his Shield in two partes, cut away a great part of his arme. The Prince feeling himselfe so maymed, beganne to fainte, hardly enduring to defende his enemies strokes, which Palmerin perceined, chased him about which way him listeth, first here, then there, where best y^e Prince had hope of safety: but all these delays little auayled him, so Palmerin left not untill he got him down, where Amaranos thinking to helpe himselfe, drew a little pocket Dagger, and therewith thrust Palmerin vnder the short ribbes, which wound so moued him, as rent his helmet from his head, immediately smote it from his shoulders. Palmerin being then so glad and well disposed, as though hee had but newly entred the field, tooke the head of his enemy by the harte, and presented it to the Princesse Alchidiana, saying, Madame, I now thinke my selfe acquitted of the

OF PALMERIN D'OLIVA.

promise, which I made to my gracious Lord your Father, for heere is that Spring-head that first accused you: he thinke your selfe therefore, if there bee any other thing else to be done for you, because I remaine here ready to accomplysh it.

The Princesse exceeding ioyfull for this worthy victory, answered. Truly my Lord, you haue done so much for me, that although my Father, my selfe, and all my Friends should bequeath our liues to your service: yet could we not recompence the very least of your noble courtesies, chiefly, euen this one, surpassing all the other, and beyond our abilityes to remunerate. Yet let me intreate you to carrie the Traytors head to the Judges, that they may Censure my Innocencie in this slaughter, and whether the Accuser hath not receyued condigne punishment. Which hee did, and thirwe the head before the Princes Brethren, whose griefe exceeded measure for their Brothers ill fortune, and taking by the Head, with the Body likewise, they caused it to be sorrowfully conueyed forth of the field. Immediately was Palmerins Horse brought him, whereon he mounted, was conducted with great pompe, by the two Kings that were the Judges, and other mighty Princes, as well Castilles, Agaz, as Taborlans, to the gate of the Pallace, where the Soldane (to do him the greater Honour) attended in personne his coming, the like hee neuer did before to any King or Prince, how mighty soeuer he was, and therefore his Subjects marvelled not a little hereat. Palmerin would haue done him reuerence on his knee, but he would not suffer him, for taking him in his armes, he thus said: For euer (Gentle knight) by the honor of thy victory against our enemy, and the false accuser of our Daughter, for which, I account my selfe so bound to thee, that all the Dignities and riches I am able to giue thee, may not counteruaile thy unspeakable deserts: therefore I will remaine so much at thy disposition, as I and mine shall be at thy commaund. So taking him by the hand, he conducted him to his Chamber,

THE HISTORIE

where himselfe holpe to byrme him, commaunding his Chyrurgians to be so carefull of him, as of his owne person: Thus leauing him to haue his wounds dressed, he returned to the great Hall, where hee found his Nobilitie attending his coming, to whome hee saide: What thinke you my Lords of our state, if our Champion had bene foyled: I had bene the most forlorne and abiect Lord in all Alsyrta, to haue bene enforced to do iustise on mine owne Daughter. But thanks to our Gods, they deliuered me from that danger: therefore maruell not, if (beyond my custome) I welcommed him with reuerence and honour: for one that renoueth himselfe by Vertue and Prouewe through the whole worlde, ought to be entertained, rather then such as liue in vaine pompe and glorie, whispering deceitfull Tales into Ladies eares. Nayther can you (in my Iudgement) honour him sufficiently, because my Daughter and mee hee hath shelded from death, expulied our ignominious slander, and slaine our false accusing enemye, to make vs liue in perpetuall fame and memorie. The most parte of them well noting his wordes, and conformed with the remembrance of theyr shame, when they durst not enterprise the Combat for theyr Ladie: knew not what to answer, but feating to growe in further offence, sought how to chaunge his minde to some other talke.

Alchidiana being all this while in her Chamber, prepared herselfe to goe visite Palmerin, not knowing how to shape her course, for fresh bewraying of her secreete afflictions: but the Goddess Iuno, when shee stode before Syz Paris, for sentence of her Beautie, was not more sumptuously adorned then the Princesse. Now beginnes shee to dispute in her thoughts, the honorable graces of Palmerin, his Nobility so farre renowned, his knightly proewe and Magnanimitie, whereof herselfe had so good experience, as shee resolved neuer to haue any other Husband. Then demaunds she of her Ladies, how she might recompence her knight: if her Head-tye stand orderly: if her locks of hayze were

OF PALMERIN D'OLIVA.

were tressed as they ought, and if her garments were braue enough. For conclusion, the louely Payden knew not how to dispose of herselfe, to gaine his loue she so earnestly longed for.

In this equipage she goes to see her friende, and in his Chamber she findes her Mother, who hindered her languishing Daughter, from discovering her sicknes to him, that onely had the power to helpe her: wherefore liuing in hope of some better oportunitie, for this time she smothered her grieles so well as she coulde, finding other talke with her Ladies, least her Mother should suspect her.

CHAP. XIII.

How the Brethren of Amaran, would haue buried his body in the Tombe with Ardemia, which Alchidiana would not suffer: but constrained them to carry him home againe into his Countrey.



Marano thus slayne, his Brethren (according to his charge giuen them, before he entred y^e Combate) toke his bodie, and with great mourning they brought it to the Princesse Ardemias Tombe, thinking to burie him there with her: but Alchidiana aduertised heereof, came presently and intreated her father, that he would sende a Herald to the Brethren of the vanquished Prince, to charge them not to leaue the body of Amaran in his Dominions, for if they did, he would cause it to be burned as a Traytor deserued. Moreover, that they themselves should depart within foure and twenty houres,

THE HISTORIE

on paine of the daunger should ensue by their default. For
 good Father (quoth she) if you should permit their bold-
 nes, it will be great blame and dishonour to you: in that it
 is commonly knowen, with what great pride and arrogan-
 cie he came to your Court, thinking to injury your good re-
 port, and either to shut mee from your presence for ever,
 or else with open scandale to ende my life. The Soldane
 well regarding her wordes, willingly graunted her re-
 quest, whereupon the Princes Brethren were certified of
 the Soldans pleasure, by a Trompet: whereat they mer-
 nailed not a little, but seeing they could no way remedy it,
 they said, Herald, it is reason that your Lord should be obai-
 ed within his owne territories, neuertheless, you may say
 vnto him: that the cruelties he shewes to a dead body, is
 very great, and against all equitie, which he hereafter hap-
 pily may repent. So opening the Tombe againe, they
 toke forth theyr Brothers body, and the Princesse Ar-
 demiaes likewise, conueying them into a Litter of Cipres,
 to keepe them from corrupting, and thus returned with
 them to Phrygia, where the Princes death was greatly la-
 mented: but chiesely by the aged King his Father, who
 sawing his Sonne dead before him, after many dolorous pas-
 sions, thus complained. Ah Fortune, how cruell dost thou
 shew thy selfe to the mightie, as well as the meaneest: Ah
 my Sonne Amarano, for deere hast thou bought thy loue
 to Ardomia. Wretched and despised olde man, howe un-
 fortunate art thou among all other: for when thou per-
 swadedst thy selfe, to haue toy and comfort by thy Sonnes,
 thou findest the chiefe cause of sorrowe and discontent. O
 death, thou suffereest me too importunate. Yet if the Sol-
 dane had graunted thee buriall, where thou diddest desire
 it before thy death, thou haddest bene my grieve. But sone
 shall I cause him repent his hard dealing, and reuenge thy
 death with sufficient requitall. The second Brother to A-
 marano, named Gramiel, seeing his father in such extreame
 heauines, assayed by all meanes hee coulde to comfort him:
 promising

OF PALMERIN DOLIVA.

promising in the presence of all his knights, with all possi-
 ble speed to reuenge his Brothers death, and so did all the
 five Brethren solemnely hold together. Which speeches
 did somewhat comfort the aged King, who commaunded
 the bodies of the two louers to be taken from his presence
 and for a perpetuall memory of his Sonnes death: he cau-
 sed a sumptuous monument to bee made of marble & por-
 phire, whereon was engrauen the cause of their unhappie
 death. All this while, Gramiel, who undertooke his Bro-
 thers reuenge, gaue charge to the people round about him,
 as also to the Kings and Princes of Suria, who were then
 enemies to the Soldan, to prepare themselves in readi-
 nes, so that within a monethes space, he had assembled a
 power of five thousand hardy souldiers, himselfe being ap-
 pointed leader and Generall ouer them. In this sort they
 betooke themselves to the field, hoping to ruinate the Sol-
 danes Country with fire and sword: but they were
 better enterpayned then they expected, as hereafter shalbe
 largely discoursed.

CHAP. XIII.

How Alchidiana ouercome by vehemency of her loue,
 offered her selfe to Palmerin as his wife: and of the
 answere he made her,



Remembryng what hath past in the
 Chapters before, wee may not forget
 how by the message the Queene of
 Tharsus sent to the Soldans Court,
 Alchidiana, who began as it were to
 despise Palmerin, was constrained
 to reuue her Loue, thus con-
 ferring with her selfe, that if so
 great

THE HISTORIE

great a person as the Quene of Tharus, commended, esteemed and honoured him, hauing neuer seene him, the better meane had she, being daily in his company, to practise the furtheraunce of her earnest desires. She therefore continually awaited oportunitie, to discouer the fire newly taken from the embers, and which day and night consumed her with languishing: but so wel it came to passe, that not many daies after the Combat with Amarano, he came to visite her in her Chamber, right ioyfull of the talke hee had with the Soldane, as concerning his promise of his strength, to goe rinate the Cittie of Constantinople, which gaue him hope of his returne to Allemaigne. Alchidiana, hauing courteously saluted him, and shewing better countenance then before she did, caused him to sitte downe by her, and some after began in this sort.

I desire you Sir Knight, by the reuerence you beare our Gods, and the faith you owe to her, for whose loue you toke the enchaunted Crowne from the Prince, Maurice: to tel me your name, what your Parents be, and of whence you are. For I sweare to you by the honour of a Princesse, that the guerdon you shall receiue in so doing, is my hart, hauing once conquered those desires that long haue tormented me: intending to make you Lord of my selfe, and all the possessions of the Soldane my Father, without any sinister meaning you may beleeue me. Consider therefore good Knight, that without feare or dissimulation, I haue tolde you what nearest concerneth mee, if then you desire not my present death, make answer as honorable duetie requirerth, ballancing in your owne thoughts, how vehemently the impressions of loue haue touched me: in respect that now I haue liued for your sake, exceeded the limits of mine owne regard, whose bashfulness should protect from such boldnes. And if patiently I endured your sharpe repulse, when last I beloyed the estate of my loue: thinke it was caused through mine owne good conceit, that being denyed the libertie of speech, you did not perceiue the extremitie of

OF PALMERIN DOLIVA.

of my passions. But seeing our Gods haue bene so fauourable, as to restore the thing to as easie taken from you, and likewise hath brought you into her company, who loues you dearer then her owne life: shew not your selfe so hard of nature, to flye the house that Loue and Fortune presents you withall. Therefore my onely beloued Lord, in recompence of your sharpe Combat with proud Amarano: receiue me as your Wife, whom you haue worthily deserved.

Palmerin seeing himselfe assailed by so faire an enemy, who coulde sooner bring in subiection an other Hercules, then euer did Iole, and as easily giue life to a statue of Marble, as Venus sometime did, at the request of Pigmalion the Caruar: was in maruolous affliction, hauing before him, on the one side, feare to offende God, on the other, the loyalty he sought his Mistress, and then the immediate death of Alchidiana, if he denyed her. In the ende, remembering what the Soldane had spoken, concerning his voyage to Constantinople: he deuised by this meane to make her such answer, as she should rest contented, and neither God nor his Mistress be offended, he thus began. Vertuous and most excellent Princesse, thus I am assuredly persuaded, that there is not any Monarch or Prince so noble in all Asia, but might reckon himselfe among the happiest, in respect of your perfections and vnualluable riches: to espouse you as his Wife. By farre greater reason, I that am poore, a Knight errant, unknowne, and whose life you haue saved: may saie, and name my selfe aboue all other in fortune. But knowing my selfe so simple, and of so slender deserving towards you: I esteeme it impossible for the Gods and nature likewise, to lift me to so wonderfull degree of happines. Wherefore, seeing the cause such, and greater then I can desire or imagine, likewise that it is conformable to your commaundement: doubtlesse I were unworthy any fauour of Fortune, and to be esteemed among the most ingratefull Knights in the world, if in any thing I should

THE HISTORIE

should disobey your reason. My reason is, that you (being reckoned as chiefe among the most perfect and accomplished Ladies) daigne so much to abase your selfe as to make me Lord of your Loue, which hath bene desired by some worthy personages.

For those causes, most gracious Mistresse, I am bound to Love you above all other Ladies living, which heresoforth I hope to do, & loyally to serve you with my uttermost endeavours. And as I ought (Sweete Madam) to Love none but you: so is my dutie to hold your regard in chiefest commendation: therefore will I with such secrecie, as so honorable a Conquest will permit, conceale this extraordinary grace. And had I not this morning made promise to your Father, to accompany his power to Constantinople, there to reuenge the death of your deceased Uncle Gamezio: I should our loue sort to withed, and I gather that sweete flower, which above all other would Beauty my Garland. Notwithstanding, my hope is such, that in this voyage I shall do such service to the Soldane your Father, as at my returne hee will recompence me to your content, and good liking of his Princes and Subiects: which may no way now be moued, least his minde otherwaies buied, should conceiue displeasure against me, and so all our Fortune for euer squandered. In this respect (Sweete Madam) if euer hereafter I shall do you service, let mee intreate you to patience till my returne: resolving our selfe in meane while, that I am more yours then mine owne, and dedicate my life to your most gracious service. As concerning the rest of your demand, my Name is Palmerin d'Oliua, and what my Parents are, the Quene of Tharsus within these thre dayes will tell me more, then hitherto I could vnderstand by any, when you shall haue more knowledge of my estate and Countrey also: but so far as I yet can gather by mine owne vnderstanding, my descent is from Persia.

This excuse hee made, because Alchydia should not suspect him to bee a Christian, and with this aunswere she was

OF PALMERIN D'OLIVA.

was so ioyfull and contented, as nothing was able to inspyre more cheerefull life into her languishing soule, which Palmerin perceiuing, and the better to continue her in this opinion, very often he kissed her hand, in signe of his affectionate obsequence: And so in this manner he departed to his owne Chamber, leauing the Princesse triumphing of her conquest.

Hee was no sooner come into his Chamber, but sollicitated with the remembrance of his Lady Polynarda, hee imagined how she blamed him with mournfull complaints for his late promises: which thought so diuersly afflicted him, as he spent all the rest of the day in teares, and as she had bene in presence, most humbly requesting her to pardon what had past him, in respect hee did it not willingly, neither gaue any consent with his heart thereto, but dissimbled the matter, least the Princesse by his deniall should fall into dispayre: and rather then he would violate his solemne Vowe to his gracious Goddesse, hee would adventure on infinite dangers. Yet did this feigned answer to Alchydia greatly auaille him, and caused him to be more honoured then euer he was before, as also to be continually accompanied with her presence, whose onely delight was in daylie beholding him.

CHAP.

THE HISTORIE

CHAP. XV.

How the Soldane hauing determined to send his Army to Constantinople, would elect Palmerin his Lieutenant Generall: which he refused, intreating him to giue the charge to the olde King of Balisarca.



NOwe was the Soldane continually mindfull of the promise he made to his deceased Father Misos, to reuenge the death of his Brother Gamezio: wherefore seeing all his dominions in peace, and that he had with him the valiant Palmerin, he concluded to leuie a mighty Armie, to finish y^e which duty daily called for. And hauing provided a huge number of Gallies, Foyts, Gallies, and other vessels, he sent abroad to aduertise all the Kinges, Princes, Baliffes and Tobozlanes his subiects, of his will and pleasure, who likewise gathering their forces together, were numbred to be aboue an hundred and fiftie thousand fighting men. At this while the Soldane so fauoured Palmerin, as he had bestowed on him diuers Dukedomes, which he made but slender account of, because he continually expected time to see his Polynarda. Alechidiana likewise, building on his passed promises, daily presented him with many rich gyfts, and practised all the deuises she coude to please his fancie: for so deuoutly did the Princesse loue him, as she rather desired her owne death, then to giue him the least occasion of disliking. And Palmerin by sayre and affecting speeches, perswaded such settled opinions in her: as she helde his promises with greater

OFPALMERIN D'OLIVA.

greater pertinacie, then euer did any Logitian maintaine his Aristotle. By this time were the men of Armes come from all places, wherefore the Soldane calling for Palmerin, beganne with him in this manner. Sir Palmerin, considering how much I am indebted to you, my affections are so resolutely perswaded, that I esteem of you as you were my Sonne, and much more then I am able to offer: not so much for seruices you haue done me from time to time, as for the incomparable deedes of Armes and Chualtrie, which makes you honoured through the whole world. Hauing now determined to send me forces to Constantinople, my onely hope I repose in you, and well it liketh me that you beare the office of my Lieutenant Generall, and principal gouernour of the Kinges and Princes in this expedition. Wherefore my noble and approued good friend, bring your wanted magnanimitie and discretion, my people shal think well of my appointment, referring the honoz of their victorie, to the generall haucke and confusion of their enemies.

So we I perceiue (my gracious Lord) answered Palmerin, that by your manifold fauours and courtesies, you woulde depriue me of acknowledging mine owne duetie: notwithstanding, in respect it is your pleasure, I woulde aduenture the vttermost of my life for you, which I cannot with greater honour lose, then in your noble seruice. Yet, may it bee spoken within compasse of your highnesse controll, me thinks you shoulde rather giue this charge to the King of Balisarca, a man wise, experienced, and farre more skillfull in Armes then I am. Beside, your people hauing a man of their owne nation for their heade, will obey him more willingly, and serue with much more cherefull courage: then vnder him whom they know not, but onely by your princely and liberall bountie, which hath bene such, that from the meanest state, where fortune helde mee as altogether despised, your Graciously hath lifted mee to the highest earthly honour. This spake I, dread Lord, as

not gain saying your commandement, but for this consideration, that taking this honourable charge, the Souldiers may mutinie against me, and so your seruice be altogether disappointed.

And thinke you (quoth the Soldane) that my people will be more obedient to the King of Balisarca, then to you? Beadoubtlesse my Lord, said Palmerin, that is my opinion. I know then, quoth the Soldane, that for the counsell you haue given me, my loue is nothing diminished towards you: for I see by this noble regard, how deservfully you gaine the fauours of Kings and great personages, it shal be therefore as you haue appointed. This counsell gaue Palmerin, not for any good he wished to Maulicus, or the King of Balisarca, but (desiring nothing more, then the ruine and generall destruction of these heathen hounds, sworn enemies to Christ and his Seruants) to rid himselfe of that charge, which would bring him so great and shamefull report, to fight against his Lord and Maker. Wherefore premeditating on al these inconueniences, he but expected the meane to get footing in Christendome againe. Maulicus thus contented with his answer, the King of Balisarca was appointed General of the Army, yet he gaue commandement, that Palmerin should be reuerenced among them, as the second person to himselfe, and one paine of death, none to offend him. As all this strength was ready to take shipping, newes came to the Court of Gramiel, and his Brethren, what slaughter and spoile they made through all Affria: whereat the Soldan being greatly offended, seeing his prouision against Christendome thus changed, came to Palmerin, and said. By Sonne, what thinke you of our enemies? What shall I doe to these followers of their Brother in pride? I pray you counsell mee in this necessitie. Palmerin perceiuing his desire preuented, was overcome with maruellous passions: yet to hide this discontent fro the Soldane, he thus answered. Seeing it hath so fallen out my Lord, that without any summons our ene-

mies

mies haue presumed vpon vs: I thinke it most expedient, that your Armie prouided in so good readines, beginne first with these arrogant invaders, for I doubt not, their attempt being so trecherous, and the courage of our men so resolute, but they shall dearly buye their presumptuous aduventure. A matter sone begunne, will bee as sone ended, and our shipping readie, we may afterward sette forward to Constantinople: for this will be a good whetting of our stomacks, to deale with our enemies of greater multitude. This counsell was accepted, wherefore it was immediately proclaimed through the fielde, that euery man should be readie to depart within thre daies.

CHAP. XVI.

How the Prince Olorico, Sonne to the King of Arabia, came and offered his seruice to the Soldane, bringing with him five hundred Armed Knights, and of his entertainment.



Some what before the Soldanes Armie was readie to depart, the Prince Olorico, eldest Sonne to the King of Arabia came to the Court, and with him five hundred Knights, so hardy, braue and comelie personages, as both for the Courte and the warre, better might not bee imagined. This young Prince, reputed among the most valiant of his time, hearing reporte of the rare beautie of Alchidiana, under culler of offering the Soldane his assistance: determined to behaue himselfe so brauely in his Court, that by his liberalitie and honourable actions, he would obtayne Prince

cesse to his Wife, wherefore being come to the Count; and having done his obeisance to the Soldane, he began in this manner.

Right mightie Lord of all Assiria and Palestine, having of long time heard your great forwardnesse to the encreasing of our faith, chiefly of the last honorable counsell you helde, to reuenge the death of your famous deceased Brother Gamezio, inhom our Gods now entertaine at their celestiaall banquets: I toke my selfe to trauaile, with aduised resolution to doe you such seruice, as might stande with my abilitie, and your pleasure to commaund. And for I now behold, that my arrivall is in a time so fortunate, I celebrate their names with immortall thanks, assuring your Maestie so farre to stretch my endeouours, as the Son that is bounde by duetie to his Father. The Soldane who had heard great report of his bountie and valour, his Father likewise being one of his friends and confederates, after he had made him very gracious welcome, thanked him for y^e succour he brought him, and henceforth he would not esteeme of him as a stranger, but as his Sonne and most especiall friende. All this while Palmerin noted the behaviour of the yong Prince, and iudging by his complexion, that he was of better nature then the other Assirians began to affect him: so that after the Soldane had given them all the good night, Palmerin accompanied the Prince to his Chamber, where they coulde devise no other conference, but of this new and warlike enterprise, which made Olorico demaunde of Palmerin, if he shoulde goe in those affaires. What will I verily (quoth he) if sickness or prison doe not withhold me. Let me intreate you then, sayde the Prince, to doe me so much honour, as to accept me for your companion. Whereto Palmerin right soone condescended, and then began such a league of amity betwene them, that it endured to the death, as you shall reade hereafter. But because it was now late, they toke their leave of each other till the next morning, when Maucius woulde haue

Olorico

Olorico dined at his Table with Palmerin, where wanted no provision that belonned so great a person, being now set forth in most rich and honourable pompe. The Tables being withdrawn, the Prince began the daunce, thinking to see sayre Alchidiana, but he was deceived, for she kept her Chamber in her amorous opinions, and would not be seene till the appointed day, when the Armie shoulde make shew in open fieldes.

This daie the Soldane went to order the battell, and to appoint the winges and squadrons, which made Alchidiana likewise take delight to walke abroad with Palmerin, who was now in marvellous sumptuous Armour, bearing a Shield of Sinople, with a bar of Gold figured there in, signifying his inward loy, that in so short time he shoulde get from these barbarous and unchristian helhounds. Before them went two yong Lords beaheaded, and behind, a great number of Ladies and Knights, so rich in apparel as could be devised. Being thus brought to their Palace, Palmerin beganne to carrie and braue with his Horse before the Princesse, who toke no little delight in her supposed lover, and riding along with him, fell into many discourses, nothing tending to Religion as I gesse, but such deuoute seruices as loue teacheth his Schollers. In the midst of their communication, came the Prince Olorico, so altered with his affection to the Princesse, that they which haue felt like assaults, might easily iudge the cause of his passions. Having made two or three humble reuerences to her, he offered to kisse her hand: which she would not permit him, excusing the matter so modestly, and wishing his welfare as her owne, that he imagined himselfe greatly favoured.

Palmerin regarding the afflictions of this newe come lover, and that he might giue him the better meane, to devise with her so priuately as he desired, turned his Horse to the other side of the Princesse, thus speaking to her. What thinke you (Madams) of the gentle succour, which my

THE HISTORIE

Lord Olorico hath brought your Father: beloeue mee, the courtessie is so surpassing great, as your selfe ought especially to thanke him, if it were but for his forwardnes, in qualifying y haughty courage of Amaranos & Zethzen. Doubtlesse (quoth the) his companie is to be esteemed, and among tenne thousand knights, hardly may bee founde so brane men as is in his troupe: in recompence whereof, I will not deny the Prince any thing, that hee with honour will request of me. Olorico perceiuing this suddaine inuention of Palmerin, returned him many thanks, and after the accustomed dissimulations used in such causes, albeit Loue had for a while deprived him of speech: earnestly beholding the rare beautie of the Princesse, he thus began. Madame, although I should doe to my Lord your Father, all the seruices that a knight is able to yeld his gracious patrone, yet the very least of these fauours, which it hath pleased your excellencie to bestowe on mee, may bee reckoned for much more then deserued recompence. Wherefore being perswaded that my seruice is placed in your good conceite, I shall not henceforth feare to put my life in hazard, so much I desire to see these present promises accomplished: whereof you Sir Palmerin, being esteemed among the most famous persons living, shall beare mee witness, when time graunteth convenient opportunitie. I haue promised nothing, said the Princesse, but what I will right gladly accomplish: requiring nothing but your good opinion, which so many choyse Ladies haue heretofore desired. And I demand no better paie (quoth the Prince) then her gracious fauour whom I desire to please. Thus beguiled they the time, till the Armie marched forward in aray, which they faire and softly folloved, till tenne Pages belonging to the Princesse, leading tenne goodly Couriers most richly caparassioned, came befoze them. An other Page brought a iemely Launce, the handzele whereof was the Princesse collours, and a Golden Sheld, wherein was portraited the heade of Amaranos, helde vpper by the haire by a knights hands,

OF PALMERIN D'OLIVA.

hands, signifying the victorie of Palmerin against him: the Sheld being bordered round about with Pearles, Rubyes, Emeralds: Crisolites, and other precious stones of inestimable value, then beganne the Princesse thus to Palmerin.

My noble friende, in this warre I desire you to bee my knight, and for my sake to beare this Launce & Sheld, that the proude Zethzen may see the shame of Amaranos. And such is my hope, that as you serues the eldest, so will you deale with the other, while one of the remains aliue. These Horses likewise for the warre, I bestow vpon you, they being accounted the very best in Turkie, and these will serue you well when you are in fildes: our Gods bearing me witness (faire friende) that did not my estate hinder me, and the regard of mine honour withhold me, with right good will would I beare you company, to see your noble and knightly doodes of Armes. And this I dare boldly saie, that Hippocratea neuer followed her Husband Melchidates with greater affection, were he on Sea, or on lande, on horsebacke or on foote: then I coulde doe the noble Palmerin d'Oliua. Notwithstanding, though my body may not be there, yet shall my spirit be continually present, to comfort my languishing life, which will be but a shadow of death to me till your returne. Voe because I see many eyes are fixed on vs, all the Kinges likewise taking their leave of my Father: I will leaue you to the protection of our Gods, who send you happily and right sone againe. These words were coupled with such sighes and teares, as she had fallen from her Horse, but that one of her Ladies of Honor stayed her.

Palmerin after he had with great kindnes thanked her, kissed her hande, saying. Perswade your selfe sweete Madame, your Sheld shall be shewne in such place, where his Zethzen that betrayed your honor, shall easily see it, although but little to their aduantage. Thus toke they

THE HISTORIE

leau of each other, and Olorico likewise had the Princeesse farewell: then doing their duety to the Soldane, followed the Arnie, leaving him and Alchidiana sorrowfull for their departure.

CHAP. XVII.

How the Prince Olorico beeing with Palmerin in his Tent, demanded of him if hee loued the Princeesse Alchidiana, and of the answer he made him.



These two young Princes, Palmerin and Olorico conferred still as they rode, with what great grieue & sorrow Alchidiana parted from them & falling from one imagination to another, they concluded to lodge together in one Tent. And because Palmerin was the better and more richly provided of all things necessary for the field, Olorico was the more glad of his company: so the day being spent, and the Tents pitched in a goodly plaine, Palmerin invited the Prince of Arabia to sup with him, for the Soldane had appointed him such honourable provision, as better he could not for his owne son. The tables withdrawn, and spending the time a while at Chesse play, they went to bedde, where Olorico not able to sleepe, began in this manner, to his friendly companion.

Most fortunate Palmerin, how much more could I wish to resemble you, then the greatest King or Lord in the world, to be likewise beloued of her, who in beautie, good grace, and sweet speech, hath not her like. And because

OF PALMERIN DOLIVA.

my good friende and brother, I haue noted the special loue of the Princeesse Alchidiana towards you, let mee intreate you to tell me, who shee is you aboue all other loue, and intend to make your espoused Wife: bowing to you, on the word of a Prince, whosoever shee bee, to conceale it with secrecy, and to disswade my selfe from my loue newly begunne, for your sake, albeit I dyed therefore. For your noble minde and braue gentility, hath gained such loue: raignety ouer me, as all other pleasures whatsoever I despise, onely to haue your company and fauour. Thus qualifying the passions, which day and night doe secretly torment me, I will set downe such order as my Father shall not neede to send his Ambassadors, nor imploy any of my Friends to demand her for me: albeit for this onelie cause, I left my Country in such sort as you haue seene. Palmerin hearing the wordes of the young Prince, & perceiving him wounded with her loue, whom he desired to be furthest from, smiling, sayd: My Lord Olorico, I sweare to you by the honor of my knighthood, I neuer thought of the loue which you demand, nor haue I any desire to follow that humour. But true it is, that I would do so much for her, as a knight may for his Lady, for so shee well deserves, her fauour and gentle behauiour worthy farre better ability: wherefore my deare friend, if you will beleue me, giue not ouer your intent, but practise to gayne her to your Wife: and I promise you that I will so moue the matter to the Soldane and her, as happily may effecte the end of your desires. Yet let me entreate you to continue so iust a friend to her, as her high calling well deserueth: otherwise I had rather die the death, then once to speake word on your behalfe. These newes so cheered the Prince as embracing him many times, and returning him manifold thanks, he said. Assuredly, my noble friend, I am greatly beholding to my father, who gaue me my present being: but much more I owe to you, because my estate had now ended, but that your gracious speeches called me againe to life,

THE HISTORIE

life. My second selfe, hauing thus lost my liberty, I despaire of attaining what you haue promised, and endure a death more then mortall: but that you breath hope of successe into mee, assuring mee of immediate felicitie & ioyfull dayes hereafter, which no Father, but so good a friend was able to doe. After other such like speeches, the Prince slept, but Palmerin touched in another sort, was sollicit with the remembrance of his lost friends: and perceyuing his companion slept soundly, he began thus to deliuer his sorowes. Ah vnforsunate and wretched Palmerin, how can thy mind so long beare this yoke of seruitude, onely standing in feare of death? Hast thou so forgot those two perfect louers, Trieneus and Agriola, with thy true friend Prolome, not knowing whether they be aliuie or dead? What? Wilt thou not searcke for them? The Emperour of Allemaigne, hath not he good cause to complaine of thee: yea, and to blame thee, if his Sonne be not returned? Darest thou present thy selfe before him? Ah touch of loyalty, faire Agriola, how iustly mayst thou call me thine enemy, inuenter a first motion of thy misfortunes? Oh wretched and miserable that I am for leauing thee so discourteously, I well deserue a million of torments, farre worse then those exercised by the cruell Dyonise on the Scicilians. As could they be sufficient to expiate my hainous guilt, in the forgetting thee faire Princeesse, I liue in daily delights among these Moores and Tartars. But were I such as I ought to be, mindfull of a fault so foully committed: I should not liue one houre in rest or quiet, til I had found my dearest friends again. Ah disloyal Traytour, how canst thou thus waste thy time heere slothfully, knowing the great and continuall trauels, thy Ladie and Distresse endureth for thee? Wnt I bow to God, this warre finished, I will not abide in the Soldans Court ten dayes, but intende to sette forwards to see the felwell of my Wellfare. And were it not to my perpetuall discredite, as also that I should be iudged a fainting coward, I would beginne my Journey presently.

Thus

OF PALMERIN DOLIVA.

Thus all the Night continued Palmerin such like complaints, considering his friends misfortune and his owne, with such deepe impressions, as thence forward heliued in maruellous melancholy, and would not delight himselfe, as before he was accustomed.

CHAP. XVIII.

¶ Of the Combatte betweene Palmerin, and two of Amaranoes Brethren, whom he valiantly ouercame and killed.



Following the true discourse of our Historie of the King of Balisarca, who being Lieutenant Generall of all the whole Army, caused the next morning to be proclaimed by sounde of Trumpet, that euery man should attende on his Ensigne: and not to goe robbing and Foraging the Villages along the

Countrie, on paine of death to be inflicted vpon the offender. So marching on in good Araye, in shorthe time after they Encamped themselves before a Cittie, where the enemies kept themselves in Garrison: and planting themselves there for their advantage; the next Morning they determined to giue the Assault. All the Night long they were ordering the manner of their Battterie, the Wyoners digging and making Trenches, and such Defences as are requisite in warlike occasions.

Euery thing in due and perfect order, at Sunne-rising they beganne to assaile the Cittie rounde about: following their intent with such courage and Alacrity, as with Scaling-ladders, & other Engins, in lesse then two houres they

they gotte vpon the Malles, and (in despite of theyr enemyes) entred the Citie, murthering and expulſing the Phrygians, and ſharing the ſpoyle among themſelves. All other Cities, Townes, and Villages, that were taken by the Enemy, within five dayes after were recouered, they not daring to withſtand the Soldans power. Gramiel, Amaranos eldeſt Brother amazed heereat, hauing vnderſtanden to be reuenged of his Brothers death, with his forces, he tooke himſelfe to open field, determining to giue the Aſyrians Battell, and that way to make tryall of their fortune: in which reſolution they came within halfe a dayes Journey of theyr Enemyes.

The King of Balifarca aduertised hereof, diſſembled immediately, taking aduantage of a little Mountaine, which was in the open ſight of the Enemy. And Palmerin, who deſired nothing more then fight, that he might accompliſh his promiſe to the Princeſſe Alchidiana: when he receiued of her his rich Shielde and Lancer, perſwaded the General, that he ſhould the next morning ſummon the Brethren of Amaranos, that within foure, and twentie houres, they ſhould depart the Soldans confines, or elle endure the danger of the Sworde. The King of Balifarca aduiſing hereon in counſell, founde it very neceſſary and expedient: wherefore calling his Sonne, Syr Palmerin, and the Prince Olorico, he committed the charge thereof to theyr preſent diſpatch. They being come to the Army of Gramiel, were immediately conducted to the Princes Tent, who was then deliberating with his Brethren, and other Captains of the Armie. So ſone as he vnderſtood the arriual of the Embaſſadours, hee cauſed them to come before him, and theyr meſſage being deliuered: the Phrygian Princes, who were of maruellous haughtie diſpoſition, answered, that they would not obey any ſuch commandement. Whereupon, they intended to chaſe thence the Soldans Lieutenant, euen to the very Gates of his owne Cittie: For that (contrary to all Equitie) hee withſtoode the Buryall of theyr Brothers bodie

hodie in his Kingdome. Guereſin, Sonne to the King of Balifarca, could not ſuffer ſuch injury to his Lord in his preſence: Wherefore he ſaid, that the Soldan had done them no wrong, but receiued their Brother and his Train with greater honour then they deſerued, and that none of them ſhould haue the like againe. So went he ſouth of the Paſſion, Gramiell and two of his Brethren following him, whereof the one has bene in Aſſiria, with his Brother Amaranos: who ſeing Palmerin, that all this while kept himſelfe without the Tent, and marking well his Shielde, where in mockage was paynted his Brothers head: hee knew him immediately, and in great rage pulling himſelfe by the hayre, ſaide:

Willayne that I am, howe can I ſuffer in my preſence the Traytour that murthered my Brother: Bold and preſumptuous Caytiſe, howe durſt thou adventure before me, thus to deride me with thy villanie: Truſt me (ſaide Palmerin) I dare come before thee, with better aſſurance of my ſelfe, then thy falſe Brother when he entred Combat with mee. Wherefore, if thou wilt proue ſuch a Gallant, as thou wouldeſt haue mee iudge thee to bee, by theſe Brauadoes, and likewise haſt any ſtomacke to reuenge thy Brothers ſhame: Arrie thy ſelfe, and another of thy Brethren with thee, and come to me in place conuenient, where I my ſelfe will iuſtifie to you both, that Amaranos was worthily ſlain, and as ſuch a falſe accuſing Traytour well deſerues. I deſire nothing more (ſaide Orinello) for ſo was he called that gaue theſe hate ſpeeches, but my Brother ſhall not deale with thee, till I haue tryed my fortune alone: and if I faile of my purpoſe, then ſhall he afterwards Combat with thee, this provided, that thou aſſure me from any in thy company, but thine owne perſon. That will I vpon my knight-hood (ſaide Palmerin) thou performing, as much on thy behalf: yet I thinke before the ſport be done, that thou wilt wiſh thy ſellow with thee. Thus Palmerin, Olorico, and Guereſin, with theyr ſeruantes, Orinello and his brother

THE HISTORIE

presently going to arme them, and accompanied with many knights, came into the field, Palmerin likewise as ready as the foremost, came in with a good traine of Souldiers hee had brought with him, least any treason should be wrought against him. Olorico shewed himselfe greatlie discontented, because he might not accompanie his friend in the Combat: but Palmerin perswaded him, that more needefull occasions were reserved for him, which should returne him greater honoz, and whom he should court in better sort, then ever he did the Ladies of Arabia, Gramiel being very richly armed, would needes come to his Brethrens Combat, which had good hope would sort to their honour: but Palmerin seeing Orinello readie to the carriere, encountred his enemy with such puissance, as his Lance passing through his body, caused him fall dead from his horse, without remouing either hand or foote.

Having performed his course, hee returned to take his lance out of his enemies body, striking him with the great Truncheon ende on the stomacke, to see if any life was left in him: but seeing his soule was departed to Lucifers Pallace, hee couched his staffe to receiue the other Brother, who met him with such strength, as he was well nere dismounted, yet in the ende he was sent after his Brother, though many hardie strokes first passed betweene them. Hereupon was such a sudden crye on all sides, some with ioy, and other with sorrow, as made the ayre resound their voices. And I thinke that the Greekes when they receiued their libertie by Quintus Flaminius, made not the like clamour: when (as Valerius rehearseth) the Wyds fell from the ayre with the furie of their cries. In the meane while, the King of Balisarca, hauing heard hereof, came into the field, accompanied with many Lords, and conducted Palmerin with great honour and triumph backe to his Tent: especially the Prince Olorico, who exceeding ioyfull for the good fortune of his companion, embracing him, said, Ah gentle Palmerin, how brauely haue you accomplished your promise

OF PALMERIN D'OLIVA.

promise to the Princesse: the like successe Heauen graunt you in labouring my cause. Belieue me good Prince (quoth Palmerin, so well will I employe my selfe in this action, as I hope you shall haue cause to thanke me. Now to returne to Gramiel, hee caused his Brothers bodys to be conueyed thence, and embalmed them in two Chests of Leade, reseruing the funerals till his returne: and with the teares in his eyes, he thus began to excite his people:

Not knowing how (my louing friends and Countrey-men,) to animate your mindes sufficiently, with remembrance of the tyrannie exercised by the Solban, on the body of my late Brother and your Prince: unhappy occasion presents you with a fresh memorie of reuenge, seeing these two young Princes, the beloued Sonnes of your King, so shamefully slayne in your presence. For this cause, deere friendes, that each of you may take a new couragious spirit, to morrowe to encounter these effeminate Assyrians; let vs all be resolute together, and cause them to vnderstand, that you, who haue led your liues in the Deserts of Affrica, much better know how to manage Armes, then such flatterers in theyr Mistresses Chambers, who can do nothing but before theyr Ladies.

Hereupon two hundred knights aduanced themselves before him, swearing, and undertaking to bring Palmerins bodie to him the Daye following: and therefore all that night they prepared themselves, strengthening theyr Shildes and Armour, and all other things necessary for the fight, thinking the next morning by Sunne rising to bid them battell, these knights inuenting to Ambush themselves as you shall heare. Palmerin heeing brought thus honorably to his Tent, called for the Chyrurgions to visite his wounds, which they founde so easie to be cured, as they assured him of speedie recovery. He then summoning the whole Conncell together, aduised them, that in his opinion he thought it expedient to dislodg that place about midnight, with bag and baggage, and so to coast the Mountain,

sciz.

seigning a fearfull departure. For (quoth he) the enemy advertised of our retyre, will imagine that wee dispaire of our successe, by reason of the death of the two slaine Princes.

Thus our dissembled flight, will cause them disorderly to pursue vs, which we will suffer, till espying our advantage: when returning valiantly vpon them, I dare gage my life wee shall eyther kill them downe right before vs, or at least dye them to a most shamefull foyle. This devise was generally allowed for good, and at the houre appointed was executed. By great chaunce this morning was Gramiell come among his men very early: and vnderstanding how the Soldans Prisoner was departed with such silence, presently cryed Alarum, charging all his men to follow them, for hee doubted they would enter a Cittie nere at hande, which was so strongly fortified, as they should neuer entice them forth to skirmish, therefore he desired to prevent them of that helpe.

Hereupon the Horsemen galloped after them amaine, crying: vpon them (my friends) vpon them, the day is ours. Palmerin, the Prince Olorico, the King of Balisarca, Guerresin his Sonne, with a thousand men at Armes, seeing how they were disorderd: returned vpon them and made such a slaughter among the Phrygians, as that the fielde was couered all euer with theyr bodyes. When Gramiell, seeing that of the first Shallic not one came backe againe, set forward with his Battell, wherein he had a thousand horsemen, and furiously running on the Soldans poster: by misfortune hee mette with the Prince Olorico, to whome hee gaue such a cruell stroke on the head, as had almost set him beside his saddle. Olorico highly discontented hereat, turned valiantly towards his enemy, and betwene them continued a very dangerous fight: but in the ende, Gramiells Helmet being cut off from his head, he began to despayre, when Olorico following his intent, nobly at one blowe smote his head from his shoulders. This mishap was seene by one of his younger Brethren, who running

fiercely

fiercely with his Lance against Olorico, was suddenly prevented by Palmerin, in that hee stroke him beside his Horse, where he was troden to death with the trampling of the horses.

Then came forth the two hundred sworne Knights from their ambush, who had vnderaken Palmerins death, and him they hemd in so subtilly, as he was brought into very great danger. Which the Prince of Arabia beholding, made way through the thickest to assist his friend, after whom followed Guresin with an hundred Knights: without which supply, both Palmerin and Olorico had bin slaine, for their Horses were killed vnder them, and they enforced to fight on foote. But when they beheld this fortunate succour, their courage nobly increased, and then beganne the sharpest encounter, for the wings on either side approached, the Archers and Crossebowes likewise, sending their arrowes as thicke as haile among them, so that the battaile endured till darke night. When the Brethren sounded the retraite, for which the King of Balisarca was not sorry, hauing so ouertrauelled himselfe that day, as he could no longer sit on horsebacke: notwithstanding, before he would enter his Tent, he saw the fielde assured, the watch placed, and all the Souldiours planted in good order.

CHAP. XVI.

How the Brethren of Gramiell, with all their traine, took themselves to flight, and how Palmerin suddainly pursued them with his power, and tooke them prysoners.



Immediately after that these two Phrygian Princes had thus sounded the retreat, and considered how they had lost five of their brethren, three in single fight with Palmerin, and the other in the battell, the greatest part of their power likewise, almost utterly dimmed to know the certaintie of their strength, they commanded a division to be made of the whole and wounded, and seeing how small their number was, they concluded not to stay in any place, till they came to the Realme of Palmeria, wherof Maurice was king, and their kinsman; from whom Palmerin took the enchanted Crowne, where they thought to supply their want, with men active and able to Armes.

The next day, the King of Balisarca raunged a thousand men in order, to give a fresh assault on the enemy; but he was suddenly advertised by his espials, how the Phrygians were fledde. He not a little glad of these newes, sent word to Palmerin thereof, who though he was sore wounded, armed himselfe, commanding his Captaines to provide five thousand men presently, to goe see the certaintie of these tydings. With this strength hee toynded the Kings power, and so went to the enemies Campe, where they

found no resistance, nor any but such as lay grievously wounded, of whom he required which way the cowards were fled: which the poore Souldiours reporting to him, he vowed to follow till he overtooke them. This resolution agreed vpon, betwene the King of Balisarca and him, with tenne thousand Light-Horsemen, hee determined to pursue them: and the King to stay there with all the rest of the Arme, to recover the Cittyes and Townes againe to the Soldane, which before had bene taken by the Enemye, and to be in readinesse with assistance, if he should happen to stand in any neede.

While Palmerin made election of his company, a Horseman was dispatched with these newes to the Soldan, how the enemies had bene foyled, and of their flight. The Messenger being come before Maulicus, & the Letter opened, and read, how valiantly Palmerin dealt with his enemies: before all his Nobilitie, the Soldan sayde: By all the Oracles of Delphos, I may well perswade my self, that wheresoever Palmerin is for vs, wee are assured of the Victorie.

The Princesse having heard these newes, sent for the Messenger, and after shee understode by him, how Palmerin bare her Shielde in the face of her Enemies, and hadde slaine in Combat two of Amaranoes Brethren: she was marvellous ioyful, and so well rewarded the Messenger for his paynes, as for ever hee might extoll the bounty of the Princesse.

The Messenger dispatched againe with the Soldanes Letters, brought speedie answer to the King of Balisarca and Palmerin, of their Packet: wherein the Soldan heartily thanked them, desiring them to follow their fortune.

Palmerin understanding the will of the Soldane and Alchidiana, and howe they desired him to pursue the Brethren of Gramiell: determined to set forwards the next morning, advertising the Prince Olorico thereof, that hee might put himselfe in a readinesse. But notwithstanding their diligence, the Enemies gotte before them into Pal-

meria, where they rested themselves, in hope to be assisted by their Cozen Maurice. And whē he was giuen to understand how the dumbe knight named Palmerin folloved them, wherfore he commanded them to depart his realme, for he would not ayd them against his dearest friend. This repulse droue them into great despayre, yet seeing they could not helpe it, they were constrained to make a vertue of necessity, and so secretly as they could deuise, by litle and litle stole toward their owne country. Maurice hearing how Palmerin was come into his Realme, rode thre or foure dayes iourney to meet him, & entertayning him with exceeding honor, offered himselfe, his people, and substance to his service. Palmerin very thankfull for the Princes kindnesse, would haue nothing but certayne horses of him, because diuers of his owne had miscaried. By this time were the Brethren entered the Confinnes, which belonged to the Admirall of Tharus, where they had done very much harme, by exactions and great misusing of the people. This Admirall was a very gentle knight, and named Alfarano, which seeing what iniury they did him, and vnderstanding that they had bene conquered, and now fled without any place of assurance: leued an host of hardy Souldiours, wherewith he intended to keepe a straight, through which they must of necessitie passe, being so narrow as they could passe two together, and no way else could they escape him, except they would climbe the tops of the Mountains.

In this place lay the Admirall ambushed, with so many men as hee thought conuenient, and within thre dayes after Palmerin with his power came to assist them. The Phrygians hauing heard hereof, were greatly amazed at this vnerpected aduenture, and had no other helpe but to climbe the mountaine, where in holes & Caves they were glad to hide themselves, and there they continued fure or fives daies in safety, albeit they were ready to dye for want of sustenance. Palmerin foreseeing the incommodie of the place,

place, and that they could not escape him, nor needed hee any further to follow them: caused the mountaine to be environed on all sides, thinking the ende hereof would bee such, as indeede it afterwarde prooued to bee. For these poore distressed men, hauing neyther foode or other provision, came forth of their Caves, and assembled together on the side of the Mountaine, where entering into conference of their estate, some gaue counsell to go fight it out, but other (better advised) would not consent thereto: for better is it (quoth they) to yelde our selues to the mercy of our enemies, then to aduenture our fortune, where no hope of successe is to be expected.

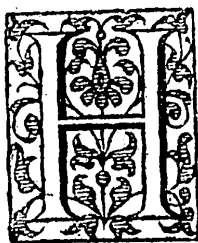
Whereupon they concluded, and the two Brethren of Gramell, were the first that vnarmed themselves, & coming in this manner to Palmerins Tent, thus they began. Noble knight Palmerin, more fortunate then any man in the world, we, Brethren to the renowned Prince Amaranos, whom thou with thine owne hand hast slaine, and thre other of our Brethren likewise, whereof the noble Orinello, deserueth speech, all Sonnes to a King, and themselves heretofore worthie accomplished Princes, though now we toyled and comforted with the dead: we (noble Lord) more certaine of thy clemencie and courtesie, then any successefulle ende of a Battell so vnrasonable and desperate, come to yeld our bodies and goods to thy disposing: desiring thee to pittie our estate, and regarde the workes of Fortune, vnto whom thou art subiect as well as wee. Besides, that the more shall greater persons be prayesed for honorable fauour then by vsing rigour and vnnaturall cruelty, which maketh them euery where hated and despised. When Palmerin sawe them so humble, considering his owne estate, and how fine might grow on him, returned them this answer. Now (my Lords) haue you done wisely, to lay by Armes, and submit your selues, for otherwise your destruction was at hand. Notwithstanding, in respect you haue thus yelded your selues to mee: I entertaine you into my safe defence,

THE HISTORIE

assuring you Peace with the Soldane, so that you sweare your faithfull Loue, and doe him homage. So gaue he them in keeping to one of his knights, whom he specially trusted, and returning to Alfarano, in recompence of his wrongs, and losses, sustained by the Phrygians, gaue him all their spoyle, and the haunsome of all the knights taken Prisoners. The Admyrall humbly kissing his hand, desired him to repose himselfe in one of his Citties, which was within five or six miles of the place: which gentle offer Palmerin would not refuse, because he was sore ouer-wearyed with trauell: Wherefore by the Admyralls appointment, the Pallace was well provided, both for Palmerin, and his good friend the Prince Olorico.

CHAP. XX.

¶ Howe the Queene of Tharsus came to see Palmerin, in the Cittie belonging to Alfarano her Admyrall, where by the meanes of an Enchanted Drinke, shee accomplished her pleasure with him.



¶ Here our History willet us to remember, how that in our former Discourse was mentioned, that the Queene of Tharsus sent a most rich Helmet to Palmerin, and at the Damozelles returne, was made acquainted with his singular composed feature, rare countenance, and knightly Chivalry: the report whereof inforced her amorously to affect him, and that in such vehement manner, as she determined her own death, unless she might enjoy his louely companie.

¶ Which the better to compass, shee discouered her de-

scrie

OF PALMERIN DOLIVA.

¶ First to a cunning Magitian, he by whose meanes shee sent the Helmet to Palmerin: who gaue her such an Enchanted powder, as Palmerin, drinking it in wine or otherwise, should soon after become so forgetfull of himselfe, as the Queene might accomplish whatsoeuer she desired. He likewise did reueale to her, the seuerall Loues of Palmerin and Olorico, which Tale made her more earnest in following her intent. And vnderstanding his arrivall in the Realme of Palmيريا, concluded in person to goe see him: furnishing herselfe with all things necessary, both rich Tapestrie, and great store of Golde and Silver plate, habillements, precious stones, rings, and vnualluable Jewelles. With these she adorned her knights, Ladies, and Gentlewomen to the uttermost, and when she had finished her traine to her own liking: shee sette forward with such expedition, as within three dayes shee arrived at the Cittie where he was, but first shee aduertized her Admyrall of her comming, that he should imagine nothing by her sudden presence. The Admyrall so ioyfull hereof as could be deuised, in that by this meanes he should the more honorably entertaine his Guests, acquainted Palmerin and Olorico therewith, who likewise were exceeding glad of the newes, especially Palmerin, desirous to know by her his Offspring.

¶ Therefore in most magnificent order with their Men at Armes, and the Admyrall Alfarano, they rode to meete the Queene for her greater honour: who by the speciall intelligence was giuen her, knew Palmerin among them all, in that he marched foremost with the Prince Olorico, and the Admyrall of Tharsus. Shee regarding in him farre more singularities, then sparring report had acquainted her withall: After that Palmerin had saluted her with very great Reuerence, as he was not to learne Courtly courtesie, the Queene requited him with a sweet kisse, and thus beganne, Sweet Iamight, the sayrest boy and all other that euer I sawe, well worthy are you to be esteemed among the most happy, being able to winne the Loue of Ladies that neuer saw you.

THE HISTORIA

you. Admise your selfe well of this great fauour, and what a pzeious Jewell you receyue of them; in requitall of your seruice, or acceptaunce of any Amourous contentment. Then wonder not (Gentle knight) if to see you, I haue left my Countrey: for beside your great valor, bounty, and loyalty, which neuer can be sufficiently comended: your beautie, affabilitie, and most rare perfections, deserue not onely the Loue of the greatest Ladie and Princesse, but their constant seruice like wise, if they but consider theyr owne duties. If then your vertues and gifts of nature are of such value and merite, what may she imagine of her selfe, who is your only Ladie and Mistresse, and aboue all other is honoured with your faithfull seruice, as well records the memory of the burning Crowne? Palmerin hearing himselfe so commended by such an excellent Quene, blushed with bashfulness, and humbly shaped this answer. Madame, so farre vnable am I, to deserue the Loue and good will you beare me, as neuer will Fortune fauour me sufficiently, to recompence the least parte of this Princely kindnesse. Yet hereof (faire Quene) you may assure your selfe, that you haue a knight so forward in your seruice, as nothing shall withhold him from executing your commandement, though the penaltie of my life were enioyned thereon.

Trust me (quoth the Quene) your behauiour promisseth no lesse then you speake of, and if I haue taken any paine for you, I thinke my selfe wthoroughly satisfied: let it suffice you then, that I account my Fortune not the least, hauing gained such place in your good opinion. These and such like speeches passed betwene them, till they came to Alaricos Pallace, where they spent the rest of the Day in diuersity of pleasures: the Quene intreating Palmerin and Olorico the next day to dine with her in her lodging, where she intended honourably to feast them. The next day at ten of the clocke, these two young Princes came to see her, finding her in a goodly Hall, which was richly hanged with Cloth of Gold, and therein stood a faire Cupboard, garnished with

OF PALMERIN DOLIVA.

with the most costly plate that euer was seen: for the basett piece was cleane Golde, embelished with pzeious stones, beside diuers other inestimable strange Cups and Glasses of Agatha. What theyr seruice at Dinner was, I leaue to the iudgement of Ladyes desirous off fauour. Yet this I dare well say, that the vyandes were so rare and exquisite, and abounding in such plentie, as though she had them daylie at commaund. The Tables withdrawne, the Quene tooke eache of the Princes by the hand, and sitting downe betwene them, with a sweete smiling countenance she beganne thus:

I pray you (gentle knights) to tell mee, which of you is most affected to the seruice of Loue, and folloves it with greatest endeavour: gladly would I be resolued by you, albeit I knowe the certaintie as well as your selues:

Madame (quoth Palmerin) if you haue such knowledge of our affections, well may our answer be excused. Very true (saide the Quene) especially you, of whose Loyalty the Prince Maurice is so notable a witnesse. Notwithstanding, which of you doth most mistrust the attainment of her grace, to whom he is most deuoted in Loue, let him not giue ouer the pursuit of his desire: but rather let me intreat you continue your Loue with much more seruencie, as to those renowned Ladies, who by theyr vertues and graces, doe worthily challenge you from all other: for I dare assure you such a successiue ende of your Loue, as with speciall content you shall finish your affectionate desires: If they were full of this assurance, it is no question to be demanded, chiefly Olorico, who till then dispaired: but now so happily resolued, gaue place to Palmerin, who was desirous to conferre more priuately with the Quene: therefore in meane time hee deuised with another Ladie, and Palmerin seeing the occasion so fitte, began his tale in this manner. I cannot forget (faire Quene) when you sent your Lady to mee at the Solmans Court: that after her message deliuered, she said to mee, that you were acquainted with further secrets,

con-

THE HISTORIE

concerning my estate. For this cause I intreate your highnesse, if you doe not imagine me too importunate: that it might please you to acquaint me with my Father and Mother, for that about all other things I most desire. The Queene amazed at this demand, thus answered. Know (gentle knight) that what the Ladie in this matter said to you, as also what my selfe euen now promised you: cometh not from me, for one of my knights acquainted mee therewith, he being the most skilfull in the Magicall sciences, that is in all Turkie. As now hee is returned into his owne Countrey, and no other answer could I get of him: but that you are the Sonne of the most loyall, redoubted and valiant Prince in the world, whom before you haue any further knowledge of, you shall deliuer from death, and that very shortly. Beside, you loue a Lady, who in all perfections of nature, fortune or spirit, hath not her equall.

In sooth (quoth Palmerin) I shal account my selfe right happy, to deliuer my Father from such danger, and heauen I beseech that it may so be. On these tearmes came Alfarano, and the dauncing began, which constrained them to breake of talke, and step into the daunce, in which delight they spent the time till Supper was summoned, till which aduertisement, they were so well, as was Ogyer the Dane in Faria. For neuer was Dydo such an affectionate auditrice of Aeneas, recounting the ruine of the Troyans, then was the Quene of Tharsus to Palmerin: towarde whom her heart was so enthralled, and with secret fire so wasted and consumed, as doth the Ware before the fire. Being set at the Banquet, Palmerin and Olorico on the one side, and the Quene and Alfarano on the other, the Waiters attending on them were two Ladies, who had in charge to giue the one, the sleeping and dangerous drinke, and to the other, the amorous and delicate, yet in effect to mouke forgetfulness: so wel did the Ladies discharge their office, and the Princes took this mixed drinke so substantially, as they could hardly forbear sleeping at the Table: where

OF PALMERIN DOLIVA.

wherefore euery one arising, the Quene gaue the good night to Alfarano, who presently went to his lodging. These were these two sleepe Princes conducted to their Chamber, where being in bed, they slept soundly, and the Quene coming to them, accompanied with those trustie Ladies that waited at Supper: tooke the Prince Olorico, conveying him to another bedde, for he was so charmed as he could not awake.

Afterward the Ladies departed, and the Quene went to vande to Palmerin, whom she abused at her owne pleasure. A matter not to be esteemed fabulous, in that other haue been brought into the like case, as well may witnesse Brangiana, who endured these worst skirmishes, because she would not manifest the history of Yleul her Mistresse, and Tristram. The quene hauing satisfied her vncleane desire, caused Olorico to be brought into his place againe, & then returned to her owne Chamber. But now this enchantment loosing his operation, a fantasie appeared to Palmerin, resembling his Ladie Polynard, who said. Ah Palmerin, disloyall Drayfour and Adulterer, how much are they deceived, that repute thee a loyall and faithfull Louer? Ah wretch, but worthy of so good a name, hauing so inuirtuouslie forgotten mee. Dost thou not consider thy great offence, committed against the God of Heauen: meddling with a Woman more brutish then brutishnes it selfe, and thy disloyall treason against my selfe? Be assured, that if thou presently forsake not her company: I will neuer forget thy fault, but chastise thee continuallie as a dissembling reprobate. So she departed, Palmerin intreating her to pardon this iniurie, which she would not heare, but stoung away in great anger: and he awaking, brake forth into these speeches.

Ah vnhappie wretch that I am, thus to loose the gracious fauour of my Mistresse. These words awaked the Prince Olorico, who embracing him in his arms, demanded the cause of his sorrow: but Palmerin was so surprised with

THE HISTORIE

with griefe, as hee would make no answer, but fell from the Bedde in a swoone. Olorico fearing he was dead, cried out for helpe, whereat the Quene arose, and casting her sight. Gentle about her, came to knowe the occasion of this clamour: and finding Palmerin breathlesse, she called for so many present remedies, as extinguished the passionat fitt. Palmerin seeing the Quene so nere him, clothed himselfe immediately, and departed the Chamber, commaunding all his people to prouide themselves, thz he would departe thence within an houres space. Perther coulde the earnest intreatyes of the Quene, nor courteous perswasions of Alfarano, cause him to stay till Dinner time: but his Carriages being sent before, and his Men attending him, he came to take his leaue of the Quene, who very sorrowfull for this strange accident, said to him at his departure:

Noble Sye Palmerin, my heart attainted with such extreme griefe, as the sight of you doth somewhat remedy, expected further hope of ease by your presence: but seeing your departure may not bee withstode, I pray you vouchsafe to weare this Ring for my sake, and keep it safely, till my messenger bring you an other like vnto it. Madrine (quothe Palmerin) being vnable to remunerate the great honours you haue done mee, I will not denye your small request: that I may the better fulfill the bond of Allegiance, wherein I stand bound to you while I liue. Goe then in the safe protection of the Gods (quothe she) for thou hast left me such a recompence, as all my life time will be ioyfull to mee.

Palmerin not vnderstanding her darke speeches, departed, putting the Ring on his finger, being the most rich and curious piece of worke that euer was seene: For in it was a goodly great Rubie cut in faces, so liuely as could be deuised, which shone so brightly, as in the night time it sparkled great light. The Quene likewise, after shee had giuen great Riches to the Admirall, returned into her Countrey, leading thenceforwards a very Chaste and Continent life, onely for his sake, by whome in (short time) shee found her selfe

OF PALMERIN D'OLIVA.

words this day vsed in my presence to Alchidiana, I remaine bound to your seruice: for in truth you know not the good you did me, supporting my imperfection of speech when I was before my Mistres. Yet know I not whence such imbecillitie should proceed, if not by being rauished with regard of her celestiall countenance, my ouerlaboured spirit forsooke me, and being too much tormented in this languishing bodie: abandoned all the parts sensatiue, placing it selfe onely in mine eyes, which neuer could imagine themselves satisfied, contemplating beautie of so rare and especiall estimation. And were it not my hope onlie consisteth in you, comparing my small defect, and the excellencie of my Ladie: long ere this had my soule forsooke her infortunate habitation, which so vndiscreetly fell into these oppressing passions. And this I earnestly intreate you to let her vnderstand: in that I feare least she impute happy alteration, to want of wisdom and ciuilitie. Trust me, quothe Palmerin, I promise you my uttermost abilitie, and so much will I doe, as one friend may for another, to discharge my selfe of the promise which heretofore I made yee.

And let me intreate you on mine owne behalfe, to re-moue that opinion of speciall loue, which you repozte the Princesse beare me, being not such as you doe imagine: for (noble Prince, and my deare friend) you need not despaire of the benefit whereof I haue so solemnely assured you. After many other speeches, they slept till the next morning, when clothing themselves in their richest garments, then went and gaue the good morrow to the Soldane, who very honourably thanked them: and Palmerin espying conuenient occasion, thus began.

O Lord, you haue sufficient experience, that by the bountie and great fauour of the Gods, you haue obtained victory against your enemies, to the no little content of your Subjects: all which being so happily finished, base were the thought, to feare the perfection of higher enterprises.

There

such and so many haue bene his rare Employes, as no one that I knowe may be equalled with him. And all this hee admitteth to your fauour, wherein hee earnestly desircth to continue, so please you to accept him for your knight: deliuering this assurance before hand, that hereafter hee will aduenture his Life in your cause, wheresoeuer it shall like you to commaund him. For this cause (Madame) you may not refuse him, beeing the man that among all the Assirians, doth best deserue to be your Seruant. Alchydiana, who well vnderstood to what ende his speeches tended, and the occasion why Palmerin thus spake, aduised herself well, and returned this answer.

So helpe me oue Gods, I knowe well that the Prince Olorico is so puissant and renowned as any man of whom I yet heard: notwithstanding, I hope the Soldan my Father will not be ingratefull in the knowledge thereof, and that sufficiently, I dare warrant yee. But I desire you, faire Son, to tell me how the Quene of Tharsus intreated you, and what is your opinion of her? In good sooth Madame (answered Palmerin) there is one of the most honest and vertuous Ladies that euer I came in companie withall, & to whom I greatly desire to do any service. You haue good reason (quod the Princeesse) in that she came so farre to see you, & discouer her loue: which others could as well accomplish, as good, or rather in Honour beyond her, if they might hope of any ease in thei passionate desires. Palmerin feigning not to vnderstand her meaning, entred into other kind of talke, vntill Supper time, which finished, eache one returned to their Chamber, when the Prince seeing himselfe alone with his friends, thus sayde. Ah my deare friends Palmerin, howe worthily may you be sayde to bee without compare, in all perfections that a knight ought to haue, Loue ouely excepted: yet herein (if I be not deceiued) you doo for me against all reason, for a thousand times are you more beloued, then your selfe can loue any. Notwithstanding, for this default, if so it may be named, and for the
wores

their speedy coming. The Soldane was not a little toyed full of these tydings, as also of the fortunate victorie against his Enemies, wherefore he left the Cittie of Calpha, and determined to meete them at a Castell of Pleasure, which he had lately Coeited, chiefly because hee would see the good order of his Armie, which was now conducted in better equipage, then before was wont to be seene in Asyria.

The King of Balsarca caused the Captiues to be ledde before, who (by his commaundment) when they came in the Soldans presence: threw thei Armour to the ground, and three times fell on thei knees kissing the Earth, protesting themselves, before him with great reuerence. All these ceremonies finished, Palmerin, the Prince Olorico, with the other Governours of the field, came and kissing his Highnesse hand, hee entertained them very graciously: and after hee had embraced Palmerin, he would needs ride betweene him and the King of Balsarca. In this order rode they on to the Pallace Gate, where his Ladie Lechea and Alchidiana her Daughter, trickt by in vestures of surpassing value, attended their coming: and after the accustomed reuerences on all sides, entred the great Hall, where the Princeesse taking Palmerin by the hand, before her Father and all his Barons, thus spake.

Son, Palmerin, so well is your prowesse and haughtie deedes of Armes knowne to euery one, as my praise cannot extoll them to aduantage: notwithstanding, I dare say before my Father, and all his Lordes here present, that he is so much indebted to you, as he can neuer returne sufficient recompence. These words vttered with such affectiue were ere noted by euery one, especially the Prince Olorico, when Palmerin made this answer to the Princeesse: Madame, here may you behold the Prince of Arabia, one of the best knights that euer I knew, and who hath done done service to your Father and you in this Warre, then any other beside: for with his stone hand he slew Gramicell, who was chiefe leader of the Parigians Arme. Beside,
such

THE HISTORIE

helfe conceived with child. And at the time appointed by nature, she was deliuered of a goodlie Sonne, resembling his Father in bzaue constitution: whom the Mother caused to be named Palmerendos, as well in memoire of his father Palmerin, as also of his Graundfater Florendos, from them deriuing his name, as being the onely flower of chivalrie. And as Palmerin was vertuous, so did his Sonne follow him in all bountie, prudence, magnanimitie, loyaltie, liberalitie, courtesie and humanitie: in bzielse, he had all the noble vertues that a child might receiue from his father, as you may at large perceiue in his Historie. But because his deeds as yet serue not to our purpose: we will leaue him growing vnder his mothers charge, and returne to them whom lately we left.

CHAP. XXI.

How Palmerin, to colour his intended and desirous voyage into Christendome, perswaded the Soldane to send his Armie to Constantinople, and what followed thereon.



Greatly desirous was Palmerin to returne towards the Soldane, and therefore would not make his way by Palmeria, but iournied thitherward, where the King of Balisarca staied his conning: who came to meete him with all the Lords and captaines of his army. Thus hauing brought the countrey in quiet obedience to the Soldane, with their prisoners they returned towards his Maiestie, sending word before of their

OF PALMERIN DOLIVA.

Therefore my Lorde, I thinke it expedient, so it may stand with your good liking, considering your prouision for the Sea, is in such readinesse, your people likewise acquainted with your intent, before we medled with the Bretheren of Amarano, came daily in troupes to offer their seruice: that now you send your Army to Constantinople, for your auis were once heard, right soone will wee Embarke our selues, and set forwards on our Voyage. For the rest, I pray you deliuer these Prisoners, to be vsed as your slaues: but as for the Princes, I thinke (hauing seene the Fortune of their Bretheren, and theyr owne badde successe in Armes) that they will serue you with continuall Loyaltie. My Sonne, (quoth the Soldan) let all be done as you haue appointed, for such is my confidence in you, that this your intent can not but sorte to a good ende: wherefore my Galleyes and all things ready furnished, depart when you please, hauing first sent your Souldiours aboord.

The Prince Olorico being present, offered againe to go in this Voyage, with like number of men, as he brought against the Bretheren of Amarano: For which the Soldane greatly thanked him, promising him such satisfaction at his returne, as would agree with his owne content. Alchidiana taking in ill parte, the words of Palmerin on the Prince Oloricos behalfe: sent for him to come speake with her, which he did, and finding her very sad and mellanchollie, hee demaunded if any one had done her displeasure, and what the cause might be of her pensiuenesse: Ah my deare Friend (quod shee) how can I but be grieued, seeing no one Lady in the world, hath so many contrary Fortunes as my selfe: Alas, my heart hath chosen you for my onely Lorde and Friende, thinking to finde place woth my ioncete, and that your Loue would answer me with the like; but in ought I can perceiue, I am too much beguiled, for you, eyther as ingratefull, or carelesse, vse affecting speethes to me, importing no other ende, but that in leauing you, I should take the Prince Olorico for my Husband. Do you imagin

THE HISTORIE

me so mutable and inconstant, that I will or can Love any other but you? or that my affection entirely settled so high, can b'oke such a dolefull fall, as to like the man so much inferior to you? And (which most of all offendeth mee) not contented to mocke mee, in disdainning my knowne Love: discourteously would perswade mee to chuse another: Let all our Gods be iudge, if I haue not iust cause to complaine of you, albeit I haue greater reason to hate and despise my selfe: For in that I haue more then deserved your Love, yet (as too much vnwise) I cannot consider, that in the heart of an ingratfull person, Love hath no place of certaine abiding. But seeing our Gods haue in such sort subiected mee, as against my will I am constrained to loue mine enemy, in vaine were it for me to resist against them, that they beholding the trippotted Love of the one, may in the ende punish the ingratitude of the other. Thus thinking to continue longer speech, so many violent sighes intercepted her, as shee was not able to proffer one word more, whereby Palmerin enforced, thus answered. I beseeche you Madame, crosse me not with these needlesse words, for although the Prince is so worthy to be beloued, as any man that euer I sawe: yet were I very much vnprovided of witte, and a meere stranger to good consideration, if I would refuse that speciall felicitie, then which I can desire no greater.

I knowe (Sweete Ladie) that you Love mee intirely, perswade your selfe then, that my Loyaltie is no lesse, nor can Death cause mee gainsay the promises I haue made you: and were it not to the great disadvantage of mine Honour, to forsake this honourable Warre your Father hath intended, which might procure eache one to misceiue of mee: assure your selfe, that I would forsake both Dignities Arms, and all, to doe the seruice you worthily deserve, all which at my returne, feare not, shall be effected. So wel could Palmerin dissemble the matter, as the Princesse was somewhat better pacified, & taking his leaue of her, re-
turnde

OF PALMERIN D'OLIVA.

turned to the Soldane: Before whom hee caused to be brought, the Princes and Lords that were prisoners, and at his request Maucius gaue them thei libertie, with this charge notwithstanding, that they should serue him in this warre. Which that they might the better accomplish, hee commanded them Horse, Armour, and all other things necessary, making all possible speede could be deuised, that his Armie might sette forward to Sea.

CHAP. XXII.

¶ How Palmerin sayling with the Soldans armie, was brought by Tempest into the Sea of Allemaigne, where he tooke landing with the prince Olorico.



Quickly Palmerin consented for to Embarked the Armie, desiring the Prince Olorico to accompany him to the Haven, to the end they might make choise of the best Vessells for themselves: and furnishing them all, they found a goodly Carricke, newe and very well appointed, wherein many Prisoners lay chained,

who formerly had bin taken by the Soldans Gallies, and other Rowers of the Boates, of whom Palmerin demanded what people they were: they answered that they were Christians, and had of a long time liued there in that thraldome, Palmerin not a little glad of these newes, asked of what Countrey they were, whereupon one of them that could well speake the Arabian tongue, thus answered:

We are all borne in Allemaigne, to whom fortune hath excused in crueltie. These wordes were maruolous welcome to Palmerin, and for which inwardly he thanked
his

his God: but the better to dissemble his ioy, he thus spake: This Countrey should seeme to bee very farre from hence, because I neuer hearde thereof before. So finding this well fitte for his purpose, hee appoynted it for himselfe, and the Prince Olorico, discharging all others that were therein, two knights onely excepted, to whose charge hee committed the Christians: causing his Horses, Tents, and all other necessities, to be carried aboard, as well the Prince Oloricoes, as his owne, accomplishing euery thing in such order, as within three dayes after the Souldiours were ready to depart. And now the day is come to launche away, when the Soldan and other Laboylanes, accompanied the King of Balisarca to the Hauen: But the faire Ailchydiana would not be seene, by reason of her great grieve and sorrow for her friends departure: For when she came to take her leaue of Palmerin in his Chamber, she fell (in a manner dead) at his fete, some after she deliuered these lamenting speeches:

This is no common farewell my beloued Lorde, which you now take of me, but say it is my very last Adieu: for my heart perswades mee, that I shall neuer see you more, because the extremities of my sorowes are such, as well I know I cannot long endure. Adieu then sweet friend, who in steede of ioy and comforte, leauest mee in dispayre, which neuer can haue ende, but by immediate death.

Good Madame say not so (qud. Palmerin) for I hope right soone to see you againe. So leauing her, Olorico and hee went towards the Hauen, the Prince being so passionate to leaue her sight, by whose swete lookes his life was maintained: as had not his friendly companion comforted him, unable was he to depart the palace. But bring now come to the Port, and seeing the winde and Sea seruiceable, loth to trifle the time with any longer staye, they came to take theyr leaue of the Soldan, who took great care for theyr contentment, and many times embracing Palmerin, commending to him the disposition of all his affaires, said: My
noble

noble Sonne and friend, I be to you in presence of our Gods, that if you returne hither againe with victorie, with such honours I will endow you, as shall be sufficient for the whole worlde to talke on. Palmerin humbly kissing his hande, went aboarde, the Marriners hoysing saile, launched forth into the Sea: with such a braue noise of Drummes, Trumpets, Clations, Cornets, Fifes, & other instruments, as though Heauen and earth would haue encountered together. Palmerin thus floating on the gouernment of Neptune, imagined how with safetie he might forsake his companie, wherfore he commaunded to vnbind all the Christians. For (quoth he to Olorico) seeing they are Marriners, and well skilde in the arte of Nauigation they may stande vs in good steede, if time so require, or any suddaine tempest shoulde assaile vs: but the better to beguile his owne people, he caused them to sweare their faithfull seruice to him.

The night being come, and hee seeing that euery one slept soundly: called two of the Christians, and in the Allemaigne tongue thus began, My friends, giue thanks to God for your fortune, in that you Christians haue founde one of your faith and religion, who hath good hope shortly to deliuer you from these heathen helhoundes: therefore set leaue apart, and regard well your Quadrant, if you can compasse any meane to gette the coast of Allemaigne. The Christians more glad then can be exprest, answered, that they would accomplish his commaundement, and therefore he should repose his trust in them. About midnight, as God would, began a great tempest and blustering of winde, so that in despight of the Pylots and Marriners, the flete was seuered in many parts: but the Christians perceiuing that this wind serued well for their auaille, knew so well how to order their course, that in short time they got far enough from their company, and thus continued the wind for tenne or twelue daies, for which Palmerin deuoutly thanked God.

THE HISTORIE

So happily strayed Palmerin with his Allemaignes, that one of them at length tolde him, they were neere the straighes of Gibraltare: for which Palmerin not a little ioyfull said, how that they might passe Spayne, without any there, and so the sooner reache Allemaigne. But when they began to coast the straight, the Turkish Harriners were amazed, saying that the Christians knewe not their course, being more then eyght hundred thousand leagues forth of theyr compass.

Palmerin fearing to be discovered before hee came to his intent, answered in choller, that the Christians knewe their course much better then they did, and they to prate no more on paine of theyr liues: which threatning, presently droue them all to silence. Afterwardes they sayled with so good winde, as they tooke Landing at a Port in Allemaigne, which at this day is called Tolledo: when the Christians said to Palmerin, how that was the place wherethey were borne, where (if so hee pleased) they desired theyr libertie. Palmerin assuring them of theyr request, answered that he himselfe would land there, and therfore went first on shore, feigning to seeke fresh water, and all things accomplished to his owne desire: he caused his Horse to be brought forth, and Oloricoes likewise, who was importunate to beare him companie. Sooner was Palmerin on shore, but he kneeled downe, giuing thanks to God for his safe deliuerance. The Merchants and Harriners of the Citty, seeing them whome they thought lost in the Sea, more then tenne yeeres before, were greatly abashed, welcomming them home, with exceeding ioye: but they answered, that they ought rather to thanke the Knight in graine Armour, for he deliuered vs from the Wozes and Infidels, without request of any raunsome.

Olorico amazed at these signes of ioy, as also when hee sawe Palmerin pray, knewe not well what to thinke: which Palmerin presently perceyuing, and to resolute him of all doubts whatsoeuer, sayd. No longer neede I now my good

Lord

OF PALMERIN D'OLIVA.

Lord and friende, to hide the affaires and secrets of my hart from you: knowe therfore, that I am a Christian, and a Gentleman of the Emperours Court of Allemaigne. But that which most of all grieueth me, is that I am constrained to forsake your company, and returne againe to my Lord, for so much should I offende my God, to goe with you in the Soldans service. Therfore my louing friend, let me intreate you to holde me excused, swearing to you by the faith of a Knight, that whether else it shall like you to goe, I will accomplish your minde in any thing. I intreate you likewise, to entertaine all my Squires and Gentlemen into your service, and among them to share all my treasure in the Shippe, because I will haue nothing with me but my Horse and Armour. And notwithstanding all this, feare not to present your selfe before the Soldans and Alchidiana: for to them will I write such matter of you as they shall accept you in my place, and with as great honor as euer they did me. If heauen so fauour mee, as I may come to the knowledge of my Father, I will certifie you with the truth of all. As for my counterfeiting to be dumbe, was onely but to awaite opportunitie, when with safety I might escape from thence.

If Olorico at the first was amazed, what may be iudged of him now: notwithstanding, hee loued Palmerin so perfectly, as he returned him this answer. Although Syr Palmerin, we are of contrary faith and opinion, yet hath your noblenes and humanitie gained such priuiledge ouer mee, that as you haue long time liued a Christian among the Turks, so for your sake will I liue a Turke among the Christians, dissembling in like sort as you did, and neuer shall any occasion force mee to forsake you, till you haue found your Father, and knowe if he be descended of the Soldans blood. No honor will it be for me now, to returne againe to the Asseria Princes, and as for my people, I force not though they goe backe againe with my treasure: for on my Knighthode, I will be no richer then you, nor will

reserue any thing with me, then what belongs to a knight errant, which is Horse and Armour. For the rest, let Fortune do the worst she can; I hope for all this one day to be King of Arabia. Then noble friends, be not offended, for I will beare you company: if death or strong imprisonment do not withhold me. Palmerin embracing him, sayd.

Ah worthy Prince, so noble is your mind, and replete with fidelitie, as perswade your selfe to find me your loyall Brother, and fellow in Armes, neuer to forsake you while I can lift my Sword, so please you to abide with mee. So calling the chiefe of them in the Ship, they saide as much to them as you haue heard, commaunding them not to flye from Arabia, before they heard some other tidings. As for their strange conceit at these newes, I bequeath to your iudgments, yet durst they not gainsaie their Maisters; but launching into the deepe, sayled back againe into their owne Countrey.

Palmerin and Olorico for this night lodged in the Citie, to refresh themselves, and the next morning, after they had taken leaue of the Merchants, they deliuered, they set forward on their journey. Continuing their trauaile three daies together, at length they mette a knight, who seeing them Armed after the Turkish manner, sayd. Gentlemen, God saue ye, if I should not seeme troublesome to you, because I iudge you to be Strangers: I would gladly know if you could tell me any tydings of two knights, which long since left this Countrey. How were they named (qd. Palmerin?) Sir saide the knight, one of them is Trineus, Sonne to our deare Lord the Emperour, and the other, the most valiant Palmerin d'Oliua. Two yeres & more since, they left the Court, without any newes what became of them: sauing that we hearde they were a while with the King of England, and thence they conueyed his Daughter, the Emperour continuing so sorrowful for their losse, as euery houre his death is expected. May it be (qd. Palmerin) that

that all this while Trineus is not returned? What daunger will Noble Allemaigne sustaine, by losing their young Prince? overcome with exceeding griefe and sorrowe, by report of these unhappy tidings, to himselfe hee beganne in this manner.

What shall I do? Dare I bee so presumptuous, as to present my selfe before my Mistresse? What sufficient excuse can I make for the losse of her Brother? Doubtlesse, if it were such a hell to mee, to finde the meane for my departure, from that long Captiuitie in the Soldans Courte, much more wil it be to mee now in search of the Prince, for without him I dare not approach the Emperours presence.

While he thus secretly discoursed with himselfe, hee became so exceeding passionate, as Olorico thought he had lost his senses: which was the cause, that without any further enquerye the Allemaigne knights departed from them, when Olorico, amazed at this suddaine alteration, saide: How now Sye Palmerin? What hath moued you to this heauinesse? I beseeche you conceale not the cause from mee: for if it bee by any offence, that the knight offered which spake to you, some shall I deliuer him his penance. Wherefore tell mee I pray you, for vndoubtedly I will not suffer you to rest, vntill you haue acquainted mee with the trueth. Palmerin knowing how dearly the Prince loued him, and that onely for his sake he had left Countrey, Parents, and friends: reposing on his loyaltie, imparted his Loue to him, as also the losse of Trineus and the Princeesse Agriola. Olorico then laboured to perswade him, aduising him to compasse some secreete speech with his Ladie, of whome hee might learne how to recover her lost Brother, and the faire Agriola of England againe. Palmerin following his counsell, pacified himselfe, and hee kept himselfe so closely as he could, from being knowne to anie.

THE HISTORIE

CHAP. XXIIII.

How Palmerin, by the means of Vrbaniillo his Dwarf, spake with his Lady Polynarda, with whom he stayed five dayes, to recompence some parte of his long absence, and to the great contentment of them both.



With expedition in their Journey made these Noble Companions, and most worthy Knightes, that at length they arrived nere a strong Castell, which was about foure myles distante from Gaunt, where the Emperour as then was disposed to Hunting, for the delight of the Ladies: but chiesely to expell his stone melancholie and sadnesse, for the losse of his beloued Sonne, as also to recreate the Princesse Polynarda: who vnder pretence of shadowing the cause, by her Brothers absence, lamented continually for her Noble Friende Palmerin, of whom shee could vnderstand no certaine tydings, albeit she trauelled her very vttermost endeuors, which forced her to so many extream imaginations, as that the very last was worse then death it selfe.

The Emperours Trayne logging eache way about the Castell, hindered our two Knightes from any good Hottage, so that they were constrained to Lodge in a homely simple house: where they demanded of a Courtier which laye there, what time the Emperour would depart thence: who answered that his Highnesse was minded that day to returne to Gaunt, to conferre with the Princes Electours of speciall affaires concerning the Empire. Palmerin to full hereof, caused his Horse to be byreled: & accompanied with

Olo

OF PALMERIN DOLIVA.

Olorico, went and Ambushed themselves in a little Thicket nere the High-way, where the Emperour must needs passe, to the ende hee might beholde his Ladie Polynarda. Palmerin attending her coming who was the only supporte of his life: his heart leapt with conceyte of his Joye to come, yet trembled likewise, because he durst not present himselfe before the Imperiall Maiestie, without the Noble Trineus.

Some after, by the Garde of Archers that came forth, he well perceyued the Emperour was at hand: when remembryng the honours and fauours he had receiued in his Court, the teares trickled downe his Cheekes, chiesely for want of his Highnes Sonne, which was so especially committed to his trust. Then folloved the Emperesse, and with her the sayre Princesse Polynarda, cloathed all in blacke, witnesing by her outward habit, the secret sorowes of her heart. Her thoughts still hammering on her priuate griefs, yet assailed with a sudden motion, she gaue such a sighe as Palmerin easily hearde it: which troubled him in such sorte, as without the assistance of Olorico, he had fallen downe from off his Horse. Polynarda beholding his sudden alteration, without any regarde of her Mother, called Vrbaniillo the Dwarf to her: who since his coming from England neuer boudged from her, and to him shee saide. Hast thou heretofore (Vrbaniillo) seene those two Knightes, who shadow themselves in the Wood side, while we passe by? No trust me Hadamir (quoth the Dwarf) I neuer saue them to my remembrance. I pray thee (saide shee) ryde to them so fast as thou canst, and demanda of them from me, of wience they are: and if they can tell any tydings of thy Sister, and my Brother Trineus. The Dwarf, who was more then a Doctor in such affaires, dissembling that his Horse would stale, suffered the Trayne to passe by, and then rode towards the Knightes, who were deuising on the Princesse beauty. Palmerin wel knowing Vrbaniillo, and seeing him come in such hast, was not a little glad, thinking now

THE HISTORIE

now he shoulde heare some newes of his Distresse, wherefore he said to Olorico. I pray you let vs goe meete with this Horseman, for I thinke his returne is onely to vs.

Dolio was the Dwarf come to them, and hauing humbly saluted them, saide. I beseeche you faire knights to tell me whether you belong to the Emperour, or are strangers: for the Ladie whom I serue, is very desirous to know: and that for matters merely concerning her, wheteof it you can any way truly resolue her, your rewarde shall aunswere your owne contentment. What Urbanillo? (qd. Palmerin) lifting vp his Beuer: Didst thou not know thy Maister? Oh Heauen (quoth the Dwarf) praised be thy Maker for euer, for this Adventure. And moued with extreame ioy, he fell at his Maisters fete, saying: Ah my Lord, what comforte wil this bee to the Princesse Polynarda, when shee shall vnderstand of your Presence? and not without iust cause: for by this meane is she deliuered from the greatest torments in the world. And that nothing may want to furnish this long expected ioy, tell me if the knight in your company, be the Prince Trineus, or no? It is not hee (qd. Palmerin), for it is more then a yere since, that of him, and the faire English Agriola (after that I vnforsunately lost them) hearde any certaine report. For this cause Urbanillo, it behoues thee to be faithfull and secrete, not discovering my being heere to any but my Ladie: of whome thou must learne, by what meanes I may best come to see her? The Dwarf taking his leaue of his Maister, turned his horse to be gone: but comming backe suddenly againe, saide. Is this Syr Ptolome that is with you? Madame Brionella wil not be a little glad to heare of him likewise. For is it he (qd. Palmerin) I lost him in company with the rest. God will restore them one day again (saide the Dwarf) so giuing the spurrs to his horse, he galloped till he came to the Princesse, who seeing him returned in such haste, knew not well what to thinke: yet fearing to be discovered by a knight y accompanied her, determined not to request his tidings, vntill he

came

OF PALMERIN DOLIVA.

came home into her chamber. But neuer was poore leuer in greater agony, when she expected her friend in some priuat place, then was the faire Princes at this present: wherefore, so soone as she came to her chamber, she called for the Dwarf, who being come, she said: I pray thee Urbanillo, by the reuerend duty thou owest mee, whence are the two knights, & what answer did they make thee? They are such sweet Madam, quoth the Dwarf, as when all the men in the world could tel no tidings of, my selfe by happy fortune haue found: for by them I bring you the key of Paradise, if your self wil but find the meane to enter. Tush, I pray thee, quoth the Princes, iest not with me in this sort, for now is no time of sport or meriment: tel me who they are I desire thee: know then faire Madam, quoth he, that one of them is my M. Palmerin, who thus concealeth him, because he hath not brought the Prince your brother with him, and he (humbly kissing your hand) commendeth him to your gracious fauor, desiring you to send him answer, how he may secretly speak with you, because he would not be knowne to the Emperour, or any other of the court. How welcom these long expected newes were to the Princes, I leaue to the opinion of long absent friends. O Heauens, quoth she, both Palmerin liue, and is so nere at hand: now hath my heart his only desired comfort: and such is my hope, that seeing hee is come, my brother (by his meanes) shall not long hence, to such good fortune as al his adions desiered. Presently she ran to tel Brionella these newes, who likewise was exceedingly ioyful, because she imagined Palmerins companion to be her Ptolome. Whereupon they concluded together, that Palmerin should the night following come to the Garden, where first his sweet Amours were solicited, and by a ladder of cords he should ascend their chamber. This resolution set downe, the Dwarf departed to execute his charge, when Polinarda thus began to Brionella. Ah my deare friend, how impossible is it for me to hide the ioy my hart conceiue, that was so late in such surpassing heauinesse:

What

THE HISTORIE

What will my Ladies now thinke, when they beholde they Distresse so pleasant: Let them speake what please them (quoth Brionella) should you render them account of your behauiour: yet this I thinke, that your discretion is so good, when you haue seene the onely comforte for your cares: that you can so well dissemble your thoughts, as the most warie Eye shall hardly discerne you. Well haue you saide (quoth the Princesse) if I oue could bee gouerned by wisdom: but the pleasure which the wisest haue receyued by his riles, hath in the end discouered their vanity and folie. Such were the speeches betwene these two Ladies, attending all the Night in god deuotion; when eache one thought to see her Lord and best beloved, that their long sorowes might some tyme be qualified.

The Dwarfie being gone, on his Message, as you haue heard, the Knights reposed themselves on the greene grasse till Sunne setting; that they might more couertly enter the Cittie: and the time being come that they would sette forwarde, Palmerin saide to Olorico. My Lord, we will take this by way, which leadeth to the Cittie, for I intend before I departe, to heare some newes from my deere Distresse. Goe which way you please (quoth the Prince) yet must I needes maruell at you, that you would bee so long absent from such an excellent Princesse: Trust me Alchidiana is faire, yet may not she be equalled with your Lady. The griefes I haue endured (saide Palmerin) by my long absence, are not to bee spoken of: yet could no way compasse my returne sooner. By this time they were come to the Cittie, and to a lodging appointed them by Vrbaillo, who being now come to his Maister, deliuered the Message hee was commaunded. Palmerin vnderstanding his Distresse pleasure, presently vnamed himselfe, and wrapped a Scarlet Mantle about him, taking his trusty Sworde vnder his Arme, he intreated Olorico to stay there till he returned, or hearde further tydings from him, leauing Vrbaillo in his companie, with charge to vse him as his owne person.

He

OF PALMERIN DOLIVA.

He being come to the Wallles of louely Paradise, found the Ladder ready prepared for him, wherby he made a speedy passage: and finding Brionella, there staying his coming, embracing her sweetly, sayde, Trust me Ladie, the want of Sye Ptolome your friend, doth not a little grieue me: but by the grace of God, ere it be long I hope to bring him with me. Ah my Lord (quoth she) right happie is your good coming hither: For your presence hath bene heere most of all desired. But albeit thee set a good countenance on this aunswere, yet were her secrette sorowes innumerable, being deceiued of the comfort shee expected. Palmerin who thought he stayed too long from his Ladies Chamber: who angrily had threwn herselfe on a Ballet, because hee stayed to speake with Brionella, then falling on his knee before her, he offered to kisse her hand, which with dissembling disdain, shee would not suffer him, saying: Truly you shall receiue no fauour of mee, before I know certainly who you are: for I stand in doubt to be deceyued: and that you are some other then my Palmerin, seeing you haue bene so long time from mee, and (which is more,) would neuer vouchsafe to send to me.

Then taking a Light in her hand, and earnestly beholding him, hardly could shee sette it from her againe, when welcomming him with an infinit number of sweete kisses, she thus saide: For to knowe I well that this is my Palmerin: what Countrey might be so delectable, or fortune so contrarie, that could with-holde you all this while from me? What if it might haue stood with mine honour, for my selfe to haue sought you out: with god will could I haue endured the Trauell, yea, much more then you haue done for me. How often (considering the dangers of the Sea) hath very death surpris'd me: and into how many sundry opinions haue I fallen: Sometimes to disguise my selfe into a wans attire, to enter the estate of a Knight Errant, and begin a search which neuer shuld haue ended, till I found you?

For

THE HISTORIE

For this hath been receiued as a generall rule, that by too long sufferance and expectation one may endure a thousand deaths: and think not but the very least of my afflictions, haue been of force to deprive my life. Consider that griefe, desire, remembrance, languor, sorrow, hope, suspicion, feares, complaints, and other such like passions common in loue, continually beate vpon the hart with burning affection: to such incommenience their issue growes, as the vitall spirit is chased from the body. For Gods sake Madame, quoth Palmerin, leaue these wounding speeches, and suffer me to take a little life, in beholding that which is no lesse diuine then humane, for my offence deserues not these accusations. Then discouered he all his fortunes passed, which dyoue the Princeesse to no little admiration, when she said;

Belæue me my Lord, seeing that by your meanes my Brother Trineus is lost: for my loue, and to satisfie your promise to my Lord and Father, you must needs goe find him againe. What shall I Madame, quoth Palmerin, but before I begin this iourney, let me intreate that fauourable regard: which is the comfort in loue, and uniteth life and soule together, which heretofore you haue granted, and I hope will not now denie me. What may I iudge (quoth she) of your constancie since your absence? for not long since I was sollicit with a vision, which told mee, that you committed breach of loyalty with a Queene, to my no little griefe: although full often I reprooued you therefore, to cause you forsake that sinne, when mee seemed the Queene thus answered. Woe thou assured Polynarda, that although Palmerin esteeme thee aboue all other, yet shall he leaue some part of his loue with me. Hearing these words, I brake forth into teares, wherewith you seemed to be moued, and so forsaking her, followed me: and here with I awaked, finding (indeede) my face besprent with teares, and my heart overcome with insupportable griefe. Palmerin abashed hersat, remembered what entertainment the

OF A PALMERIN DOLIVA.

the Queene of Tharsus made him at the Banquette, of her sundry delights and great fauours for his arrivall, her piercing, amorous, alluring speeches, wherewith incessantly she did sollicit him: and such was his conceit, as he verily persuaded himselfe, that by enchanted practises shee had abused him: whereupon he sayd, I sweare to you Madame, by the religious vowes of our loue, that neuer did I commit such wrong against you: if the Queene of Tharsus of whom you haue spoken, did not one night deceiue me by an enchanted drinke, which unwittingly I receiued as I satte at Supper, causing me to lose both sense and vnderstanding: and so acquainted her with his Dreame that night likewise.

Doubtlesse my Lord, quoth she, considering the extremitie of her affection, she practised some meanes to compass her desire: but seeing it fell out in that sort, and believing you would not willingly offend me, I am contented to pardon that fault. In these and such like speeches, they spent that night, and foure moze afterward, all which time Palmerin was kept vntill in her Chamber: till his departing time being come, when the Prince attyring herselfe in her wonted mourning garments, and shaping her countenance to her former sorrow, shrowded her pleasures past, and thus we will leaue them, returning to our Affirians sayling on the Sea.

Now after the tempest was past, the Soldans Armie assembled together, and came against Constantinople, where by the Emperours power they were discōfited; and the King of Balisarca, his Sonne Gueresin, and diuers other great Lords of Turkie slaine.



The tempest which had thrcwne Palmerin on Hercules Pillars, after many long and contagious stormes, began now to cease, the Sea being faire and calme, and the winds very quiet, wherupon the King of Balisarca Generall of the Armie, in short time assembled together the most part of his flote, and came vpon the Coast of Natolia, where he attended the rest of his foylles and Galleyes. And hauing there stayed about fiftene daies, among all the Shippes that came, he could heare no tydings of Palmerins Carrick: the long stay wherof caused him to doubt, least he had unhappily perished in the Sea, and ouercome with excōding grieue, he thus began.

Ah gentle Palmerin, the flower of all Chivalrie, in lucklesse houre didst thou betake thy selfe to the Sea: what answer shall I make the Soldane for the losse of thee, and the Prince Olorico, being so especially committed to my trust: Now cannot Fortune be so fauourable to vs as she would: for by thy losse I vtterly despayre of expected victorie. To cut of these bootlesse complaints, he was counsell'd by the Lords, knights and auncient Captaines, to set forward

forward to Cōstantinople, to discharge themselves of their promise to the Soldane, least in returning without dealing with the enemy, they should be reputed for fearefull and fainthearted Cowards. Setting their sailes to the wind at length they came to the Bosphor. Now was the Emperour verie Aged and sickly, hauing altogether committed the superintendauce of the Empire, to his Sonne Caniano, who had a Sonne aged seauentene yeres, named Cariteos. And being aduertised of the coming of so many Asirians, Turks and Moores, he sent to all the Christian Princes for succour: the greater part whereof, was there as nowe arrived, with resolute determination to welcome these Infidels.

When the Emperours scouts had espied the enemy to enter the straight, yong Cariteos beholding the knights on all sides, some on the Wailes, and other in the field: came and kneeled before his Graundfather, earnestly desiring him to graunt him his knighthode. For my Lord, quod he, a better time and occasion cannot be then now. The aged Emperour graunted his request, and with the teares in his eyes said. In the name of God, my Son, wait thou receiue thy order, and to the glorious maintenaunce of the Christian faith: albeit thy youth forbids thee to venture to lone.

Presently arose the yong knight Cariteos, and clasping on his Helinet, was the first that went forth of the Cittie, accompanied with tenne thousand Horsemen, and twentie thousand Footemen, to hinder the landing of the enemies: which a great while he did with such valour, as the Haven was chaunged with the blood of the slaughtered. The King of Balisarca hearing thereof, commaunded his Archers to their taske, whose shatts flew so thicke in such multitude, as it were the Hayle that falleth from the Cloudes: and on the other side hee gotte thirtie thousand men on Land, who assailed the Christians so furiously, as yong Cariteos was slaine, and a great number of noble personar

THE HISTORIE

personages, which was the cause that the Christians retired to the very Gates of the Cittie. The Prince Caniano aduertised of his Sonnes death, & the great danger wherein the Armie was: issued forth of the Cittie with eight thousand Horsemen, and foure thousand hardie Archers, who like hungrie Tygers ranne vpon the Turks, beating them to the earth in such heapes, as twelue thousande of them were slaine at this encounter, and the rest repulsed backe to their Ships, where many entred for sauegarde of their liues, and a great number were miserably drowned in the Sea.

At this mishap King of Balisarca was greatly enraged, who with his power presently went on shore: the fight enduring so cruell and bloodie three houres space, as neither side could be reputed likeliest of victorie. In this encounter ended their liues, the King of Balisarca, his Sonne Gueresin, and a great number of Califfes and Tabozlanes of Turkie: and of the Christians, the Prince Caniano, with diuers other great Princes and Lords, whose deathes are to this day lamented in Greece, yet were the Pagans and Christians so animated one against another, as darke night was the cause of their separation. When the Emperour vnderstood the death of his Sonne and Nephew, hee was readie to die with conceit of griefe: but seeing the necessity of the time required other matter, then sorrowing teares and vnprofitable lamentations, hee presently dispatched Postes and Messengers, to hasten the succor was comming from Christendome. In short time arrived a mightie Christian power, and in despite of the Turks entered the Cittie, when the Emperour presently sent tenne thousand into the fildes, and prouided a signall for other, to sette fire among the Turkish Flæte, at what time they receiued the signe from the Cittie. The Infidells seeing the Christians to fallie abroad, left their Ships and came to meete them: whereupon, the Christians deuised themselves into squadrons, and running furiously on the Moores, Arabes

OF A PLMERINDOLIVA.

Arabes and Assirians, made such haucke and slaughter of them, as happie was he coulde best defend himselfe. Then suddainly was the signall of fire made, on the highest temple in Costantinople, to the Emperours power wafting on the Sea: which immediately launching among the Turkish Flæte, suncke the greater part of them, and burned the rest with their wilde fire. When the Turks behelde this stratageme, and that they were now destitute of any helpe, they began to faint: so that at the comming of the Emperour, who came himselfe vpon them, with a freshe saile of foure thousand men, they were all slaine, except a few that escaped into Galleyes, that brake from the rest vpon sight of the pollicie. Great was the spoyle gotten by this conquest, which the Christians taking with them, entered Costantinople, where they gaue God thanks for their happie victorie.

But although the Emperour saw his enemies vanquished, after the Princes were departed that came to his succour, right greuous was the losse of his sonnes to him, wherefore his Lords aduised him, to send for his Daughter the Duene Griana, and King Tarisus her Husband, and to commit the government of the Empire to him. For the accomplishment of this generall determination, the Duke of Pera was appointed Lord Ambassadour, being one of the most auncient Princes of Greece: who accompanied with many noble Gentlemen, made such expedition in his iourney, as hee arrived in Hungaria before the King and his Duene Griana, whose sorowes may not be expressed for the death of her Brother. When they vnderstood the Emperours pleasure, they resolved on their obedience, which caused the King to send for two of his Nephewes, who were Sonnes to the Duchesse of Ormeda his Sister, the one named Prompraleon, & the other Oudig, to be his Lieutenants in Hungaria during his absence. Vpon their preface, before the Ambassadour of Constantinople, the King Tarisus took their oathes, for their loyall and faithfull

THE HISTORIE

faithfull government. But because we must now reuue matter long expected, as concerning the noble Prince Florendos of Macedon: I am loth to spend any further time in vaine; and will now report what happened at Buda, during the time of this determination.

CHAP. XXV.

How the Prince Florendos of Macedon, accompanied with none but his Cozin Frenato, departed from his Countrey in a Pylgrims habit, iourning to Hungaria, where hee killed the King Tarisus: and how hee and the Queene Griana were taken prisoners.



Lordings, let vs now remember how after that Palmerin was departed from Macedon, hauing recovered the health of the olde King Primaleon, Father to the noble Prince Florendos, who during the time of Palmerins presence: was somewhat more pleasaunt then of long time he had bene, appeasing his complaints for the Princesse Griana; by the happy tidings of the auncient knight, that sent the Sheld to Palmerin at his knighting. But now Florendos hearing no newes of him, returned to his former heauines, and languished much more then euer he did: so that when the Macedonian Princesse Lords, pressed him with continuall request of marriage, that hee might haue issue to succede in the Kingdome, he was constrained by their importunitie, to make them promise of their request, crauing a yeres respite before, in which time he intended to make a deuout voyage, whereto they consented in respect of his promise. Now did hee not demaunde

O.F PALMERIN D'O LIVA.

this time of his Subjects; for any desire he had to be a Pylgrim, or any superstitious zeale to the Spanish Leather Cape, Shoes, Frock and such like: but for he longed to see his sweete Mistresse Griana, whom he serued in hart with such loyall affection, as till death he would not marry without her consent and licence.

The day being come that he would depart, he tooke his leaue of all the Princes, Lords and Gentlemen, and accompanied with Frenato Father to Ptolome, both seaped after the manner of Pylgrims: mounted on two Palfreyes of small balae, and without any weapons, except each of them a little short Dagger, departed the Cittie, making such hast in their iourney, as they arrived at Buda, where as then the King kept his Court providing to set forward to Constantinople. There were they lodged in one of the best Houses in the Cittie, and the next morning went to the great Church, where the Queene was euer wont to heare diuine service: and so well it fortunied, that at the time these two Pylgrims entred the Church, the Queene herselfe was in the Chappell. Florendos who was mervellously disguised, stood not in doubt to be knowne: but seeing the Chaplaine had begunne service, hypocritically he approached to the Altar with holy deuotion, to the end he might the better behold the Queene. Regarding her sweet countenance, he remembred y^e courties hee sometime receiued of her, and what exceeding affection as then she bare him: but now being in the custodie of another, and hee out of hope to haue any more gracious pittie, his spirits were so wonderfully troubled, and so many passionate sighes hee breathed from his hart, as he fell downe in a swoone, that euerie one reputed him for dead. The Queene, who many times had noted his pittious looks, commaunded a Colmetra one of her Ladies, the that had the charge of her in the Tower at Constantinople, that shee should goe vnderstand the Pylgrims disea'e, and do her best to recover him againe, which Frenato had done before she came.

Tolomestra demanded of Frenato, the cause of his sickness: who answered, *Madame, hee are newly come from the holy voyage of Ierusalem, and hee (who was wont to endure many vehement alterations, which the contrary ayres by the way doe breede) feeling the freshe colenes of this Church, hath therewith bene overcome as it shoulde appeare.*

My Friendes, quoth Tolomestra, withdrawe your selues to the Court, and enquire for the Gallery, in which place the Queene doth daily giue her Almes: there shall be prouided some remedy for you, and I will giue you certaine precious Drugges, which shall heereafter comfort you, when any such humour offendeth you. A thousande thanks (good Ladie,) sayd Frenato, we will doe as you haue commaunded vs. Seruice keeing ended, they went to the Gallery, whither some after came the Queene, and opening the Casement of her Window as she was wont, stood to behold the Almes giuen to the poore Pilgrims. Frenato and his companion had gotten so neere the window, that the Queene might easily heare any thing they said. After most humble reuerence made, Florendos thus beganne. Most excellent Queene, renowned beyond al other Ladies among so many of your daily charities, may it please you to pittie the most poore & miserable Knight in the world: The Queene at these words knew him, and was in such feare least the King should know his being there: as she could hardly sustaine herselfe, but satte downe on a Ballet by Tolomestra, who seeing her suddaine alteration, sayde. What ayle you *Madame*, that your colour chaungeth in such sort.

Ah my trusty friende (quoth the Queene) the Pilgrime that swounded in the Church, is the Prince Florendos of Macedon. I pray thee goe to him, intreate him presently to depart hence: for if the King come to the knowledge of him, all the world cannot sheelde him from death. For the rest, will him follow no further what he loth by his
o lxxx

owne default: and that the fauour heretofore graunted, my dutie and honour now forbiddeth me. Tolomestra entering the Gallerie, saide the message to the Prince Florendos: who vnderstanding this sharpe answer, shedde many teares with griefe of minde, saying: Ah my deere friend Tolomestra, desire my gracious Distresse Griana, that in requitall of so many tormenting Passions, which now for twenty yeeres long I haue patiently endured: thee will aske of me once to speake with her, and kisse her hand, before I depart. Tolomestra brought this answer to the Queene, perswading her to heare him speake: which shee might doe with safetie, vnder colour of requesting to knowe the newelles of Palestina, with the precious and worthie Monuments of the holie Citie.

I am content to graunt so much (quoth the Queene) but I greatly feare the issue of his speeches: goe then and cause him secretly to enter. Ah gentle habit, where vnder many one often beginne theyr delight, which in the ende proues worse then Tragicall. The two Pilgrimes being entred, Florendos fell on his knee before his Ladie, and kissing her hand, sayd:

Oh my God, thy praise be praised through all worlds, permitting me now to kisse these hands so long time desired. See here sweete Distresse your Florendos, that with such loyalty hath loued you, and hitherto hath kept the faith which he bowd to you at Constantinople, in your fathers Pallace: and which no death can cause me forsake or change, vnesse you please to suffer me take another Wife, wherein I shall satisfie the importunate requests, which daylie the Lords of Macedon make to me for Mariage, that I might leaue them an Heire of my Linage. Which is a matter so grievous to me, in that I failed of you, to whom I first gaue my faith: as I resolved neuer to take any other, which I know not how I shall performe without losse of my life.

As he thought to haue proceeded further in speeches, and the Queene hauing not answered one word: unhappily the King

THE HISTORIE

King entred, which the Quene beholding, swallowed with feare. But she was immediately recovered by her Ladies, when the King seeing her in such estate, and in what secrecie the two Pilgrims were talking with her, hee gathered some suspicion, and overcome likewise with the force of ieaiousie, saide:

Madame, what make you heere at this time: and in so slender companie of Ladies: haue dare you stand talking with these Strangers: I would gladly know the matter, and what hath made them so bold to enter your Chamber:

Florendos seeing his affayres to growe from badde to worse, and that his Ladie was so threatned: entring into choller, hee drew his Dagger from under his frocke, and taking the King by the Bosome, saide: Tacitus, I will not hyde from thee who I am: it is more then twenty yeres since I promised thy death, and now I am come in person to performe it. With these wordes hee stabde the Dagger to his heart, and downe fell Tacitus dead at his feete: which when the Quene saw, she on the other side fell in a swoon againe. Frenato greatly amazed hereat, saide to Florendos: For Gods sake my Lord, let vs thicke for our selues, befoze this misfortune be blazed abroad. Content thy selfe, said Florendos, neuer shall it be reported that I left my Ladie to suffer for mine offence: or that for the feare of death, which is the ende of all mishaps, I will endure such intolerable anguishes and torments.

Dolu by ill fortune, one of the Pages of Honour attending on the King, and hauing sene this Homicide, hastilie ranne downe the staires, crying aloud: Arme ye Knights, Arme ye, and reuenge the Kings death, who by a trayterous Pilgrim is slaine in the Quenes Chamber. Cardyno one of the Quenes Squyres, his Brother that carried young Palmerin to the Mountaine, had no leysure to take any other armes then a Sword and Shield, wherefoze hee was the first that came to the Quenes Chamber, where he found Florendos guarding the Entrance, who presently knew

OF PALMERIN DOLIVA.

knew him, saying: Depart my good friende Cardyno, but leste for the Quenes Lcue I shall take thy life from thee. And what art thou (sayde Cardyno) that knowest mee so well: I am thy friend (saide the Prince) the most infortunate Florendos.

Strange is it my Lord (quoth Cardyno) that you durst venture into this Courte: But take here my Sworde and Shield, and defende your selfe: for I thinke you will stand in great neede thereof. In the meane while, I will goe aduertise the Duke of Pera of this mishappe, hee is your good friend, and by his meanes you may haue some succour: for oftentimes haue I heard him say at Constantinople, that he wished you as wel as my Lord the Emperour. Dispatch then (saide Florendos) that thou be not found here with me, assuring thee, if I may escape this present danger, I will acknowledge this seruice to thine owne content. Florendos armed himselfe with the Sworde and Shield, whereof he was so gladd, as if hee had bene backed with many trustie friends: being befoze hee dyed to make such a spoyle amongst his enemies, as shuld remain for an after memorie.

Cardyno went with all diligence to the Duke, and secretly acquainted him with all this misfortune: Whereat the Duke greatly amazed, answered. I will do my uttermost for his safety, because full well he hath deserued it. And so accompanied with many Grecian Knights, hee went to the Quenes Chamber: and thrusting through the throng in de pight of them that guarded the staires, hee gotte to the Chamber. At the entraunce whereof hee found Florendos, defending himselfe with such manly courage, as nine or ten lay slaine at his feete.

The Duke and his men caused the Hungarians to withdraw themselves: saying, that himselfe would not suffer the matter so to escape, for the offence ought to be punished by Justice, after the truth were knowne and thoroughly understood. Hereupon, the Kings two Nephewes came in great rage, saying to the Duke of Pera, that the Quene and the

THE HISTORIE

Pilgrime ought presently to dye. What? (quoth the Duke) depart you likewise: your wills shall not here stand for Lawe: nor yet the Duene to bee intreated with such rigour.

So drawing out his Sword, and his knights likewise, resisted the Hungarians, so that many of them were slaine: until certaine Gentlemen came, who loving and esteeming the Duene, appeased this tumult. Then was it agreed vpon, that the Duke should take him into his charge, who had murdered the King: on whom such punishment should be inflicted, as the cause required: and herevpon the Duke took his Oath before all the whole companie. In this sort the Kings Nephewes were quieted, who presently departed the Chamber, causing the dead and wounded to be conueyed thence, that the people might receiue no further occasion of offence, and then the Duke comming to the Prince Florendos saide:

Yelde your selfe to me my Lorde, and I promise you on the faith of a Prince, that I will maintaine both your right and the Duenes, whatsoever danger I shuld hazard thereby. If you will not, assure your selfe, that your bodies cannot suffice the villainous furie of these people, for they haue confidently sware your deaths. I know my Lord (quoth Florendos) that you speake the truth, and I repose my trust on your Nobilitie, which is such, as you will not suffer any iniurie to the Man being in your Guard: I yelde my selfe to you: and earnestly intreate you not to imprison the Duene, for (on mine Honor) she is guiltlesse. And if any offence hath bene committed, it was by me: yet not without iust cause, and in defence of mine owne life. My comming hither was, because I am newly returned from Ierusalem, and remembering the manifold honours, which sometime I receiued of my Ladie in the Emperours her Fathers Court: in my passing by, I was desirous to do my duty to her. At the instant time I was saluting her, the King came into the Chamber, who moued with an auncient hatred, which you

OF PALMRIN DOLIVA.

you very well know, would haue slaine me: but I preuenting his intent with the ayde of my weapon, bestowed that on him which he wished to me. I belieue well what you haue saide, quoth the Duke, yet must you needs abide tryall in this case.

Frenato perceiuing his Cousin in such danger, sought about the Chamber for some Weapon to defend him: and finding the Kings Sword by the Duenes Bed-side, shew- ed it to the Duke, that he might giue the better credit to the Princes wordes. Yet notwithstanding all theyr excuses, these two Pilgrims were taken into sure custody, and shut vp both together in a strong Tower: which was very long before they coulde accomplish, because in leading them thither, manie sought meanes to kill them, and they had done it, but that the Duke very strongly defended them.

CHAP. XXVI.

The sorrowfull complaints made by the Queene Griana, seeing her Husband dead, and her Friend taken prisoner. And how the Duke of Pera conueyed her to Constantinople, causing Florendos and Frenato to bee brought thither, by five hundred armed Knights.



Very sadde and sorrowfull was the Queene Griana, seeing so many seuerall misfortunes succede one another, as euery howe her death was expected: and saue shee would haue committed violence on her selfe, but onely that Cardyno with diuers worthy knightes attended on her, that none of the Kings kindred should offend.

THE HISTORIE

offend her, whiles the Duke of Pera ledde Florendos and Frenaco to the Tower. At whose returne, as hee thought to comfort her, she fell on her knees before him, saying. Ah Noble Duke of Pera, if euer pittie had place within your heart, for Gods sake make an ende of my infortunate life: and execute on me (without any fauour) the sharpest rigour of equall Justice, not suffering longer life, to a Woman so despised and miserable.

O God, dost thou permit a happy life, to enjoy so bad an end: Thou that onely knowest the inward secrets of the heart, seeing I stand suspected in this Treason, let my speedy death deliuer my innocency. Ah inconstant Fortune, that in my younger yeeres was so aduersie to mee: howe might I credit thy continuall mallice, by this strange and vnerpected accident. Ah gentle Prince Florendos, it was not for loue that thou comest to see me, but for a secreete hatred, more then deadly: seeing that by thee (and that with great shame) I shall remain for euer defamed. Where was that great loyaltie, and the great feare to offend mee, which sometimes thou seemedst to haue: knowest thou not that in a royall and noble minde, one onely iote of infamie is an extreame torment: Doubtlesse, if thou wouldst well consider the wrong thou hast done me, thou shalt finde it to exceede all other worldly iniuries. But I may perswade my selfe, that my Destinie was such: For being long since by thee dishonoured, it must fall out for a finall conclusion, that by thee also I shall receiue death.

In this manner the Quene complained, with such effuse of teares and bitter sighes, as the Duke pittying her case, saide: I beseech you Madame, to endure this mishap patiently, seeing now it cannot be recalled, and consider that these teares and Lamentations can yeelde yee no amendes: Can rather threaten danger, and will in the ende not onely weaken your bodie, but hazard desperation. The King is dead, he must be buried: Florendos hath offended, he shall be punished: your people are wounded, they must be cured.

Offend

OF PALMERIN DOLIVA.

Offend not thou your selfe with these bootlesse regrets; but commaunde that the praise of your innocencie be solloved. Hereupon the Duke caused preparation for the Funerall pompe, and brought the King to the bed of honoꝝ, not without many teares and lamentations of his subiects.

When the Obsequies were finished, Prompraleon and Oudin came & exclaimes on the Duke, because hee brought not the Quene and Florendos to open punishment. My Friends (quoth the Duke) Haue I not heretofore told you, that we must not inconsiderably put such persons to death: let the Councell bee called together, and as they determine I will proceede.

Then were all the Princes and Lordes assembled, among whome the Duke was intreated to speake his opinion, which he did in this manner. I thinke it conuenient, vnder correction of you my Noble Lordes, that the Prince Florendos and the Quene, ought to be sent to my Lord the Emperour, and there to haue Justice extended on them: as well for the surety of your owne persons, as for the conseruation of the Realme. For except iustly and by probablis causes yee condemne the Prince Florendos, hardly may you perswade the Macedonian Princes: beside, the Lords may say, that without hearing hee was cutte off, and likewise by his open enemies. Again, thinke you that the Emperour will let passe in silence so great a wrong, to punish his Daughter, and not acquaint him with her offence?

Considering this indifferently, you shall find your selues on either side endangered: your goods will be spoiled, your liues endangered, so hardly can you resist against such power. So well could the Duke set forth his Discourse, with confirmation of Histories both ancient and moderne, that in despite of the Kings Phepheues it was concluded, hold the Prisoners should be sent to Constantinople. If they were hereat offended, it is not to bee doubted, but hearing the Councelles resolution, prepared themselves to goe to the Emperour, determining a sharpe and seuerer accusation:

trust

trusting so much in their owne strength and proweesse, that if the Emperour (for p^roofe of the cause) shoulde commit it to the Combat, they easily thought to compass their intent.

So were the two Pilgrimes committed to the Dukes Nephew, with an hundred knightes of Greece, for theyr garde, and some hundred Hungarians, who would needes follow, for the loue they bare the Queene: she being maruellously fauoured in her Countrey, for her many vertues, and chiefly charitie.

The Queene her selfe, with the young Princeesse Armida her Daughter, and all her Ladies and Gentlewomen, were committed to the Duke of Pera his charge, and the rest of the Train that came with him in commission of the same Embassage. When the Queen vnderstood she should be carried to the Emperour, she was fatter out of patience then shee was before: rather desiring a thousand deathes, then to come with this reproche befo^re her ffather: yet notwithstanding all her intreaties, shee was conueyed into a Litter, and not so much as a pinne left about her, for feare of inconuenience.

To comforte her, her Daughter Armida was placed in the Litter: without whose companie, such was her grieve to come befo^re her Parents, as shee was diuers times in danger of death by the way. But the young Princeesse being twelue or thirtene yeres of Age, could so well comfort her sorrowfull Mother, as her talke expelled many bitter Imaginations. If the Queene was in heauinesse, we must thinke Florendos grieues nothing inferiour, seeing his Ladie ledde in such sorte, and accused of a crime where in none but himselfe was culpable: and yet made he no account, being reuenged of his ancient enemy, so the Queene were deliuered, though himselfe endured the death. But now are they come to Constantinople, yet not so sone: but the Nephewes of the Deceased King were befo^re them, where they had blazed a most false and shamefull reporte. And but for the good aduise of certaine Noble Princes, that fauou^r

fauoured Florendos & the Queene Grian, upon the troth lesse speeches of the twaine: the Emperour had concluded to burne his Daughter and the Prince so sone as they came, such horrible slaunders had these Traytours spied of them. Namely, that the King was murdered, siniting Grian, and committing adulterie with Florendos. At which wordes the Emperour was so enraged, that like a man deprived of reason, hee violently puld himselfe by the beard saying.

Oh wretched and infortunate olde man, haue the heauens suffered thee thus long life, that after the death of thy Sonnes Caniano and yong Cariteos, thou must see thy daughter couided of treason, adulterie & murder: If I haue had some comfort by my Sonnes, lying now in the Hearse of hono^r, for maintenaunce of the Christian faith: doubtlesse this iniurie is so great and eno^rme, as no ioy or comfort can now abide in me. Oh my louely Daughter Grian, whom I had good hope would bee the onely support of mine age, and for that cause sent to haue thy company: comnest thou now with such shame & monstrous report? Florendos, if heretofore against the Turke Gamezio thou didst me seruice, with great wrong hast thou now reuenged thy selfe, taking from me that good, which thou canst neuer restore againe. But let it suffice, that knowing the truth of thy disordered dealing: such shall bee thy punishment as shall remaine for perpetuall memorie. The Emperour like wise forsaking her Chamber, came and kneled befo^re the Emperour, desiring him to put Florendos to the first counsell, and he to be dispatched with diligence. At which words the cheller of olde Remiclus augmented, hee auniwering.

Madame, for Gods sake gette you gone, for you are the onely cause of my dishonour: and then you beganne it, when you would not suffer the Prince Florendos of Macedon to marry with our daughter, but gaue her to your Nephew perforce, and contrarie to her owne liking. The Princes
 it being

THE HISTORIE

sizing him so offended, intreated her to depart, perswading her, that the accusers of Griana were her chæfest enemies: and that might easily be gathered, by their proude and maleuolent detractions, which happily would proue false, rather then trueth. For if they might heerein speake of their purpose, and their accusation passe for currant, the Princesse Armida should be disinherited, and themselves be the onely heires to the Kingdome. This was their principall drift, not any deuotion to reuenge their Anckles death, as they in outward shew declared: and hereupon all opinions were sette aside vntill the next day, when the prisoners arrived.

CHAP. XXVII.

How Florendos and Griana were brought to Constantinople, and there were appointed by the Emperours Counsell, to purge themselves of their accusation, by the Combate of two Knights, against theyr accusers Promptaleon and Oudin.



The Duke being arrived at Constantinople, immediately caused the Quene Griana and Armida her Daughter, to be conducted to the Pallace, by many noble Lords and Gentlemen. When Griana saw she must needs go before her Father, she began againe her wonted pittifull complaints: not withstanding, she was so comforted by the Lordes of Greece, by their solemn promise to defend her right, as she encouraged her selfe, and comming before her Father, fell on her knees,

OF APLMERINDOLIVA.

knees, and thus began. My gracious Lord and Father, inconstant Fortune euermore hath bene, and still will continue, a most cruell enemy to them of highest calling: and no further neede I seeke for proue of my wordes, then the History of your last warres against the Turkes, and the present slaughter of mine enemies against mee. I cannot likewise forget, that twentie yeres and more are now expired, since (to my great griefe) I was separated from you: but with much more exceeding heauines am I now returned, if by my misadventure you receiue any impeach, or I deserue to lose the name of your Daughter. Therefore my Lord, forgetting the name and office of a Father, let naturall regard be exempted from you, and exercise on me tyrannous torments, with the greatest rigour that may be deuised. Yet all too little in respect of my deserts, not for any offence in this matter, as God is my witnesse: but for the suspicion of the common and bulgare people, more credulous of the faults of Princes and noble Ladies, then of their discreet and sober vertues. Peruerthelesse, receiuing death for a matter neuer committed, and with patience: despite of mine enemies, it will redound to my immortall honoz.

Upon these speeches, the Princesse Armida making great reuerence to the Emperoz, and with the teares trickling downe her cheekes, sayd. Dread Lord, my chæfest desires euermore haue bene to see your Maiestie: but so it falleth now out, that in steade of ioy and pleasure, it is with griefe, teares and tribulations. Yet gracious Lord, for the first request that euer I made to your highnesse, I beseech you to credit me, that my Mother hath committed no treason, or any dishonoz to the deceased King my Father, neither euer permitted any man enteraunce into her Chamber, but he whom now the question concerneth, and at that time, I with these other Ladies were present, and are credible witnesses of the whole action. Such efficacy wrought her wordes in the Emperours minde, as he began to desie

the accusation, perswading himselfe that it was nothing but falshood: and louingly taking the yong Princeesse by the hand, addrest his speeces in this manner to the Queene.

Well hast thou saye, that Fortune hath bene too contrary towards thee, for when my whole hope remained in thee, and that the Crowne of mine Empire should haue bene placed on thy head: thou hast fallen into such wounding reproch, as both thou and I shall be for euer dishonoured. My Lord, quoth Grian, vnder correction, and sauing the reuerence to your imperiall Maiestie, neuer imagine the case any thing to your defame: if you credite not myne enemies, or common report, from whence is engendred all vntrueth. This spake I not to excuse my death, which I know to be the refuge for the desolate, and end of all afflictions: but to declare mine owne innocencie, and that mine honoz shall at length be found vnspotted. But now consider god ffather, with what violence you enforced me to match with the King Tarisius: my hart being still against it, and the nearnesse of linage betwene vs forbidding it. For were you ignorant of my loue to the Prince Florendos, the most gentle knight of Greece, & whose chely traualle hether was to make mee his Wife: all this will I not deny, nor can my hart permit to passe in silence. Yet withstanding, by your commaundement I was constrained to forsake my best beloued, and take the man I was not borne to fancie. After I saw it must needs be so, acknowledging him my Lord and Husband, and my selfe his Wife and Subject: neither in word or deede, nor so much as very thought, did I dispose my selfe to any disobedience, but liued in most loyall and honorable duty. Very true it is, that he found Florendos talking with me: but I protest before Heauen, that it was with such chaff and modest regard, as the Sister might confere with her Brother. And so little time our talke endured, as I had not time to answer the Prince, for the King comming in, and prouoked.

uoked with scenzie or wicked iealousie, would haue slayne him, whereby such fortune fell out, as the King receiued what he would haue giuen. Nor can Florendos be worthily blamed for conning to see me, in respect of the long time since our last company: beside, hauing not forsaken his Pilgrims weede, wherein hee traualled to the holy Lande, he came to acquaint me with the meruailes in his iourney.

Seheere in breefe the whole trueth of this Historie, and if the Kings pephewes auouch otherwise, I say (my Lord) they lie falsely. In which respect, as well to protect mine owne honour as the Princes, I humbly desire your Maiestie, that our innocencie may be discibed by Combat: for such is my hope in a rightfull cause, as I shall find some knight to fight for me. The Lords of the Empire were altogether of the same opinion, and instantly desired the Emperour, to graunt his Daughter her lawfull request: whereto he answered, that he would take counsell thereon, and iustice should be done her as it ought. Hereupon the Emperour went into his Chamber, and the Queene was brought to the Emperesse her Mother: wherethe yong Ladie was assaulted afresh, for she was no sooner entred the Chamber, but her Mother thus beganne. I know not Daughter how iudly thou hast bene counselled, that since the daie of thine espousall to the Prince Tarisius, who loued thee so deere: thou hast continued such hatred against him, that at length thou art become the onely cause of his death.

Madame, quoth the Queene, you speake your pleasure: but (in regard of my reuerence to you) I answer, that I neuer thought it. Wherefore I intreate you to forbear such peeces, and if you consider all things well: your selfe will be found in greater fault then I. For contrary to my sollemne promise, which I had made to the Prince of Macedon, you compelled me to marrie with him: and if Florendos had the opportunitie, and in defence of his owne

person hath slaine him, ought you then to impute the crime to me: With these words the Emperesse held her peace, and sat conferring with the yong Princeesse Armida: in the meane while came the Duke of Pera, who had the Queene in charge, and conducted her to her Chamber, and a few waies (by the Emperours commaundement) he that Florendos into a strong prison.

The next day, Promptaleon and Oudin came to the Pallace, where with great and audacious impudence they came before the Emperour, saying. Why haue you not my Lord provided the fire, to burne your Daughter and her adulterer Florendos? Host and faire, answered the good Remicius, be not so hasty, I finde them not so faultie as your accusation deliuereth: for no other harme was committed then talking together, and because Florendos was disguised, is that a consequence, my daughter must die? No, will I euerre such infamous report, in putting such a Prince to death, without hearing how he can answer for himselfe: you therefore my Lord of Pera, go fetch Florendos that he may answer to their propositions. The Duke obeyed his commaundement, and brought the Prince so spent with extreame grasse, because he had brought the Queene into such danger: as hardly he could sustaine himselfe, but after he had with great humilitie presented himselfe before the Emperour, he began in this manner. Most mightie Lord and Emperour of Greece, I can walke not that with such heavines I can shew before your Maiestie: when in steade of doing you service, according as my duty commaundeth me, I bring you cause of offence and displeasure. Nevertheless, I repeat my selfe in your benignitie and princely iustice, wherein I must intreate you, to haue regard to the Queene your Daughters innocencie: for the fault that is committed, if it deserve to be called a faulte, was done without the Daughters knowledge, or so much as a thought of the matter on her part, before it happened. Moreover, there is none of so harshly indignant or treason but will consider,

consider, what familiarity & friendship, doth passe betwixen Princes and Ladies in occasions of honour. Which may serue to answer the cause of my coming to see the Queene, being thereto bound by duty and honest loue, wherewith in my yonger yeeres I faithfully serued her. And this I did, without any iniurie to her honour, much lesse occasion of offence to the King: which he would needs interpret in that sort, when with so great discretion he came and assaulted me.

These are fables, quoth Promptaleon, for the conspiracie and treason betwixen thee and the Queene is so manifest, as euery one knowes it. And if the Emperour do not this day consummate your liues, both together in one fire: he offereth the greatest in iustice that euer Prince did, and before the whole worlde wee will heereafter accuse him. Darest thou maintaine by Combat in fielde, sayde Florendos, what thou with such brauerie affirmest in this Hall? That will I by mine honour, quoth Promptaleon, and let the Knight come that dare aduenture: on this condition, that if I be the conquerour, the Queene and thou may be burned as ye haue deserued, and the Princeesse Armida declared not legitimate, and so disinherited of the kingdome. How hast thou revealed the villanie, said Florendos, and for the last condition dost thou follow the cause so earnestly rather then by any matter of truth and equitie: but thou art deceived in thyne intent, and thy death (villaine) shall deliuer assurance of her succession. So please my Lord the Emperour of his grace, to prolong the day of Combat till I haue recovered some health: my selfe alone, against thee and thy Brother, will promyse false Traytors, and that maliciously ye haue accused the Queene. The Emperour seeing the Prince so weak and sickly, and yet with so good courage willing to defende his Daughters wrong: resolved himselfe that shee was innocent. Remembring then his noble seruices in defence of his Empire, and how iniuriously he denied him his daughter: he was moued in

such sort as he could not refraine from teares, thinking for vengeance of that offence, that heauen had iustly permitted the death of Tarisus, wherefore beholding Florendos with pittifull lookes, pronounced the sentence in this manner. You Promptaleon and Oudin, Nephewes to our deceased dære and beloued sonne the King of Hungaria, shall maintaine your wordes in open fïelde, against two such knights, as my Daughter and the Prince Florendos can deliuer on their behalfe, and that within twelue daies after this instant. One of which the Prince himselfe shall be, if he be not furnished with another to his liking: alwayes prouided, that the vanquished shall be declared Traytours, and attained of the crime of Lese Maiestatis, and so punished according to the exigence of the case. The two Brethren accepted these conditions, being so farre overcome with their owne pride, as they reputed themselves y^e most valiant knights of the world. Florendos feeling himselfe so weake of body, would gladly haue demanded a longer day: but the sentence being given, the Emperour likewise promising to appoint another knight in his stead, he was contented, and committing all to the Emperours pleasure, was carried backe againe to prison in such penituenes, as he was indged not able to liue till the Combat day. The Quene likewise was kept in sure garde, despayning how she should finde a knight, that would aduenture on her behalfe in fight: because the strength and prowesse of the Challengers was so renowned. Leauing thus these two louers in doubts and feares: let vs returne where we left before, to noble Palmerin, that hee may bring them some better comfort.

CHAP.

CHAP. XXVIII.

¶ Howe Palmerin hauing stayed with his Lady fïue dayes, in so great pleasure as heart could desire, searing to bee discouered to the Emperour: tooke his leaue of her, promising to beginne the searche of Trineus and Ptolome,



Olynarda hauing her friende in her custodie, would not willingly presume so farre vpon her owne selfe, or the trusty faithfulness of her Ladies, as that shee would permit or suffer him to stay there in the Day time: and doubting likewise least his coming in the night should be elyped, committed the whole matter in especiall charge to Bryonella, as they performed their ioyes without any impeachment. During these delights and Amorous contentments, which these timorous Louers passed together, the Princeesse among other familiar talkere rehearsed to her friend, how the King of Fraunce sent his Embassadors to the Emperour, to treat on the Marriage betweene her and his Eldest Sonne, as also her Brother Trineus, with his Daughter Lucemania. And how importunate the Emperour had bene with her, touching what Honour and Felicitie it should be vnto her, to be Quene of so great a Kingdome as Fraunce is. And trust me my Lord (qu. shee) I know my Parents are so affected to this Alliaunce, as if my Brother Trineus were come, I know no meane whereby to excuse my selfe. Alas Madam, (quoth Palmerin) heerein you may consider, if the Emperour by violent force constrain you hereto: what continuall griefe it will be to your Seruant Palmerin? what torments

THE HISTORIE

ments: What tyrannous paines of strange conceits, may equall themselues with the very least of my Passions: nor can I any way bee able to endure them. The doubtfull feares of this misfortune stroke to his heart, with such an Impression, as hee fell in a swoone betwene his Ladies armes, the embracing him with such ardent affection, as the soule of the poore tormented Loner, feeling with what equall desire his Ladie requited him, receiued fresh strength into his languishing bodie, and being come to his former estate, the Princeesse said. Alas my Lord, at the time I supposed to be in assurance with you, and to thinke on no imaginations, but new pleasures and delights: forgetting the regarde you haue long continued, in expectation of the wished fortunate houre, wil you be now the cause of my death? Thinke you, that if Loue be so violent on your behalfe, it exceedeth not a thousand times more in mee? Belieue me: You men make your hautes of the great Passions, feares, and doubts you haue to offend your Ladies, whom to serue loyallie you haue especially chosen: but in no wise may these oppressions be compared to ours. Where is hee among ye, who hath experimented, how great the paine of dishonour is, and can couer his extreame Loue with dissimulation: What a death is it to constrain violence against it selfe: to containe the piercing Eye, and subdue an heart so affectionate, as bringeth death to the rest of the bodie, if she thewe not some parte of her desire, by looks (the faithfull and secreete Messengers) to him she hath chosen, loueth, and wishest: The torment of the will likewise, when one dare not come in presence, nor beholde her fauoured, to languish, and yet may seeke no meanes of helpe: All these insupportable miseries our poore Ladies must endure, being given by nature, or forced for a custome. Therefore my Lord, present not me with your Passions, considering each thing as it ought, they may not be compared to the least of mine: for Loue who hath ouer-mastred me, reigneth with such resolute Authoritie, as I must sooner dye, then offer you any wrong,

OF PALMERIN DOLIVA.

wrong, seeing that as my Lord and Husband I haue elected you, and bestowed these fauours on you which are most desired, so will, willing obedience, and that (then which) nothing is more precious hauing then made you soueraigne of my selfe, the Prince of Fraunce cannot enioy an other mans right. And if my Father vsing his authoritie, shall enforce me, although it be grieuous to mee, I will tell him what hath happened, and no menaces whatseuer shall alter my opinion.

Palmerin seeing his Ladie so firme and loyall, was not a little ioyfull, thus answering. Doubtlesse my deere and most gracious Mistresse, hether to I durst presume on my selfe, that by my manifold loyall seruices, I should one day deliuer recompence, for some part of the Honours you haue done me: but now may I well perceyue, that abounding in your graces you deprive mee of all meanes to acknowledge your Countie, which commonly men desire to shewe by their obedience: nor shall I be able to deserue the inestimable value, contained in the simplest worde of your last most honorable Promise.

As the Princeesse discerning by the Windowe, that Aurora Phœbus his sayre Porter, began to lette forth the Morning light, and prouide toay for his Maisters iourney: withdrew herselfe to her Chamber, and quickly layde her downe by Bryonella, who the better to hide her Ladies affaires, dissembled that she had a feuer Quotidian, by which meane she compassed to keepe her Chamber, and entertained Palmerin as her selfe desired. All this while Virbanillo brought newes from the Prince Olorico, who was so desirous to see the Princeesse againe: as hee vowed not to depart the Citie, before he accomplished what he intended.

Palmerin who loued him as his Brother, was in great doubt, how he should safely bring it to passe: untill Bryonella, whose deuises were ever readiest, sayde. My Lord, the man being no way able to hurte yee, and of the lesse importance made you make the matter: will you see how we

we will a little iuggle with the Emperour: Let it be saide, that the Prince is Cousin to Urbanillo, and the cause of his coming into this Countrey, was to seeke you: then because hee understands howe my Ladies loues the Dwarfie, his Maistie (without any doubt) will suffer the two Cousins to take theyr leaue of her: Will not this deuise then shadow his seeing the Princesse: Without question (quoth Palmerin, I should neuer haue inuented such a subtiltie, be it then as you haue determined: But with great policie, that the Emperour misdoubt nothing, for if he discouers vs, we are shamed for euer. Referre it to me (saide Brionella,) if I describe not theyr kindred cunningly, Neuer believe that a Woman can inuent a Lye without studie. Brionella conferring with the Dwarfie, layde downe the plot forme in such order, as the next day the Prince came before the Emperour: when Urbanillo on his knees desired leaue, that he might depart with his Cousin there present, to seeke his Maister, in whose search he would trauell, till he heard certainly of his life or death.

Ah Urbanillo (quoth the Emperour) in such a good lucky haure mayest thou go, as to finde both him and my Sonne Trineus, God leaue hast thou to goe when thou wilt. But when I beholde you both aduisedly, very hardlye doe you seeme to be Cousins: for if there be any Alliance betwene you, it neuer came by the Fathers side: and if it be by the Mother, the one was then married in Barbarie, and the other in Scotland. Why my Lord (quoth the Dwarfie) rather had I dye then tell an vntruth before your Highnesse: and with such protestations did the Dwarfie sooth his tale, as they of greatest doubt gaue credite to him. Whereupon, the Emperour commanded them to goe take theyr leaue of his Daughter, willing her to write to her Brother. Hauiug obtayned what they desired, they stayed not long in returning thanks: but went presently to the Princesse Chamber, where she (advertisid of their coming) layd for them. Honourable salutations on each side deliuered, a Chayre was

was brought for the Prince, and he sitting downe by Poly-narda, she thus beganne. Albeit my Lord I am very loath to forgoe my Seruant: yet hauing sounde him so honest, and for the good will I wish to all his kindred, especially you, who haue Enterprised to seeke his Maister and my Brother, I am the better contented to part with him.

If the Prince commended her Beautie, when being in Embuscado he saw her passe by: What may we imagine of his opinion now? For beholding her, the comforte of her long absent friends, had called all her Beauties together, enriched with so manie sweete and amiable graces: as hee could not repute her of humane linage, but rather some Angell descended from Heauen, to make the glorie of Palmerin more ample, whereupon, to deceiue the Ladies being present, returned this answer. Undoubtedly Madame, if I and all mine had spent our soules in your seruice, wee should holde our selues sufficiently recompenced, with the princely fauor you afforde our Cousin, which he is no way able to deserue. And perswade your selfe faire Princesse, that if hee be your obedient Seruant, my selfe am no lesse, in all things that your Excellence shall please to commaund me: So that if there were not vrgent occasions to excuse my departure, it would be my onely content to remaine at your disposition. Yet such is my hope, that this griefe shall be chaunged into ioye by a speedy returne, when wee shall bring the Prince Tryneus and our noble Maister Palmerin. The sooner, the better welcome will they be (quoth the Princesse) for therein consisteth my chiefest comfort. And after many other speeches betwene them, she gaue him many rich gifts, wherewith he helde himselfe so honoured, as if he had gayned the whole Monarchie of Asia: So kissing her hand, the Prince with his new Cousin, returned to his Lodging. Now was it concluded betwene Palmerin and the Princesse, because the Emperesse on the morrow would come to see her daughter, that hee should depart the same way he came: Wherefore the houre being come that hee should passe the Wall, Poly-

Polyinarda thus spake. Now is the time (my Lorde) that you must leaue me, and I be forced to consent, because there is no remedie: but perswade your selfe, that with this parting begins my sorowes. Yet if I knewe where you trauelled, my griefes would be the lesse, and my life prolonged with better hope: but being vncertaine of your way, and knowing what misfortunes and dangerous perilles, may encounter you in vnknown Countreys, I know not how I shall dissemble my torments. Notwithstanding, swete friend, if your stay be long, send Urbanillo againe, to comfort poore Bryonella and my selfe: For losing the onely maintenance of our languishing liues, impossible is it but our Spiritues will soone forsake thes miserable habitations.

For Gods sake Padaine (quoth Palmerin) neuer talke of such a separation, for the remembrance thereof, is death to mee: and it so much offendeth me to see you in this perturbation, as I lose both courage and hope of well doing. Continue then the humour you haue done since my coming, that I beholding you pleasant, may be comforted thereby, during the searche of your Brother, which I hope will be both short and sudden. Otherwise, before the Earth be ready for me, I shall be enforced to take vpp my endlesse Hostage. So after many swete kisses, and gracious louing Courtesies passed betwixen them, they took their leaue of eache other, with such effusion of Teares, as the very inward soule bemoaned the departing. So with his Ladders of Cordes, he got ouer the Wall againe, and came to the Lodging where he left Olorico: then Arming themselves, they rode away in great hast, because they feared to be knowne by any.

CHAP. XXIX.

¶ How after Palmerin was departed from his Lady, there appeared to him one of the Fayries of the Mountaine Artifaria, who declared to him part of his Fortunes following. And of a Combat which hee and Olorico had against tenne Knights.



Great hast in thes Journey made thes two knightes, so that in shorte time they came to the Kingdome of Hungaria, where passing through a great Forrest, they ascended a high Mountaine, at what time the Ayre being calme and cleare, was vps a sudden obscured with many darksome Cloudes, and such outrageous Windes, as they were glad to shroud themselves vnder certaine Pine Trees nere at hand.

¶ Having there sheltered themselves a while, they behelde a very thicke Mist about a fyre Tree, and heard with all a very terrible Thunder: and the fogge somewhat clearing, they beheld a comely Lady vnder the Tree, where at they were strooke into no little admiration, yet Palmerin being desirous to vnderstand the effecte of this Adventure, made towards the Tree, when the Lady beganne in this manner to him.

Palmerin d'Oliua, maruell not at this Accident which hath happened onely for thy sake and profite. Heretofore I came to thes on another Mountaine, where I and my Sisters healed the Wounds thou didst receiue by the Serpent. At this time I am come to thes, to wish thes follow the

THE HISTORIE

thy journey begunne : Assuring thee that they whom thou seekest, are yet living, and in the custodie of Turkes and Infidels: but before thou canst finde them, thou shalt be deliuered from death by him thou hatest most. And after that thou hast found this fauour by him, hee shall ayde thee in re-
frezing from Prison and death, thy best and dearest friends: and so I leaue thee to thy happy successe. Then suddenly vanished the Woman away, and could not afterwards be seene againe, leauing Palmerin very pensieue for what hee had hearde, which hee esteemed to be true, because hether to he had found no lesse, all that the Sytters said to him on the Mountaine Artalaria.

Returning to his companie, Olorico demaunded what Goddesse had talked with him, and what had made him ou a sudden so cheerfull: Trust me my Noble Friends (quoth he) the matter is such, as for all the Golde in the worlde, I would not but haue knowne, which V. banillo can better declare vnto you, more then I am able: But because wee would make no more straunge Adventures in this Mountaine, let vs speedily set for wards on our Journey.

All that day they rode without any occasion to stay them, and the next day likewise, till towards the Euening, when they espied ten knights before them, the foremost of them leading a Ladie, who made very grieuous and pittifull lamentations: whereupon Palmerin clasped his Helmet, desiring, Olorico to doe the like, Because (quoth hee) for any thing I see, we shall haue pastime with some danger. The Prince did as his friend requested him, and when the Ladie was come somewhat more naxer them, shee framed her speeches to them in this manner. Gentle knights, for Gods sake helpe me, for these Traytors haue forcibly brought me hether: and to compasse their villainous intent, they haue murdered my Husband, and two of my Brethren. Palmerin without answering one worde, approached to him that ledde her, and gaue him such a rap on the pate, with a Mace that he caried at his Saddle bow, as with the stroke he fell

dead

OF APLMERI NDOLIVA.

dead to the earth: making him sure not to escape, during the time that he dealt with the other. Olorico had taken his careire against an other of them, whom he encountred so puissantly, as the knight breaking his Launce, Olorico thrust his quite through his body: whereof Palmerin being glad, said.

To the rest noble Prince, for we are sure two of them can doe vs no harme. With such courage did these Gallants bestirre themselves, as in leste space then halfe an houre, sixe more of them were slaine: for Palmerin neuer gaue stroke, but either he brake an arme, head or neck. The two which were left, seeing the hard fortune of their fellows, would abide no further danger, but toke themselves to flight with all the speede they coulde. When the Ladie saw her selfe deliuered of her enemies, she came and humbled her selfe at Palmerins fete, earnestly desiring him not to leaue her, but that it would please him to conuey her to her Castell nere at hande: whereupon V. banillo alighting, holpe her to mount on one of the vanquished knights horses.

By the waie she rehearsed, how he that led her, had of long time loued her, but because he was proude and of euill conditions, her father could not like of the match: but gaue her to a yong Gentleman his neighbour, who was a very vertuous and worthy minded knight. This seemed displeasing to him that was refused, so that he brought nine of his kindred and friends with him, and hid themselves in ambush nere my Fathers Castle, wherto I haue intrusted you to conduct me. They staying there thus vnknewe to any all the night, and the most part of this day, tell my Husband, two of my Brethren and my selfe, toke horse, intending to goe hunt at the Riuers side, they seeing vs far enough from any riskew, violently set on vs, kilde my Husband and Brethren, and brought me away with them, the Traitor himselfe saying, that after hee had rauished me of mine honour, he would commit me to the like vbrage

by

THE HISTORIE

by the Groomes of his Stable, who when they had satisfied their villainous willes, should put mee to cruell and shamefull death.

Belæue me Madame, quoth Olorico, you are happily deliuerd from such violence, and I thinke if all such like Russians were so ferued as they are, Ladies might passe through the Countrey safely and without danger. By this time they were come to the Castell, where (because it was night) the Bridge was drawne: but when y^e guard heard that the Ladie was come, it was presently let downe, and one of them ranne to the Ladies Mother, who fearing she had lost her Daughter, was now greatly comforted, especially when she vnderstood, that they which had slaine her Sonnes, were likewise kilde themselves: and certainly both the Mother and the Daughter reputed themselves so beholding to the knights, as they knew not in what sort to entertaine them, wherby they might expresse their comfort.

Being very honorably vsed by these Ladies, after supper they were conducted to their Chamber, where they reposed themselves that night: and the next morning came to take their leaue of the Ladies, to the no little grieve both of the one and the other. All that day they traualled without any aduenture, till at length they came to a goodly fountaine, where they alighted, to let their horses pasture awhile: and hauing refreshed themselves with certaine victualles, that Vrbano had provided for them, Palmerin laid him downe and slept, and Vrbano by him, finding themselves somewhat wearie with riding all the day. Olorico being a yong Prince, and desirous to see any strange occasion: walked about into diuers places, regarding here and there the situation of the Countrey, the Mountaine and goodly Castelles builded vpon them. He was no soone departed, but there arriued fine Armed knights, two of them being they that escaped, when Palmerin so nobly deliuered the Ladie, they hauing that night past lodged at his Fathers

OF PALMERIN D'OLIVA.

Fathers house who ledde the Ladie, and which Palmerin first kilde with his Dace. And thinking now to reuenge themselves, had brought three of his Cousins in their company, and watched at the Ladies Castell the coming forth of the Princes: but their stomacks would not serue them to meddle with them there, wherfore they followed them all that day, till they behelde them seperated as you haue heard.

When they saw that Palmerin slept; one of them (fearing least the noise of the Horses should awake him) alighted, and drawing his Sword, came therewith to haue slaine him: but by good fortune there arriued a knight, who had bene hunting there about all that day, and he cryed to him with his Sword drawne. Ah villaine, kill not the man that sleepest. The Traytour seeing this new come knight so braue a person, beganne to be afraid, and therefore slept backe againe a little, at that time Palmerin, by y^e knights crye, awaked: and seeing him so nere that thought to giue the most all stroke, was greatly amazed, suddainly drawing his Sword to defende himselfe, not hauing the leysure to put on his Helmet, by which occasion he receiued a small wound vpon his heade. The knight seeing the cowardly villaine of them that assailed Palmerin altogether, bestirred himselfe so worthily among them, as he that gaue the wound, died soone after vnder his Sword. Whereupon the foure knights decided themselves, two against Palmerin, and two against him, who defended themselves so worthily, and had brought their enemies into such danger, as they two that before escaped, seeing to what danger the fight would extend, gaue the spurs to their horses, and galloped away so fast as the horse could pace. By this time y^e Prince Olorico heard the Dwarfs clamour, being greatly afraid of his Masters death: came running thither with all speede, when the knight that had saued Palmerins life, said.

Noble knight, well may you giue thanks to Heauen,

in that your enemies, who thought to kill you sleeping, are foyled: for if God had not permitted my curse this waie, without all doubt you had lost your life. But since it hath bene my good happe to prevent your ominous fortune, I must aduise you hereafter to beware of like hazarde: and may it please you to accompany me to a Castell within two miles distaunce, your entertainment shall be good, and your woundes cured by a Ladie verie expert in Chirurgerie. I accept your offer gentle Sir, quoth Palmerin, with right good will, as well to haue your friendly company, as to shaloe you from any other such like villaines, who happily may seeke your harme for this noble fauour. So they came on altogether, Palmerin remembryng the wordes of the faire Ladie, and could not imagine who the knight shuld be, that had so honorably preserved his life: this made him more to meruaile, that he should be his enemye, whom (to his remembraunce) he had neuer seene in any place before.

To put him from these cogitations, Olorico ashamed of his absence in such a needfull time, came to Palmerin with these wordes. Certes my noble friends, I am henceforth unworthy to beare Armes, seeing that in such danger I left your company: unhappy that I am, might not former experience teach mee, what suddaine aduentures do often happen to knights errant: what punishment may be sufficient for my heinous offence: I leave such speeches to Women, quoth Palmerin, for if we knew before what would happen after ward, neuer should we fall into any inconvenience: but it is sufficient that we haue so well escaped, and let God haue the glorie for so happie deliuerance. By this time they were come to the Castell, and entering the base Court, the seruants came to take their Horses to the stable: meane while the knight himselfe went to aduertise the Lady, of the other knights arrival, saying. Faire Leonarda, I pray you vouchsafe the best honoz and entertainment you can deuise, to two Gentlemen I haue here brought

brought with me: for I imagine by theyr rich Armes and Courtly behauiour, that eyther they are Princes or descended of very honourable Parentage. Trust me my Lord, (quoth shee) for your sake I endeavour my selfe to welcome them as they ought.

And comming into the Hall to salute them, after many courtesies deliuered on eyther side, the Lady seeing Palmerins Armour besmeared with blood, by reason of the wound he receyved on his head, saide. I feare my Lord you are very sore hurt: therefore the sooner it be seene too, the better ease you shall finde, Hereupon her selfe helpe to vnrarme him, and after ward she brought him into a goodly Chamber, where when she had stanchd his bladding, and bound vpp the wound, hee was laide in a marvellous Rich Bedde provided for him, she promising within ten dayes and lesse to restore him so well, as he should at pleasure trauell without any danger.

For this kindnesse Palmerin returned her manifold thanks, and because he might the better rest without disturbance, shee caused euery one to departe the Chamber, her selfe likewise courteously bidding him good night. Palmerin being alone, looked round about the Chamber, to see if by any Armes or deuise, he might know the knight that so happily deliuered him: At length, hard by his Bed side, hee espied the Shield of Frycoll, with the Sunne painted therein, which hee well remembred to be his Deuise, whome for Polynardes Loue he hated, according as you haue heard in the former part of this History, which when he behelde, the teares trickling down his cheeks, he thus began to himselfe. I perceiue that the Lady which saluted me on the mountain is of excellent knowledge: For though the knight bee my chiefest enemy, yet for the honorable kindnesse he hath this day shewed me: I will forget all former iniuries, and loue him henceforth as hee were my Brother, and what I could neuer compassse by rigour and force of Armes, I will now seeke to conquer by loue and courtesie. While he continued these

these priuat speeches, Frycoll opened the Chamber dore, and entred to bid Syr Palmerin good night: who not a little glad of his coming, sayde

I pray you Sir knight, by the honorable loue you beare to Chivalrie: to tell me your name, and if heretofore you were neuer in the Realme of England. My name, quoth the knight, which hether to I neuer hid from any man, is Frycoll, and two yeeres I remained in the Realme you speake of, with the Duke of Gaule in his Court. You remember then a knight, sayde Palmerin, with whom in lesse space then twelue daies together, you had two seuerall Combats. Very true, quoth Frycoll, and some good reason I haue to remember it, for the fight on my behalfe was so dangerous, as but by the fauour of a Lady and a Squire, I neuer had escaped with life. How hast thou in thy custody, sayde Palmerin, the man that did this such wronge, no more an enemy, but for euer thy bowd, true and trustie friend: and by the order I haue receiued, there is no man this day liuing, that shall withdraue me from thy friendship, because thou better deseruest it then any knight in the world.

And hath by my meanes, quoth Frycoll, the onely flower of Chivalrie bene deliuered from death: and the resolute hatred betweene vs, vniued now with loue more then brotherlike: in an happy houre went Jon hunting this day, and fortune could neuer honoꝛ me with more desired successe. For confirmation of this new alliance, he ranne and called Leonarda, Olorico and the rest, and before them all kissed Palmerin in the Wedde, to seale the perpetuall league of amitie betweene them. Then was recounted their aduentures and hatred past, wherat euery one greatly meruailed, seeing this suddaine change to such surpassing loue.

Frycoll also rehearsed, how after the raps of Agriola, the Duke Grenus his Lord went to the Court, wher hee aduised the king to pursue his Daughter, or to send him

in search of her: whereto hee could not any way perswade the king. Moreover, how his Maiestie would haue kept him still in his seruice, whereto he might not graunt, for the promise he made the Ladie that came thither, whom after he had brought to her Castell: hee trauailed by the Emperour of Allemaignes Court, where he certainly understood, that Tryneus and Agriola were not as yet there arrived, nor could any newes bee hearde what became of them.

Yet during all these speeches, he concealed all his own noble deedes of Chivalry in England, Allemaigne & other places, so vertuous and debonaire was this gentle knight, coueting in nothing to extol himself. He forgot not likewise to report, how that Lady cured him of a long and greuous disease: for which hee had so giuen himselfe to her seruice, as for euer he bowed himselfe her knight. Palmerin not a little contented with this discourse, sayd. I thinke the king of England would not send his Shippes after his Daughter, remembering her happines to come, bee now the espoused Wife to Lord Tryneus, and the honoꝛ thereof had bene already seene, but that the tempest of the sea was too much their enemy. Then declared hee their troublesome time on the Sea, in what manner he lost them, and how he now trauailed to finde them againe. Since fortune hath so appoynted (quoth Frycoll) that this loue and friendship should be begunne betweene vs, to continue the same I will beare ye company, and will not forsake you till yee haue found them, may it like you to accept me for your companion.

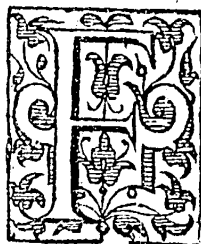
As it like me, quoth Palmerin, you neede not doubt thereof, and rather you then any man (that I know: for which noble kindnes, I thinke my selfe most fortunate. In this manner beganne the concorde betweene Palmerin and Frycoll, which continued with vertuous and perfect constancie, as in the Chapters following you shal perceiue. Thus sojourned these knights there leauingly together, till

THE HISTORIE

Palmerin being recovered, and able to beare Armes: they departed thence, leauing the poore Lady Leonarda in great heauinesse, because her friend Fryfoll left her so soone.

CHAP. XXX.

¶ How Palmerin, the Prince Olorico, and Fryfoll, went to Buda, thinking to finde the Court there, where being arriued, they hearde Newes howe the Prince Florendos was taken: whome they went to succour with all diligence at Constantinople.



Palmerin, because hee would not haue his Ladie Leonarda too much discontented, made promise of his speedy returne to her: Which wordes somewhat pleasing her, hee departed with his two new friends, and such quicke haste they made in theyr Journey, as

within five dayes after, they arriued at Buda. There were they aduerised of the Kings death, whereof the Prince of Macedon was accused, and the Queene likewise: For which cause they were as Pylo-ners conueyed to her fathers Court, to the Citie of Constantinople.

At these tydings Palmerin was very displeased, wherefore he said to his Companions. Believe me good friends, My heart will neuer be at quiet, till I haue bene before the Emperour, who ought to be an indifferent Judge to Florendos, and he is the onely man of the worlde, to whome most gladly I would doe any seruice: therefore let vs make haste to Constantinople, to the end we may succour him, if he stand in any need of our aide. I am ready (quoth Fryfoll) and

OF PALMERIN AND OLIVA.

and let vs set forward when you please. Wherewith hee remembered his father, to whom the Crowne by right appertained, if Earle is deceased without any heire: where to (by this meane) he might attaine right soone. Perswading himselfe with assurance hereof, hee was now more earnest to be gone, and hastened his companions in such sort, as they came to Constantinople, two dayes before the appointed time for the Combat. As they entred the City, they met a knight riding on hunting, whom after they had saluted, Palmerin questioned withall, if hee knew any thing of the Prince Florendos his misfortune, & what the Emperour intended to do with him. Sir, quoth the knight, the Emperour hath resolutely set downe, that the Prince and his daughter shall receiue their triall by Combat against the two Nephewes to the deceased King: and furnished they must be of their Champions, before the limited time of ten dayes be expired, and nothing else as yet is done to my knowledge. I thank you good Sir, quoth Palmerin, it is happy the matter is no further forward. So leauing the knight, they prauces merrely into the Citie, and because it was too soone to take by their lodging, they rode to the Pallace, to know at full the certainty of the matter: thus being all armed, except their Helmes, which their Squires carried after them, they made a seemely shew as they rode, in that they were all thre of one stature, and very beautiful young Princes, they were especially noted, and followed by many knights and Gentle men, who imagined such persons went to the pallace for other matters then Courtly dancing.

These three companions being entred the great Hall, which was hanged round about with blacke velvet, in signe of mourning, they marvelled what might bee the occasion thereof: wherefore Palmerin falling on his knees before the Emperour, and hauing humbly kissed his hand, thus spake. Most renowned Monarch of the worlde, my friends haue and my selfe, within these few dayes, as

THE HISTORIE

wee travelled through the Realme of Hungaria, were aduertized that you keepe in Prison the Prince of Macedon, whom (so please your Maiestie to vouchsafe) I would gladly see, in respect that hee is my Lord, as for the desire I haue to deale in the Combatte appoynted, if it like him to make choyse of me.

The Emperour perceyuing Palmerin so faire, modest, and couragious, beganne with himselfe to conceyue well of him: and imagined that his Sonne Caniano was againe reuiued, so nere did hee resemble him in countenance, stature, and all proportions of his bodie, wherefore hee returned him this answer. It shall not in ought displease mee, my friende, to let you see him, to the ende you may conceiue no suspicion of iniustice. So calling a Gentleman vnto him, commanded him to conduct the knight to the Tower where the Prince Florendos was: afterwards enquiring of the Prince Olorico and Fryfoll, what the knight was that so hardily did enterpryse the Combatte. Dread Lord, (quoth Fryfoll) he is called Palmerin d'Oliua, a knight (in my Iudgment) of the very highest qualitie in the Worlde. Then hee and the Prince Olorico, rehearsed the prowesse and deedes of Chiuallrie by him accomplished in Fraunce, England, Allemaigne, Bohemia, and Turkie: which being heard by a Bohemian knight present, he came to Fryfoll, saying.

I pray you Sir, is this that Palmerin who killd the Serpent on the Mountain Artifaria, and brought the water from the fountaine, which healed the good King Prymaleon, father to Florendos? It is he Sir (quoth Fryfoll) and no other. Then dare I say, gracious Lord (quoth the knight) that you haue seene the most valiant and vertuous Gentleman, that euer came in Thrace. Whereupon he discovered the noble victorie hee obtained in Bohemia, against the two Gyants Dormaco and Mordano, whom he slew before his worthy Combate on the behalfe of Dyardo, Cousin germaine to the King and fayre Cardonya: against the

Coun-

OF APLMERI NDOLIVA.

County of Ormeque, and his Cousins, in the Company of Prince Adrian and Ptolome. Hereat were all the Princes and knights present amazed, so that the Emperour himselfe, saide:

Well may Florendos nowe Adventure the tryall of his cause, hauing the onely Champion of the Worlde on his side: and in this manner they deuised of him, till his returne from the Prison againe. Palmerin entering the Tower, Florendos was affrayed, because no person was wont to come him: but chiefly when he sawe him on his knees to him, vsing these speeches. Alas my Lord Florendos, how grieuous to me is your imprisonment: in vnhappy time did you know him, that hath caused you to bee so ill intreated. I pray you my Lord comfort your selfe, and take courage: for heere you may beholde your Seruaunt Palmerin, who will be hewed in a thousand pieces, but he will deliuer you from this miserie. Florendos, whose eyes and face were greatly swollen with incessant weeping, onely with the sorrowe hee conceyued for his Ladie, knowing him to be the same man indeede: was so exceeding ioyfull, as infinite embracings and kissings, woulde not serue to be: wray his comfort, for such gracious welcomes, reuerence, and courtesie hee vied, as Palmerin (bathfull to be entertained with such honour) saide.

Unseemely is it my Lord, that you should thus much abase your selfe to me: For (vnder correction) it ill agrees that the Maister should honour the Seruaunt. The good Prince could not but still holde him in his armes, and with teares and maruellous affection, thus answered. Ah Palmerin, mine onely hope and comfort in trouble, where hast thou bene? What fortune hath kept thee so long from mee? My deere friende, howe manie ykelome thoughtes haue I endured, expecting comming: so that when I sawe thou didst not returne, and I could no way heare what was become of thee: the carelesse concept of thy absence had nere daine me. Then carelesse, what became of my selfe, braine

depr

THE HISTORIE

deprived of my love and honor of my life, I am fallen into these miseries farre exceeding death: which Fortune I see hath permitted, because I am perswaded, that thou must deliver me from all mishappes, and by thee shall I attaine my cheefest desires. Ah happie and fortunate hever, well woorthy for ever to be celebrated with triumphes, finding thee the onely cause of my good, whom long since I feared was comforted with the dead: but seeing thou art now so happily come, acquaint mee with the fortunes that staied thee thus long, for very desirous am I to know them. Palmerin was so grieved to see him in such weakie and sicklie estate, as he could hardly make any answer, yet striving with himselfe, said.

My noble Lord, the time requireth me to other occasions, hereafter shall I tell you the whole discourse. Graunt me, I beseech you, without further intreating, that I may enter the Combat in your name, against one of those Traitors, who have accused you: for such is my hope in God, that I shall speede luckily, and bring him to the end such a villaine deserve. With all my heart, quoth the Prince, I am contented, assuring my successe so well in your vertues, as if five hundred of my Knights did enter the field for me. And to the ende, that without feare or doubt you may take my cause in hand, I sweare to you by the living God, that since Tarisus espoused Griania, I never saw her, till when the King came and found me with her: which was so short a time, as she had not the leisure to make me any answer. True it is that I kild the King: but how? I did it in respect he was mine enemy, and abused my Lady and lawfull wife. What though they were espoused together: the marriage was not to be allowed, in that it was done against her will: she being (as I have said) my Wife, by sollemne speeches before God married to me. It sufficeth, said Palmerin, I have enough. You shall likewise understand my Lord, that I have brought with me another Knight, who will gladly adventure the Combat on the Queenes behalfe,

OF PALMERIN D'OLIVA.

halfe, and such a one hee is, as that the other accuser will scant dare to stand against him: Wherefore let me intreate you to comforte your selfe, expecting our happie and fortunate successe.

Floren does falling on his knee, gave thanks to Heaven for this luckie event, and having an indifferent while conferred together, after Palmerin had advertised Frenaco of his Sonne Ptolomes health, and that in short time hee had good hope to finde him, hee returned to the Emperour, to whom making great reverence, he saide. Now my gracious Lord, I come to vnderstand your answer. I pray you Sir Knight (quod the Emperour) holde mee excused, if I have not welcommed you, as your Nobilitie, Bountie, and high Chivalry deserueth: but after the Combat is ended, which for my part I graunt yee, what hath wanted now shall bee supplied, so that your selfe shall rest contented. I thanke your Majesty for this extraordinary fauour, said Palmerin, and seeing the Prince hath committed his cause to my Fortune: I beseech you send for the Kings Nephewes, that the appointed day may not be preiected by any further delays. And if the Queene your Daughter bee not provided of a Champion, this Knight (pointing to Frycoll) my belovd friende and Companion, shall undertake her cause, in that he came hither for no other businesse: and such good experience have I made of his Valour and hardynesse, as if by knighthood Chivalrie her right may be seconded: assure your selfe my Lord, this is the man. I thinke (saide the Emperour) he is not as yet determined of any one, albeit full many have made offer of themselves: and so we will expect no further, this Knight shall be preferred before all that come. I humbly thanke your Maiestie for this fauour, (answered Frycoll) yet would I be loath to presume to saie, before I vnderstand the Queenes pleasure. The Emperour caused him to be conducted to the Queenes Chamber, and his two Companions with him, who desired to see the Ladies: where being entred, Frycoll humbly upon his knee, began

THE HISTORIE

in this manner. Right noble and excellent Duene, so farre throughout Christendome, is spread the reporte of your rare vertues and integritie of life, especially your Innocencie in the crime wherewith you are accused: as from farre Countreys I am come to be your knight, if you will vouchsafe me such honour as so to accept me. Assuring you, that vnder your commandment, and in the company of my Noble friend, who undertakes the Combat for my Lord Florendos, right willing am I to aduenture life and credite.

Alas gentle knight, quoth the Duene, this offer proceedeth from your courtesie and bountie, not by any vertue on my parte deserving: For too contrarie hath fortune evermore set herselfe against me. But very ingratefull might I bee accounted, and neuer be reckoned among Ladies of regard, if hauing taken such paines for mee, I should not accept you for my knight, especially in such urgent occasion. Wherefore I entertaine you into this Service, and I desire of God, that you may be as easily deliuered from the charge you take in hand for me, as my conscience is cleere from the faulte wherewith I am accused.

I hope Madame (quoth Frycoll) that my Lord your Father shall ere long perceyue, your loyall, perfect, and pure Nobilitie, which neuer can keepe company with seruile and detestable treason. All this while Palmerin beholding the Duene, seeing her sweet face so stained and blabbered with teares: moued with naturall remorse, was constrained to turne his head aside, to hide the teares that trickled downe his cheekes.

The Duene likewise regarded him so earnestly, as when she behelde him wepe, she imagined that one gaue a violent pull at her heart: which she dissembled so well as she could, determining not to demanda the cause thereof, untill such time as the Combat were finished. So taking theyr leaue of the Duene and the Princesse Armida, they returned to theyr Lodging till the next Morning, when the Emperour sending for them to the Pallace, where Promptalcon

OF PALMERIN DOLIVA.

talcon and Oudin stayed theyr coming: the Emperour himselfe thus beganne. How Promptalcon, here mayest thou beholde the two young knights, who speake the contrary of that thou hast reported: Wilt thou yet maintaine that my Daughter hath committed treason, and bin disloyall to her Husband, thy deceased Uncle? I will my Lord, (quoth hee) and I weare by my Baptisme, for that cause she shall dye the death: and if any dare undertake the contrary, I am ready to proue it by force of Armes. I thinke it conuenient (saide Palmerin, my good Lord) that no Combate should be graunted, without the presence of the accused.

Immediately Florendos and Griana, were sent for, and beeing come before the Emperour, Palmerin sayde to the Prince: How say you? my Lord, do you permit in maintenance of your right, that I giue these false accusers such discipline, as their wicked and trecherous dealings deserve? I do (quoth the Prince) and Heauen prosper that in thine enterprize. What say you Madame (quoth Frycoll) to the Duene, do you asseyde the like to me? Shee answered as Florendos before had done: Whereupon Palmerin thus spake to the Accusers.

Wee two knightes will maintaine, that you both are Traytours, and that by couetous and greedy desire of rule, and to enioy the Kingdome, you would (against all right) disinherit the young Princesse Armida: for which cause you haue shamefully accused the Duene her Mother, to haue committed murder, and more then that, charge her with disloyal lubricity. For if the Prince Florendos talked with her, when the King found him in her Chamber: it was in no other sort then honour allotted, and according to the dutie of honest Love, wherein all Princes are bound to theyr Ladies. Besides, if your King was slaine by the Prince, it was in defence of his owne life, and in repelling the inuicious speeches he gaue him: To approue what I say, we present our gages to the Emperour, so please him but to receyue them. The like did the two Bishops, desiring his High-

Wighneste to appoint the Combatte presently, in the wide and necessarie place befoze the Pallace. For (quoth they) we will teache these vaine-glorious Strangers, the price of such iniurious speeches, spoken to those that know how to correct them.

I thinke (quoth Palmerin) thou shalt neede to teach thy selfe: but if thou haue any newe dexteritie, practise it well thou arte best, for I can tell thee the time will requyre it. The good Emperour Remicius commaunded silence, and taking the Gages of these foure knightes: bad them goe Arme themselves; saying he would see the ende thereof before hee took any sustentance. The Duke of Mensa, and the Countie of Rodona, auncient Princes of Greece, were appointed to be Judges of the feldes: who commaunded two hundred knightes to Arme themselves, for assurance of their owne persons.

CHAP. XXXI.

Of the noble Combat in the Citie of Constantino-ple, by Palmerin, & Fryfoll, against the two Nephews of the deceased King of Hungaria, whom they vanquished, by which meanes the Prince Florendos and Queene Griana were deliuered.



Palmerin and Oudin being departed the sumptuous Hall, Palmerin and Fryfoll taking theyr leave of Florendos and the Queene, whom the Emperour caused to be shutt uppe in their prison againe, went to their Lodgings to Arme themselves, for performance of the Action undertaken. The Duke of Meccena,

an

an honorable Prince, descended of the most auncient race in all Greece, with many other great Lordes went after them: & when they were Armed, the Duke would needes beare Palmerins Lance, and the graund Squire attending on the Emperour, carried Fryfols. In this manner came they to the place appointed for the Combat, where the two Brethren were already staying for them, the eldest of them thus beginning in mockage. Beleeue mee knights, for men y^e helmed themselves so hardle in a Hall, methinks you haue beene very long Arming your selues. I thinke you came on your fouldcloth Gules to the feldes entrance, for feare of falling to hurt your selues: but soone shall ye be taught better horsemanship I warrant ye. If there were in thee so much wisdomes & exercise of Armes, answered Fryfoll, as are high words and brauing behaviour, it would be a little better discerned then it is: notwithstanding, ere we haue done, I thinke they that came first into the fiede will carrie laist here, vntill some bodge for pittie carrie them out befoze. Herewith the Trumpets sounded, and the Heraldes commaunded the Champions to doe their deuorie, which was the cause, that these hate words were chaunged into deedes: and running fiercely against each other, they encountered with such puissance, as Palmerin cast Oudin forth of his saddle, with a very great wound on his left side, and Promptaleon was receiued by Fryfoll so roughly, as he fell backward on the crupper of his Horse, because hee was loth his Brother should fall without company. The two Brethren, enraged to be thus foiled at y^e first, came with their swordes drawne to kill their aduersaries Horses: so that they were constrained quickly to alight, when they assailed each other with mettallous furie, for either side expected victorie, the one in hope of a kingdome, the other to saue their friends liues.

Strange was it to beholde this violent fight, yet the two Brethren seemed vnable long to holde out, for they

D

Armoz

Armoz was so cut and mangled, and themselves so driuen forth of breath, as hardly they could sustaine themselves; so that Promptalcon desired Frycoll to rest a while, who moued with anger, thus answered. *Pay Traytor,* now shall I teach thee how to defend thy selfe, and not one minute will I graunt thee to traueise with me: but will send thy soule to the father of thy villany, vnlesse, with speede thou denie thy slander. With these words he laid so many sound strokes on him, as at length hee fell downe dead at his feete, which when Oudin perceined, hee threw his Sword at Palmerin, and caught him fast about the middle, thinking that way to get him downe, but Palmerin striking away his feete, caused him fall on his backe, and without attending for his reuolt, nobly strooke his head from his shoulders.

So coming to Frycoll, he asked if he were wounded: *No my Lord* (quoth he) *I thanke God, the greatest wound I haue cannot withhold me to doe you further seruice, if so be you haue any neede.* Then putting up their Swords, they demaunded of the Judges, if any thing else remained to be done, for deliuerance of the prisoners. Nothing, woz thy Lords, answered the Judges, and then will the Emperour now deliuer, with all possible speede. The good Remicius hartlie thanking God for this victorie, sent a Knight to the Champions, with request to come and lodge in his Pallace, as also that they should presently come speake with his Maiestie: yet could not the Messenger make such haste, but they were come forth of the field, the Mecena and the Prince Olorico bearing them compa-

nie. When the Knight had ouertaken them, hee said. *Returne worthy Knights to my Lord the Emperour, for hee would conferre with you, and haue your wounds attended by his own Chirurgions.* So turning again to the pallace, they entred the Hall, where the Emperour meeting them, said. *Right welcome are ye my noble friends, who haue*

so happily defended the Daughters honor: for whose sake I shall make ye such recompence, as shall be henceforth an encouragement to all Knights, to aduenture the Combat on the chaffe of any distressed Lady. Immediately in their presence, by sound of Trumpet hee caused to be declared, that the Prince Florendos and the Quene Griana, were innocent of the trayterous accusation, and therefore in open field had they should be deliuered: commanding likewise his most expert Chirurgions to giue diligent attendance on the wounded Knights, causing them to be lodged in the most stately Chambers of his Pallace. Afterward, he suffered the bodies of the vanquished to be buried, giuing expresse charge on paine of death, that none of the Knights of Hungaria should depart from Constantinople without his leaue: because he wold while they staid there, prouide for the gouernment of the Kingdome, as appertaining to his young Daughter the Princesse Armida. The Emperesse was so ioyfull for the deliuerance of Griana, as shee had some forgot her pephewes misfortune: the Quenes Ladies likewise were not a little glad, but aboue all, the young Princesse Armida, her comfort could not be exprested, that her Mother was so graciously defended: and now the Duke of Pera, who had the Prince Florendos in custodie, fetching him forth of prison, said: *My Lord, thank God and the Knights that fought the Combat for you: for by their meanes, the Emperour declareth you absolved and set at libertie.*

The Prince lifting his eyes to heauen, thus beganne: *Ah my God, how happie is the man that trusteth in thy mercy: doubtlesse he that belaueth in thy promises, shall neuer perish.* Noble Duke, in all mine afflictions, I haue euermore found your speciall fauour: but if God prolong my life, I will not be vnmindful of your gentlenes. In sooth my Lord, quoth the Duke, for so good a Prince, any honest mind would gladly endenour himselfe: and if I haue pleased you in any thing, I did no more then my duty,

which christian amitie requireth of each other. So taking him by the hand, hee brought him before the Emperour, when falling on his knees, the Prince thus spake. If here-
 tofore dead Lord, both I and my people gave our selues to
 trauell, and aduentured desperate hazard in your defence:
 at this time I count my selfe sufficiently recompenced, see-
 ing your displeasure qualified, and the hard opinion you
 conceived against me, changed into princely and honora-
 ble iustice.

Sir Florendos, answered the Emperour, when I re-
 member the wrong you did my Daughter, leauing such a
 scandalous report of her, at the first time you came to this
 Citie: I thinke you worthe of the sharpest death. But
 placing mercie before rigorous iustice, I am desirous to let
 you know, that it liketh me better to be loued then feared:
 forgetting quite the offence against our person, the murder
 of our Son, without any regard to the murmur of the peo-
 ple, whose ignorance cannot consider of Princes mercie.
 Nor will I staine mine aged yeeres with mine owne pro-
 per blood, or the death of a Prince so noble, whereby I
 should leaue to my following posteritie, as a Trophe of my
 life, an endlesse memorie of tyrannous crueltie: but rather
 shall my chiefest aduersaries stop their mouthes, with re-
 membrance of my clemency and princely bountie, as your
 owne conscience shall wel witnes with me. You therefore
 my Lord, the Duke of Pera, see that the Prince Florendos
 bee lodged in the best place in our Citie, and keepe him
 company, vntill his traine shal come frō Macedon. With
 great humilitie the Prince kissed the Emperours hand,
 acknowledging his manifold and princely courtesies: de-
 siring the Duke likewise before his departure, that hee
 might speake with the two Knights Frycoll and Palme-
 rin.

Being brought to their Chambers, the embracings
 and gracious courtesies he vied to them, I am not able to
 utter, and very loth was hee to part from them, but that
 he

he would no way prejudice their health: wherefore giuing
 them the good night, he was conduced to his lodging, lea-
 uing Palmerin very sad and peniue, remembryng what the
 Duene of Tharsus had said to him, how he should deliuer
 his Father from death, before hee could know him, which
 was likewise confirmed by the apparition of the Ladie to
 him, vnder the name of his best and dearest friends.

That the Heauens did so fauour me, quoth he, that I
 were the son of the Prince Florendos and Duene Gria-
 na, then would I imagine my selfe the happiest man in the
 world. Yet can I not forget, that the Fayries told mee on
 the Douneaine Artisaria, that one day I should be Lord
 of all Greece, but God is my witnes, that I couet not such
 honor and preferment, were it not for the loue of my Lady,
 to the end her Father might not dislike of our contract. And
 hence will I not depart, before I vnderstand the truth here-
 of, and to what end this aduenture will happen. Frisoll on
 the other side, he deuised how to make himselfe knowne to
 the Emperour and Emperesse: because hee had good hope
 when himselfe might be knowne, that his Father Netri-
 dees should enjoy the kingdome of Hungaria. The Prince
 Florendos likewise could take no rest, for his great desire to
 recouer the Duene Griana. Such were the passions of
 these three Princes, each one liuing in hope of good successe,
 which happinesse according to their expectations, as you
 shall reade hereafter.

THE HISTORIE

CHAP. XXXII.

How the Quēne Griaue with the young Princeſſe Armida, went to viſit Palmerin and Fryſoll, and how the Queene knew Palmerin to be her Sonne, to the no little ioy of the Emperour, and the Prince Florendos.



A few daies after the deliuerance of the Prince Florendos, the young Princeſſe Armida deuising with the quēne her Mother, ſaid. He thinkes gracious Madame, we are to be reſproued of ingratitude, in that we haue not as yet viſited the poore wounded knights, conſidering how greatly we are beholding to them: I beſeech you let vs this morning goe ſee how they fare.

Alas daughter, answered the Quēne, haſt thou the heart to bring me among ſuch perſons. When I am ſaid to be the cauſe of thy Fathers death: Then the Princeſſe breaking forth into teares, replied. Beleeue me Madame, if you remember your ſelfe well, you are in as little fault as I am, and ſo haſt an honourable victorie declared: but had you been any way culpable therein, yet now you ought to comfort your ſelfe, hauing had ſuch a famous prooſe of innocency. In ſigne whereof, and to declare your thankfulnes to thoſe gentle knights: it will be counted a ſpecial point of courteſie, to viſite them that ventured for you. Goe in then, ſaid the Quēne, ſeing you thinke it ſo neceſſarie, and are ſo deſirous. So accompanied with many Ladies, clothed

OF PALMERIN DOLVA.

clothed all in mourning blacke, they went firſt to Fryſoll, greatly thanking him for the paines he had taken, putting his life in danger, for the conſeruation of their honours. Not to me Lady, answered Fryſoll, ought you to giue theſe thanks, but to him that onely giueth ſtrength to man: and if from my birth I had continually trauelled in your ſervice, yet your graces are ſuch, as I ſhould neuer deſerue to be reckoned among your meanest fauorites. The young Princeſſe thinking her ſelfe greatly bound to him, would not giue him good morrow with ſo little talke: but ſitting downe on the bedde by him, taking him by the hand, began againe thus.

I know not Sir knight, how the Quēne my Mother will procede in requitall of your noble ſervice, for mine owne part, not forgetting how the Traytors threatned me, whom (to their endleſſe ſhame) you haue banquiſhed and ſlaine: I finde my ſelfe ſo indebted to you, as it far exceedeth my power, to giue you with anſwerable recompence. Fryſoll perceiuing the young Princeſſes affection, who Loue had caught ſomewhat within his reach: knew immediately by her ſober baſhful lookes, the cauſe why ſo many ſighes were coupled with her words, himſelfe likewiſe ſuddenly ſicke of the ſame diſeaſe, returned this anſwere. Madame, if Fortune, the friend to your happines, would fauour me ſo much, as the enterpriſe done by your commanding, might ſorte to an ende fitting my deſire: I ſhould then account my ſelfe more then ſuffice. I am gratified in this, that the act is agreeable to your liking, and the fauorable countenance of ſuch a Ladie, is more then ſo meane a knight as my ſelfe can merit. Beſide, from the day that the high reſolute of your prudence and gracious beautie, aſſured me of thoſe exquisite gifts, wherewith Nature hath plentifully enriched you: I toke ſuch a religious vow of bondage on me, as (conſidering your high calling, and my ſelfe ſo far inferior) I ſhall neuer obtaine the fauour of libertie, if your benignitie, exceeding all things elſe, graunt me

THE HISTORIE

me not that speciall grace. The Quene loth to trouble this forme of confession, withdrew her selfe into Palmerins Chamber, where (as it fell out) she found nobody but himselfe: by which occasion, remembryng the lone shee bare to Florendos, after she had humbly saluted him, shee thus began.

Valent me, gentle Sir, your knightlie Chinakrie hath shewed it selfe of such desert, as the Prince Florendos, for defence of whose honour, you have not feared to adventure your life, your dangerous wounds well witnessing the same: shall neuer deuise sufficient satisfaction. For in my iudgement it may well be said, that goods, honour and life hath been restored him by your noble magnanimitie. Madam, quoth Palmerin, these wound that for these two daies haue made mee keepe my Chamber, thanks be to God are not so dangerous, as if occasion were offered, either for you or my Lord Florendos, but full well could I be seene therein, to purchase entertainment into your gracious conceit. The Quene then sitting downe in a Chaire by him, and viewing him very earnestly, his locks of haire kept downe by a gorgeous wrought Cap, embroidered with Saphires and small Emerals: she beheld the mole on his face like a Crosse, which made her remember, that her Son had the like, and in the selfe same place, when Cardyna tooke him from her and caried him to the Mountaine. Whereupon she tooke greater occasion to regard his countenance, and imagining him very much to resemble the Prince Florendos, immediatly she perswaded her selfe that he was her Son. Which conceit moued her to such alterations, as of long she continued silent, though Palmerin (in meane while) demanded many questions of her. These changes ouerruled by reason and discretion, shee commaunded her Ladies to depart the Chamber, and to goe accompanie the young Princeesse Armida: they being no soner gone, but shee began in this manner.

Let me request, Sir Palmerin, to know your Parents
and

OF PALMERIN D'OLIVA.

and the name of the Countrey where you were borne. Palmerin somewhat amazed at this demaund, was now in the midst of his onely desire, verily perswading himselfe that the Quene was his Mother, wherefore he thus answered.

Madame, I sweare to you by my faith, that I know no Ladie this day liuing, to whom I would willingly reueale more then to your selfe: but so contrarie was Fortune to me in mine infancie, that as yet I could not get any knowledge either of my Father or Mother, nor of the Country where I was borne. Yet thus I haue bene certified, that I was nourished on a Mountaine not farre from this Cittie, which is called the Mount of Olives, where (as I haue bene many times tolde) my foster Father founde me in rich swadling clothes, and more then this, so please you to credit mee, cannot I be aware of whence or what I am.

O heauens, quoth the Quene, how greatly am I bound to praise your infinite bountie and pittie, for so safe protecting mine infant, whom I forsooke so cruelly: Ah gentle Knight, see here thy Mother, euen shee that commaunded thou shouldest be caried to the Mountaine: and the Prince Florendos, whom so lately thou didest deliuer from death, hee (noble Palmerin) is thy Father. Notwithstanding my Sonne, I desire thee by the reuerend loue thou bearest me, to conceale secretly what I haue saide, vntill I gaine the meane to discouer my shame to the Emperour: yet such a shame, as neuer came greater good to thy Mother, nor can I now account the daies sinfull, in that my fortune hath brought me such an honorable Sonne. So rauished with joy was both the Mother and the Sonne, as neither could expresse their inward contentation, for such was their alteration, as they reputed for an illusion or dreame, what was most certaine indeed: such wonderfull comfort brought this v unexpected chaunce, wherewith the greatest endowments of honoꝝ or riches may not bee compared. Weeing in this
extasie,

THE HISTORIE

extasie, the Mother of her Sonne, and the Sonne for his Mother: Palmerin hauing now againe recovered his senses, said.

Oy God, I render thy name immortall thanks, in that I drew my breath from so noble and vertuous personnes, as also for graunting mee knowledge of them in a time so fortunate: for beareth then (good Mother) to miserie of any thing, for I will discourse the matter in such sort to the Emperour, as forgetting all thinges past, hee shall receiue both the Mother and Sonne with greater ioy then you can imagine. But to the ende Madame, you may be more certain of your Sonne, see here a Crucifixe of Golde, which was tied about my necke when I was founde, and hath of long time bene kept by the most perfect Ladie in the world. The Queene knowing it right well, after she had kissed it many times, answered. Assuredly my Sonne, it is the verie same that my selfe tied about thy necke, when I was in the greatest griefe that euer distressed Mother might bee: to see her infant violently rapte from her, so soone as Nature had brought him into the worlde. But if my mishap as then surpassed all other womens: yet now is it recompensed with such a fortunate houre, as no Ladie may compare her felicitie with mine. Ah my Sonne, by thee are my sorowes chaunged into ioy, my despaire into content, & from death it selfe am I brought againe to life: for if my Vnsuckles had hap made me despise life, now may you be assured how much I desire it.

Then declared she, how to saue the Prince Florendos life, whose faithfull loue brought him to such extremitie by sickness, she aduentured her honoz for his safety, & entring the parradise of loue, bestowed that Iewel on him which she most of all esteemed. And so maist thou (quoth she) report to the Emperour, yet in this manner, that not by carnall impudicitie I so consented, for God is my witness, that notwithstanding the perill wherein I saw him, no perswasion could cause me yeeld him that especiall remedy, before

OF APLMERIN DOLIVA.

before he had first solemnly vowed marriage to me, which against al right was broken by the Emperours commandement.

Madame, quoth Palmerin, Florendos is of such valour, and his honorable actions so wel receiued among men, that albeit he had made you no such promise, yet reason may excuse you in this matter. But if by promised faith, and to saue the life of so gentle a Prince (who happily by your refusall might hane miscaried) you honozed the Temple of Loue with so sweete an offering: among people of good minde, it ought rather to bee tearmed a vertue, then any bad affection or vnlawfull lust. And therefore Madam comfort your selfe, for shortly I dare to assure your peace with the Emperour: and seeing I haue you for my Mother, and the Prince Florendos for my Father, I seale my selfe free from any griefe or vexation, assuring you, that I wil driue it to no further delay, but this morning will I confer with his Maestie.

The Queene being fearefull, that her long stay should cause any bad opinion, hauing kissed her Sonne: gaue him the good morrow, and so went to her Chamber, where she found Cardyna her Gentlewoman, to whom shee shewed the Crucifixe her Sonne had given her, saying. Tell me I pray thee Cardyna, dost thou remember, that heretofore thou hast seene this Crucifixe, and in what place? Helene me Madame, quoth shee, I thinke I haue seene it before now: but in what place I am not certaine: Why? for getful creature, knowest thou not, that this is the Crucifixe which was tied about my Sonnes neck, when thy selfe did carrie him to the Mountaine? In good faith, the Knight is hee, who fought the Combat for my Lord Florendos. Praise be the great mercie and bountie of our God, who preserved his life then, and from infinite dangers hath defended him hitherto. Notwithstanding, be thou secret, and on perill of thy life reueale it to none, vntill the Emperour my Father be acquainted therewith. Cardyna was so ioyfull

full heretof, as she must needs goe presently to see Palmerin, and finding the Chirurgions with him visiting his woundes: she fetched a gorgeous Mantle of purple Veluet broyered round about with Pearles, Diamonds and Rubies, as wel might beseme the greatest Monarch to weare. As Cardyna holpe him to put on this Mantle she noted the marke on his face, which she remembred since the time of his birth: and in this manner goes Palmerin cherefully to the Emperour, whom he founde confering with his Lords and Barons, but his presence caused the to breake off talke, imagining him the comliest personne that euer they saw. The good olde Emperour Remicius, reioycing to see him in so good and able plight: demaunded of him how hee fared? Right well quoth he. I thanke God and your highnes, ready to aduenture on any occasiō shal like you to commaund me: and now am I come to aduertise your Maiestie of such matters, as will not a little glad ye in the hearing, so please your grace to vouchsafe me priuate audience. Whereupon the Emperour commaunded every one to depart the Hall, and they being now alone, Palmerin thus beganne. Dread Lord and mightie Emperour, till this time haue I frequented the Courts of many Kinges and Potentates, without desire of requesting any thing, untill this present: when faine would I request one bone of your Maiestie, & graunt whereof shall returne you both profit and honor. My noble friend Palmerin, answered the Emperour, what euer thou pleasest, demaunde, and on my word it shal be graunted.

Palmerin, with humble obeysaunce kissing the Emperours hand, said. In soth my Lord, all that I haue to request, is onely to desire your highnes: that all offences committed by the Prince Florendos and Madame Griana your Daughter, may not onely be forgotten, but also forgiven for the sake Palmerin, quoth the Emperour, I forgive all their offences whatsoeuer. May it then please your Maiestie, quoth he, to remember, how when Florendos came to

to do your service, during your Warres against Gamezio, because you denyed to give him your Daughter, hee was so sicke, as every houre his Death was expected: It then so forsauned my Lord, the Prince your Daughter, acquainted with the cause of his sicknes, to give him some comfort, as also to defende so good a Prince from death: by gracious speeches shee gaue him some hope of Loue, and such (for truth) as before they parted, a sollemne promise of Marriage was concluded betweene them. I know not the conditions of theyr agreements, but it seemed the Articles consisted on no difficult accorde: for eache received of other the sweet desires of Loue, in so much as that might was begotten. And for a truth my Lord, I am the sonne to the Prince Florendos, and Madame Griana your Daughter: who (as I vnderstand) by the Emperesse perswasion, against all right you compelled to marry with the Prince Tarisus. Florendos, notwithstanding my Mothers wrong, was very great, hath continued so loyal, as hee would neuer accept any other for his Wife, nor as yet will, but onely her. Now my Lord, that this matter may not seeme a fantastical invention, I can resolve you of the place of my birth, which was in the Towre, where my Mother remained Prisoner by your Commandement, vnder the charge of a Ladie named Tolomestra: who to defende your daughters honor, caused me to be caried to a place not far hence, which is called the Mount of Olives, from whence my surname is likewise deriued, & in that place was I found by a Country Deasant vnder a Palme tree, who in signe thereof, named me Palmerin d'Oliva. My sorrowfull Mother, hoping one day to see me again, diligently noted diuers marks I haue, and hung about my neck a golden Crucifixe, which this day I gaue her againe: and by this marke on my face like a Crosse, she well remembreth me to be her sonne. In this respect my Lord, that your Daughters offence was authorized by true & faithful Loue, and having likewise promised to forgive all causes of displeasure: graunt my father now

now at length to enjoy his lawfull Wife, that I being their Sonne, may not bee esteemed as Illegitimate; the doing whereof, will renoume your name for ever, and I see tryed in so many afflictions, shall be crowned with his long and desired reward.

The Emperour amazed at this strange discourse, could not imagine what answer to make: Wherefore having sitten a pretty while silent, lifting his eyes to Heaven, he thus begatne. Oh mightie King of Kings, onely good and full of mercie, I render thy Paine everlasting thanks, for thy gracious regards to the distressed Emperre of Greece: for though in our last Warres thou tookest away my Sonne Caniano, thou hast at this instant sent mee another, who well hath learned to defende this State, from the pouldre invading Gouvernour of Turkie. Ah my Sonne Palmerin, right well doe I believe what thou hast said, and albeit thou hadst not shewen such probable Arguments, yet dost thou so perfectly resemble my Sonne Caniano, as easily may be conjectured whence thou art descended. Whatsoever thou demandest my Sonne is already granted. And with these words, the teares trickled downe his white bearded Beard, such was his inward earnest conceit of ioy: and embracing Palmerin in his armes, he called his Lords, who marvelled not a little at this Event, and thus spake the Emperour. See here my Friends, your Liege Lord and Soueraigne, the Sonne of my Daughter Griana and the Prince Florendos: How may you applaude the bountie of Heaven, providing for you such a Noble Prince: The Lords all wondering at these speeches, came and entertained him, with many signes of honour: So that it is not registred in any auncient memorie, that ever King or Prince had such sudden and gracious welcome.

By this time these newes were spreaded throughout the whole Pallace, and the Emperesse hearing thereof, sent one of her Squyres for Palmerin: when the Emperour taking him by the hand, brought him to her Chamber, saying: See here

here Hadame your Son, who by your meanes hath long time bene banished our Court: hereafter looke hee best for vsed.

The Emperesse surprised with incredible ioy, lovinglie embracing him, said: Welcome my Sonne, forget my heynous offence, when I would not suffer thy Mother to enjoy the Prince Florendos, which fault Heaven hath reuenged, with the death of my three Nephewes, whereof I now make no reckoning, seeing God hath sent vs such a gracious comfort. The Emperour on the other side welcomed the Quene his Daughter, which as yet hee had not done since her coming from Hungaria. Lay by (quoth he) faire Daughter, these blacke garments, the wittnes of your inward mourning, and deck your selfe presently in rejoycing habits: for now before all my Lords of Greece, will I haue you espoused to the Prince Florendos. So departed the Emperour and the Prince, leaving the Quene with her Ladies, who disrobed her of her mourning garments: his Maiesty commanding Palmerin, to goe seek the Prince of Macedon his Father, accompanied with all the noble men of the Court.

In the mean while, he caused all the ornaments of black to be taken downe, and the Pallace to be hanged with sumptuous cloth of gold: and gaue in charge to the Emperesse, that the Quene, the Princesse Armida, and all the Ladies should adorne themselves, as to receive the very greatest Prince in the world. Likewise he said to all his Knights, Reioyce my good Friends with mee: for God tooke away my Children, and hath double restord them, for those that bee dead, hee hath raised vs more. Palmerin having with him all the Emperours Knights, went to the lodging of the Prince Florendos, & by the way the Citizens of Constantinople, Nobles, Merchants, & Artizans, welcomed him very honorably: making bonfires and Garlandes of triumph, in every streete, crying; Welcome to this noble Citie our new Lord and Master: and such cheerfull

THE HISTORIE

cheresfull delights did they solemnize the time withall; as though it had bene the Feast of Christmas, Palmerin & his Train, beeing come to the Princes Lodging, found two Squires at the gate, sent thither by the Emperour, the one holding a Horse very richly Caparisoned; and the other costly Garments of cloth of Golde, which hee caused to bee brought by after him into the Chamber, where falling on his knees before the Prince, he saide.

Nowe come I my Lord to kisse your hands, not as I haue done heretofore, but as becommeth a Sonne to his Father: For I am your Sonne, begotten on the Queene Griana, whom the Emperour will now bestowe on you in Marriage. Florendos was so raptured with these speeches, as hee was ready to strowne betwixt Palmerins armes: but at length fetching a great sigh, said. O celestiall Soueraign, what am I, whom thou shouldst so respect, and lift to such surpassing happinesse? Ah poore Florendos, not long since the most wretched among men: what man may now compare with thy fortune, hauing such a Knight to thy son, and faire Queene Griana to thy wife: Go we my Sonne (quoth he, embracing Palmerin) For it is no reason to stay, when such happy newes hath sent for vs. And credit mee, the very first time I did beholde thee, my heart was sollicit with greater ioye, then I am able now to expresse: which euer since made me coniecture, that there was more betwixt vs then friendly allyaunce. When was hee clothed in the rich Garments sent by the Emperour, and his Cousin Frenato in like manner: So coming to horsebacke, the Duke of Pera rode on his right hand, and his Sonne Palmerin on the left, with many Princes, Lords, Knights, and Gentlemen, riding both before and behinde them. In this manner came they to the Pallace, where the Emperour himselfe stayed their coming at the Gate: and after they were alighted, the Prince making humble reuerence to his Maiestie, thus spake: Mighty and redoubted Lord, I knowe not how to render sufficient thanks in that your

High

OF PALMERIN DOLIVA.

highnes is pleased to honour me with your daughter, which is the thing I alwaies desired, notwithstanding, I hope to shew such deserts hereafter, as neither she shall be discontented, nor your Maiestie repent your gentle gift. Noble Lord quoth the Emperour, well haue you deserued her, and mine Empire with her, in respect of your worthy Sonne Palmerin, whom all Europe, Asia and Affrica honours. Wherefore in the presence of all my Lords, I will giue her to you: deferring the day of solemnitie, until the states of Macedon come, therefore Sonne Palmerin goe for your Mother.

Presently hee departed, the Dukes of Perea and Mecana with him: and soone they returned, bringing with them the Emperesse, the Queene, and his Sister the young Princeesse Armida: whom hee had schooled with such gracious speeches, as she had not forgotten her displeasure towards the Prince Florendos, for the death of the King her Father. There openlie in the Hall, by the Archbishop of Constantinople, the Prince Florendos & Griana were affianced together, to their no little contentment: as also to the good liking of all the Princes and Lords of Greece, who spent the rest of the day in ioyfull disportes, and triumphes.

CHAP.

CHAP. XXXIII.

How Frycoll declared to the Emperesse, that he was sonne
to her Nephew Netrides.



At this pleasure of the Princes and
Lords of Greece, for so many ioyfull
and vnerpected accidents, might not
be compared with the pleasures of the
Prince Olorico and Frisoll, who
would now no longer keepe his bed,
in respect of his ioy for the good fortune
of his friend, wherefore putting on his garments, and ac-
companied with Olorico, he came downe into the great
Hall, as the Prince of Macedon was betrothed to his La-
dy, when Palmerin stepping from all the rest, welcommed
them with very gracious courtesie. After they had ben ge-
nerally saluted, Frycoll came before the Emperesse, and on
his knee began in this manner.

Most excellent and gracious Madame, may it please
you pardon mine offence in shedding the blood of your kinse-
man. Notwithstanding, as the law of iudgement and rea-
son exhorteth me, of two evils I chuse to take the least: so
did I rather thinke it good, to bathe my hands in the blood
of mine owne Cozin, then permit him (by the Prince Flo-
rendos offence) to suffer open violence. This speake I
Madame, as being the Sonne to your Nephew Netrides,
whom long since his elder Brother disinherited, and bani-
shed him his Countrey to a little Castell, where at this
time he remaineth in good disposition. Now iudge which
of these euents is most admirable: that of your noble Son
Palmerin

Palmerin, of this which I haue now rehearsed. But may
it be (quoth the Emperesse) that my Nephew Netrides is
yet living: and can it be possible that thou art his Sonne?
Trust me Madame, said Frycoll, I haue told you truth,
and by Gods leaue, you shall haue more ample proofe ther-
of within these few daies.

Hereupon the Emperour, the Emperesse, Florendos
and Palmerin, with inexpressible reioycing, embraced Fry-
coll, now a little extolling their fortune, that such hardie
Knights were descended of their lineage. Then Frycoll re-
hearsed before them all, the three Combats hee had with
Palmerin, and what great hono^r he wonne at the Turney
in France, which report greatly contented the Prince Flo-
rendos, hearing the honourable Chivalrie of his Sonne.
now would he forget to ioyne therewith, his conquest on the
Mountaine Artixaria, with his Combats both in Bohe-
mia and Durace.

At these reports the Emperour somewhat amazed, said
before all his Lords, I beleue my Friends, that the mar-
vellous and rare fortunes, of these two Cozins, Palmerin
and Frycoll, with the strange aduentures they haue fini-
shed in their youth: promise greater matters in their fol-
lowing yeeres. Then an ancient Knight of Hungaria,
who was named Apolonio, said to the Emperour, how in
time past he had ben Page to the Father of Tarisus, by
which meane he knew Netrides right well if he might see
him. And if he be yet living, quoth he, in regard of his ma-
nifold princely vertues: the Realme of Hungaria neede
no better Gouernour, nor will the people themselves mis-
like of so good a change. Wherefore, may it so stand with
your highnes pleasure, to graunt me company becoming
the cause, I will doe my dutie in the search of him, & bring
him hither with me to the Court. Willingly the Emperour
consented thereto, and like order tooke the Prince Flo-
rendos, that Cardyna with her Brother and other Gentle-
men, should goe to the Mountaine of Olives, and enquire

for Gerard, Palmerins foster Father, Marcella his Wife, and Dyoseda their Daughter. Palmerin seeing all things sort to so good ende, falling on his knee before the Emperour and his Father, said. Seeing it hath pleased God, to make me knowne for your Sonne, I will not conceale a matter from you, which concerneth me very naxelie: and although it be of great importance, yet will I not further procede without your aduise. So discovered he all his leue-rall apparitions, while he continued with his supposed Father, wherby he was prouoked to goe seeke the Lady, who by fatall destiny was promised him: nor did he hide his troubles in her search, but therewith bewrayed that her name was Polynarda, Daughter to the Emperour of Almaigne, and his Wife by sollemne vowes passed betwene them. He declared mozeouer, how he travelled to find the Prince Tryneus, whom he lost on the Sea with the Princeesse of England, and them he would recouer againe, in respect of his faithfull promise to his Lady. Notwithstanding, quoth he, if you thinke it conuenient, I would gladly send to aduertise the Emperour and my Lady his Daughter, of my present good fortune, that his Maiesty may confirme our priuate agreement: because I doubt the Prince of France, whose Ambassadors haue been there to conferre on the matter, may otherwise preuent me of mine onely choise. In like manner, if Nerrides shall be found, to bee made King of Hungaria, and the Princeesse Armida to bee bestowed in marriage on Sir Frycoll, who is such a Knight in my iudgement, as well deserves one of the chiefest Ladies in the world.

So God helpe me my Sonne, quoth the Emperour, no reason were it to disappoint what thou hast so well contriued: for seeing things haue bene forepointed by fortune, more folly it is for men to contrarie them. And because I haue heretofore heard, that the Emperours Daughter is the flower and choise Ladie among all other, whose vertues challenge the man beyond compare in Chualrie: I will

will send mine Ambassadors to the Emperour, as well for the perfection of the marriage, as to comfort her in her despaires, with certaine assurance of our health and welfare, and so shall your intened trauell not be hindered. Notwithstanding, before you begin your tourney, you shall receiue the homage of all Princes and Lords of Grece, as their liege Lord and supreme Gouernour: which being doone, I will likewise take order for my Nephew Frycoll, so soone as his Father shall come to our Court. When calling for the Master of his horse, commandement was given for speedy dispatch of messengers to al parts. So leauing the Emperour busied in these affaires: Florendos and Palmerin went to the Quene, who causing them to sit downe by her, after she had very graciously welcommed them, said,

I pray ye tell me, which of vs three is most beholding to Fortune: the Father, the Mother or the Son: Doubtlesse, who so considereth the condition of our aduenture, wil find it such, as seldom hath the like been seene heretofore. And in sooth my Lord Florendos, the grievous torments I haue endured since the losse of my Sonne, and my great disialtie towards you by breach of my promise: I iudge may be equalled with the burthen of mine offence. Neuerthelesse, if you esteeme not your selfe satisfied, let your noble regard excuse what Nature hath perfected, which is, to endure much moze then as yet we haue done. Madam, answered Florendos, in time of ioy, remember not our passed misfortunes, but thinke what now is done, our happy starres haue graciously furthered and limited to this end, that my loyaltie, with the bounty and prowellie of our Son, would be laid open to euery iudgement. Here had the Prince occasion to rehearse his afflictions in loue, endured twentie yeres space and moze for her sake, which Palmerin hearing, either fearing to offend them, or induced by modest bashfulness, he went to his Sister the Princeesse Armida, whose thoughts he sounded by such subtilties and

THE HISTORIE

disimulations, as he found the effect of her desires, which was to enioy Sir Frycoll to her Husband. Hee not a little contented here with, confirmed her choise to bee commendable, sealing the assurance thereof, with an honourable report of his knightly deedes of Armes. Then the Emperour called for the Duke of Mecena and the Countie of Reifort, as also his principall Secretarie, whom hee commaunded to write to the Emperour of Almaigne, touching the marriage of the Princesse Polinarda and his sonne Palmerin, shadowing the secret agreement betweene themselves, and committed the rest to the discretion of the Ambassadors.

The Letters sealed with his great Signet, was delivered to them that had the charge of this message: who could not so speedilie depart from Constantinople, because the wind and weather was not navigable. Now had Palmerin promised Frycoll that he would speake to the Princesse his Sister, and sollemnlie resolve upon their marriage: wherefore (meeting with this earnest Lover) he thus laboured to please him. Trust me Cozin, I haue so surely imprinted your especiall generositie in my Sisters minde, as the characters can neuer be defaced: but remaine more perfect by your speedie marriage. Frycoll reuiued with these newes, as all pretenders of loue may well imagine: offered to kisse his hand, which Palmerin would not suffer, whereupon hee thus proceeded. Ah my Lord, how am I more and more indebted to you: right wise was he which said, that affabilitie and liberalitie, are continuall companions with noblenes and magnanimity. And though by all my seruices, I cannot deserue the honour you doe me in accepting me for your Brother: yet am I so faithfully bound yours, as the honors of my Father, nor loue of the Princesse your Sister, can separate me from your company, vntill you haue found your long desired Friend Trineus. And for this cause my Lord, I earnestly intreate you, to haue Apolonio towards my Father, for I will send him to the

OF PALMERIN D'OLIVA.

the place, where he shall be assured to find him. Palmerin accorded thereto immediatlie, and so labored with the Emperour, as the Letters were deliuered: and the oathes taken of all the Hungarians, they were sent home into their Countrey, with a Lieutenant appointed to gouerne them vntill the coming of Nettydes, to whom Frycoll wrote the truth of all his fortune, with earnest request of his speedie presence.

And to induce him to the greater hast, he feigned that many Princes laboured for the Crowne of Hungaria, and were in likelihood to obtaine it: all which was but to enioy the faire Princesse Armida. The same day Florendos sent to the King his Father at Macedon, that hee should send the chiefest states of his Realme against the day that Palmerin should be sworne the Prince of Greece.

CHAP. XXXIV.

How Cardyna the Gentlewoman attending on the Queene, accompanied with her Brother and diuers other Squires, brought Gerrard, his wife and daughter to the Court, and what entertainment Palmerin made them.



Cardyna, with those that were commaunded to keepe her company, in short time came to Gerrards house, whom she found sitting at dinner with his familie. The good man was at first amazed, seeing such courtly personages enter his house, a matter esteemed rare among the persons dwelling on the Mountaine:

THE HISTORIE

taine: but seeing they came in decent and modest sort, not proffering any discourtesie, he entertained the very friendly, when Cardyna taking him by the hand, said. Good Father, are you the man that is called Gerrard? I am the same quoth he, gentle Distresse. You are then the man, answered Cardyna, that I seeke, and therefore I pray thee tell me what thou didst with a Child, that twentie yeres and more since, thou foundest in swadling clothes vnder a Palme Tree on this Mountaine: for certaine I am that thou didst take him home with thee to thy house: Ah Distresse, quoth the good old Man, you haue kil'd my hart in remembering me of him, whom I loued dearer then any of mine owne. The infant whereof you speake, I found not farre hence vnder a Palme Tree, for which cause at his Baptisme I named him Palmerin. From that time forward, I nourished him as he had bene mine owne Sonne, till he came to tall stature, and as he grew in yeres, so did he in vertuous and noble qualities, which made him not a little beloued in these parts: for when he attended my cattell, hee tooke pleasure to course the Wolfe, Hart, Beare, Boze and Lyon, and oftentimes would kill them when him liked, which none of mine owne Children durst at any time aduenture.

Ah swete Distresse, when I remember his many seruices, the dutifull reuerence and loue he bare mee: I am readie to die with conceit of grieffe, that it was my ill hap so soon to lose him. Yet came not this misfortune alone, for mine eldest Sonne, who loued him as he had bene his owne Brother: immediately went after him, and yet could I neuer heare any tidings of them. Notwithstanding, Distresse, if you know of whence he was, I can shew you all the clothes wherein I found him. I shall be contented to see them, quoth Cardyna: but what will ye giue the partie that can tell ye where he is? Gerrard, at these words fell on his knee before her, and with the teares trickling downe his gray beard, said, By my troth Distresse, if it shall like you

OF PALMERIN DOLVA.

you to doe me so great a pleasure, of all my substance, I will giue ye the one halfe: or all my herd of Beastes, which ye saw feeding on the Mountaine as ye came, beside my continual service while I live. Gramercies Father, said Cardyna, but call to your Wife and Daughter, and then shall I tell ye newes that will content you. As for him, whose friendly Parents you were so long time, hee is now at Constantinople, & is the Sonne of Madame Griana daughter to the Emperour: who commaundeth you threets to come to the Court, that he may content ye for nourishing so well the noble young Prince. The old man exceeding ioyfull, without ordering his affaires, or appointing his Seruants their course of labour: sayde to his Wife and Dyosena his Daughter.

Make ye readie presently in your best garments, and let vs goe to that noble Gentleman: for all the gold in the world cannot make me stay, now I haue heard so happie tidings. The good woman and her daughter, trickt by themselves in their country fines, and taking therich swadling clothes, set forward to Constantinople so merrily, as sometimes did the foster Father of Paris, Alexander, his Wife, and their Daughter Pegasis, when they brought the Cradle and accoutrements of the infanti royall, to the Cittie of Troy, after he was known by his Father King Priam, and Quene Hecuba his Mother.

Palmerin being aduertised by one of the Ladies of honor attending on the Emperesse, that Cardyna had brought Gerrard: to prouoke greater contentation he would needes goe meete him, and so went downe into the Court, accompanied with many young Knights lately come to the Emperours service. Gerrard seeing this goodly troupe, among them all knew Palmerin perfectly, wherefore alighting from his Horse: and without giuing him in charge to any Page or Lackie, ran and fell downe at his feet, but Palmerin staying him in his armes, said. Father Gerrard and my deere friende, the God of Heauen bee eternally praised, in that

that by bringing me to the knowledge of my Parents: I haue the meane to satisfie your paine and trauaile for me, sauing my life in my yongest yeres, and nourishing me to the state of discretion.

Ah my Lord, quoth Gerrard, I thinke in all the world is no man so happie as my selfe, hauing defended from perill so noble a person, therefore needlesse is it to make offer of money for your nurture: in that I prize your golde and siluer lesse then dyasse, such is my content to see you so well. Palmerin likewise, whose match might not be found in courtesie and nobility of hart: louingly welcommed Marcella and her Daughter Dyosena, walking along with them vp into the Pallace, where in this sort he presented them to the Emperour. So here my good Lord, they that from mine infancie, with exceeding kindnes and loue nourished me: let me therefore intreate your maiestie so to conceiue of them, as their paines and charges may be sufficiently repaid. The Emperour taking great pleasure to behold them, said they shoulde continue in the Court with him, commaunding them to bee brought to his Daughters Chamber, who entertained them very graciously: but when they came to vnfold Palmerins little pack of clothes, hardly can you imagine the inwarde ioyes of the Mother. For Tolomestra well knew the Scarlet mantle, which her selfe had all embroydered with curious knots of Gold, and all the other prettie trinkets, saying, Doubtlesse Madame, it cannot be but that Palmerin is your Sonne: for well I know hee was wrapped in these clothes, when Cardyan caried him hence to the Mountaine. Then did Gerrard discourse befoze all the Ladies, in what manner hee founde yong Palmerin among the Trees: not forgetting to report euery thing, from that day till his departure without his knowledge.

Many swete smiles did the Quene intermedle with her forced teares, hearing the sundrie daungers her Sonne had endured: and for the great loue shee bare to Marcella, shee

he made her one of the Ladies of her Chamber, and gaue Dyosena a worthy dowrie to her marriage. As for Gerrard himselfe, the Emperour made him one of his chiefest Barons, and dubbed his Sonnes Knights, who procured afterward of hardy courage, as hereafter in the History you may perceiue. This done, the Emperour brought Florendos and Palmerin into his Treasure, saying, My friends, take, beare away, all is yours; dispose thereof as you please; furnish your selues with all needfull thinges against the day of my Daughters marriage. Giue bountifully to the poore knights, that they may likewise prepare themselves in readines, all which will redound to your perpetuall honour.

In soth my Lord, answered Florendos, it is against all equitie and reason, that during your life I should presume so farre: well worthy were I of the sharpest reprehension, to vsurpe that, which by right appertaines to him who gaue me life and honour. When the Emperour saw hee could not perswade them, hee sent a sumpter Horse laden with Gold, to the Prince Olorico and Frycoll: beside diuers other Jewels of inestimable value, that they might the better furnish their estate against the solemnitie of the Macedonian Prince. On which day, these two knights determined a Triumph at Armes for the loue of their friend and companion Palmerin, who the same day should be sworne Prince, and sole heire to the Empire. Upon this occasion, and by his highnes commandement, the Heralds were sent abroad to publish the Tourney, which should endure tenne daies together: with the excellencie of the prize to them, that should beare the honour of the Ioust each day. These disports so prouoked the Lords of Greece, as neither King, Duke, Countie, Baron or knight, that was able to mannage Horse and Armes, but repaired to Constantinople, in such troupes, as though a new world had been to be conquered.

CHAP. XXV.

How the Knight that Florendos sent to Macedon, reher-
sed to the King Primaleon the effect of his charge:
and how Palmerin entertained his Fathers Princes
and Knights.



Forédos having sent one of his knights
to Macedon, in very short time the
messenger arrived at a Castell of plea-
sure, where as then the King remay-
ned for his delight, with the Princesse
Arismena his Daughter, to expell such
contagious thoughts as daily troubled
thē, for the absēce of y^e Prince, of whom
they could understāde no tydings. The knight beeing
come into the Kings Chamber, where his Maestie satte
deuiling with his Daughter: and setting his knē to the
grounde, in this manner began his message. Right high
and mightie King, I bring you the very strangest tidings,
yet repleate with ioy and speciall comfort, whereof your
Maestie neuer heard the like. My Lord the Prince Flo-
rendos your Sonne, with humble dutie saluteth your ex-
cellencie, and the faire Princesse Arismena his Sister, cer-
tifying you, that the aduenturous knight Sir Palmerin,
euen he by whose meanes your health was recovered: in
his owne Son, begotten on the Princesse Grianza, Daugh-
ter to my Lord the Emperour, to whom hee is now betro-
wed, by the consent of all the Princes of the Empire, and
Sir Palmerin your Senile shall be Emperour, after the
decease of his noble Grandfather. The good King Prima-
león

león old and decrepite, was so surprized with these newes,
as he imagined he heard some fantastical illuding voice, ra-
ther then matter of trueth and certaintie: with which in-
ward oppression conceite, his weake estate vnable to sup-
port it selfe, being ouercome with ioy, doubt and suspicion,
as hardly could Arismena his Daughter keepe life in him,
so often hee swooned with hearing this reposte, yet at
length taking the knight by the hand, he sayde. My good
Friende, God I trust will blesse thee with honoz and pros-
peritie, for bringing me the tydings I haue long desired.
Now may I well saie, that neuer any Princes age was
more beautified with happines, then mine is, having my
Sonne allied in such an house, and another Sonne excel-
ling all the knights in the world. But if the Heauens
bouchsafe mee so much grace and fauour, that I may once
see him befoze I ende this life: it will be such sufficient con-
tent to mee, as then I force not though I liue no longer.
Then calling for one of his Secretaries, to reade the Let-
ters his Son had sent him, and having heard the contents
thereof: commaunded present dispatch of messengers, to
aduertise the Lords and nobilitie of his Realme, who like-
wise were so glad of these newes, as each one prepared
himselfe against the day appointed. The King having
written Letters to his Sonne, as also to Palmerin, whom
he intreated to come and see him: gaue them to the mes-
senger, and withall such an honozable gift for his paynes,
as well might content a greater personage. He returning
to Constantinople, effectually discharged his answer: and
Palmerin reading his Grandfathers Letters, vowed to ful-
fil his request, and afterward to follow the search of Try-
neus.

Now the day being come, when the Lords of Mace-
don should set forward to Constantinople: they came to
take theyr leaue of the King, who beganne to them in this
manner. Ah my good friends, God is my witnes, with
what good will I would beare you company, if my aged
yeeres

THE HISTORIE

yeeres did not forbid me: neuerthelesse, let me desire yee to behaue your selues in such sort, as if I were in person with ye, and honoꝝ Prince Palmerin no lesse then my selfe. So creating the Duke of Pontus his Lieutenant in this Embassage, because he was a braue and comely young Prince, bequeathed them to happy fortune in their iourney, commanding a knight to poste before them, that Palmerin might be first aduertised of their comming. On the same day as they should arrive at the Citie, Palmerin accompanied with the young King of Sparra, the most subtil and ingenious Prince of his time, (as well instructed in the manners and conditions of the auacient Kings his predecessors, especially imitating cautelous Vlisses) and diuers other young Princes and Knights, rode to meet the Lords of Macedon at the Gates of the Citie. There alighted all the Lords to kisse his hand, which he would not permit them to doe: but casting himselfe likewise from his Horse, embraced them all one after another. And mounting on horsebacke againe, entred the Citie, which was so plentifully stored with knights and Gentlemen against the triumph, as the Prince Olorico and Frycoll were appointed by the Emperour, to see the Lords lodged according to their estates, and to erect Tents and Pauillions without the Citie, where the rest of their traine might bee decently entertained.

This choise made the Emperour of these twaine in this matter, because in all his Court were not two more courteous Princes: beside, they were the only men in the world for affable and gracious entertaining strangers. All this busines ended, and Palmerin deuising with the Dux his Mother, Frycoll being in his compaignie, saw her enter the chamber, to whom he had vowed his seruice: able deuotions: wherfore seining some occasiō at the window where the Princes stood, he went and stood by her a pretty while, and at length entred into these speeches. Madame, as yet in al my life I neuer requested any thing of a

Ladie,

OF PALMERIN DOLIVA.

Lady, and now would I gladly moue one sute to you, (as to her that is the only Mistress of my heart) if I should not seeme overbold in this petition: assuring you, that hauing obtained this fauour of you, you shall not command any thing, how difficult so euer it be, but I will gladly enterprise it for your sake. Beleeue me, Sir Frycoll, answered the Princesse, you speake but reason, demaund then what you please, and you shall obtaine it: because I hold this opinion of you, that you will not request any thing, that shall in ought be prejudiciall to mine honoꝝ. A thousand thanks good Madame, said Frycoll, this helpe I hope hath beaded me good fortune, and this is my request: that you would so much honoꝝ me, as to permit me enter the Tourney vnder the name of your knight, because I would enterprise nothing but by your commaundment. And this (in my iudgement) is such an especial fauour, as I durst not presume to sollicite you withall, without the grant my of Lord your Brother Palmerin made mee: with this addition, that according to my deserts in the Tourney (if you can so fancy) to accept me as your Lord & Husband. With these words the Princesse was touched to the quicke, in that her desires were that way addicted; and her colour changing with her priuate conceit, shee shadewed so artificiallie as shee could, and with words fearefull and trembling, thus answered.

In sooth my Lord, neuer was I moued with any such sute heretofore: but my Brother may so farre commaund mee, as what liketh him I would be loth to gainsay. As for your demaund, to enter the field vnder the name of my knight, with right good will I graunt it: assuring you thereof with this I well, which henceforth so please you to weare, shall remaine as token of my loue to you. So taking a goodlie Emerald from her finger, kissing it, with great courtesie gaue it him. Now am I sure Madame, quoth Frycoll, to haue part of the prize, seeing I shall aduenture in your seruice: noꝝ is this Ring of so little value, but when in the

Combat

THE HISTORIE

Combat I shall beholdest, my forces wil be redoubled, and new life enter my fainting spirit. Moreover I dare saie, that neuer did the King of Giges bring him more honour, then this will to me: for this could not profit or aduantage him, but onely by being inuisible. On the contrary, I haue no pleasure but in your presence: nor shall I think my selfe at better ease, then when among Launces and Swords I may labour for your loue. Then entred the Emperesse, with other Ladies newly come to the Court to see the Iousts: which brake of their talke, wherefore taking leaue of each other, they departed the Chamber.

CHAP XXXVI.

How the Duke of Mecena and the Countie of Reifort, arriued in Allemaigne at the Emperors Court, and after theyr Ambassage dispatched: the Emperour sent backe with them to Constantinople, the Duke of Lorraine, and the Marquesse of Licena, as his Ambassadors.



Now is the day come, when the fleet appointed for the Embassage to Allemaigne, should depart, wherefore being furnished with all thinges necessary for their voyage, the wind and Sea likewise very seruiceable: they came to aduertise Palmerin therof, to knowe if hee would commaund the any further seruice.

like.

Palmerin walked with them to the Haven, & by the way gaue a Letter to the Duke of Mecena, saying. Worthie Duke,

OF APLMERIN DOLIVA.

Duke, present my humble dutie to my Ladie Polynarda, and giue her this Letter, whereof I pray you bring mee an answer. And pleased God that I might goe with ye, neuer could any voyage better please me: therefore let mee intreate your returne so sone as possible may be. The Duke promised to accomplish his desire, and taking leaue of each other, they went aboard, wherehoping their sailes, with a merite wind away they went, and arriued in Allmaigne soner then suspected. When they were come on shore, they sent a knight befoze to the Emperour, that he might bee acquainted with their coming: yet could not his Maestie but maruaile at this Ambassage, because in all his time he neuer had the like, and therefore thought this strange occasion would sort to as strange an end. At length, to doe them the greater honour, he sent all his knights and Gentlemen to receiue them, who conducted the Duke of Mecena and the Countie of Reifort to the Pallace, and afterward to the presence of the Emperour. When the Duke entred the Chamber, hee saluted his Maestie with great reuerence, yet not kissing his hand, because hee came from as great a state as he was: afterward hee beganne in this manner.

Rightie and redoubted Monarch of Allmaigne, the most high and excellent Emperour of Constantinople my Master, vnderstanding the losse of your Sonne Tryneus, greeteth you with health and continuall happines. Giuing you to vnderstand, that within these few daies such good fortune hath befallen him, as in all his life time hee neuer had the like. And albeit in his last warre with the Turkes and Mores, he lost both Homes, Nephewes, and many great Lords of his kindred, and since that time hath bene troubled, with the hard hap of his daughter Griana Quene of Hungaria, and the suddaine death of her Husband the King: yet hath his Maestie changed all these griefes into ioy, by knowledge of the good knight Sir Palmerin, whose renowned liues as well in Athenes as in Christendome, being

THE HISTORIE

being now found Sonne to my Lord the Emperour, and therefore created sole heire to the Empire. And the noble Prince Palmerin on his behalfe, humbly saluteth your imperiall Maiestie, being the Lord to whom he is most affected in seruice, so that to find out your Sonne Tryneus and the faire Agriola Daughter to the King of England, who two yeeres since and more he lost in the East seas: he abandoned all honorable preferments, untill his trauel shall be finished, and he hath brought him hither before your highnes. And hauing already searched in many Kingdomes, at length he understood that they were liuing and in health, also that himself should in the end recouer them: he thought it necessarie to acquaint you herewith, because hee doubted of your extreame sorrow and heauines. The Emperour assented to heare the good fortune of Palmerin, as also the losse of his Son Tryneus, could not subdue his passions, which moued the teares to trickle downe his cheekes, with conceit of ioy and griefe together: yet sheweing his alteration so well as he could, thus replied. In truth my Lord Ambassadeur, I alwaies imagined by Palmerins worthy actions, that he was descended of noble or royal linage, and greatly it contenteth mee, that he so happily hath found the house of his descent: expelling altogether (considering his promise and protestesse) what hath been long imprinted in my heart, concerning the losse of my Son Tryneus. For so fauourable are the heauens to Palmerin in all his enterprises and admirable aduentures: as one may imagin, that deedes of honor & account are reserved only for him, chiefly the recouery of my Sonne, which I hope he will effectually bring to passe. And trust me, not without great and sufficient reason, doth the Emperour your Master repute himselfe happy: this onely good fortune being of force enough, to discharge his minde of all sorowes and cares that former occasions moued him withal. For know I how to recompence his princelie kindnes, honouring me with so good and happy tidings: but that it may please him to accept.

OF PALMERIN D'OLIVA.

cept of me hereafter, as his louing Brother and faithfull Friend. No other thing my Lord (quoth the Duke) doth his Maiestie desire, and to begin this amitie and alliaunce betwene you, he requesteth, that if his Sonne Palmerin hath heretofore found such fauour in your eyes, you would now confirme it, by giuing him to wife the Princesse Polynarda your Daughter, whom he will not marry, until he hath brought home your Sonne Tryneus. As for the other conuentions of the marriage, these letters shall certifie you: so kissing them, he deliuered them with very great reuerence.

And her shall hee haue with right good will, said the Emperour, for a fitter Husband can she not haue: I think likewise her selfe will consent thereto, for the good opinion she had of him while he remained in our Court. But because I will not displease the King of France, who in like manner requested her for his Sonne and heire: I will conferre with the estates of the Empire, and then deliuer you certaine answer. So the Ambassadors withdrew themselves to their lodgings, and the Emperour caused the Letters to be read before all his Princes and Lordes, who could no way mislike of this marriage: and therefore great ioy was made through the Empire, in hope the Prince Tryneus should soone be recouered. These ioyfull newes soone spreading throug the Court, at length were brought to the Princesse Polynarda in her Chamber: who not able to conceale her sudden ioy, ranne to Brionella, saying. Sweete Friend, now mayst thou reioyce with me, in that our loues are now assured vs, whereof before wee vtterlie despaired. Ah my Brionella, Heauen hath now confirmed our fortunate successe, in that my Palmerin is found to be the Emperours Sonne of Constantinople: whereof he hath certified my Lord and Father by his Embassage, and how Palmerin hath heard tidings of my Brother Tryneus, whom thoult he will bring home againe, yet not without thy Prolocmie I hope. Therefore (my onely copartner in

loue and feare) let vs abandon all griefe and sorrow, which greatly may preiudice our health and welfare: and now dispose our selues to a contented resolution of life, attending our long desired fortune. God graunt it may bee so, quoth Bryonella, yet my minde perswades me, that we shall not see them so soone as you wane. The Emperour hauing conferred with the Lords of Allemaigne, who very well allowed the marriage of his daughter with Palmerin: determined to send to the Emperour of Constantinople Ambassadors, for perfect confirmation of the marriage. And by generall consent, the Duke of Lorraine and the Marquesse of Licena, were chosen for this present Embassage. Which being done, the Emperour went to the Emperesse Chamber, and sent for his daughter Polynarda, who was so ioyfull of these happy newes, as she could scant imagine how to dissemble her content, when shee should come in her fathers presence, yet shadowing it from any open suspect, after shee had saluted her father with great reuerence, the Emperour thus spake.

Daughter, you haue hether to refused so many noble offers, as hardlie can I permit to moue you with any other: yet once more wil I trie you againe, in hope you wil stand vpon no more refusals, but ioyne with me in opinion, as beyond all other best becoming you. The man of whom I speake, is noble Palmerin, of whose honorable behaviour you haue some knowledge: and for no other cause hath the Emperour sent his Ambassadors, aduise your selfe then what you answer, for all our nobility allow the match, and thereto haue generally subscribed their consent. The Princesse couering her inward ioy with modest bashfulness, thus answered.

If heretofore my good Lord, I excused my obaysaunce to your commaundement, especially for taking a husband, it was onely for the promise I made to my Brother Tryneus: but now, seeing it is your pleasure, and the good liking of all the estates, as also that the marriage shall not be

solemnized till my Brothers presence: I will not disobey your command, assuring your Maestie, that more content am I to match with him, then any other you named heretofore. And this one speciall cause, that hee laboureth to bring home my noble Brother, which Heauen graunt hee may: otherwise can I not marry, without very great impeach to mine honour.

The Emperour well perceined by the grace of her answer, and her countenance now nothing sad or melancholly: that she was nothing offended with this motion, wherefore he said. Happy may I count my selfe faire daughter, that among all the Christian Princes you haue chosen such a Husband: therefore apparell your selfe to morrow in the best sort you may, for then shall my Lords the Ambassadors see you. So departed the Princesse to her Chamber, and no more speeches were vsed till the next day, when the Emperour sent for the Ambassadors of Constantinople: and in the presence of the principall estate of the Empire, ratified the marriage betwene Palmerin & his daughter. And for further confirmation thereof, promised to send his owne Ambassadors with them, to satisfie (on his behalfe) the Emperour, Florendos and Palmerin. For which exceeding gentlenes, the Duke of Mecena (in the Emperours name) thanked his Maestie, earnestlie intreating him to dispatch them thence so soone as might bee, because their charge was to returne with all possible speed. This resolution absolutely set downe, the Emperour (for the greater honoz) caused them to dine with him at his owne Table, & grace being said by the Lord Almicer, the Duke of Mecena desired his Maestie, that hee might see the Princesse Polynarda: whereof hee made promise so soone as Dinner was done, when taking the Duke of Mecena by the one hand, and the Countie of Reifort by the other, brought the to the Emperesse Chamber, where they found the Princes in such sumptuous ornaments, and accompanied with such rare grace and exquisite beautie, as they

iudged her rather an Angell then any earthly creature, And greatly was the Duke abashed at such a singular spectacle, not knowing how to frame his opinions: but hauing humbly saluted the Emperesse, came to the Princeesse, and on his knee reuerently kist her hand, with these speeches. Let it not displease you faire Madam, that I vse this honorable outie to you: for I doe it in this respect, as to the gracious Ladie and Emperesse (hereafter) of Constantinople.

By this meane hee secretly conueied Palmerins Letter into her hand, for which the Princeesse gaue him many deuout thanks, which were coupled with such maiestie call gestures, as neither Nero or Galba were done the like, no not by Constantine himselfe to the Pope. And the Dukes words had raised a swete blush in her cheekes, yet could she with such choyle answers excuse the same, as gaue greater countenance to all her behauiour. Then turned the Duke to the Emperour, and smiling, said; Trust me my Lord, now doe I verilie beleue what hath heeretofore been told me of the Prince Palmerin, that hee is an especiall Iudge of the beauty of Ladies, for in mine opinion he hath chosen one without a second: and of her may truly be affirmed, what the Poets described of Helena, learning her the Goddess of beauty. With this rare Princeesse to be matched an Husband so famous, well may be said: the couple to be without compare, for the faire formed Paris may not be equalled with Palmerin. So the Ambassadors departing, the Princeesse withdrew her selfe to her Chamber, where reading her friends Letter, her ioyes and pleasures redoubled, because she might now boldlie credite her fortune.

And before she would forget the inuention her spirit offered, shee presently wrote an answer: earnestlie intreating him to hasten his return; to abate her languishing desires, which now made her life but a shadow of death. Hauing close sealed her Letter, shee sent it to the Duke by one

one of her most trustie Ladies, with diuers other rich gifts and presents. The Duke of Lorraine and his company readie, departed thence with the Ambassadors, and winde and weather seruing so well, they arriued at Constantinople the day before Florendos his nuptials. Jewes being brought heereof to the Court, Palmerin accompanied with many Princes and Knights, went to the Hauen, and at the landing of the Ambassadors, Palmerin embraced the Duke of Lorraine, and the Marquesse of Licena: and so riding to the Pallace, beguiled the time with diuers discourses, where among, the Duke of Lorraine thus spake. Sir Palmerin, I alwaies did imagine, that those strange adventures atchiued by you, during the obscurity of your younger yeeres, would in the end reueale your honorable parentage, and make your name for ever immortal: & were the Prince Tryneus with you now, for the very best condition in the world would I not leaue your company. Gentle Duke, answered Palmerin, if I did not perswade myselfe, how greatly I should comfort your mind, by recovering your Prince Tryneus, I should account my life so unhappie, as presently I would desire my death. God graunt, quoth the Duke, that you may finde him againe, for that will bee the greatest god that euer came to our Empire: considering the vertues, magnanimitie and speciall chivalrie, which is as currant in our yong Princes as in any other. And thus they spent the time till they came to the Pallace, where the Duke of Lorraine after hee had saluted the Emperour and the Princes, deliuered the message committed to his charge. Wherewith Palmerin was not a little pleased, considering what he had read in his Ladies Letter, which discovered the sorowes shee endured for his absence: but being assured of her firme loyalty, as also that she was now promised him in marriage, his cares were the lesse, commaunding the Duke to be lodged nere his owne Chamber, that he might the better confer with him of his Distresse, whom he loued as deere as his owne life.

CHAP XXXVII.

How after the Prince Florendos and Queene Grianā were espoused together, Palmerin was sworne Prince and heire of Greece and Macedon, by the consent of the Lords of the Empire and the Reelme.



The Ambassadors of Alimaigne being now come, the Emperour was advertised thereof, and considering that the Princes of Thrace and Macedon had expected their presence for the space of five daies: it was appointed, that on the morrow the Prince Florendos and Grianā should be married. And the day being come, at this long desired wedding, she was clothed in such rich and costly vestures, as though she had bene still a Virginitie. And heere to set downe the sumptuous vestures of her, her Husband, the Emperour, the Emperesse, with diuers other Lords, Ladies and Gentlewomen, also the solemnitie and ceremonies, both at the Church and at the Pallace: would waiste a great deale of time in vaine, and without any pleasure or profit to the Readers, and therefore I will let it passe vnder your conceit, and speake of such things as are most needefull.

After that the Prince Florendos and Grianā were espoused by the Patriarch of Constantinople, the whole traine returned to the Pallace, where before the Gate was erected a goodly Theater, hanged round about with cloth of Golde, and therein were set many Chayres and Canopies of estate. There was the Prince Palmerin placed in the

the chiefeest seate, the Emperour and Florendos on the one side, and the Emperesse and Grianā on the other: then was Palmerin sworne Prince of Greece, with all the obseruations in such causes accustomed, by all the Lords of the Empire, from the Emperour himselfe to the very meanest Gentleman. In like sort did the estates of Macedon, his Father Florendos first beginning, the Duke of Pontus next, and in the selfe same order as the Imperialistes had done. This done, the Tables were covered, and all the Princes placed according to their dignities: the Emperour and Emperesse at the chiefeest, the new married couple at the second, and the Prince Palmerin at the third: so consequently the Kings, Princes, Dukes, Marquesses, Counties, and all the rest in order. As for the magnificence of y^e service, the royall order obserued, the Triumphes, Homeries, Masques, and dauncing: would but fill paper with needefull reports, in that your iudgments can conceiue thereof sufficiently. But the Tables being withdrawne, the noble Gallants went and Armed themselves, and entred the field which was appointed without the Cittie, and furnished with Scaffolds and standings for the Lords and Ladies, where the afternoon was spent bravely at Tilt and Tourney, with daintie chivalrie performed by Fryssoll, Olorico, the King of Sparta, the Duke of Pontus & many other Knights. When night was come, and Supper ended, the Bride and Bridegrome were honorably brought to their Chamber, and Florendos being alone with his Lady, thus beganne. Ah sweete Madam, how many sorrowes haue I endured, in expectation of this long desired houre: but hauing at length compassed my wish, I hold my selfe sufficiently satisfied: giuing credite to the ancient prouerbe, That true loue neuer wanteth his reward, and that which I thought would haue bene my death, hath now returned me greatest honor and profit. In sooth my Lord, answered y^e Queene, I was neuer more perswaded of your loyalty: but where necessitie ruleth, reason hath no place. And if by the exterior action

I haue bene disloyall to you: yet my hart, which first of all I gaue to you, neuer diminished in will to loue you firmly. For which Tarisus very often reproued mee, not withstanding in the ende, and by the sufferance of God I thinke, he receiued the reward, that the vsurper of another mans right deserueth. But why should we (my Lord) call now to remembrance things past, or remember matters which be of nothing but heauinesse: it is for you to excuse me, and for my selfe to loue and honour you. All the points of theyr former Diuorce debated betwene them, to such effecte theyr pleasures, sorted in the ende, as that night thee conceived with a daughter, which proued to be beyond all other in beauty. On the morrow the Prince Palmerin entered the City Royall, because this day hee desired to Ioust. Before him went the chiefest Princes of Greece on foot, and six Trumpets to make him way: hee managing his Horse with such lofty Voltages, as every one delighted to behold him.

After he had done his reuerence to the Emperour, he gaue the spurres to his Horse to encounter Frycoll: But when they came to meete, Frycoll threw by his Lance, and would not touch him. The like did the Prince Olorico, and diuers other Knights: whereat Palmerin somewhat angry, strooke his Lance into the ground, and brake it, and causing himselfe to be vnarmed, went by to the Emperour in his standing, to see the Pastime of the other Knights: and he was no sooner come, but the Emperour thus spake vnto him.

Be not offended my Sonne, because you haue vnarmed your selfe without tryall of the Ioust: for the Knights haue done as best beloued them, not to aduenture on their Lord and Master. But if you would so faine haue some sporte with them, you must heereafter disguise your selfe from being known: otherwise I see you shall but lose your labour. When Palmerin heard these words, to the end hee might somewhat delight the Emperour and the Ladies, especially, such as neuer saw his behauiour in Chualtrie: hee was determined the last day of the Tryumphe, to come suddenly

ly among them, and to be Armed in such sorte as none should knowe him. In bryefe, now is the last day come, and the Emperour vnderstanding that Palmerin would enter the City disguised, went to his standing, and Palmerin secretly entring his Chamber, found there a white Armour, such as the yong Knights was accustomed to weare, which his Dwarf had there prouided for him: Armed himselfe presently therewith, and mounted on a Horse of the same colour, entered the fieldes on the Assailants side, because hee had heard, that this day the King of Sparta would encounter the Duke of Pontus, Frycoll, Olorico, and others of the moste gentle Knights in the Companie. The Emperour knewe Palmerin among all the rest, and said to Florendos: What thinke you (Sonne) of the white Knight? Do you know him? So my Lord, quoth the Prince, I know not what he is: but me thought he entred with a iolly countenance: It now remaines to know what he can do.

At the encounter, Palmerin vnhorsed the Prince Olorico, after ward the Duke of Pontus, and the other Knights companie: then hauing broken his Lance, the Emperour sent him another by a Squire, willing him (for his sake) to imploy it as hee had done the other; but hee would make no answer because he feared to be knowne. Now was Frycoll much offended at the Prince Oloricos misfortune, so heerefore he would reuenge his friends cause: but the King of Sparta, esteemed a hardy & approved knight, kept betwene him, and being cast off from his Horse, was so hurt with the fall, as he was carryed forth of the fieldes to his Chamber.

When Frycoll gaue the spurres to his Horse, and encountered Palmerin with such puissance, as he made him lose his Styrrops, and had he not caught fast holde about his Horse necke, he had fallen to the ground: but Frycoll, his fortune was so bad, as his Horse stumbling fell downe, and his master vnder him, whereupon the Emperour saide to Florendos, that the knight in white Armour was his Sonne Palmerin. In soth my Lord (quoth the Prince) his fortune is good

good if it be her, and well may he be esteemed the worthyest in the company. The Duke of Lorraine hearing their talke, said.

Peruaile not my Lord that Prince Palmerin hath so good successe, for in Allemaigne haue I seene him doo much more then this, and so much, as my Lord the Emperour hath beene constrained to commaunde them gine ouer. Palmerin seeing himselfe Maister of the fiede, departed as secretly as he came thither, and so did the Emperour, Elorendos, Grian, and all the other Ladies, among whom the yong Princesse Armida was most pensive for her friends misfortune, so that by her countenance her inward affections might easily be discerned. But on the morrowe, when Palmerin sent for all the Knights of name with whom he had fought, and euery one knew that hee wonne the prize of the last daies Tryumph: the sorrow of the Princesse Armida was conuerted into pleasure, reputing it an honor to her Knight to be honored by her Brother.

When the Emperour understood that Palmerin was iesting with the Knights, he came into the Hall, and taking him by the hande, merrily sayde. See heere my friends the white Knight, whom you all were so desirous to know, but if you finde your selues agreed with him, you must laie the blame on mee: for I was the onely cause of this enterprise, to the ende that hauing made open proofe of himselfe, you all might witnesse his valour and bounty: who after my deceasse must be your Lord and Governour.

Now were all the Knights well contented againe, especially the Prince Olorico & Fryfoll: who thought hee was som what brused with his Horse falling on him, came and embraced Palmerin, saying. In sooth my Lord, the strength of your arme and Launce yesterday, hath giuen vs good experience of your vertue: yet our desire to reuenge our companions foyle was such, as had you bene
our

our Father we shoulde not haue knowne yee. It may be (said Palmerin) that yee made no reckoning of the Knight, who handled ye in this rough manner: or that you thought him not worthy to beare a Launce, because you refused to fought with him the other day. A kinde floute (quoth Fryfoll, perceiuing how Palmerin iested) and queintly deliuered, is this your recompence to the Knights that friendly spared you? If I had knowne so much before, I shoulde haue cryed quittance with you before wee parted. These wordes Fryfoll spake in such sort, as Palmerin imagined he was in choller: wherefore he thus answered. God better I pray you excuse mee, if in doing my deuoir I haue offended yee: when you please I will doe penance for it, if it be but to please her, who cannot hide her good will towards you.

Whereupon all the three friends embraced together, taking leaue of each other till the next morning, when a new Tourney was bequame againe, and continued for five daies together: the honor whereof (to make short) happened to Fryfoll, untill the last day, when a strange Knight came into the fiede, and brought one with him resembling a Gyant in stature, who with a Turkish Bow and enuened arrowes, slew and wounded very many. So that Palmerin seeing the spoyle of his friends, was constrained to goe Arme himselfe, and desying the Gyant, euerraine both him and the Knight that brought him. Some haue reported this Giant to be a Monster, in forme of the Centaures that encountered Hercules at the nuptials of Hippodamia: but such ridiculous follies are not here to be inserted, and though the Spaniard in his History affirme it, yet carries it no likelihood, wherefore leaving such impertinent discourses, let vs proceede as occasion doth lead
us.

CHAP.

CHAP. XXXVII.

How the aged Knight Apolonio, found Netrydes Fa-
ther to Fryfoll, and brought him to Constantinople,
where he was made Gouvernour generall of Hungaria:
and how Fryfoll espoused the Princeſſe Arimida.



Polonio hauing receiued Fryfolls Let-
ters, and a breſe direction for his iour-
ney, to y place where he ſhould find his
father Netrydes: followed his intent
with ſuch diligence, as he came to the
Caſtell where he remained, and found
him ſitting at the Gate, being newly re-
turned from hunting in the Forreſt. So

ſooner had Apolonio beheld him, but hee preſently knew
him, wherefore feigning that hee and his company were
Knights errant: ſaluted him, and demaunded if he would
giue them entertainmēt for that night, becauſe they knew
no place of lodging nere at hand. Netrydes, who was euer
of a moſt noble minde, welcommed them very courteouſly,
commaunding their Hozſes to the ſtable, and themſelues
to be honozable feaſted at Supper. All ſupper time, Netry-
des very earneſtly eyed Apolonio, perſwading himſelfe
that he had ſene him before: and Apolonio likewiſe well
regarded Netrydes, neither daring to queſtion with other
for feare of miſconceit.

In the end, Apolonio thorowly reſolued that this was
the man he ſought, and ſeing two yong Gentlemen ſitting
at the Table by him, he thus beganne. I pray you ſir tell
me, are theſe two Gentlemen your ſons? They are ſay-
answered

answered Netrydes. Haue you not one moze (q. Apolonio)
elder then theſe? When Netrydes remembred his Sonne
Fryfoll, whom he iudged to be dead becauſe of his long ab-
ſence: wherefore breathing forth a very great ſighe, ſaide.
In trueth ſir, I know not whether I haue or no, for it
is long ſince I loſt mine eldeſt Son by great miſfortune,
and hetherto hearde no tydings of him, nor know I whe-
ther he is liuing or dead. By what miſhappe I pray you
ſir, quoth Apolonio, did you loſe him? Whereupon Ne-
trydes diſcoursed the whole circumſtaunce, in ſelfe ſame
manner as Fryfoll had reported: whereby he was now aſ-
ſured that Fryfoll was his Sonne, and ſo without diſſem-
bling any longer, ſaid. I can reſolue ye my Lord, that he is
yet liuing, and in very good diſpoſition. O my God (answe-
red Netrydes) if theſe newes may be true, then am I the
moſt happie Knight in the world. And ſo are you, ſaide A-
polonio, for he is liuing, recovered of the diſeaſe hee had
when he departed from you, and is now one of the moſt e-
ſteemed Knights in all Greece: ſo that hauing deliuered the
Queene Griana from priſon, which victory he obtained in
the company of noble Palmerin, againſt y two ſephewes
of King Ferisus, he is ſounde to bee neere kinsman to the
Empreſſe. For which cauſe he hath ſent, and I am expreſ-
ly hither come, to bring you with me to Constantinople, to
the end you may receiue your owne by right, I meane the
principall regiment in the Realme of Hungaria. Ah hea-
uens, answered Netrydes, for euer be your prayſes, in re-
uealing the wrong my Brother did, when cauſeleſſe he ha-
niſhed me my native Countrey: but that I may be reſol-
ued in one doubt, I pray ye tell me, were ye not ſometime
of my Brothers Court? Yes trulie answered Apolonio,
and to your father I ſerued as a Page in his Chamber:
now in reſpect of the manifolde courteſies I receiued at
your hands, for euer I bowed my ſelfe to doe you any ſer-
uice, deſiring you with all poſſible ſpede to haſten your de-
parture: for I greatly doubt we ſhall not elſe finde your
Sonne

Sonne at the Court, because hee determineth to iourney with Palmerin, in the search of Trincus the Emperours Sonne of Allemaigne.

Hereupon Nettrydes leauing the charge of his house to one of his Cozins, departed with his Wife and his two Sonnes: making such speedy dispatch in their iourney, as not many daies after the Triumphe, they arrived at Constantinople. Which when Frycoll vnderstood, hee went to meete them: beeing accompanied (for the greater honoꝝ to his Parents) with Palmerin, the King of Sparta, and many other yong Princes. There were many salutations and welcomes, giuen with great ioy by the Sonne to his Father, Mother, and Brethren, and by the Parents likewise to their Sonne, with such exceeding signes of loue, as you can better conceiue then I expresse. After all these courteous grætings, they went to the Court, where began a fresh occasion of ioy, betwene the Emperesse and her Nephew Nettrydes: thee then embracing him in her armes, thus spake.

Ah my noble Nephew, how haue the Heauens blessed me with speciall fauour, in suffering me before my death to see my charest friends, whom I was out of all hope to behold againe: especially you, whose long absence from your Countrey, hath rather deliuered imaginations of your death then life. Neuerthelesse, it is the prouidence of the highest, that after all y troubles you suffered in your youth, you might receiue the recompence in your age, by the knightly honoꝝ and bountie of your linage. In sooth Madame sayd Nettrydes, not so pleasant to me is high preferment, as that I liue to see my Sonne againe, for hauing contented my selfe in my little Castell, with a life free from offence and solitarie, I did account it to excede all other: but now seeing in my declining yeeres, the God of Heauen hath thought good that I might profit his people, the thought were base and abied in me to make refusal. So long were they deuising on these and other matters, as the good

god night being giuen on all sides, the Emperour caused these new come friends to be conducted to their lodgings.

But on the morrow, when Palmerin came to bid the Emperour good morrow, he thus beganne. You know my Lord, that a Common wealth without a head and Gouernour, (as for example) is the Realme of Hungaria, cannot long endure without seditious tumults or rebellion: wherefore, vnder your Maiesties reuerende regarde, I thinke it expedient that my Sister Armida should be giuen in marriage to Sir Frycoll, because in nobilitie of minde and perfection of iudgment, hardly may so good a knight be found, nor the enjoy a fitter husband, and so may the Realme by neallie descend, from Nettrydes now aged, to his noble Sonne.

The Emperour liked well of this aduise, wherefore the same day were Frycoll and the Princesse Armida espoused together: to the good liking of all, but especially of the louers themselves, whose secret desires were now effectually requited. After the feast was ended, Nettrydes instituted Gouernour of Hungaria, departed with his Wife and Sons to his Kingdome: where he was receiued very honourably by his Subiects, who had not forgot their former loue to him: and the vnaturall dealing of their King his deceas'd Mother.

CHAP. XXXIX.

How Palmerin tooke his leaue of the Emperour, his father and mother, to follow the search of the Prince Trineus,



Certaine daies after the solemnitie of this honorable marriage was ended betwene Frycoll and the yong Princeesse of Hungaria. Nitrides likewise gone to his seate of government: all the Lordes and Princes of the Empire, except such as continually abode in the Emperours Court, returned to their owne homes, the like did all the strange knights that came to the Tryumphe, except the King of Sparta and the Lords of Macedon. Wherefore Palmerin now rememb'ring his promise to his Ladie, and how long he had staid stothfull at Constantinople, determined to depart, and vnderstanding that his father was with the Emperour, came to them with these speeches.

My gracious Lords, it is now thre moneths and more that I haue remained heere by your commaundement, contrary to the promise that I made my Ladie: wherefore (by your leaue) I am now determined to departe hence, before the Duke of Lorayne returne backe againe, that he may assure my Lord the Emperour that I am gone to seeke my friends. My Sonne, quoth the Emperour, unwilling am I thou shouldst leaue vs so soone, but if the matter may not be contraried, in respect you are bound to her by faithfull promise, who aboue all other deserueth loyalty
all

all service: I neither may or will gaine say you, but intreate your returne so soone as may be: You shall therefore take with you a good company of knights, who may prevent any sinister occasions, which your trauell in strange Countreies happily may offer: that my heart enjoying life by your presence, may once more see you before my date be expired.

I beseech you my Lord, answered Palmerin, grieve not your selfe by my absence, which shall not be long I hope, neither will the multitude of knights availe in my enterprise, for more by fortune then by force of Armes must the aduenture be finished. Doethen as you thinke good answered the Emperour, in meane time I will cause provision for your frame. Palmerin hauing now licence to depart, perswaded Frycoll so earnestly as hee could, to abide at Constantinople, as wel for the loue he bare his Sister Armida, as because he was loth to part the new married couple: but all the circumstances he could vie, might not perswade him, for his religious vow to his friende, exceeded his affection to the Princeesse, so that for a flat resolution, he answered, that nothing but death should separate their company. Palmerin seeing Frycoll continue in his former amitie, and that the desire which conquers all men, could not preuaile in his noble minde: reioysed greatly thereat, determining to recompence his princely kindnes, if fortune did not contrary him in this enterprised iourney. And fearing least any new occasion should arise to delay this intent, dispatched presently his Letters to the Emperour of Allemagne, and his Ladie Polynarda, honoring his highnesse Ambassadors with many sumptuous gifts. Hauing now ordered all his affaires, and euery one being ready to mount on horsebacke, hee came to bid the Ducene his Mother farewell: for well he knew, that if there could any way hinder his departure, his iourney should be soone prevented. The Ducene with motherlie love embracing her Sonne, said, Ah my Sonne, hast thou been so short a time

with me, and wilt thou now leaue mee: trust mee it is a point of great vngentlenes: to deale so hardly with thy mother: but seeing the Emperour and my Lord haue giuen their consent, my gaine say will be to little purpose: And nothing would it auaille me to set before thine eyes: the inconstancie of fortune, her sleights and trecherie; commonlie against great persons: when they are in the way to prosperitie, honor and renowne. Therefore my Sonne, I commit thee to the protection of Heauen desiring thee to regard mine honor, which by thee ought to be defended, and now may runne in danger of common reproch, in that the vulgar sort iudge after their owne humours, not according to the qualitie and estimation of vertue. For this cause let thy returne be the sooner, as thou tenderest my life and thine owne good.

All which Palmerin promised to doe, and so comming downe into the Court, found there the Emperour and his father mounted on horsebacke, who bare him companie two miles from the Citie: where after many courtesies betwene them, the Emperour and Florendos returned to the Court againe, where the Duke of Lorraine staied their comming, when taking his leaue likewise, went aboard, and sailed with so good a winde, as in short time hee arrived in Allmaigne, where he was graciously welcomed by the Emperour, and especially by the Princesse his Daughter, to whom hee reported the honourable behauior of Palmerin, and how he was surnamed Prince of Greece and Macedon. Hereof was she so ioyfull, as neuer could she be satisfied with the discourse, making many demaunds to the Duke, as well of the Tryumpes, Tourney and displays, as also of the mariage celebrated at Constantinople: whereto the Duke returned such fit answers, as nothing wanted to extoll her friends honor, yet with any occasion of calouzie to the Princesse, whereto amorous Ladies are commonly subiect.

But now returning where wee left before, you must note

note, that Palmerin being departed the Confinnes of the Empire, entered his Fathers Realme, where in euery Citie he was entertained with great triumphing: especially in the Citie of Hermida, where the Perchaunt dwelt that was Palmerins Maister, for whom hee sent, but he was aduertised by his Wife, that her Husbande was gone to the Sea, and his two Sonnes with him, wherfore he gaue her many Rich gifts, and Letters for his Masters free enfranchise and libertie. At his departure from thence, he came to the place where Vrbaniillo his Dwarfie was bozne, whose father was there liuing a poore auncient knight, and his sister of as tall stature as Vrbaniillo, whome Palmerin (at her Brothers request) sent to Constantinople, to his Mother. And for the honor of the Order his Dwarfes father had receiued, hee gaue him the Village wherein he dwelt, and in the presence of the Macedonians put him in possession thereof, who not a little commended the discrete and liberal minde of the Prince.

From thence he journeyed to the chiefe Citie of Macedon, where remained the Aged King his Grandfather: but how the Cittizens entertained him, and what honourable Tryumpes were made at the Court, I list not here sette downe, because it would bee more tedious then beneficiall. As for his Aunte the Princesse Arismena, shee at his comming met him in the Wake court, with all her Ladies: and as Palmerin fell on his knee before her, to kisse her hande, shee staied him in her armes, saying: God forbid Syr Palmerin, that the knight of greatest fame in the Worlde, should reuerence so simple a Damosell as my selfe: but rather am bound by duty to honor you, as the man by whose especiall vertues, our Linage is this day crowned with perpetuall memorie.

Maye Aunte (answered Palmerin) if before I knew you to bee my Fathers Syster, I deuoted my selfe to your seruice, with much more Affection shall I desire to followe it now: wherefore suffer me (swete Madaine) to kisse your hand,

hand, as being the Ladie to whom I rest continually bounden. I beseech you my Lord (quoth the Princesse) to pardon me, for neuer shall a Macedonian Maiden be so reprovued, but that she well knowes her duty to her betters. At these speeches came the King of Sparta, the Dukes of Pontus, and Meccena, and the Prince Eustace, whome the Princesse welcommed with exceeding honour. After all courtesies ended, Palmerin saide,

I vnderstand Sadaine, that the King your Father is crazed and sickly: if it be so I am very sorrie, I pray you therefore let vs god see how his Maiestie fareth. When you please my Lorde (quoth the Princesse) for I thinke if heretofore he receyued health by you, Fortune may at this time afforde the like: and yet (as I haue read) there is no remedie for troublesome Age, but onely death it selfe, which is the Gate to immortality, and endeth all Diseases whatsoever. So entred they the Kings Chamber, and the Princesse going to the Bed side to her Father, saide: My Lorde, see heere the good knight Palmerin your Nephewe, may it please you to speake to him, and bid him welcome? Well knowe I that hee is right welcome to your Maiestie, were there no other cause then the happie recouerie of your former health, which his Aduenturous Travell heretofore brought ye.

The good Olde King, whome the Palsie caused to shake and tremble: rased himselfe by a little, and beholding Palmerin, with weake and feeble voyce, thus spake. Come nere my Noble Sonne, that these armes halfe deade may embrace thee, and my lips now drie and withered, may once kisse thee before I die. So holding him betwix his armes, and lifting his eyes to Heauen, said. O my God, for ever be thy name honored and praised, in boughsasing me to see my Sonne before my death. Ah sweet death, the ende of all miseries, and beginning of felicity, now art thou welcome, for heare not thy stroke, in that I haue now seene the honorable defence of my Subiects hereafter, yea such a worthy

friend

Friend for them, as neuer had they the like. Ah my Son, how dearly ought I to loue thee: how gracious hath thy remembrance bene of me: yet feele I my selfe so weake and feeble, as nature cannot prolong my life these daies. Alas, I know not which of vs twaine hath greatest cause to reioyce; either the Father seeing his Sonne, euen when he is readie to leaue him, or the Sonne finding his Father attending his coming before he giue vp the ghost. I hope my good Lord, said Palmerin, that you shall not leaue vs so soone, therefore take a good hart, and that no doubt will prolong your life. Alas my Sonne, quoth the King, vnto what age hath so weakened my bodie, and euen dried vp my vital blood, as longer I may not liue: and had not hope to see thee lengthened my languishing daies, thou hadst found my bodie breathlesse, which yet sustaineth feeble life, onely by thy presence.

Now that I may leaue this world with content, and trauaile with better quiet to mine ende: tell me (good Sonne) the whole matter concerning thy Father Florendos, with the perfect discourse of thine owne fortunes. The Palmerin rehearsed euery circumstance, both of his Fathers deliury, how hee had married the Quene Griana, and in what estate he left them both at his departure.

CHAP. XL

How the aged King Primalcon of Macedon, Graund-father to Palmerin, died, and how the King of Sparta espoused the faire Princess Arismena, Sister to the Prince Florendos.



At two daies had Palmerin staid in the Court of his Graund-father, but the aged King resigned his life to the celestiall powers: for which cause, all the Tryumphes ceased, and generall solowent entertained for the losse of their good King. Arismena who so reuerently loved her father, as in his life time shee would not match in marriage with any one, because it was his will it should be so: neuer shee wed her selfe discontented therewith, but her father being now dead, she committed the whole affaires of the Realme to the Countie Roldin, one appointed for that office by generall good liking. With such honorable pompe was the funerall obsequies executed, and the Princess gracious behauiour therein so especially commended: as the young King of Sparta became amorous of her, and discovered his minde to Palmerin, intreating him so to fauour the cause, as he might make Arismena his Quene.

Palmerin very ioyfull of the Kings motion, in that hee was one of the chiefest estates of Greece, acquainted his Aunt with the Kings request, and what an honor it was to her to be so matched. Nor was the Princess hart so cold by her fathers death, but seeing the yong beautifull King loved

loved her so well, it began to warme againe: so that continuing her owne estate, being now in yeres past foure and twentie, she made some excuses by her fathers late decease, but Palmerin perceived by her modest poyding lookes, that the heart consented; although the mouth was loth to offer it. At the close of the next day they were espoused together, by which means the King was more affected to follow Palmerin, as he determined before he came from Constantinople: as well for the great kindnes he found in him, as for his fauour in furthering him with the ende of his desires.

Now was the King more importunate on Palmerin, to accept him for his companion in his travell: who at length condescended, although he imagined, that his Aunte had rather haue her new husband tarie with her. The day being appointed for their departure, Palmerin concluded with the King of Sparta, that he should send Arismena to Constantinople, there to stay his returne with her Brother Florendos. For her safe conduct thither, all the chiefest knights that came thence with him were chosen, except the Prince Eustace, Sonne to Duke of Mecena. And Palmerin fearing his voyage would be longer then hee expected, commanded Vibanillo his Dwarf to returne to the Quene Arismena: and if I stay (quoth he) longer then a yere from Constantinople, goe then to Allemaine with this Letter to comfort my Ladie, and take with thee thy Sister, whom I sent to the Quene my Mother.

The Dwarf (although he had rather haue gone with his Master, then attend on Ladies) not daring to gainsay him, returned with Arismena, who in short time after arrived at Constantinople, where the Prince Florendos very ioyfully receiued her, being not a little contented that she was ioyned in marriage with the King of Sparta, yet his fathers death he tooke very heauily. Now welcome he was to the Emperour, the Empreffe, and Quene Griana, I doubt not but you can sufficiently imagine, who continually

olke comforted her till her Husband returned. Before Palmerin departed from Macedon, he established all things in due and decent order, treating the Countie Rouldin Lieutenant General for the Realme: commanding as dutifull obeyssaunce to him, as to the very Soueraigne Lord the King his Father. Afterwardes hee took order that his Shipping might be ready, because he would delay no longer the search of Tryneus.

CHAP. LXI.

¶ How Palmerin and his companions sayling on the Mediterranean Sea, were taken by Olimaell, Admirall to the great Turke: & of their fortunes in Greece, where Palmerin saved Laurana the Princeesse of Durace.

Roldin being established in the Government of Macedon, and the Shippe ready which Palmerin hadde appointed: he went aboard with his beloved friends that wold not leave him, viz. Frisoll, the Prince Olorico, the Duke of Pontus, the King of Sparta, and Eustace Sonne to the Duke of Mecana. These five having swozne they would in the search of Tryneus, committed themselves to the mercie of the Winde and Seas, not knowing where they should first take Landing. Having thus sayled five or seaven dayes together, & the Seas nothing rough or tempestuous: they climbed up to the maine toppes, to see if they could descrye any shore. And as they were devising merrily together, they suddenly espied a great flete of Shippes, which with winde at will made apace towards them; but because you

you shal understand of whence and what they were, attend the sequell and you shal be resolved. The whole Olimaell, as you have read in the former part of this Historie, after he had given the Princeesse Agriola to the great Turke, entered into so great credit, as is recompence of his gift, hee was made high Admirall of Turkie: so that being renowned for a knight of peerlesse desert, the Turke gaue him the charge of his great Armie, wherewith he should continually disturb the Christians. This Olimaell was General of this huge flete descried by Palmerin, wherewith some what amazed, he called one of the Pilots, demanding if he knewe the Ensigne of whence they were. The Pilot had no sooner beheld them, but hee presently said they were Turks, and no was there way for themselves to escape, because he sawe fire light Gallies were made out to him, and the rest came mainlie upon them. But Palmerin as a Prince experimented in dangers, thus spake to his companions.

¶ Noble freendes, where knightlie force or bountie cannot auail, it were more folly to vse it, wee are but fire, and all in one vessel, and farre wee cannot lie before we shall be taken: I thinke it best therefore that wee vse sword dissimulation, and so expect when fortune will betexteach vs the way to recover our losse, and reuenge vs on our enemies to their confusion. Withdraw your selues, and leaue mee alone to talke to them, because I can well speake the Arabian language. Yet thinke not that cowardise or feare of death makes me vse these speeches: for in an action inuincible, hardines and knightly prowdesse will be esteemed as folly and indiscretion. Haue then patience, my good friends, I hope that all shall turne to our good. No sooner had he ended his speeches, but he heard the Capitaine commaund them to yeld, or els they should die. Die quoth Palmerin, that goes verie hard: assure vs our liues, and we yeld, otherwise not. I promise thee, said the Capitaine, neither thou nor thy companie shal haue any harme.

So sailing upon the Shippes, they brought it to the Land
rall Olimaell, presenting to him all the things they had
therein: for which he hartly thanked them, saying,

Tell me Gentlemen and dissemble not, are ye Turke
or Christians? Sir, quoth Palmerin, seeing Fortune hath
bene so contrarie to vs; you shall vnderstand truely what
we are. We are Christians and pious knights, searching
adventures to gain honour and profit, in some Princes ser-
vice, be he Heathen or Christian. And because wee cannot
now shew you what we are able to do: to please you to suf-
fer vs enjoy our libertie, and guarantee vs the benefit of our
Armour, wee will promise you to all and faithfull service.
Olimaell, who was by nature stern and austere, seeing
these five knights so young and brave accomplished persons,
imagined their assistance would greatly auail him,
wherefore he thus answered; Gentlemen, if you will sweare
to me by your faith, that you will not depart from me with-
out my licence, but will loyally employ your selues in
what I shall command: you shall haue your Armour a-
gaine, and I will not vse you as my slaves and prisoners,
but as my honest companions and friends. Which oathe
they all took to him; wherefore they were immediately Ar-
med againe, and remained in the Galley with Olimaell:
who seeing their armour so rich and costly, esteemed them to
be of noble blood, and therefore caused them to be verie ho-
norable intreated.

So saying on, at length they came neere to the great
Cittie of Albania: when Olimaell commanded two or
three foyles, to goe vnderstand in what estate the Cittie
was: who were aduertised by certaine Frenchmen, that
the people were vnpowdered of any fortifications; so that
winning the Porte, the whole Cittie might easilie be con-
quered. These tidings caused them forcible to enter the
Porte, where setting all the Shippes on fire, they went
on shore, and murdering the Warders at the Gates, tooke
the Cittie at the first assault; when Palmerin and his noble
Friends

Friends (to their great sorrowe) declared howe well they
could skill of such affaires. The Cittie thus ouertome, and
the chiefest Citizens therein taken Prisoners, the Turke
following their Fortune, marched further, and came to the
Cittie of Durace, where the fayre Princesse Laurana abode,
of whom Palmerin was sometimes Amorous: when he
imagined by her excellent Beautie, that it was shee inho so
often solicited him in his Dreames. Palmerin being there-
come on Land, presently knewe the Countrey: wherefore
he said to his companions;

I now perceyue deere Friends, that Fortune forceth
vs from ill to worse: This speake I in respect of this Cit-
tie, against which wee must be compelled to fight, and not
many yeares since, with the price of my Blood I labored to
defende it. But because the Dukes Daughter is so wor-
thy a Ladie, as in my heart I reuerence and honour: I be-
sech you euery one employ your selues, to preserve both her
and her Ladys, and demaund them of the Armye all for our
part of the spoyle.

Whiles Palmerin thus conferred with his Friends,
Olimaell vnderstood by certaine Prisoners, that the Cittie
was very slenderly defended, and therefore no great maiesty
to winne it quickly. Yet at their first Assault, they were so
valiantly repulsed, as Olimaell and his men beganne to des-
payre of Victorie: wherefore he made open Proclamation,
that hee who first Entred the Cittie, should obtaine of him
any Boone he would request. Palmerin toyfell of this pro-
mise, caused fire strong Scaling Ladders to bee raised by a-
gainst the Wall, whereon he and his Friends ascended, and
on the Wall cried, the Cittie is ours: wherewith the people
within were so dismayed, hauing endured a long and furio-
us Skymish, as they all fledde out at the further Gates.
The Turkes then burned the Gates on the Sea side, and
entring the Citie, put olde and young to the Sword. But
Palmerin and his companions feigning to pursue them that
fledde, ranne strait to the Pallace, at the entrance whereof
they

THE HISTORIE

they found many Doves, who had taken the Duke, wherfore they went to finde the Princeesse Laurana, who sat in her Chamber, well nere dead with griefe, because shee heard that her Father was slaine. Her hee committed to the custodie of the King of Sparta, Fryfoll, Olorico, and Eustace, desiring them to comfort the Princees, in that neither she or her Ladies should fall into the Tyrants power: and so coming to Olimael, on his knee he began in this maner. You know my Lord the promise you made to day, by vertue wherof, because I first got ouer the wal into the Citie: for my share I request the Dukes Daughter, and for my friends that followed mee, her Ladies and Gentlewomen, for other spoile of the riches and treasure wee desire not.

Olimael graunted his demaund, charging his people on paine of their liues, not any way to offend the Ladies. In this manner was the Princeesse saued, whereupon the Duke of Pontus presently went to her, and taking her by the hand, acquainted her with these ioyfull newes, wherewith she thus replied. Can it be possible that Palmerin, who heretofore ventured his life in my fathers defence, against the Countie Passaco of Mecena, should now become so familiar among Turks and Doves? Hath he so forgot his honoz to God, that himselfe is not only a vassalle to the enemies of his faith, but doth likewise seeke their destruction that serue Christ Iesus? Be silent good Madame, answered the Duke, for if his name be known we all perish: what hath bene done, is for the safetie of your life, and our salue likewise, which hee hath obtained of the Generall of the Armie.

With these words she was somewhat pacified, and the old cinders of loue, which now began to spread abroad, caused her returne this answer. In sooth my Lord, seeing I am become Palmerins prisoner, I thinke my honour in better assurance: and my Fathers death is the lesse grievous to mee, in that this matter may soone to better effect then

OF PALMERIN DOLIVA.

then I can conceiue. By this time was Palmerin come to her, who entreated her to keepe all things secretly, for hee would endure a thousand deaths, before she should be any way dishonoured. In time (quoth he) wee may be deliuered from these Hellhounds, as for you and your Ladies, the Admirall hath openlie commaunded that you be reuerently vsed.

A thousand thanks my Lord, quoth the Princeesse, and seeing matters ere so come to passe, yet doe I reioyce that I fell into your power. The citie of Durace left in the same state of Albania was, the Turkes went aboord, taking no prisoners thence but Laurana and her Ladies, whom Olimael intended to giue to the great Turke. So passing along the Coast of Thessalie, they spoiled manie Citiees on the Sea side, tooke the King and manie noble men: so that now they were stozed with a number of Christian prisoners. Now Olimael feared, that the Christian Princees hearing what spoyle he made in their dominions, would raise a mightie power against him, wherfore hee gaue charge to his Pilots, to order their course towards the Citie of Tubant, where as then the great Turke kept his Court.

The King of Thessalie three daies before his taking, sent his Queene (who was great with childe) to one of his Castels, a good dayes iourney from the Sea: but then he heard her Husbands misfortune, and the græfe she conceiued, caused her presentlie to fall in trauaile, when she was deliuered of a goodlie Daughter, named Francelina. At this time the three Magical Sisters, who appeared to Palmerin on the Mountain Artifaria, and one of them afterward in his going to Buda: made their aboade in an Isle thereby named Carderia. When they (by their hidden Philosophy) heard how the King was taken, and should be kept in perpetuall prison, without the helpe of his Daughter which was newlie borne: they concluded to frame such an enchantement, as mauger the Turke and his power, as hee that

that would not deigne to kisse his shoe, should be deliuered from imprisonment. Hereupon the yongest of these three Sisters went to the Castell where the woefull Quene remained, where she was very honourably entertained: because the Quene desired to know, if the King her Husband was dead or aliue, and if any hope might be expected of his deliuerance.

The Damosell Enchauntresse aduertised the Quene, that in departing with her Daughter Francelina, the King her Husband should enioy his libertie, and in time to come, she should be married to one of the best knights in the world.

We neede not doubt that the Quene was hereat amazed, yet the loue of the Mother to her Infant, cannot conquer the Loue of the Wife to her deere Husband: which among all Loues is the most honest and loyall: So that in hope to see him againe, on whom depended her wealth and Welfare, shee gaue her Child to the Damosell, intreating that she might bee vsed as becomed the daughter of a king, and as the swete beauty of the Infant deserved. Shee returning to Carderia, with the Child, made her Sisters very ioyfull by her comming, who there nourished the Infant till she was three yeares old: when the beauty of the young Princesse began to shewe it selfe, as faire Cynthia doeth among the Starres.

So we did the Sisters enclose her in a strong Tower, made of purpose for young Francelina, wherein was the moste goodly Garden in the World, there was she attained by her Purples, and sixe wayting Gentlewomen: and such Enchantments were imposed in the Tower, as no man should euer see her, vlesse hee were the best knight of his time. The Entrance into the Tower was very strayte and narrow, barred hypp with a great Gate of Iron, and Guarded by two furious Lyons. Over the Gate stood a huge Image of Copper, holding a mightie Pace of Steele, wrought by such cunning, as if any knight but he that was destined to end the aduventure, should assay to enter, hardly might

might he escape to returne againe. Moreover, the conquerour should not demaund the first demaund of the Princes, which was the deliuerance of her Father: and for this cause the Sisters enchanted the faire Francelina, whose Historie we must yet forbear, proceeding where we left before.

Olimacell being thus on the Sea, laden with Christian spoiles and prisoners, at length entred the port of the great Citie of Tubant: where he made such a cheerefull noyse of Drumes, Trompets, Clarions & Cornets, as though the greatest Monarchie in the World had come to take landing. The great Turke meynailing at this suddaine melodye, sent one of his knights to vnderstand the cause, who being certified by Olimacell, what great victories hee had obtained against the Christians and the number of prisoners he brought with him returned to the Pallace, where he told his Lord that the Admirall Olimacell was come, and had brought with him great spoiles from the Christians, where among (quoth he) is a Christian King in personne, many worthie knights and Gentlemen, and a yong Princesse of incomparable beautie. Not a little ioyfull was the Turke at these newes, wherefore comming into his great Hall, where the imperiall seates of maiestie were erected, himselfe sate downe in the one, and faire Agriola of England in the other, expecting the comming of Olimacell: who in triumphant manner set forward with his prize, braue-ly mounted on a lustie Courser sumptuously caparasoned, and aduancing his sword downe in signe of victorie. Being come to Pallace, Olimacell saluted his Lord with great reuerence, standing by him to make report of his conquest, and make present of his prisoners after their estate and calling.

First he caused all the riches to be brought, and all the meanest captines one after another to kis the great Turks foote: then commaunding them to be carried thence, he began in this manner. It is not to be doubted, most high and

wrightie Monarch, that this victorie gotten on the Christi-
ans, enemies to our Gods, hath bene obtained onely by
your fauour: therefore it is great reason, that to the princi-
pall head of this enterprize, the great and chiefeft honour
should be doone. The witness heereof are the treasures pre-
sent, and their prysoners abyding your mercie: who from
the very meanest to the highest; shall humble themselves
at your Maiesties foote. When very many had doone
their reuerence, and the King of Thessalie should next fol-
low, who though his armes were pinnions behinde him,
yet had a Crowne of Gold on his heade to shewe what hee
was although he saw himselfe in the Tyrants power, and
Olimacell had commaunded him to kisse his Maiesties foote,
boldly made this answer. For will I so much displease my
God, vncircumcized Tyrant as thou art, in such sort to abase
my selfe, being a King, & administratour of iustice to faith-
full Christians: to kisse the foote of the most nastie and un-
cleane creature in the world: profaining the worship which
I onely owe to my maker. It is in thy power to take my
life from me: but not to contraine me do the thing where-
in consistes my damnation, and a thousand deaths I will
endure, before I yeld so much as in thought to thee. Uyl-
laine (quoth the Admirall) darest thou speake so vneue-
rently in the presence of my Lord? did not my regarde of
him with-hold me, soone should I separate thy cursed head
from thy shoulloers. With these words hee gaue the King
such a blow on the face, as made him fall on his knees to the
ground.

Ah Traytour, quoth the King, well hast thou shewen
the nature of a villaine, that without commaund stretcht a
King captaine, and vnprouided of Armes: but might it so
please thy Lord, in open fieldes will I proue the a disloy-
all and vncyrtened Curte, that thus abusest the blood roy-
all. The great Turke seeing the King so moued and angry,
the blood likewise trickling from his nose and mouth: com-
maunded him to be caried thence, to one of the strongest

Castells

Castells in Natolia, where he should be enclosed without a-
ny companie, that this captiuitie might bee the more gree-
uous to him.

When the King of Thessalie was departed, Palmerin
approached, leading the Princesse Laurana by the hand, hee
and his five companions being Armed, except their Hel-
mets, Gantlets and Swordes: whereat the great Turke
merrailing, demaunded of Olimacell why he suffered them
to be Armed? By Lord, quoth he, these five knights were
the first prize I tooke, who (after they had given me their
oathes) haue doone such seruice to your Maiestie, especially
this, pointing to Palmerin, one of the best knights that euer
I saw: as full well doe they deserue libertie, which in re-
compence of aduenturing their liues in your seruice, vnder
your highne correction, I promised them. By Mahomet,
answered the great Turk, for thy sake I likewise confirme
it, and if hereafter they will abide with mee, I will make
them greater then euer they were. While the Turke was
making these promises, Agriola hauing well noted Palme-
rin, knew him, and with the suddaine conceite thereof was
readie to swoone: but staying her selfe on her Chayre, said.
O sole bounty, who is this? are not mine eyes deluded and
my thoughts beguiled? At these words Palmerin knewe
her, which before he did not, by reason of her strange dis-
guysed apparrell: yet thought hee best to conceale his in-
ward ioy, least crooked Fortune should now againe pre-
uent him.

The great Turk seeing Agriola looke so pale and wan
started from his Chayre, and taking her in his armes,
said. Alas Madame, hath any suddaine ill befallen ye? hath
any one in this company offended yee? by our Gods if I
knew him, presently should he die the death. The Prin-
cesse trembling with feare, seeing Hippolyta was not pre-
sent, spake thus in English. What will my Lord and Her
band Tryneus say, if he be in this companie, seeing I haue
so disloyally forsaken him, and thus (though God knowes

perforce (in freedde of him, haue taken the enemy to him and our faith: Yet one comfort haue I that this infidell hath not carnally knowne me, for which protection I thank the heavenly maiestie. At these speeches Palmerin was so glad, as the feare of death could not with-holde him: but in the same language he thus answered.

Feare not good Madame, Tryneus is not in our companie: but so please you to say I am your Brother, you may happily saue my life, and practise your deliuerance. The Turke misdoubting by Palmerins perswading, that he had caused this suddaine alteration: imagining him to be her Husband of whom he had heard her talke so often, in a great rage sayd, Knight, how durst thou presume my Ladies presence, knowing the sight of thee wold any way displease her? By the Prophet Mahomet thou shalt immediately die, that all such audacious villaines may take an example by thee.

Agriola knowing the Turkes censures were very peremptory and commonly no sooner said then executed, embracing him, thus replied. Ah my Lord, do not the thing in haste, for which afterward you will be sorie, for I assure you on my honor, the Knight that spake to mee is my Brother, and hath left his Countrey onelie to find me: and him doe I loue so effectually, as if you put him to death, impossible is it for me to liue afterward. When the Turk heard her speake with such affection, qualifying his anger, said, I promise ye Madame, for your sake, he shall haue no harme, but he entertained with lone and honour: conditionall ye, that you forget this melancholy, and henceforth shew your selfe more pleasant, for in seeing you sad I am more grieved, then if I had lost the mostie of dominions. In sooth my Lord answered Agriola, now shall I be merrie, seeing you intend to loue me Brother, for greater good cannot happen to mee then his gentle entreatance: and henceforth shall I treade vnder foote, the sad remembrance of my Countrey & parents, hauing him with mee, by whom

I hope to gaine my greatest comfort. So the Turke arising from his Chayre, caused Palmerin and Laurana to accompany Agriola, and the other five Knights hauing kissed his hand: hee went to his chamber, commaunding Olimael (for his greater honour) to usher Agriola, who as she went, thus spake.

Belieue me Admyrall, if I was offended when thou broughtest me Prisoner hether; thou hast now made mee sufficient amends, in that by this I enioye my Brother, whom I was out of all hope to see againe. Alas Madame, (quoth he) little did I thinke him to be such a one, for had I his blame should haue bene much better, which fault I hope hereafter to recompence. I commend him to thy courtesie, saide Agriola, let him and his friends haue all things they want, according as my Lord hath appointed. So taking her leaue of them, she entred her Chamber, where shee and Hyppolita conferred with Laurana, of all her fortunes passed, and the adventures of her Brother. Now was Palmerin and his companions, by the Dukes commaundement, lodged nere the Pallace, and to each of them he sent a goodly Horse with costly Furniture, thinking by these meanes to conquer Agriola, and purchase that of her which hee long had desired, and talking with Palmerin, saide. Right well may you be brother to my Lady Agriola, in that your beautie and complexion deliueis great likelihood: Seeing then our Gods haue permitted, that for her comfort you should be brought hither: perswade her I pray yee, that she bee no longer repugnant to my will, for could I haue a Childe by her, I would thinke my selfe the happiest Lord on the earth. Beside, I would haue you forsake the folly of your Chastitie, and yeilde your selfe to our Law, which is much better then yours: and you shall see how our Gods will fauour you, likewise what great good you shall receiue thereby. My Lord (quoth Palmerin) I will labour with my Syster, so much as lies in me to doe, as for your Law as yet I am not acquainted therewith: but when I shall finde it to be such

as you assure mee, easily may I be drawne thereto, and to serue you with such loialty, as so great an estate doth woorthilie deserue. I confesse my selfe likewise greatly bounde to your Highnesse, in that you haue accepted my Sister as your Wife, and to me a poore slaue giuen both Life and Liberty, which I beseeche you also graunt the Barriners, in whose Wessel it was my chaunce to be taken, in so doing theē may be greatly moued by your magnificent liberalitie and mercie.

The great Turke presently gaue his consent, causing the safe Conduct to be openly proclaymed: So Palmerin and his friends humbly departing to their Lodging, the Turke went to Agriolacs Chamber, where sitting downe by her, hee thus beganne. Now shall I perceiue Madame, how much your Brother may preuaile with you: for hee hath promised me so to order the matter, as you shall graunt my long desired sute. My Lorde (quoth he) my Brother shall commaund mee nothing, but I will do it with all my heart: as for your request, it is not in my power, but in the hand of God, who defendeth me as best him pleaseth. For can I chaunge the opinion I haue helde so long: though by hauing my Brother with mee, I enioy farre greater content then I did before.

It sufficeth me (saide the Turke) to see you so well pleased, and as for your Brother, that you may perceyue howe well I loue him: before one Honeth bee expyred, I will make him the chiefeest Lord in my Court, next mine owne person: so kissing the Princesse, he departed to his Chamber. The day following, Palmerin said to his companions. You see my friends, how friendly Fortune smileth on vs, but least the chaunge, as euermore she is wont: wee must practise some good means to escape from these Turkish Infidels. Beside, seeing we haue found the Princesse Agriolac I hope Trineus is not so secretly hidden, but we shall heare some tydings of him. Of her therefore will I enquire, if she know what became of him & Prolome, when I left them:

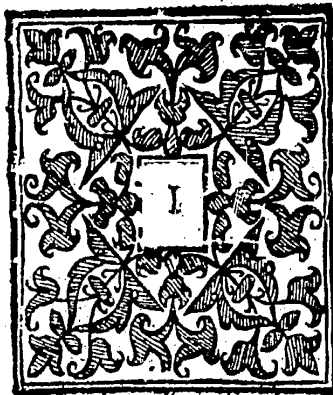
ut

in meane while you may closelie conclude with our Barriners, that they be euer readie at an houres warning, for I hope we shall see hence before eight daies be past. Palmerin went to Agriolacs Chamber, and there by good hap hee found her alone: whom after he had humbly saluted, the Princesse thus spake to him. My noble friende, you must be carefull how you speake to mee, especially before the aged Ladie you saw here yesterday, for she vnderstandeth all languages, and if we be discouered, there is no way but death: therefore when you see her with me, conferre rather with Laurana, and say to her what you would haue mee know, because she is a Ladie both vertuous and faithfull. No lesse (Madame) haue I alwaies found her, quoth Palmerin: therefore I beseech you make account of her, and acquaint her with your greatest affaires, for she is Daughter to one of the most gentle Princes in the world. But Madame, I would gladly know what became of Tryneus, after that so unhappilie I departed from you. The Admirall Olimaell, quoth she, came with his Gallies so sone as you were departed, who toke vs, and then seperated vs in sunder: scant permitting me to speake to him or Prolome, nor know I what is become of them. It sufficeth then Madame, answered Palmerin, that I haue found you, for on you dependeth the life of Tryneus, who shall not long (I hope) be concealed from vs: therefore aduise your selfe on the day when you will depart, for I haue a Ship readie to carrie you from this seruitude. Thans be to heauen, quoth she, for so good Fortune, I will be so ready as you shall not stay for me. Now entred Hyppolita, who brake off their talke to other occasions, where we will leaue, and returne to the Prince Tryneus.

THE HISTORIE

CHAP XLII.

How Tryneus being enchanted into the shape of a Dog in the Isle of Malfada, there came a Princeesse of the Moores, who requested him of the aged Enchantres, to whom he was giuen: and what happened to him afterward.



Think as yet you remember, without repetitions of the former discourse, in what manner the Knight, Cozin to the Admirall Olimaell, to whom Prince Tryneus was giuen: arrived by tempest in the Isle of Malfada, and how hee with his people were transformed into diuers shapes of Beastes, among whom

Tryneus bare the likenes of a goodly Dogge. Being thus disguised, a young Princeesse, named Zephira, Daughter to the King of the same Countrey: came to demaunde counsell of the aged Enchantresse Malfada, for the cure of a certaine disease, which by strange aduventure happened to her in this manner.

This young Princeesse one day being pleasant in her Fathers Courte, among many other wanting Ladies: entered a goodly Garden, which abounded with great diversity of sweet flowers, and after she had walked a pittle while in an Arbour of Muske-roses, she espied a Gilie-flower, which seemed so faire and beautifull in her eye, as shee was prouoked to goe to it from the stalk. Having this delicate flower in her hand, wherein (by misfortune) a venomous worme was crept, shee tooke such delight in smelling it:

OF PALMERN D'OLIVA.

it: as her breath drew by the worme into one of her Pores, shilles, not being able to get it out againe. So the venome and Poyson of this little worme engendred a putrefaction, and other like Wozmes, which gaue a smell so filthy and loathsome, as hardly could any abide to stand by her. Her Father not a little agrieued at this mischaunce, sent for the most skillfull Physitions, to know what remedie might be concluded vpon: but all their pain and trauell was in vaine, for the Disease continued still without any amendment. In the ende, the King fearing it would change to a Canker vncurable, and hauing heard what strange actions the Enchantresse Malfada performed: sent the Princeesse Zephira to her, where shee being arrived without any daunger, because she would not hurte any inhabiting in the Isle, declared to the Sorceresse the whole manner of her misfortune.

The Enchantresse answered that shee could giue her no remedie, and hardly should she finde any at all, except it were by an ancient Knight, who remained in the Courte of the King of Romara and Grisca, Realing Subiect to the Soldan of Persia, and the Knight was named Muzabelino. The Princeesse was so displeased at this answer, seeing her intent frustrated, as shee would receiue no satisfaction: wherefore walking in the fieldes, to expresse her anger, and so to the Sea-side, where the Shippes lay confused, she behelde the Dogge which was the Prince Tryneus, and so farre in liking was shee with him, as she desired the Enchantresse to giue him her, and hauing obtained her request, returned to her Father, who lay sicke in one of his Cittyes called Nabor, whereof the whole Realme bare the name.

When the King saw his Daughter returned without cure, his melancholike conceit so strooke to his hart, as with in three dayes after he dyed. Having made his Testament before his deceasse, he gaue his Daughter as her portion a Little called Elain, one of the greatest & surest strengths in the

THE HISTORIE

the Realme, with all the Signories belonging thereto. To Maulerino his youngest Sonne, he gaue an other like portion, which was a dayes iourney distant from Elain. After the Kings Funerall rites were solemnized, the Princesse with her Brother Maulerino, went to their owne possessions: doubting the furie of the Prince Tyreno, their Eldest Brother, who alwaies had shewne himselfe proud and contentions.

She being thus in good quiet by herselfe, took no other pleasure then in playing with her Dogge, because he seemed verie subtil and politique, so that she prepared a Couch for him at her Beds side. Tyreno being crowned King after his Fathers deceasse, began greatly to despise that his Sister should enioy the fayrest Cittie in the Kingdome: For which cause he cunningly practised all the meanes hee could to put her to death. And that he might the better compass his mischievous purpose, he secretly sent a Messenger to the Maister of the Princesse Horses, that if hee would but condescend to kill or poyson his Brother and Sister, he would giue him fiftie thousand Seraphes, and make him Governour of Elain. The wicked Noble man, greedy and couetous, seeing the large promise of the Tyrant, consented thereto: so that one night the Princesse being asleepe, he entered her Chamber with his Sword drawn, there to haue murdered her, and after ward the Prince her Brother.

Tryneus, who had lost nothing belonging to a man, but bodily shape and voice, seeing the Traytor enter his Ladies Chamber with his Weapon drawne, started vp presently, and setting his two forefeete on the Villains breast, bit him so cruelly by the face and throat, as he being unable to helpe himself, was constrained to crie out aloud. With this noise the Princesse awaked, and her Brother likewise, who lay in the next Chamber, running in haste to see the cause of this outcry: and knowing the Traytour, beat him so sore with the pommel of his sword about the stomacke, as in the end enforced him to confesse his Treason. Whereat Maulerino

OF PALMERIN DOLIVA.

not a little meruailing, and wrathfull at his villainous intent, smote his head from his shoulders. In the morning he appointed such guard in the Citie, as no stranger might enter without great examination. The Princesse knowing how her Dog had saued her life, loued him afterward so tenderly, as she would feede him at her owne Table, and none but her selfe might giue him any food. Here will wee likewise pursue awhile, and declare the deliuerance of the Princesse Agriola.

CHAP. XLIII.

How the great Turk became enamoured with the Princesse Laurana, by meanes whereof he was slaine, and Agriola deliuered.



Palmerin being vpon a day in his chamber with his companions, practising some meanes for the deliuerance of Agriola: the Princesse Laurana of Durace, came to them, framing her speeches in this maner. Gentlemen, if any of you bee desirous to deliuer vs from this cruell enemy, who holds vs in this thral and bondage: I haue deuised the best meanes that may be, and thus it is. The Turke, the most luxurious and burchaste man in the world, not contented with infinite number of Concubines, hath many times made loue to me, so that to compass mine intent, I haue made him promise within three daies to graunt his request. In this time I haue intreated the Princesse Agriola to shew him the most disdainfull countenance that may be, which shee hath faithfully promised,

missed, and for this cause hath sent me to you, to say hence all the riches he hath given ye, and which shee her selfe will likewise sende ye: so that when the holwe is come for me to fulfill his pleasure, one of you being prouide armed, shall in my place murder him, in reuenge of the ill Christendome hath sustained, by the last unhappie voyage of Olimaell, who determineth verie shortlie, as I vnderstand, to goe spoyle the Isle of Rhodes Palmerin very glad of the Princesse notable inuention, thus answered: Because (Madame) I late promised the Turke, not to depart his Court, but to keepe him company, when he denyed his Admirall, that I and my companions should goe with him to the Rhodes: I cannot be the man to end this worthy reuenge, therefore one of you (my friends) must resolve to performe it. In meane while, you Madame Laurana may returne to the Turke, pleasing him with faire and friendly speeches: for if neuer so little suspicion be gathered, not one of vs can escape with life. Feare not, said the Princesse, I will vse the matter so carefully as you can desire, right well know I how to enflame his hart with quaint lookes, coy disdaines, feint yoldings, and other such like ceremonies vied in leue: as feare not you to prosecute the stratageme, in that a beginning so good, must needs lead to a successfull ende. The young Duke of Pontus, who began to grow affectionate to wards the Princesse Laurana, said,

In sooth my Lord, so please you to commit the charge hereof to mee: so well hope I to execute the same for her sake that did so worthilie inuent it, as I dare warrant to deserve no reproch thereby. For my first earnest to gentle Loue, shall be so gracious, as in qualifying the lawfull hate of our enemy, I will bind my selfe neuer to loue any other: and her faith receiued, if I bring not his head to Madame Laurana, let me be accounted as one of the most foolish Knights that euer bare Armes. Advertiso mee therefore of the place and holwe, and doubt not of my faith.

full performante. At this pleasant answer they all began to smile, whereupon Palmerin thus spake. Welcome noble Duke, considering your youth and brave disposition, I know no one in this companie more meete for the Princesse Laurana, then you are: but I thinke when the appointed holwe shall come, you will be a little more angrie with the Turke then her, if she haue you in that subiection as it seemes she hath. Yet let vs not now trifle the time in vaine, when such weightie occasions commandeth our diligence.

So returned Laurana to the Princes Agriola, acquainting her with the Knights determination, when not long after, the great Turke entred the Chamber, accompanied with Palmerin and the King of Sparta, and that he might the better speake to her he so earnestly desired, hee caused Palmerin to sit betwene him and Agriola, then turning to Laurana, he began to deuise familiarly with her. Which when Palmerin and Agriola perceived, the better to beguile him, he made a signe to the King of Sparta, that he should enter into some talke of hunting: whereat the Turke presently arose, and taking Laurana by the hand, led her to the window, with these speeches. Mistress of my hart, and the very fairest creature that euer mine eyes beheld, will ye graunt the request I made to you yesterday? See you not what great honor I haue done to Madame Agriola? Notwithstanding, if you will loue me, I will make you my wife, that I may haue issue by you to succeed in my kingdom, and your honors shall be nothing inferiour to hers. And though she will denie me the fauour, which with long and continuall pursuite I haue desired: yet doe you consider my griefe, and if in short time you vouchsafe me no pittie, the extreme afflictions I endure for your loue, are rated at the price of my life. God forbid, quoth Laurana, that so great a losse should come to the Orientall Empire by me, rather will I forget the accustomed regard of mine honor, to be accepted into your grace and fauour. And the cause

cause that made me deferre so long from this answer, was the feare I haue of Hadam Agriola, and her Brother, to whom I was giuen by your Admirall after my Fathers decease.

But to the end my Lord, that none of them may suspect our loue, I thinke it conuenient that Hyppolita, who alway lieth in your Chamber: remoue her selfe to the Ladies attending on Agriola, and her shall you commaund to giue me the key of my Ladies Chamber, which hethereto she hath used to carrie. By this meane may I the more safely, and without suspicion of any one, come in the night to fulfill your desire. The Turke imagining he had gained the Princesse loue indeede, was not a little ioyfull, wherefore he said.

Sweete Lady, you shall haue the key as you request; nor shall she longer lodge in my Chamber, whom you feare so much. Moreover, this night will I perswade Agriola, that I feele my selfe not halfe currant: and therefore to keepe her selfe in her owne Chamber, and so may you come boldly to me this night. If any one chaunce to meete yee, say, that I sent for you: and if they dare bee so bolde as to hinder your coming, in the morning shall my Janizaries put them to death, whatsoeuer they be. So taking a Ring from his finger, wherein was a stone of inestimable value, he gaue it to the Princesse, saying: Holbe Hadame, take this as a pledge of my promise: for which Laurana humblye thanking him, thus replied: My Lord, I see Agriola hath four or five times earnestly noted you, I thinke it good therfore that we breake off talke: assuring you, that I will not tarry at midnight, when euery one is fast asleepe, to keepe my word, and in the Gantle which you sent mee yeste day, I wil courtlie enter your Chamber, conditionally that you keepe your promise to me afterwar.

Doubt not therof, said the Turke, and so taking his leaue of her, went presentlie to his Chamber, where finding Hyppolita, he commaunded her to take thence her bed, and

carry

carriest to the Ladies Chamber, likewise taking the keye from her, he sent it by one of his Pages to Laurana, who hauing it in hand, came laughing therewith to Palmerin, saying.

How say you my Lord, haue I not handled the matter as it should be: the Turke moued with pitie of our trait imprisonment, hath giuen me the charge of Hadam Agriola: for by his Page hath he sent me the key of her chamber, and Hyppolyta shall lodge now among other Ladies. And because this night the action must be fulfilled, doe you aduertise the Duke of Pontus, that at midnight he faile not to come, to see drunken Holofernes as he had deserued. Palmerin and the King of Sparta praising God, that their affaires went forward so luckilie: returned to their lodging, intreating Agriola to be ready at the houre, that their intent might not be hindered by her. Afterward they rehearsed to their companions, what was concluded by the Princesse Laurana: wherefore quoth he to the Duke, prepare to bring your Armour secretlie to Agriolæ Chamber, where you shall finde the King of Sparta and my selfe. Meane while, Frysoll, Olorico and Eustace, see that all our baggage be conuayed into our Ship, which may safelye be done without suspect, considering what great multitude of Souldiers are imbarquing, and therefore provide all things readie against our coming. The holowe being at hand, Palmerin, the King of Sparta, and the Duke of Pontus, went to the Princesse chamber, where the Duke was immediatlie Armed, except his Helmet, which he left on the table, couered with the Gantle wherof Laurana spake, putting on the attire the Princesse wore vpon her head, and so finely was he disguised in those habits, as in the dark he might be reputed rather a woman then a man, and being readie to depart about the practise, he said to Palmerin. I thinke it best my Lord, that you and the King of Sparta, conduct the Ladies before to the Pozte: for if in mine attempt, I should happen to faile, yet should you lose but the

woꝛd

worst in your company. So importunate was hee with them to follow his aduise, as he caused them to depart presently to the Hauens, where they were ioyfully welcomed by Frycoll and the rest, without meeting any by the way to hinder them. When the Duke saw himselfe left alone, and now he was to dispose himselfe to his intent, falling on his knee, he thus spake.

O my God, that suffered the mightie Holofernes to be beheaded by thy Seruant Iudith: afford me at this time the like grace, and giue me strength to worke his death, who is the greatest living enemy to Christians. This said, he went to the Turkes Chamber, where he found the doore readie open, and appoaching the bed: the Turke (who verily thought it was Laurana) raised vp himselfe, and taking him by the arme, said. Welcome sweete Lady, for very long haue I expected thy coming. Ah Traytor, quoth the Duke, I am not the thou lookest for, regard of honour will not suffer her to sinne in such sort. With which words hee stabd him to the heart, and smiting off his head, wrapped it in the Handkerchiefe that Laurana gaue him: so going to Agriolacs Chamber, and clasping on his Helmet, went presently to his friends, whom hee found in prayer for his good successe, and shewing the heade into Lauranaes lap, said.

Madame, he that was so importunate for your dishonour, as a witnes of his loue to you, hath sent you his head heere by me: wherewith I present you so deuoutly, as hence forth I dedicate my life & seruice to your disposing. A thousand thanks my Lord, quoth the Princesse, this vertuous act hath made mee so constantly to bee yours: as in any thing that toucheth not the impeach of mine honor. I remaine with my vttermost endeouours to pleasure you. As the Duke would haue replied, the other knights came to look on the head, which when they had cast into the Sea, they presently hoised saile, and before day had gotten farre enough from thence.

In

In the morning, as the Marriners came from their Galleyes towards the City, they espied the heade floating on the water, and taking it vp, shewed it to their companions, to know if they could tell whose it was. When they beheld it so dreadfull, the mustachoes strouting out like stiffe bristles, and the locks of hayre hang thagging down, they knew not what to think: and one of them hauing well marked it, said:

By all our Gods, if I been not deceived, this is the head of my Lord the great Turke: at which words all the other began to scoffe and mock, Hyppolyta seeing faire Pleebus let forth the morning light, came to the Princesse Agriolacs Chamber, where not finding her nor Laurana, the chamber likewise dispoiled of many things: he doubted immediately that they were fled, whereof to be resolued, she went to the great Turkes chamber, and seeing the Pages standing at the doore, said: Why enter ye not: the houre is past, and my Lord is not yet risen. Lady, quoth they, as yet he hath not called vs, and you know that yesternight he forbade our entrance till we were called: it may bee hee slept but badly this night, and therefore now is contented to take his rest. I feare, quoth she, some other matter then sleepe doth hinder his calling you, so thrusting open the doore, and entring the Chamber, saw the blood dispersed on the ground, and the headlesse truncke hanging beside the bed, with which sight they made a very pittifull outcrie, wherat many noble men and Gentlemen came, who likewise beholding what had happened, iopned with them in sorrowfull complaints. Some was the report of this murder blazed through the Citie, so that Olimaell hearing thereof, ranne thither in all haste: where he was no sooner present, but Hyppolyta thus began. Ah Olimaell, thou broughtest the traitors hither that haue slaine my Lord, and by thy meanes hath this treason been committed. By all our Gods, said one of the Turkes presently present, it is true: but because thou hast suffered Agriola, her Brother and

THE HISTORIE

and the other knights to escape, thou villaine shalt abie it dearly. So drawing forth his Semitarie, killed Olimaell therewith, saying. Such be their reward that trayterouslie betray their Soueraigne: mine Wacke of a poore Janizary made thee his chieft Admirall, and thou for his kindnesse hast requited him with death, but now thy villaine is wor2 thilirecompenced.

Olimaell thus slaine, his men ranne furiously on the Turks pephew, and slew him, with fiftie knights beside that defended his quarrell: and had it not been for an ancient Bassa, who with an hundred Sculdiers came to part them, they were in daunger of a greater sedition, because they saw none pursue Palmerin and his companions.

The Bassa that had thus pacified this tumult, by promises perswaded the Janizaries, and preuailed so well with them: as the same day he was declared yonger Brother to the Soldane deceased, and great Emperoz of Turkie. Many iniuries did he to Christendome afterward, in reuenge of his Brothers death: which yet we will forbear, to rehearse what happens to Palmerin and his companions being on the Sea.

CHAP.

OF PALMERIN DOLIVA.

CHAP. LXIIII.

¶ How Palmerin and his companions met two Turkish Ships, from whom they deliuered Estibon the Merchant and his Sonnes: and came to the Isle of Malsada, where Palmerin lost them all, and of the sorrow he made for this mishap.



Lurana was so ioyfully, that shee had so fortunately escaped the Turkes hands, and beside was so reuenged of her chiefest enemy, as nothing could yeld her greater contentation: but he so much more would she haue reioyced, if she had knowne the slaughter at the Wallace. As she sat discoursing hereon with Palmerin and the Duke of Pontus, Frycoll being aloft on the decke, espied foure Shippes comming towards them with full saile: whereupon he called to his companions, that they should presently arme themselves. For (quoth he) I see two King Shippes, and they haue taken two other, or else my iudgement faileth: let vs therefore labour to withstand them, lest we sustain a further danger.

So soner had hee spoken these words, but they all put themselves in readinesse, so that when the enemy closed with them, and many entred the Ship, thinking it was yeldd: they had a sharper entertainment then they expected, for not one escaped alieue, that came aboard, but either were slaine or throwne into the Sea. In briefe, they ouercame both the Pirats, and left not one alieue to carrie tidings hereof into Turkie. Afterward, as Palmerin searched

THE HISTORIE

the Cabins, to see what Prisoners the Mozes had taken: he espied his Maister Estebon, the Marchaunt of Hermida, and his two Sonnes by him, with two other Merchants chained by the hands and necke, in like sort as are the poore Slaves in the Gallies: Whereupon he said:

Trust me Maister, hee that put this Coller about your Necke, was little acquainted with your honest humanitie. So looking vp and downe, for the bunch of Keyes, that opened the Locks of the chaynes, he espied a Turkish Partiner, who fearfull of his life had hid himselfe: to whom hee said: By God, Villain, if thou shewest me not quickly where the Keyes are, I will send thy soul after thy fellowes. Spare my life most noble knight, cried the Turke, and I will giue ye not onely the Keyes, but also shew you such secrets here within, as no other now but my selfe can shew ye, wherein is infinite wealth and riches.

Dispatche then (saide Palmerin.) The Moze fetching the Keyes, opened the Locks, took off their Chaynes, and brake the Manacles bound about their Hands: when Palmerin, lifting his Eyes to Heauen, saide: Thanks to my God, that so happily sent mee to succour Estebon, by whose meanes I came to the knowledge of my friends and Parents, and who first gaue me Horse and Armoz for knightly seruice. Estebon hearing Palmerins words, maruelling not a little, fell on his knee, saying; I beseech you my Lorde to tell me your Name, to the end I may be thankful to him, by whom I haue escaped these cruell infidells, and receiued such an unspeakable benefit. Why Maister (qud Palmerin) know you me not? I am your Seruant Palmerin, who you first prouoked to followe Armes by your liberalitie: and euer since haue I followed that profession, and now haue requited some parte of your kindnesse. Ah my Noble friend Palmerin, saide olde Estebon, suffer me to kisse thy hand, for if heretofore thou didst deliuer me from the Lyons throte: what may I say of this danger, from which I am now defended? In happie holwe was that knightly Furniture

giuen

OF PALMERIN D'OLIVA.

giuen, and with successfull fortune haue you employed them: but may it please yee to goe with me, I will prouide you of all things necessarie, and giue you my Sonnes here to be your Seruants.

The King of Sparta seeing Estebon vse such zealous speeches, said to him, Father, you are very much deceived, imagine you the Sonne to the Emperour of Constantinople, a simple Souldiour: your age (Father) makes you forget your selfe. At these words the good old man somewhat affronted, excused himselfe to the King, and turning to Palmerin, said: Alas, my Lord, in not knowing you otherwise then one of my Seruants, I haue offered your excellencie very great wrong: and great hath bene my defect of punishment, being the great Lord of Greece so vnruefully: But pardon my boldnesse, noble Lord, and let mine ignorance excuse the offence committed: for unwittingly did I fall into this error. Content thy selfe, good Maister, quoth Palmerin, in nothing hast thou offended mee: but if thou wilt returne to thy Countrey, these Vessels belonging to the Mozes, and all the treasure in them, will I frankly bestow on thee. Ah my Lord, answered Estebon, since fortune hath so happily brought mee into your companie, so please you to licence me, loth am I to depart from you: for such store of Theues and Robbers are on the Seaes, as hardly can I escape their hands aliue. And forie would I be, saide Palmerin, that you or these Merchants should any way miscarie, though perhaps your Mines would gladly haue ye at home: but this I must tell ye, that I cannot returne to Constantinople. I shall be contented, saide Estebon, to stay your good leysure: for a poore life is better to me in this company, then welthy possessions among mine enemies.

Whereupon, Palmerin commanding all the riches in the Mozes Shippes, to be conuayed into the other, set fire on the Vessels, and hopping saile, rode on merly. With in thre daies after arose a mightie winde at North-East,

which caried them with such violence: as the Pilots tolde Palmerin they were now come on the borders of Persia, and very nere the Isle of Malsada, where they arrived before the Sunne setting. They seeing the Countrey so faire and delectable, would needes goe one shore to refresh themselves: for the Ladies were so discompered with the rough strome, as they were very desirous to recreate themselves a little.

Palmerin not able to shun this fatall chance, went on shore with his friends and the two Princesses, all the other likewise speedily following them, where they had not long staied, but they were all diuerslie enchanted. The two Ladies were transformed into the shape of Hindes, the other to Dogges, Wolves and Leopards, all of them running with such swiftnesse, as though the Furies had stood to chase them: but Palmerin could not be enchanted, by reason of the gift hee receiued of the thre wise Sisters on the Fountaine Arisaria, whereat he greatly grieved, for such was his impatience thus to lose his friends, as hee entred into these lamentations.

Oh peruerse and vnconstant Fortune, how diuers and dangerous are thy treacheries: Oh stepmother to cruel, why dost thou not exercise thy rage on simple and forsaken soules, but on such as excelle in honor and vertue: Doubtlesse my sinne hath caused this mishap, when I perswaded my friends to goe against their Christian Brethren, onely by feare of my wretched life. As he stood thus complaining, he beheld the Ladie of the Isle with her Seruants, coming to take the spoyle of their bootie: whereof being ioyfull, and thinking by her meanes to finde some succour, he ran apace towards her, and falling on his knee, thus spake. Alas noble Ladie, if euer pittie had power to moue ye: instruct me how to recover my companions, and two worthy Ladies transformed into brute Beastes. Malsada swelling with anger, to see that hee was not likewise enchanted, answered. Wretched knight, accursed bee their

their power that defended thee from my incantations, liue not thou in hope to finde any remedie here: for these enchantments are of such strength, as they may not be brooke; but by the most skillfull magitian in the world, which thou art not I am well assured, and therefore dost thou but loose thy labour. But because by mine arte I cannot be reuenged on thee, some other meanes will I seeke for thy destruction. You therefore my seruants, lay hands on him, and carrie him to the darkest of my prisons: that his following daies may be spent in greater miserie. Vncourteous and despightfull, quoth Palmerin, are these speeches: speciallie coming from one that vaunteth of her knowledge, nor can she be measured by love or charitie: and therefore shall I chastise such bad creatures, as refuse a matter no way hurtfull to themselves, but wherein their owne honour might be discerned. With which wordes he smote her heade from her shoulders, and valiantly buckling with the other, in the ende left not one to carrie reports of this massacre: afterward he fell into his lamentations againe in this manner.

Infortunate Palmerin, seest thou not how mishap will neuer leaue thee: for where thou thoughtest with comfort to finde thy Brother Tryneus, now hath Fortune overwhelmed thee with a whole world of mischaunces. Oh noble Agriola and gentle Laurana, two of the most modest Princesses that euer the earth bare, how may you iustlie blame me: bringing you from where you liued in honor, in this accursed place to bee transformed to brute Beastes. Neuer did Circes deale so cruelly with Grillos, and other Souldiers to the wise Vlysses: as this villanous olde hag hath done with me. Had you yet been altered to Lyons or Tiggers, you might haue defended yourselves from the crueltie of other Beastes: but this damned Sorceresse hath transformed you, to the most fearefull and tedious, among all other creatures, and therefore subiect to euery inconuenience.

THE HISTORIE

Ah loyall companions who loued me dearer then your Father or Brother: from the Turke that cherished you with such kindnes and loue, haue I brought you to the cruell and merciless Malfada. My noble friend and Brother Fryoll, what now will auaille thy haughtie Chivalrie? And gentle Prince Olorico, who for my sake forsooke Countrye, Parents, friends and all: how maist thou iustly condemne me of infamous reproch? What answer shall I make to mine Aunt Arismena, for her noble Husband the King of Sparta: And vertuous Duke of Pontus, a knight of high and especiall qualitie: greatly maist thou blame thy fortune to be acquainted with me. Not forgetting the magnanimous Prince Eustace, how can I excuse thy hard hap to the good old Duke of Mccena thy Father: Had it pleased the Soueraigne Creator of all things, that among you my selfe had taken the strange shape, my quiet would haue ben the better, to accompanie you with mishappe, as I haue done in good fortune. Ah swete Sister Armida, litte thinkest thou what offence thy Brother Palmerin hath committed: and gracious Distresse Polynarda, what teer neet will this be to your heauenlie thoughts, where you shall vnderstand the summe of my ill successe: Wandering along in these mones, he came to the Enchantresse Castell, where at the Gate he saw two Damels, who humbly saluting him, said. Welcome, Sir knight, heere may you repose your selfe if you please. Alas Ladies, quoth he, it is now no time for me to rest, becaue the Ladie of this place I think, being the most ingrate and despightfull woman that euer I saw, hath depriued me of all my ioy and comfort: but I hope I haue so well payde her for her paines, as hereafter she shall doe no further harme. Yet if any of you haue been so well instructed by her, as to finish the diuellish coniurations, and will accomplish it, or tell me, if by force they may be reduced to their former shapes, who remains enchanted here in this Island: for euer will I be her knight, and will preserve her in honour beyond

OF PALMERIN DOLIVA.

yond all other of her race. The Damosells, (who thought theye Ladies cunning had brought him thither, that they might abuse him, and afterwards transforme him as was her custome) being amazed at this answer, thus spake. Accursed Villaine, of an euill death must thou die, whom our Distresse by her Artificiall skill cannot transforme, now know we that thou hast murdered her: but assure thy selfe to finde vs thy two most mortall enemies, and though wee can chaunge thy friends to their former shapes, yet in despite of thy Villany, we will not, nor shalt thou know how it may be done.

Away Strumpets (quoth he) get yee going, or else I will sende your soules after your Distresse: and were it not a disgrace to mine honour, to defile my hands with the blood of such wicked creatures: By Heauens I would cut ye as small as fleah to the pot. Then came a knight forth of the Castell, who embracing Palmerin, said: My Lord Palmerin, what cross fortune hath brought you into this accursed Island: Palmerin seeing such strange euents succede one an other, knew not what to imagine: but at length returned this answer. You must hold me excused Syr, for in truth I know ye not: Why my Lord (quoth the knight) haue you forgotten Dyardo, whose life you defended in the King of Bohemiaes Court: By Heauen (said Palmerin) I could not call you to remembrance; But tell mee good knight, what aduerture brought you hither: For my chance hath bene so vnfortunate, as the reheatall would be most dolorous. Then Dyardo declared, how the King had sent him with some small assistance, to pursue the Foppis of the Gwish Hyrates, who had done many iniuries to his Subjects. And (quoth hee) after I had long time chased them, five other Galleyes came, and toyning with them, take me, and slue all my men.

At length, by tempestuous weaether, we were cast on this Ile, where we landing to take fresh water, all the Horses were changed into Harts, Dogs, and Bores: but the Ladye

spacing mee in regard of amorous desire, hath kept mee in this Castell a yeare and moze, abusing mee at her owne pleasure, and neuer could I compasse any meanes to escape hence againe, for if I hadde but made offer neare the Gate, by forcible strokes haue I bene beaten backe, yet not able to discerne who smote me.

For hap (quoth Palmerin) hath bene very hard, but her curst head lying on the shore side, perswades me heereafter she shall doe no more harme. But tell me good Dyardo, is there no one within so skilfull in her Magicall Science, as we may winne to doe vs some good? Not one (answered Dyardo) therefore I am loth you would stay long here, in doubt of further danger. I will then (said Palmerin) go seek such a one as shall ende these Enchauntments: and because you shall not be injured by auncie in the Castell, we will make them fast in prisons till my returne. After they had so done, they went to the Stable, where Dyardo gaue Palmerin a lusty Courser, and taking leaue of him, set forwards on his iourney.

CHAP. XLV.

¶ Howe Palmerin departing from the Isle of Malfada, came to the Court of the Princesse Zephyra, she that kept Tynens transformed: where hee was entertayned to ayde her against her eldest Brother, who vexed her with daylie troubles.



Some as Palmerin had thus left the Island of Malfada, and had that daye passed through a very dangerous River: the same night he came to a little Village, where taking vs his Lodging, he fell in talking with his Hoste in the Arabian tongue, if hee knewe any one that

that was expert in Pigromancie? I knowe none (quoth the Hoste, but an olde Lady in an Island hard by, to whom our Princesse not long since went, for remedy of a straunge disease, wherewith she is tormented. Where abideth your Princesse (said Palmerin?) Not past thirtie miles hence, (quoth the Host) in a Cittie called Elain. Perhaps (quoth Palmerin) by her meanes I may be better resolu'd. So bidding his Hoste good night, withdrew himselfe into his Chamber, where many Imaginations passed him concerning the Princesse Zephira.

It may bee (quoth hee within himselfe) that the Enchantresse vnable to helpe her, hath yet assigned her by direction, vnto some other man, more expert in that Diuinitish science: who compassing her health, happily may giue me some counsell to amend my misfortune. In this opinion the next morning he rode so to the Cittie of Elain, heavy and sad, yet in hope of comfort: and as hee came nere the Cittie, hee was inclosed with two or three hundred Light Horsemen, whom the Prince Maulerino, Brother to Zephira had there Embusht, to take all Auant-curers and Knights passing by them. Yet obserued they these conditions, that who so would take the Princes Pave, and sweare faithfull service, should sustaine no harme: but such as refused so to do, were carryed into the Cittie, theyr Horse and Armour taken from them, and they inclosed in strong Prison. These Horses were amazed to see Palmerin so richly Armed, and much more beholding him so bravely mounted, wherefore they said to him:

Weld your selfe Syr Knight, and sweare to maintaine our Princes quarrell: else be assured thy Death is present. The condition is very hard (said Palmerin) but for I haue heard the wrong offered by the King to your Princesse: I will sustaine her cause, not as a Prisoner enforced heere to, but of mine own good wil, as all Knights Errant are bound by dutie, to defende the iust Quarrell of distressed Ladies. Presently was Palmerin brought to the Princesse, and her

Brother, who were conferring together about these earnest affaires: when the knight that conducted Palmerin, stept to the Prince Maulerino, and thus spake. See here my Lorde a knight lately taken, whom for that wee haue found honest and courteous, wee haue suffered him to remaine Armed, and commit him to your opinion. While the knight continued these speeches, transformed Tryneus, who lay at the Princesses fote, seeing Palmerin with his Beuer open, ran and leaped on him, whining and saluing on him so lovingly, as euery one greatly marvelled thereat. In brieft, they might discern by his cries, colling about his legs, and pittifull mourning, that faine he would haue spoken, and shewed his loyall friende his inward complainings. The Princess maruelling at this strange occasion, said. I thinke (Syr knight) my Dogge knowes you, for since Malfada gaue him me, I neuer could see him so faine on any body. In sooth Madame (answered Palmerin) to my remembraunce, I neuer saw your Dog before this present. Hereupon shee called him to her, and made many meanes that he shuld come to her, yet he would not leaue Palmerin, but shaking his head still whyned to his friend, as craving aide and succour at his hand, wherewith the Princess moued, thus spake.

I pray the knight conceale not any thing from me, for I perswade my selfe, that thou hast beene heretofore some great friend to the Enchauntresse Malfada, seeing my Dogge is so loath to come from thee. Let mee vnderstand the trueth I pray thee, and if thou likewise wilt assist me against my euell Brother, thou shalt be Honourably vsed, and thy ordinary Pay redoubled. Madam (answered Palmerin) heere you may beholde the most distressed knight liuing, and a Christian, whose hard fortune hath bene such, as arriving in the Enchauntresse Isle whereof you spake: I haue lost eue friends, my true and honorable companions, and with them two Ladies, who in all Vertues may not be equalled. Yet haue I reuenged their losse on the old

Bagge

Bagge and her seruants, whose breathlesse bodies remain for food to the soules of the aire. And because I hearde (saie Princess) your selfe was not long since with her, for counsell in some unhappie fortune befallen you, faine woulde I know, may it please you to graunt me so much fauour, if shes assigned you to any other more skilfull then her selfe, by whom you not alone shall find remedie, but my tormenting greses may likewise bee comforted. Good knight, answered the Princess, the Gods themselues will trauaile to helpe thee, and it may be I haue learned of her, by whose death thou hast reuenged the wrong of manie noble persons: some hope of further good, to ease those passions which thy speeches bewraie. True it is, that I stayed with Malfada the space of eight days, yet not learning anie thing of her worthie the rehearfall, this onlie excepted: she told me that in the Kings Court of Crisca and Romata, remained an auncient knight named Muzabelino, by whom (if my maladie were curable) I shoulde finde help, and by no other man whatsoeuer, so did she extoll him beyond all other. And had not the King my Father died some after my returne, and my iniurious brother euer since molested mee: long ere this had I gone to that skilfull man, whom I meane to finde, so soone as I can bring my troubles to anie good ende. By all our Gods, quoth the Prince Maulerino, seeing Malfada is deade, Muzabelino may finish all the enchantments: but duping her life, neither he nor all the Magicians in the world were able to compass it.

As for the Kingdome of Romata, it is very farre from this Countrey: the greater will your paine and daunger be in trauailing thither. Right pleasant will the paine be to me, said Palmerin, so may I recouer my dearest friends againe: and for you sweete Madame will I adventure my life, either to winne you peace with your Brother, or a happy victorie by his death, that wee may the sooner set forward to Romata.

A

THE HISTORIE

A thousand thanks good knight, quoth the Princeesse, and this day shall we know what our Brother intendeth: if peace, it is welcome, if warre, we must defend our selues so well as we may. Still did the dogge cling about Palmerins side, so that hee demanded of the Princeesse, if shee brought him from the Isle of Malfada, for doubtlesse, quoth he, I thinke it be some knight transformed by that cruell woman, who heretofore belike hath knowne me. At which words the dog howled exceedingly, when Palmerin, tooke an oath that hee would search all the world ouer, to finde some means to bring him to his former shape, that he might know from whence this loue proceeded. The next day the King Tyreno assaulted the Cittie, who was slaine in the battaile by Palmerin, so afterward was Maulerino crowned King of Nabar, and all the Countrey enioyed their former quiet: whereupon the Princeesse Zephira gaue Palmerin her dogge, who requited her with manie gracious thanks, because he greatly suspected, that it was his friend Tryneu: transformed into that shape: but now let vs returne to the Soldane of Babilon, vnderstanding how his Armie was discomfited at Constantinople.

CHAP

OF PALMERIN DOLIVA.

CHAP. XLVI.

How one of the Nephewes to the King of Balisarca, brought newes to the Soldan of his Vncles death, the foyle of his Armie, the losse of Palmerin and Olorico. And how the Princeesse Alchidiana brought Ptolome, whom she greatly honored for Palmerins sake.



The King of Balisarca, (as you haue heard before) being slaine, his Armie discomfited, and all his Gallies burnt before Constantinople, one of his nephewes that kept the straits of the Bosphor with two floottes, least any succour should come that way to the Christians, by one Gally that escaped, heard all this misfortune: wherefore making haste backe againe, fearing to be taken, at length arrived in the Soldans Kingdome, where not staying long, he posted to the Court, and to the Soldane reuealed all that had happened. When the Soldane heard how his Army was thus ouerthrowne, Palmerin whom hee loued so well, and the Prince Olorico lost in the storme on the Sea: vered with griefe and rage, he called his Lord Ambassadour Maucetto to him, saying: Haste thee good Maucetto to my Brother the Soldane of Persia, and desire him to leuie me a strong Armie against the Moneth of March next ensuing, to encounter with the Emperour of Greece: promising him the spoile whatsoeuer it be, reseruing for my selfe nothing but the fame of reuenge.

Man-

THE HISTORIE

Maucetto departed presentlie on his iourney, and by the way met five Moores, leading two Christians to the Soldans Court to sell, which were Ptolome and Colmelio of whom he demaunded wherefore they were so bound in chaines:

My Lord, quoth one of the Moores, they be Christian slaues, who not long since were taken at the Sea by Olimaell Admirall to the great Turke. And how came you by them? said Maucetto. The Admirall, quoth the Moore, gaue them to one of his Cozines, now is dead, and his wife beeing loath to keepe them any longer, sends them to the Court to be sold for monie. Maucetto bought Colmelio of her, refusing Ptolome because hee was somewhat sicklie, and so passed on his Embassage. The Moores coming to the Court with poore Ptolome, and placing him among other slaues that stood to be sold, there came a deformed Moore, far worse mishapen then was Therites the Greeke, and he would needs buy Ptolome of the Merchant: but Ptolome disdainig to be subiect to so vile a creature, gaue him such a stroke on the stomacke with his fist, as made him tumble ouer backward, saying; Thou monstrous Villaine, let me rather die, then come into thy subiection. At this instant passed by the Princesse Alchidiana, smileing to see the Moore lie along: but when she beheld the good personage of Ptolome, shee remembred her loue Palmerin, and was therewith moued thus to speake, How durst thou take such hardines vpon thee, beeing a bond slaue and a captaine, thus to strike a Moore, free of this Countrey? Ptolome perceiuing by the Ladies attending on her, that shee was the Soldans Daughter, falling on his knee, thus answered.

Assuredlie Madame, rather desire I death, then to liue at such an ill fauoured villaines controule, my selfe beeing a knight at armes. Are you then a knight? said the princesse. I am good Madame, quoth he, although my seruitude hath very much altered mee. Alchidiana without any further question

OF PALMERIN DOLIVA.

questions, deliuered the Merchant two hundred Seraphes, and by two of her Sisters caused him to be conducted to her Chamber, where he was presently disrobed of his vnseemlie garments, and clothed in such as well became a knight to weare, afterward, shee commanded her attendants to depart the chamber, and coming to Ptolome, she thus bespake.

Solo Sir Knight, I intreate you by the holy faith you owe to your best beloued, that you will truly tell mee, by what misfortune you happened first into thraldome. Madame, quoth he, seeing of your owne grace and bounty, you haue deliuered me from these villaines that made sale of my life: I will not fable with you in any one point, but tell you a Historie repleat with wonderful sorow. Having reuealed the manner of his taking, and all the mishaps hee endured euer since, the teares trickling downe his cheekes, he said. And yet sweet Lady, all these passed miseries, and still abiding your slaue, grieues me not so much, as the losse of my dearest friend, the best knight in the world, to whom went to see his Falconerie, when the Pirats came and vnhappily took vs. Tell me good friend, quoth the Princesse, what may the knight be called, of whom you make such estimation? Quoth Ptolome, hee nameth himselfe Palmerin d' Oliua.

Soueraigne Gods, said Alchidiana, haue you beene companion to the noble Palmerin? What haue I in truth? Madame, quoth he, and know more of his affaires then any other man doth. Unhappie that I am, said the Princesse, now see I well that I am deceiued in all my hope. Say good knight, nay more, I coniure thee by thy faith to the soueraigne Creator of all things, to tell me, if thou be of our Law, and hath beene dumbe of long, or no? By God Madame, answered Ptolome, your adiuication is such, as rather will I make a sacrifice of my selfe, then be found vntue to you in any thing. Hee is a Christian, borne in Greece, and neuer had defect in his speech, if discreet consideration

ration of following euents, either to escape captiuitie or death, did not enforce him to feigne such a deceite, for he is most expert among all other, in dissembling any matter may turne him aduantage. When such hath been my fortune, quoth Alchidiana, as his vertus, bounty, and wise foresight, vsed for the space of a yere and more in my fathers Court, made me so religiously bowed to him in loue, as I neuer intend to make other chosse; and I sweare by al Gods, that if I heare not the better tydings of him by thee, my spirit will forsake this wretched bodie, and expect better fortune among the soules in Elisium. Ah imperious loue, how wonderfull is thy stroke: My friende is contrary to me in law and profession, a knight errant, vnknowne, absent from mee, and loues me not: for these occasions, were I the onelie Daughter to the great Emperour of Turkie, I neither can or wil change my former opinion.

Day then what shall, and let my father make an oblation of my blood to his secret Idoll, I will not desist from louing him. And thou my friend (quoth she) to Ptolome, because thou hast not hid the truth from mee, be thou at this instant free, and vse thy libertie as thou pleasest: for rather let me abide the death, then the companion to my noble Lord suffer shame by mee. Ptolome falling on his knee, humbly kissed her hande, and beganne to reueale the knightlie chualrie, that Palmerin and Tryneus sometime did in England: likewise how they brought the Kinges Daughter from thence, who remained captiue among the Turks, and her Husband giuen as slaue to the Admirals Cousin. It is enough said the Princesse, talk to me no more heereof, for by the great God, the very remembrance of him is greater griefe to me, then the mercilesse seruitude appoyne slaue endureth. The loue he bare to you, to the other knight, and the yong English Princes, whose misfortune I cannot sufficiently bewaile: calleth me hence to trauell in search of him, and may I find him with them, right glad

right glad some will the iourney be to me, because he is the onelie darling and fauorite of fortune. And now shall I tell you how I meane to colour mine intent. My father not knowing your captiuitie, to him shall I say how you are the onelie companion to Palmerin, and hither are you come to seeke him, as hauing hearde before that hee remained in your seruice: of this I dare assure you his Maestie so deereleie loueth Palmerin, that hee will deliuer you all things necessarie for his search, be it by land or Sea. And if your God shall fauour you so much, as in your trauaile you happen to finde him, or else to send me certaine tidings of him: you doo me the greater honour, that euer knight did to distressed Lady. So forward was the Princesse in her amorous desire, and loth to waste time with tedious delay: as that day she acquainted her father therewith, and so cunningly she plaid the Prater, as the Soldane gaue Ptolome Armour, Horses, Seruants, and fortye knights to attend on him. Beside, he furnished him with two great ships, that he might enquire at all the Ports on the Sea for Palmerin.

The day being come of his departure, hee tooke his leaue of the Soldane, the Princesse Alchidiana accompanying him to the Porte, where for her adieu she gaue him a sweet kisse, saying: Sir knight, if your fortune be such as to bring me the man, who only hath power to mitigate my torments: beside the continuall fauours of a Princesse, I will make you one of the greatest Lords in the Orient. Madame (quoth he) I will doe my diligence, and till I returne let god hope perswade ye. So hoping saile they set to sea, where we will leaue him till he meet with Palmerin.

CHAP XLVII.

How Palmerin and the Princeſſe Zephira, departed from Elain towards Romata, to ſeek Muzabelino, and what happened by the way in their iourney.



After that Maulerino was crowned King of Mabor, the rebellious Subjects brought to obedience, and the bodie of the ſame King Tyreno entered: the young Princeſſe Zephira and Palmerin, thought long to ſet forward on their iourney, wherefore the King allowing them a verie honourable traine, bequeathed them to their deſired fortune. Having paſſed many Regions, and ſundry daungers incident in trauaile, chieſelie of a Baſiliſque, whom Palmerin with the helpe of the dog Tyneus valiantly overcame, at length they entred the Realme of Romata, whereby commandement of the King Abimar, their entertainment was according to their eſtates: the occaſion thereof being thus. This King Abimar, holding the greateſt poſſeſſions in that Region, would neuer yeelde himſelfe as ſubied to the ſignorie of Perſia: whereat the Soldan now growing offended, ſent an Ambaſſadour to command him, preſentlie to determine of his obedience, or els he would overrun his Countrey with a mighty Army, and put both old and young to the ſword. Abimar abaſhed at this threating Embaſſage, demaunded counſel of the wiſe Muzabelino, what anſwer he ſhould make the Ambaſſadour, whereto the Magitian thus answered. Feare not my Lord the threating menaces of the Soldā,
for

for in that you haue two noble Sonnes, to wit, the Princes Tomano and Drumino, knights of high and ſpecial account: yet come there two others, (one whereof may not be knowne) with the Princeſſe Zephira, Daughter to the King of Nabor, who ſhall deliuer you from his tirannie, and make him your Friend; therefore diſmay not to ſend him a hardie anſwer, as well belcometh a Prince free, and not be commanded. And though one of the knights that cometh with the Princeſſe, ſhal a while be unknowne to you, by the bountie of his companion, with whom no other may well compare: yet ere long you ſhall know him, to your no little ioy and contentation. Abimar giuing credit to Muzabelinos ſpeeches, gaue charge in all the Citties wheretrough the Princeſſe ſhould paſſe, that ſhe ſhould be entertained with honorable triumphes, as if himſelfe had been in companie. And though the Prince Tomano grieved hereat, who loued the yongest Daughter to the Soldan of Perſia, yet the King answered the Ambaſſadour: that he would maintaine his right by the ſword, and if the Soldane came to aſſaile him, hee would defend his Countrey ſo well as he could.

The Ambaſſadour diſpatched with this anſwere, Tomano came to Muzabelino, ſaying. Ah my deare friende Muzabelino, what wrong haue you done mee, in perſwading my Father to hold warre with the Soldane: whoſe Daughter you know I loue in ſuch ſort, as if I obtaine her not in marriage, hardly can my life long endure. Content yourſelfe my Lord, answered Muzabelino: for if the two knights that come, bring fortune for your father, you muſt expect the like for your ſelfe. But, ſaid the Prince, may I not know their names: Let it ſuffice (quoth Muzabelino) what I haue ſaid, yet hereof I dare aſſure you, that they are Chriſtians, and extract of the greateſt lineage on the earth, in bountie and valour incomparable: whercof if you liſt to make experience, and thereby to credit what I haue ſaid beſide, I ſhall ſhew you a meane auailable for
the

THE HISTORIE

the purpose. You shall cause two Tents to be erected by the Cedar fountaine, which is halfe a mile distant from this Citie, in the one of them let be your Brother Drumino and your selfe, with tenne of the best Knights in your Fathers Court, and in the other let be your Sister, accompanied with ten of her chiefe Ladies, and about a bow shot from thence towards the high way side, you shall set by a Marble Pillar, whereon let these lines be engrauen.

Sir Knight, in these pavillions doth remaine,
A Lady faire, kept by a Princes sonne;
Foyle him by Ioust, and winne her hence againe,
Thou maist not passe before the deede be donne.

If it happen that they passe by and see not the Pillar, send one of the Ladies to them, to let them vnderstande, that they may not passe, before one of them hath Iousted with the Prince and his Knights. If they bee vnhorsed by him, the Lady must be deliuered to him: yet with this condition, that he refuse not to graunt her one demaunde. By Mahomet, said Drumino, husband to the Ladie, I wil not meddle in this matter, he may be such a one, as if hee hap to winne my Wife, he will be loth to restore her back againe. Feare not that (quoth the Magitian) hee is so courteous, and hath so faire a friend himselfe, as hee neither may, or will withhold her. By heauen, said Tomano, I will cope with him, and to morrow let the Pillar and pavillions bee erected, there wil I with my companions stay his coming: See here the cause why the King Abimar, commaunded the Princesse Zephira and her Knights to be so honorable entertained. By this time is the Princesse come within a dayes iourney of Romata, and Tomano with his Brother, Sister, Ladies and Knights, betake themselves to the pavillions, hearing that Zephira was come so neere, and be-

OF PALMERIN D'OLIVA.

ing themselves Armed, their Sister decked likewise in most sumptuous ornaments, they bowed to breake many Launces for her sake.

CHAP. XLVIII.

How Palmerin Iousted against Tomano, Drumino, and their Knights, whom he all dismounted, and what entertainment the King Abimar, and the wise Nigromanner Muzabelino made them.



By this time is the Princesse with Palmerin and her company, come to the place where the pavillions were erected, and not seeing the Pillar, they passed on: wherefore Tomano sent a Damosell to declare the conditions of the passage. Palmerin feigning himself somewhat wearie, made this answer. Damosel, you may say to the Prince and his Knights, that the Princesse Zephira is not in our garde, as the Ladie hee fights for abideth with him. For comes shee hither to be fought for, rather doth she intreate him to spare vs the Ioust, in that it will be small honour to him to conquer Knights overlabored in trauaile, and whose Horses are not able for that exercise.

The Damosell certifying the Prince of this answer, he grew into anger, swearing they should not passe before they tried their fortune: wherefore he sent the Damosell againe, who thus spake to Palmerin. Sir Knight, your excuses may not serue you, you must either Ioust, or leaue the Princesse behinde you. Trust me Damosel, answered Pal-

THE HISTORIE

merin, sozie would I be to accompany her so farre, & leane her in the custody of one I know not, did your Prince shew more courtesie, it would agree much better with his order: but verause hee shall not thinke, that we refuse the Ioust through feare or cowardise, say hee shall haue his desire both he and all his shall trie their fortune ere we passe further.

This answer returned to the Prince, Drumino first shewed himselfe in the field, and by importunate intreaty, certaine of the Princesses knights would first try their valour: but such was their ill fortune, as Crumino vanquished them one after another. Zephira somewhat offended heereat, entreated Palmerin either to win them passage, or else with his successe she was content to stay prisoner. I goe Madame (quoth Palmerin) and fortune speede mee, as I regard the safetie of your honoz. Muzabelino, hauing acquainted the King with this pastime, they came in habits disguised to behold it, at what time the Prince Drumino enuountred Palmerin. But not to hold you with tedious discourse, considering which way the victory is intended, the two Princes and all their knights were manfullie foyled by Palmerin.

The Ioust being ended, and the King returned againe to the Cittie: Muzabelino came to Palmerin, and hauing saluted him with great reuerence, thus spake. Worthy Lord, who onely deseruest the name of chiuallrie, let mee intreate you to excuse the Kings Son, who to make proue of your valour, by my meanes attempted this noble aduventure, from which you haue escaped with great honour, and to their shame that made the challenge. What are you sir, said Palmerin, that know me so well, and the cause why I came into this Countrey? Your friend Muzabelino, (quoth he) whom you haue taken such paines to finde, and who knowing you to be a Christian, will keepe you from all dangers among these Mahumetistes. Palmerin suddainly alighting from his horse, came and embraced him, saying. Noble

OF PALMERIN DOLIVA.

Noble Friend, suffer me to kisse your hand as a witness of my reuerence to your honorable Age. Not so my Lord, answered Muzabelino, rather suffer mee to doe my dutie, to that incomparable person, by whose meanes ere five Moneths be past, the greatest Nobilitie in the worlde shall receive incredible honour.

While these courteous Ceremonies endured, the conquered Princess with her Ladies came from the Pavillion, and saluting Palmerin with great courtesie, saide. See heere Syr knight the Lady, who trusting in your honourable benignitie, cometh to submit herselfe at your disposition, being tooone with more choyse Chiuallrie, then euer any other Ladie was. Notwithstanding, I hope that you will not refuse to graunt me one demand, according to the conditions agreed in the Ioust. Palmerin seeing her so discrete and modest, so sumptuous in Apparell, and accompanied with so many Ladies, indged that she was the Kings Daughter, and Wife to the Prince Drumino, wherefore entertaining her very graciously, he thus replied. Unfitting it is false Ladie, that a Princess of so high and speciall qualitie and worth, should be subiect to a poore and unknown knight: and though the agreement of the Ioust bee such, yet doe I humbly thanke you for this honour, bequeathing you to your former Libertie, and restoring you to him that hath best right to you.

A thousand thanks worthy Lord, saide the Princess, now see I that words of Muzabelino to my father are true, that the knight who conducted Madame Zephira, as in Chiuallrie hee surpasseth all other, so in franche minde and Liberalitie hee hath not his seconde, which was the chiefest cause why I aduentured my selfe in this hazard of fortune.

Madame (quoth Palmerin) if the wife Muzabelino hath used any speech of mee in mine absence, and to my honour, it proceeded not by my Vertue but his good will in so doing; which if I live, I will one day acknowledge. Welcome are you saide the Princess, and false Zephira the

THE HISTORIE

rather for your sake: and such be the houre of your arrivall here, as you may obtaine the ende of your desires. Zephira humbly thanked the Princeesse, Tomano, Drumino, and all the rest embracing Palmerin, thinking it no dishonour to be conquered by him: they mounted all on Horsebacke, and coming to the Cittie, they found the King there, ready with an honourable traine to receyue them: who saluting the Princeesse Zephira very kindly, saidee. No marvelle I had, if you durst undertake so long a journey, having the onely Knight of Fortune in your company, as my Sonnes have good occasion to witnes: and shee that commits her selfe to his charge, may be well assured of speciall defence. Zephira with humble thanks requiting the King, Palmerin and all the rest graciously welcommed: they rode all to the Pallace, where being entertained in choysell sort, Muzabelino still accompanied Palmerin, who forgote not as his wonted kindnesse to his loving Dogge.

CHAP. XLIX.

The talke that the Princeesse Zephira and Palmerin had with the wise Muzabelino: and how Palmerin departed from Romata, to the Castell of the tenne Rockes.



The Princeesse Zephira, who had not as yet talked with Muzabelino, in the Evening sent for him and Palmerin: she causing them both to sit downe by her, beganne her speeches in this manner. My Lorde, if your deepe knowledge and great Judgement have acquainted you with the cause of coming hither at this time, and that you be pleased to do any thing

OF PALMERIN D'OLIVA.

thing for the loue of My Palmerin, let pittie perswade you, for in you onely consisteth my remedie. Hadame (quoth Muzabelino, use not such speeches, for what my studie and practise hath taught me, you must make no account of: but referre your selfe wholly to the Supream Creator, who by the meanes of Noble Palmerin, will restore your health, him will I acquainte with the manner how it must be compassed.

Your Disease happened by smelling to a flower, and by the smell of an other it must be recovered. The flower appointed to give you Health, groweth in an Arbour in the Castell of the tenne Rockes, and kept by the Enchantment of a Ladie more skilfull in all Magicall Artes, then ever was the skilfull Medea. This Ladie deceassing a hundred yeres since and more. She leaving before her death the vertue of this flower, and of a Byrd which is kept there by the selfe same meanes, having Enchaunted them in a Garden, the most sumptuous in the worlde: raised tenne Rockes of Marble without the Castell, each one ascending higher then an other, and by these Rockes was the Castell named. Such Enchantments did the Lady Exercise on them, as when any one thinketh to passe by them, presently starteth out of each Rock an Armed Knight, who returneth the adventurer so forriblie, as to this day they have not bene passed by any. Courageous therefore must hee be that passeth these Rockes, which if Palmerin by his Bountie and prowess doe not accomplish, no man living can end the Adventure: for by force nat cunning, must the Enchantment be ended. When the Princeesse heard, that by the dangerous travell of Noble Palmerin her health must be restored, shee thus sorrowfully complained.

Ah Gods, suffiseth it not that heretofore this good Knight adventured his life, in the dangerous Battell when my Brother was slaine: but now he must abide the diuelliish Coniurations, where Death is daily and hourly expected: shall I consent to offer him such wrong, and be guiltie

THE HISTORIE

guilty of his Blood, who surpasseth all other in Chyualtrie: rather let my death be a warrant for his safety, then Noble Palmerin should endure such perill for me. Lament not Madame, quoth Muzabelino, before you haue cause, he that slewe Maltada and her Seruants, is so highly and specially fauoured of the Heauenly powers, as no Enchantment whatsoeuer hath any power to hurt him. Why Madame, (saide Palmerin) thinke you my good will is lesse to doe you seruice, then when I was first brought to your Courte? Forbeate these teares I pray you, and offend not your selfe: for such is my hope in God, that what is done by man, shall be destroyed by man: besides, it will be great reproach to me, if coming into strange Countreies to seeke Aduentures, I shall depart without tryall of my fortune. Muzabelina hearing him speake so courageously, toke him aside, saying: Noble and hardy knight, whome feare of Death cannot dismay, happie shall I account my selfe to doe thee any seruice.

And to the ende thou maist with better affection follow this Enterprize, assure thy selfe to passe the Rockes with safety, and enter the Castell with happie victorie, where ending all the Aduentures therein contained, thou shalt finde a part of remedy for recovering thy companions, but not all, for the rest is in the Tower of Maltada, where as yet thou canst not enter, but at thy returne shalt easily open, and in the ende ioyfully finde all thy Companions and Friendes. For the rest, feare not my discouerie of thy secret Loue and Parentage, which is the most Noble in all Christendome: for rather shall I be toyme in a thousand pieces, then so good a knight shall be iniured by me. Seeing you know so much (qd. Palmerin) I commit all to God and you, let mee therefore right sone craue leaue of the King for my departure, because I long that the Princesse were eased. Right sozry was the King to parte with him so sone, yet the hope of his soon returne somewhat pacified him. And when the newes were spread abroad that Palmerin should trauell to the Castell

OF PALMERIN DOLIVA.

Castell of the tenne Rocks: Tomano Drumino and the Princesse Zephira would needs heare him companie, which he being not able to gaine say, because they were importunate on him, gaue his consent. So departing from Romara, they made such haste in their iourney, as within fewe daies after they arriued at the Castell: and coming to the first Rock, they beheld a goodlie Sworde, enclosed therein vpp to the crosse. The two yong Princes mervelling thereat, allighted from their Horses, and assailed by strength to pull it out, which they were not able to doe: wherefore Tomano entreated Palmerin to try his fortune, who after manie courteous refusals offered to pull it forth, but a fearefull flame of fire suddainly issued forth of the Rock, which compelled them to retire back, wherefore Palmerin said to the Princes: This Sworde I see must be none of ours, therefore it is in vaine to strine anie further.

CHAP. L.

How Palmerin passed the tenne Rocks, vanquished the tenne enchanted Knights, and entred the Castell, where he finished all the enchantments: Tyreneus returning to his former shape, and what happened to them afterward.



Palmerin when he had sayled in drauing the Sworde out of the Rocks, hee prepared himselfe to the Combat with the enchanted Knights, whom as yet hee could not anie way discern: but first he began his orisons in this manner. O Soueraigne Creator, who euermore hath succoured me in

THE HISTORIE

in all my aduersities and fortunes: this day giue mee strength to confound this diuillish enchantment, and let thy name haue the honour of a glorious victorie.

Then giuing his Horse the spurs, galloped onward, saying, Sweete Distresse Polynarda, if euer you remembrance gaue me aide and fauour, now let your diuine regard comfort your Seruant. Being then betwene the two foremost Rocks, a mightie knight mounted on a lustie Courser, with a huge Lance in his hand, called to him, saying.

Turne Sir knight, you may passe no further, then furiously encountering one another, they met so roughlie together with their bodies, as they were both cast forth of their saddles. The Dog that still followed Palmerin, seeing his friends horse offered to starte, caught the bzidle by the raynes with his teeth, and would not let him passe any further. In meane while Palmerin hauing fought with the knight, and after a long and cruell combat, smote his head from his shoulders. In bziese, he was so fauoured of fortune, as hauing banquished all the ten knights, he passed the tenne Rocks: and no sooner was he mounted on the foremost, but a darke Clowde compassed him about, so that the two Princes, Zephira and their knights, to their great amazement lost the sight of him, yet his former victorie, exempted all feare from them of bad successe. There stayed they Palmerins returne till Sunne setting, when the two Princes demanded of zephira, if she would depart thence, or stay there all night? Depart quoth she, no by my life, heere will I bide the good knights returne from the Castell: whereupon her Seruants hauing erected their pavilions, they there tooke vp their lodging for that night. By this time Palmerin was come to the Castell Gate, where looking on his Armour which was hacked in peces, his flesh cut and mangled in manie places, breathing forth a bitter sigh, said. If yet this traualle may auail the Princeesse, and my noble companions that are enchanted, let hap

OF PALMERIN DOLIVA.

happe to me what please the Heauens, for their liberty is more deere to me then life. When looking on his dog, who all this while helde the Horses bzidle in mouth, heere remembered that he had not demanded of Muzabelino any thing concerning him, wherefore he said. Ah gentle dog, yet no dog (I thinke) but rather some knight thus transformed, how forgetfull haue I been of thy seruice in my necessitie: why did I not demand the truesh of Muzabelino, what thou art? But must thou prooue to be my good friend Tryneus, when all the enchantments in this Castell shall be ended, thy former shape I hope shall be restored.

So striking at the Castell Gate, to see if any way hee could get it open: at length hee looked vp to the battlements, and beheld an auncient knight, with a long beard so white as snow, who furiously thus spake to him. Proud knight, who made thee so bolde thus to beate on the Gates enter, vnto thy furder ill I hope, with these wordes the Gates opened of themselves, when presentlie Palmerin with his dog entered, and the old man, who seemed ouerspent with yeeres and weakenes meeting him in the Gate taking him by the arme, thrw him violently against the ground, saying. Thou that hast overcome the ten knights young and Armed, what canst thou do to an olde man with out defence? Wretched villaine, answered Palmerin, wherefore hast thou strooken me: by the liuing God, byd not thine age excuse thee, soone should I lay thee breathlesse at my foote.

Soft and faire, sayd the olde man, thou shalt haue worke enough to defend thy selfe. So catching Palmerin about the middle, he wrong him so cruellie, as one might heare his bones crack. My God cryed Palmerin, defend me against this cursed deuill. At length hee forced the olde man to let goe his holde: when began such a furious fight betwene them, as neuer was Palmerin in such daunger, in that euery blowe was giuen him, hee thought did breake all his bones.

bones in peeces. The dog seeing his master in such extremitie, caught the olde man by the throte, and neuer lett fugging till he got him downe, when suddainly he vanished away, and was no more seene afterward. For this victorie Palmerin thanked God, and having cherished his dog, entered further into the Castell. Where he beheld most stately Galleries, erected on reat collobes, Porphyry and Alabaster, as neuer did he behold a more sumptuous spectacle.

In the midst of the Courte was a goodly Tombe, enclosed with barres of beaten Golde, and ouer it stood a goodly Table of Chrystall, upheld by foure Satyres of Agasha: and on the Table was pictured the personage of a Ladie, drawne by such curious arte and workmanship, as hardly could it be equalled throught the world. Palmerin approached to behold the counterfeite, which held in the one hand a Booke fast shutte, and in the other a keye of Golde, pointing with the keye towarde the Gate of the Pallace: whereupon he imagined, that this was the Tombe of the Ladie Enchantresse, whereof Muzabelino had tolde him before, and putting his hand betweene the Golden barres, the Image presently offered him the keye, whereat being somewhat abashed, he iudged that this happened notwithstanding great cause, wherefore taking the keye, he went and opened the Pallace Gate, and entring the great Hall, hee founde it so richlie paued, and garnished round about with such costly Lapidarie, as the greatest Monarch in the world had not the like.

Looking behinde him for his Dog, he beheld him suddainly chaunged to his former shape, and running to embrace Palmerin sayd. Happy be the holme of thy coming nere friend, to whom I remaine for ever bound, in acknowledging the speciall graces and fauours receiued. But Palmerin deceaued with so manie illusions before, would hardlie giue credite to what he now behelde: repnting him rather some hellish furie so disguised, onely to entrap him with

with further danger, which Tryneus perceiuing, spake againe. Ah my noble friend Palmerin, for Gods sake doubt no more, I am thy Brother Tryneus, who since thy coming from Elain, followed thee in the enchanted forme of a Dog: reioyce then with mee, for since thy long desired hope hath now to god an end, doubt not but the residue of thine affaires will prove as fortunate. Palmerin being now thorowlie resolved, I leaue to your iudgements the kinde gratulations betweene them: who well can conceiue the wonderfull ioy of long absent friends, especially of such as liue to die for each other. Ah my Lord, quoth Palmerin, why did I not sooner acknowledge thee: the great succour thou gauest me by the way, might well haue persuaded me: yet though I still imagined thee my friende transformed, hardly could I resolve thereon till further experience.

Ah Fortune, if heretofore thou hast been enuious towards me, yet now hast thou recompensed mee in such sort: as now I haue no cause to exclaime on thee. So sitting downe together, Tryneus revealed the manner of his taking, and all that befel him til his transformation. Which Palmerin to requite, discoursed the knowledge of his Parents, how he was betrothed to his Ladie Polynarda, and how he recovered the Princeesse Agriola, who afterward was likewise enchanted in the Isle of Mafada. Tryneus at these newes, was readie to die with griefe, but Palmerin perswaded him of the wise Muzabelinos promise: that shortly hee should returne againe to the Isle, and they finish all the enchantments whatsoever. While they thus conferred together, they saw suddainly sette before them a Table furnished with all kind of meates, and a hand holding two great golden Candlesticks, wherein burned two faire waxe Tapers: beside, they heard the trampling of their feete that brought the meate to the Table, but they could not discern any living creature. Trust mee, quoth Palmerin, I thinke some body knowes I haue an hungry

A

appetite,

THE HISTORIE

appetite, sit downe with mee good friend: for these two monethes had I not a better stomacke. After they had well refreshed themselves, the Table was presently take away againe, and they entring a good wardrope, where vnder a Canapie of cloth of Gold, they found two marvellous robbly Greene Armour, so be'et with faire Emeraldes and great Oriental Pearles, as neuer proude Pagan wore the like in heatheneste. By them stood two goodly Shields of proffe, in the one being figured the Armes of Constanti- nople, and in the other the Crest of Allemaigne: wherat Palmerin not a litle meruailing, said to Tryneus, I thinke my Lord, that these Armour were prouided for vs, let vs see if they be fit for our bodies: so helping to Arme each other, they found them so fitte as they had ben purposely made for them. There found they likewise a Silver Cas- ket, wherein were two sumptuous kinglie Crownes of Golde, and betwixen them stood a rich Golden Cup, hauing in it a King, with the most beautifull stone in it that euer was seene.

Wondering at these euents, and doubtful to take thence those rare presents: immediately a Damsell came betwixt them, and humbly on her knees thus spake. Most mighty and magnanimous Princes, the Jewels you haue found in the Casket are yours, and them must you carrie to the Ladies of your affections: because they were purpose- lie made for them, as these worthy Armour were for you. As for her that deuised them, in this she accounteth her selfe right happie: that this day they are fallen into your power, and by you shall all the aduentures heere bee finished.

You my Lord, quoth she to Tryneus, must take the King that is in the Cup: and leane it not wheresoeuer you come, lest you bee chaunged to the shape of a Dog againe. And you my Lord Palmerin must take the Cup, to put the flowers therein, which you must beare to the Princesse Ze- phira: assuring you that no one must drinke therein, but she

OF PALMERIN D'OLIVA.

he to whom you must carry it. Faire Damsell, said Pal- merin, tell me how I shall find the Garden, where those flowers grow of such soueraigne vertue, and how I may come to the Arbour, where the strange Bird remaineth perched: likewise if any other then your selfe is in this Castell?

My Lord, quoth she, the Ladie of this Castell at her decease, left all the persons in this Castell asleepe by en- chauntment, except my selfe that am her care, and such coniuurations hath she charmed them withall: as they shall not stirre till you haue taken the Bird you aske for, at whose fearefullerie they shall all awake, in all this long time no whit consumed. And heere haue I euer since re- mained, soe pointed by her to doe you seruice, in shewing you the manner how to gather the flowers, and to take the fatall Bird perched in the Arbour, whether I will bring you at the appointed howre. In meane while rest your selues on this rich bedde, which hath bene prepared onely for you, and heere repose your selues til my returne. By my Sword Damsell, quoth Palmerin, you tel vs mat- ters full of wonder: notwithstanding, seeing we find some part of them true, we giue credit to the rest. So bidding her good night, there slept they till the next morning, when the Damsell came to call them: conducing them into the Garden the most braue and stately that euer they beheld, and after she had shewed them the Arbour, departed. Pal- merin looking round about him, maruelled at the ingenious foundation of the Castell, the surpassing faire Galleries, and the beautifull fountaines in the Garden, where hee heard an exceeding pleasant harmony of Birds. When cal- ling Tryneus to him, entred the Arbour, where taking the fatall Bird by the wings: she gaue three great eyes so loud and fearefull, as made both the Princes greatly ama- zed.

At this instant were all the enchauntments there ended, and the Seruants restored to their former libertie, when

Palmerin having tided the Bird to his fist with a thred the Damsell gave him, and filling his cup with the soueraigne flowers: they came forth of the Garden, and in the great Hall met them the Lord and Lady of the Castell, so olde, withered and decrepit, as it seemed hardly they could sustaine themselves, casting themselves at Palmerins feete, they said:

Ah noble Prince flower of all chivalrie, the highest God hath blessed thee from thy Cradle, and in the end shall make thee the happiest in the world, for the especiall good thou hast this day done, restoring all them to life that here slumbered, except the aged Lady my Wines Sister, who for these hundred yeeres past hath slept in her Tombe. After many courteous speeches passed betwene them, Palmerin and Tryneus departed the Castell, and as they went downe the Rocks, Tomano and the Princesse Zephyra came to meete them, she courteously embracing him, said: How faires my noble Lord: greatly did I despaire of your health: for this morning I heard such a fearefull crye from the Castell, as we were out of all hope to see you againe. By the aide of God, Adam, answered Palmerin, and this knight my deere friend, whom in the shape of a Dog you brought from Malsada, I find my selfe in perfect content: and here haue I brought you the soueraigne remedy for your so long and vnfortunate disease. But may it be, quoth the Princesse that so faire a knight should be so trauellomed: No lesse do I reioyce for his good fortune, then mine owne. So entred they the Princesse pavillion, discoursing all the maruels they had seene.

CHAP.

CHAP. LI.

How the Princesse Zephira was cured of her disease, and how Tryneus ended the aduenture of the enchaunted sword in the Rocks.



After that the Princesse Zephira had felt the sweet odours of the flowers Palmerin brought her, the enuenedomed wormes which so long time had tormented her, fell from her head dead to the ground, and the lothsome smell of her Canker began to cease. Yet all the scarres on her face were not thoroughly healed: but the souldaine ease that she found by the flowers, gaue her hope that in time they would weare away. Meane while the two Princes of Romara, conferred with Palmerin about the strange Bird, as also of the costly Armour they brought with them from the Castell: which being past ouer with no little admiration, they remembered the Sword enchaunted in the Rocks, whereupon the Prince Tomano entreated Tryneus, to try if that aduenture were reserved for him.

Say quoth Tryneus, if you haue already failed, hardly may I hope of better fortune: yet can I but loose my labour as you haue done, and shame were it for me to passe hence without triall. So taking the Sword by the handle, with very great ease he puld it out of the Rocks, being the goodliest Sword in workmanship that euer was deuised. Trust me, quoth Tryneus, he that made this weapon doubtlesse hath tried the vertue thereof. That may be, answered

THE HISTORIE

Palmerin, but had hee likewise knowne the valour of the knight, who now is wortheilie become Maister thereof, of greater count would hee haue esteemed his labour, and to thy perpetuall honour deere friende maist thou imploy it. But now wortheie Lords, seeing the Prince Zephira hath found so good ease, and my louing Broth Tryneus hath wonne this sword: I thinke it best that we set forward to Romata, which (after they had seene the sumptuous buildings in the Castell, the rich Tombe, the beautifull Garden, and all the other monuments wortheie view) they did.

Being come to Romata, and there receiued with speciall signes of honor, the wise Muzabelino, caused the fassall Bird to feede of the flowers, which Palmerin hadde brought from the Castell of the fenne Rocks. So sooner had the Bird tasted the flowers, but presently the deliuered such melodious notes, as sweeter harmonie was neuer heard before: and during the time of her singing, fell so many droppes of precious water from her beake, as before Dinner time the Cuppe was well nere filled. Which when the wise Pigromancer perceiued, he brought a verie faire Lute to Palmerin, saying. I beseech you my Lord play some exquisite peece of Musique, that the Bird listening to your melodie, may cease her owne records: els shall we loose the soueraigne vertue contained in the Water. Palmerin taking the Lute, plaide thereon so artificiallie, that the Princesse of Romata, whom he won in the Tour, was enforced to vnderstande these speeches, How can we sufficientlie manuaile at the perfections of Palmerin: for if in prowesse he surpasse Hercules of Libia, who ouercame Tyrants and Monsters at his pleasure: well may we name him another Amphion or Orpheus of Thrace, who with their melodie tamed the fishes, Beastes and Birds. Tryneus taking the Cup, brought it to the Princesse Zephira, who dipping her handkercher therein, bathed her face therewith: the precious vertue whereof was such, as all the enuened

OF PALMERIN DOLIVA.

envenomed scarres the woymes had made, were presently washed away, and her face so delicate as ever it was before: whereupon the Princesse falling at Palmerins feete, ioyfully thus spake. Doubtlesse my Lord, I am greatly beholding to the Prince Tryneus, who saved my life when the Traytour would haue slaine me in my bedde: but I must confesse my self much more indebted to your worthinesse, by whose paines the venomous putrefaction is extinguished, whereby I endured torments sarrce exceeding death.

Madame, answered Palmerin, your happie recoverie must not be imputed to mee, but to the soueraigne Lord that so provided for you, and seeing your health is so worthily restored, I thinke best that we set forward to morrow on our iourney, that we may finish the Magicall coniuurations of Malfada, as wee haue already done those at the fenne Rocks. The Princesse of Romata hearing these words, prevented the answer of Zephira, and coming to Palmerin, said: I beseech you Sir knight, in honor of that God which you reuerence, that you will not refuse my one demand, according to your promise made mee, when you ouercame my Brother and his knights in Tour. Aske Ladie (said Palmerin) what you will, and you shall not be denied, so the matter consist in my power to performe. Well may you performe it (quoth she) and to your endlesse honor I hope. The summe of my request is, that you will not forsake the King my Father till his warre against the Soldane of Persia be finished. And that you would entreate your friend to accompanie you therein. Denie mee not good Sir, for no greater shame is to a knight then breach of promise: nor will I stirre from your foote, vntill you haue graunted what I request. In sooth Madame, answered Palmerin, although my friend and I haue great affaires in our Countrey, yet (in respect of my promise) wee will assist your Father: let vs in meane while intreate you, to pardon our returne with the Princesse Zephira, who

THE HISTORIE

thinks the time long before she came to Nabor. Doubtles my Lord, quoth Zephira, rather then you and my Lord Tryneus, shall breake your promise to the Princesse, in giuing succour to the King Abimar her Father: I can content my selfe to stay here more willingly, then to returne to the King my Brother. Madame, said Muzabelino, assure your selfe, that Palmerin is the onely meane whereby you haue attained your present felicitie: and by him shall you with honour see your Countrey againe. In sooth my Lord, said the Princesse, full well I know his owne gracious nature induced him, first to aduenture his life for the safetie of my Countrey, then to passe strange Countreies with daunger, onely to finde you, and lastly, his rare fortune at the Castell of the tennie Rocks, from whence hee brought those precious flowers, and the fatall Wyrd, whereby my long infirmitie hath beene cured. To offer him fauour, or al my possessions in way of recompence of so great paines, they are not comparable: for though I made him Lord of my selfe, and all those territories my Father left me, yet doth my conscience tell me they are too base. In brieft, I know his deserts so exceeding my reach: as well may I sit downe to imagine, but neuer bee able to contriue a sufficient reward. Beleeue mee Madame, answered Muzabelino, you haue spoken trueth, and his noble magnanimitie must onely helpe my Lord: and this I assure you, that were it not the daunger of his kingly honor, and hazard of the whole Monarchie of Asia, hardly might the Knight be staied here, of such waight and importance are his other affaires. The calling Palmerin to him, whose inward thoughts were busied with the remembrance of his Ladie, he said:

Let not your stay here my Lord offende you, though well I know the waite of your griefe, for that God who hath called you to this present estate, hath forepoynted things that you can not shun, in recompence whereof, before your departure from this Countrey, great & victorious honours

OF PALMERIN D'O LIV A.

honours are appointed you. Beside, for a perfect resolution your further doubtles, take you no care for nourishing your Wyrd: for when your Musique made her cease singing, at that instant I threw such a Charme on her, as henceforth she shall liue without taking any food. And when you returne to your Cittie of Constantinople, let her be peached in some conuenient place, in the great Hall of your Pallace: and there shall shee remaine as a certaine Oracle vntill the day of your death, to deliuer tidings of good or bad. If any Knight or Ladie shall enter your Court, either with intent of Treason, or bringing ill newes, the Wyrd shall giue such fearfull strikes, as shee did at the time when you took her in the Arboure: but if the newes be of joy, and for your good, then shall shee sing more sweetely, then when that Soueraigne water fell from her Beake, wherewith the Princesse Zephira was cured.

In brieft my Lorde, at the time when you must leaue this leaue, for the glorious habitation among the blessed, shee shall foretell such strange occasions, as shall dismay the most resolute courage. By this meane shall you be guarded from all inconueniences, and your good Fortune continued in such sort, as you shall be the most peaceable Emperour that euer liued in Greece. Certes my Lorde (answered Palmerin) not by any desert in me, am I thus honored with so high a present, which I will keepe so chare as mine owne person: but that the name of Muzabelino may for euer be impinted in my heart, giue me some one of your name or kindred, who euer more may be nearest to my person. My Lord (sd. Muzabelino) to you I will giue one of my Sonnes, begotten by me on a Christian Ladie, agreeing with you in faith and opinion: whereof I am not sorrie, yet doe I feare that the King should knowe so much, least his Religion might his death.

Dere friende, said Palmerin, for Gods sake giue him me presently, and him will I loue, as he were my Brother. Your request (quoth he) can I not yet satisfie, vntill we goe

THE HISTORIE

to my Castell where he is kept, which because I will not longer deferre, to Morrow will I perswade the King to journey to his great Cittie of Grisca, there to take viewe of his Armie, when I shall compasse the meane to giue him you, vpon this conclusion they departed to their Chambers.

CHAP. LII.

¶ How Muzabelino gaue Palmerin his Sonne Bellechino, entertaining the King and all his Companie Royallie at his Castell: and how the two Armyes of the King Abimar and the Soldane of Persia encountered, with the successe thereof,



Muzabelino perceiuing by his Arte, that the Soldane of Persia with his power, was nere at hand, thinking to ruinate the great Cittie of Grisca: aduertised the King thereof, willing him withall speed to suffer his Armie, and prevent the Soldanes cruell determination. The King not mistaking this good aduise, set forwards presently to Grisca, and by the waye, at the earnest intreatie of Muzabelino, the King with all his Courtly companie laye at his Castell: where many rare deuises were shewne them by Enchauntment, which I passe ouer, as matter altogether impertinent. There did the Magitian giue Palmerin his Sonne Bellechino, one of his Daughters like wise to the Quene, and an other to the Princesse Zephira.

Afterward they iournyed to the Cittie of Grisca, where all his Army was ranged in readinesse, being numbred at hun-

OF PALMERIN D'OLIVA.

hundred thousand fighting men: the Auanguard he committed to the two Princes, Palmerin and Tryneus, consisting of twentiethousand Horsemen, his two Battells of 10000. Archers on Horsebacke, the two Princes Tomanon and Drumino had in charge, and the Rearward was gouerned by the two Kinges of Sauata and Garara. The Soldanes power being ordained in Battell-wise, within fewe dayes after the fight beganne: which continued with such danger on epyther side, as the Victorie hung very long in suspense. In the ende, after a mightie Massacre made of the Persians, among whome was Donadel Prince of Siconia flaine, with many other great Califfes and Lords: the Soldane himselfe was taken Prisoner by Palmerin, and sente bounde with Fetters of Golde to the Princesse Zephira. The Messenger comming to the Princesse Chamber, declared how Palmerin had sent her that Prisoner, to intreat him as her selfe best liked. In sothe (my Lorde) quoth the Princesse to the Soldane, you are right welcome for his sake that sent you: here shall your entertainment be as fits your calling, and dislike not your mishap, in that the knight who sent you hither, is wont to Conquere where himselfe please. The Soldane angrie at his hard fortune, yet seeing he was Prisoner to a Lady so beautifull: was immediately so surprized with Loue, as he was not able to answer the Princesse one word. But she perceiuing he was very sore wounded, caused him to be conducted to a goodly Chamber, commaunding her best Chyrurgions to attend him diligently.

On the morrowe she came to see how hee fared, when Loue ouer-mustering all his senses, made him forgette his hatred to the King Abimar, resolving to become his friend, by Marriage of the Princesse: and unable longer to suppress his weightie passions, which more troubled him then his dangerous Wounds, in this sort he beganne. Fairest among the Daughters of men, tell me I desire you, if you be the Child of the King Abimar, or else of whence you are: to the

THE HISTORIE

the end I may one day acknowledge this fauor, which your kinde and milde nature affords your Prisoner. Herevnto the Princesse answered, how she was daughter to the king Onodius of Nabor, coupling therewith all her passed fortunes, concluding in the end, that in all actions agreeing with honour, she remained his humble Seruant. Fortune (quod hee) neuer constant, but in vncoustantie: once yesterday was I the greatest Prince in the Worlde, and now none in my Kingdome so miserable as my selfe, being brought in subiection to my inferiour, and shared in Loue with my bassalls Daughter. Wisely saide the Poet, That badly doo loue and Maiestie agree together. For though the height of mine Estate forbiddes my desired content, yet Loue and mine owne liking are two such seuerer enemies, as I must not now stand to dispute the cause. Happie is the Knight in whose Power remains a Ladie so excellent: but much more happie is the Ladie that can commaunde so great a person, by whome such honours are this day afforded you sayre Princesse, as well may you vaunt to bee the greatest in Persia.

If by Knight surpassing in Provelse I was conquered in battell, by one in beauty and courtesie incomparable, am I again ouermastered, so that I am enforced to present you my hart, and all the signories I possesse, to vse at your pleasure, voluing (for your sake) perpetuall peace with Abimar my hateful enemy. The Princesse abashed at this unexpected offer, a sweete blush coloured her daintie cheekes, and fearing to bee imputed to indiscreet, shaped her answer to the last point of all the Soldanes speeches, as thus. In sooth my Lord, well could I like, that Peace were concluded betwene the King and you, though not by any meane in me, but by the Omnipotent power of the Goddes: who letting you know the weaknesse of your owne strength, would not haue any Warre betwene you and the King Abimar. And if it like you so much to abase your selfe, as to like the simple Daughter of a King, who whilst hee liued, was your high:

OF PALMERIN DOLIVA.

highnes Subiect: well may I with modestie giue consent, for if my Father in all his lifetime obeyed you as his Lord, vnseemlie were disobedience in his Daughter. By the holie Alcoron of Mahomet, answered the Soldane, your benigne humilitie hath more conquered me, then the your best enemy in the worlde could doo: doe you therefore appoint the Articles of our peace, and I as vnpartiall will agree thereto.

Thus began the peace and the promise of marriage betwene the Soldane and the Princesse Zephira, which being thorowlie agreed vpon, the King Abimar, Palmerin, Tryneus and all the states subscribing thereto: the Camps on either side were discharged, and the Soldane with his great Seneschall openlie in the Citie of Grisca, protested peace in this manner. That the Soldane should espouse Zephira, and Toman the Princesse Belina the Soldanes Daughter Beside; he renounced all pretended rights to the realmes of Grisca and Romara, nor wold he demand any tribute of them afterward, or enter his confines with any violence, but assist the King continually against all his enemies.

Moreouer, within two moneths, hee would deliuer tenne thousand tallents of Golde, and two millions of Seraphes, in recompence of his wondred to the King of Abimar. All this my Lord, quoth the Soldane, will I faithfully performe, and all the things my Subiects shall subscribe thereto: on this condition, that you accompanie the Princesse to the Citie of Harano, there to honor with your presence our espousall, where your Sonne Toman shall likewise match with our Daughter. To this the King willingly consented, whereupon the Soldane sent his Seneschal, to cause his armie to march homeward into Persia. except six thousand men at Armes, to guard the Soldanes person: then openly in the field was the peace proclaimed. and the Captaines on either side freindly embracing each other. Afterward the Soldane coming to the King Abimar

and

and in the presence of Palmerin and Trynens, thus spake:
Needlesse were it now (my Lord) to remember our passed
displeasures, but generallie to conferre of loue and peace:
yet heereof I can assure you, that the Princesse Zephira,
and these two strange Knights, preuailed more against me
then all the rest of your Armie. But least your people
shoulde thinke, that our concluded peace is not thozowlie
grounded to morrow will I bee openlie affianced to the
Princesse zephira, and afterward set forwarde to Hara-
no, that my Sisters may be present at our nuptials, in the
meane while our Seneschall and the sixe other noble Lords,
shall remaine with you as our hostages. These determina-
tions fulfilled, the Soldane posted to Harano, where hee
heard of the death of the Prince Donadel, and the Kinges
Sonne of Rosillia with diuers other Princes of his kin-
dred slaine in the battell: but the heate of his neweloue
caused him make smal account thereof, preparing all things
readie for the solemnitie of his marriage.

CHAP

CHAP LIII.

The conference that the Soldane of Persia had with his
Sisters, thinking by their meanes to stay Palmerin
and Tryneus in his Court, and the honourable enter-
tainment hee made them at the arriual of the Prin-
cesse Zephira. And how by good fortune Palmerin
recovered his Squire Colmelio, from the Ambassa-
dour Maucetto.



Sooner was the Soldane come
to Harano, but he presentlie dis-
patched messengers to his Sisters,
that they might be present at his
honourable marriage: and calling
for his Daughter the young Prin-
cesse Belina, hee thus beganne
faire Daughter, I thinke you
are not ignorant, for report stieeth quicklie farre, that I haue
promised you in marriage to the Prince Tomano: there-
fore I account it verie requisite, that your solemnitie bee
done on the same day, when I shalle pouise the Princesse
Zephira.

My gracious Lord and Father, quoth she, I remaine
altogether at your highnesse direction, and if for conclusion
of peace you match with so faire a Princesse as is zephira,
it were against reason I should refuse the worthy Prince
Tomano of Romara. When he perceiued the readie good-
will of his Daughter, and his two Sisters by this time
were come to the Courte: after hee had welcommed them
in most gracious manner he entered into these speeches. I
thought it verie expedient (faire Sisters) since you under-
stand

THE HISTORIE

stand the peace concluded betwene the King of Grisca and my selfe, to acquaint you with other matter greatly concerning you.

There cometh hether in the companie of the Princesse Zephira, two strange Knights of very rare perfections to whom I would willingly haue you vse such especiall behauiour, as we might purchase the meanes to enioy them continually in our Courte, for no other intent I promise you, but onelie that they may match with you in marriage. Your Sister Lyzanda, (quoth he to the eldest) I commit to the chiefest Knight, the very same man that most valiantlie tooke mee prisoner in the battell: and you Aurecinda, (for so was the youngest named) I bequeath to the other, who is one of the goodliest personages that euer nature framed.

Hereunto they were right soone entreated, especially Aurecinda. who though her elder sister were graue and well aduised, yet was she pleasant, quaint and so subtil, as easilie could she practise the meanes to deceaue the wisest man, whereof shee made some experience, as you shall hereafter perceaue in the Chapters following. The Soldane hauing sent for all the Kings, Princes and Lords his Subjects, to be present on the day of this great solemnitie: the Prince Tomano, earnestlie desiring to see his best beloued, desire Palmerin Tryneus and the Princesse Zephira, that they might sette forwards to Harano. But Muzabelino, who knew what troubles would succeed the marriage, aduised the King Abimor not to goe: and counselled the two Princes Trineus and Palmerin, to keepe themselves continuallie Armed, because the Soldane was a man continuallie subject to uncertaine chaunces. So giving to each of them a Cote of Armes, of Crimson Veluet most curiously embroyded with Pearles, hee departed from them, returning backe againe to the Cittie of Grisca. Now ride these Princes ioyfullie to Harano, where they were receiued by the Soldane with wonderful pompe and

OF PALMERIN D'OLIVA.

honour, each one admiring the rare beautie of the Princesse, Zephira, who was conducted with such a royall traine, as neuer was the like seene before in Harano. At the Cittie Gate the Soldane met them, and in a sumptuous Coche, accompanied them to the Pallace, where after many solemne courtesies one each side deliuered, and such magnificentall royaltie becoming the time and place, the Soldane came to his sisters, who had not yet talked with the two strange Knights, and thus spake.

Sisters, so the ende that hereafter you shall not bee beguiled, the Knights that accompanie my Ladie the Princesse, and whom I haue so much commended to you, are Christians: notwithstanding they be such, as they twaine deserue greater honour, then I am any way able to expresse. As for their comely staturs, after that your eye hath conferred with your heart, I referre my opinion to your iudgement, regard then that they bee loued and esteemed, as their perfections doe worthilie deserue. Aurecinda the youngest and most voluntarie Sister, hauing her eye continually fixed on the Prince Tryneus, thus conferred with her selfe.

My Brother verie lightly commaundeth vs to loue these strange Knights, I know not what my Sisters opinion is: as for mine owne, the beginning alreadie of my loue is such, that if I doe not quickly obtaine my desire, I feare that my affection is rated at the price of my life. The time is passed ouer with many delights, and dailie pastimes after the Persian manner, but all this while Lizanda and Aurecinda are tormented with loue, so that all patience was vtterlie denied them, yet bearing this weightie burden so well as they could, at length the two Sisters came to the Princesse Zephiraes Chamber, where they found Palmerin and Tryneus conferring together, feigning the cause of their coming to bid the Princesse good morrow. Palmerin perceiuing that Lizanda suddainly changed her colour, imagined the cause of her secret disease, and being

loth to be tempted with any such occasion, dissembling that he saw her not, took Zephira by the hand, and leading her to the window, found some cause of conference, which Lizanda perceiving, in anger shee flew forth of the Chamber, yet Aurecinda would not follow her: for shee being thoroughly conquered with love, neither regarding feare, shame, or other such likely behaviour seemely in Maidens, took Aryneus by the hand, and causing him to sit downe by her, thus began. I do not a little marvaile Sir Knight, that when Ladies come to see you, their entertainment is no better. It is not the manner of Gentlemen to bee so solitarie, without having some friend or beloved, which you shall soon find in this Court of higher calling then you imagine, if Ladies may discern some signe of your favourable liking. In good faith Madam, answered Tryneus, if to you and your Sister, I have not done such duty as becometh, it proceeded by forgetfulness, or my mind caried away with other occasions, for nature made me obedient to Ladies. If these words Sir Knight (quoth she) proceed from your heart, I can assure you to beloved of such a one, who is not unworthy the like good will: and of such account is she with the Soldane, as he shal create you one of the greatest Lords in Persia, so please you to stay in his highnesse Court. That may not be (quoth Tryneus) for so soon as the Soldane, and the Prince Tomano shall be espoused, I must needs depart with my companion, about affaires of very great importance. Palmerin who with one eare listened to the Princessa Zephira, and with the other to the words of Aurecinda, after she was departed the Chamber, thus spake to Tryneus.

Good friend, beware of this Ladie, that shee cause you not to offend God, and violate the loyaltie you owe to Madame Agriola. Such experience have I had in these actions, as when Ladies have enterprised their amorous surrie, if they cannot compasse it by the meanes of men, they will adventure it with hellish familiars, that can deceive the

the very wisest, especially in this wicked Countrey, where is no knowledge of God or his Lawes. Beside you know, that such impudent love, cannot be carried about without such apt messengers, and from whence proceedeth many inconveniences. Brother, answered Tryneus, feare not my constancie: for my Ladies love hath taken such sure foundation, as death cannot make me false to her, yet proved his words contrary in the end, and for which he repented afterward.

While these delights continued, Maucetto, Ambassadour to the Soldane of Babylon arrived at the Courte, where the Monarch of Persia received him very honourably: willing him to conceale the newes till the marriages were past, which on the morow was performed with marvellous royaltie. As the Princes and Lords accompanied the Soldane to the Temple, it happened that Aurecinda was conducted by the Prince Tryneus: whereof shee being not a little glad, by the way entred into these speeches. Ah my true friend and Lord Tryneus, when will the day come that I may be thus led, to espouse the man whom I love more deere then my life: Madame, quoth Tryneus, I cannot marvell sufficiently to see you thus chaunged, considering the greatest Lord in the Orient may be thought too simple for such a Wife: yet did you choose one that perhaps would not espouse you, my Lord the Soldane being your Brother, may constrain him thereto. Where-hence (quoth shee) proceedeth my sorrow, for he whom I love, is not the Soldanes Subject, nor doth agree with mee in faith and opinion: he will give no eare to mine intreaties, much lesse to such a one, as can make him one of the greatest Lords in Persia.

But thinke you my Lord that I can conceale, what you may plainely discern in mine eyes: You are the onely man my hart hath chosen, and whom the Soldane loveth more then his Brother. Alas Madame, quoth the Prince, unfitting is it that a Knight errant, should espouse the

THE HISTORIE

Suffers of so great a Lord, as is the Soldane of Persia. And would his Maestie so much honoz me, yet the contrarietie of our faith is such an impeach, as flathie it may not be: for rather will I bee tozne in peeces, then match with a Pagan, or renounce my faith for her loue. No, no, my Lord, said the Princeesse, I will renounce mine for your loue, and worship Iesus Christ the Son of the blessed Virgin. Well woorthie then were I of reproch, quoth Trineus, if I should not requite you with loue againe, considering what you aduenture for my sake.

As they would haue proceeded further in talke, Colmelio, Palmerins Squire, whom Maucetto had bought, standing to see the traines of Persian Lords and Ladies passe by, espied his Maister and the Prince Tryneus, wherfore pressing through the Guard of Archers, he came to the Prince, and taking him by the mantle, said: Most happie be this houre my noble Lord, to find you and my Maister Palmerin. What fortune hath brought thee hither Colmelio, said Tryneus, hast thou yet spoken to thy Maister? No my Lord, answered Colmelio, hee conducteth the Princeesse with the Calife of Siconia, wherfore I durst not presume to trouble him.

Beleeue mee, said the Prince, but thou shalt speake with him, and while the Arch-Flamin was performing the Ceremonies in the Temple, Tryneus presented him to his Maister Palmerin, who was thereat so ioyfull, as if hee had gotten the best Citty in Persia. Hee demaunded by what meanes he escaped the Pirats hands, the true discourse whereof Colmelio rehearsed: and how Maucetto the Ambassadour bought him, as Ptolome and he were brought to the Soldane of Babilon his Court to be sold, and there doth Ptolome finde great fauour as I haue heard, of the faire Princeesse Alchidiana the Soldans Daughter, onely for your sake. Thou tellest me wonders said Palmerin, depart not from me til after Dinner, when I wil goe to thy Maister Maucetto to demaunde thee: which I hope hee will not

OF PALMERIN D'OLIVA.

not denie, because when I was knight to Alchidiana, hee was one of my speciall good friends. After the solemnitie of the mariage was ended, and Dinner ended at the Pallace for preparation of parting: Palmerin calling Colmelio, went with him to the Ambassadour Maucetto, who not a little abashed to see him, that was generally reputed dead in the Soldans Court, came and embraced him with these speeches. My Lord Palmerin, what great God hath raised you againe? The Soldane was credibly informed, that you and Olorico were drowned in the Sea: for which both hee and Madame Alchidiana more lamented, then for the losse of his whole Army before the City of Constantinople.

Palmerin dissembling as though he knew not thereof, seemed to maruell thereat very much, and the better to shadow his conceit, said: that after the tempest was ceased, which cast him very farre from the Soldans Armie, thinking to returne to Constantinople, he was by violent windes brought to the Ile of Malsada, where the Prince Olorico, quoth he, and all the rest of my companions remaine enchanted, whom I hope to recouer againe after I can get hence. Little thought I my Lord, answered Maucetto, to find you in this Countrey, but did Madame Alchidiana know so much, her sorrows would soone be conuerted into ioy.

But what newes with you my Lord? said Palmerin: What may bee the cause of your Ambassage? I will not conceale the truth thereof from you, quoth Maucetto, I come to demaund aide of the Soldane of Persia, for a fresh invasion against Constantinople. I maruel, quoth Palmerin, that he will enterprise the voyage againe, which hath cost him so much, and returned so little profit: rather would I counsell him to forbear, and so will I write to his Maestie before your departure, as also to Madame Alchidiana his Daughter. But I would request one curtesie of you Sir Maucetto, that you would giue mee your name

THE HISTORIE

Colmelio, who in time past hath been my Squire. Whither shall you haue with all my heart, quoth Maucetto, and not onely him, but whatsoeuer else is mine beside, so please you to accept thereof.

I thanke you good Sir, answered Palmerin, and I doubt not in time to requite your gentleness. While they thus talked together, the Soldane came to Palmerin, saying: Will not you make one my Lord in the daunce? the Ladies say they cannot haue your company. In sooth my gracious Lord, answered Palmerin, little do I delight in any such exercises, very earnest affaires haue I with the Ambassadeur Maucetto, which craue suddaine and speedie dispatch. Beside, faine would I know some tidings of him from my Lady Alchidiana, from whose seruice I haue now discontinued a yere and more. The Soldane abashed at these words, said: I pray you tell mee the trueth, are not you he that slew the Prince Amarano of Nigrea in Combat, and after ward two other of his Brethren, of which exploits remaine such fame through all Turkie? In sooth my Lord, answered Palmerin, being betwed to my Ladies seruice, I neuer could suffer her honor to be any way dissained, and in that duty I will continue, for the manifold curtesies I haue receiued by her. By the liuing God, said the Soldane, now thinke I my selfe the happiest Prince in the world, hauing the man in my Court, whose very name makes the stoutest to tremble. But saying we are thus far entred, tell me: is the Princesse Alchidiana so beautifull as fame reports her? What is she my Lord, quoth he, and much more then fame is able to vtter: beside, shee is one of the most gracious and affable Princesses, that euer I beheld in any Kings Court.

Now is night come, and after the Courtly pastimes were ended, the Bridegrome went to receiue the honour of his Bride, commaunding Palmerin to bee intreated as his own person: which not a little contented the Princesse Lyzanda, thinking heereby (alas too lauishly) to obtaine him

OF PALMERIN D'OLIVA.

him for her Husband, but herein she was deceived, so that her rash loue procured her miserable death. Aurecinda likewise continually courted Tryneus, as though she had alwaies been trained by in his companie: wherefore one day, after hee had been warned foure or fife times by Palmerin, he thus spake to her. Madaine, if your honesty and vertue hath imprinted in Noble mindes, an especiall conceit of your continencie and chastitie: I maruaile now what many will thinke, in that you should not thewe any such signes of loue to me, for it seemes ye yeld the Citie before any assault begiuen. All these speeches could not quallifie her humour, for loue had so emboldened her with such vnshamefastnes, as shee made no conscience of following the cause, giuing credit to one of her Ladies perswasions, that by good pursuite all things enioy a happy end.

CHAP. LIIII.

How Maucetto the Ambassadeur to the Monarch Misos of Babylon, declared his message before the Soldane and all the Princes of Persia. And of the Combat between Tryneus, and the King Orzadine of Galappa.



After the marriage feast was fully ended, the Soldane sent for the Ambassadeur Maucetto, who in the presence of all the Persian Lords, thus began to deliver his message. Mighty and illustrious Monarch of Persia, the Soldane of Babilon my Lord & Master, hauing euermore continued in faithfull alliance

THE HISTORIE

to your Maiestie: lets you know by me his great and damageable losse, which he sustained before the City of Constantinople. For recovery whereof, he humbly intreateth your highnesse most favourable assistance: which well you cannot denie him, in respect of the great sway you hold in Turkie, as also for the establishment of our faith, and generall destruction of the Grecian Empire. Ambassadors quoth the Soldane, I will better consider hereon, and answer you accordingly. So calling all the Princes present to counsell, diuers confused iudgements were amongst them: whereupon he sent for Palmerin, and before them all demanded his opinion, whereto hee shaped this answer. Might it stand with your highnes liking, and the good conceit of all these noble Princes, gladly would I bee excused in this matter: wherein I may not speake without suspicion, because the entent is against mine owne native country, and those whom I agree withall in faith and Religion.

But seeing your Maiestie will needes know my iudgement: pardon in speaking boldlie what I would be loth to dissemble. I think no one of you my gracious Lordes, but wel remembers the late warres against the King of Grisca: since which time the Souldiours are hardly recovered, and extremitie were it to endanger the liues of wounded men. Moreover, if the Soldan of Babilon who now demandeth succour, sending his Armie into Greece, where raignes a Prince so mightie and puissant, as well could repulse them with shamefull confusion. Persuade your selues as yet there is no other, but he that triumpht in conquest before, I feare can doe the like againe, and thus my Lords is mine opinion.

Well haue you answered, quoth the Soldane, and this peaceable conclusion liketh me best, so arising from counsell, they went into the great Hall: where before their coming, as the Prince Zephira was deuising with many Lords & Ladies, entred an Armed Knight, accompanied with

OF PALMERIN D'OLIVA.

with six other in Armour, and threlue Squyres, who seeing the Soldane not in his Chayre of Estate, demanded of the Quene where he was? Knight (quoth she) he is in counsell with the Princes and Lordes of his Realme, and long it will not be before he come: in meane while you may passe the time in conference with the Ladies. By God (saide Trineus to the Quene, I thinke hee scant knoweth howe to conferre with Ladies, for his indiscreet behauiour shewes him to bee the worst nurtured Knight that euer I sawe: Saw you not (quoth he to the Princesse Zephira) how unmannerly he sate downe, without vsing any Reuerence to your Maiestie.

The Knight sitting strouting in a Chayre, and hauing unclasped his Helmet (saide to the Quene) I pray you tell me Madame, are those two strange Knights in this Court, that were against your Husbande in the Battell and toke him? They be Syr Knight (quoth she) well and in good disposition, thanks to the Soueraigne Creator. I aske not of their health (quod he) How are they called? The one (saide the Quene) is named Palmerin, the other Tryneus. And I (quoth he) am Orzadine King of Galappa, to whom fortune hath bene more fauourable in Loue, then in Riches: making me friends to the faire Oronia, Daughter to the Califfe of Siconia, and Sister to the Prince Donadel, who was slaine in the Battell against the King Abimar, she in my iudgement, not hauing her second in Beautie, at whose request I haue trauelled the greatest part of Asia, to spreade her Name, and honorable reputation, which I haue done to her perpetuall fame: and returning to her when my Labors were finished, in stead of toy and pleasure, I found her sad and peniue for the death of her Brother. These newes were worse to me then death, and to comfort her, I promised to reuenge her Brothers misfortune: and this is the onely cause of my coming, for hauing Combatted with him that slew the Prince, her Que to mee will be the greater, and mine honour shall be spread with more advantage.

I believe well (quoth the Quene,) if you escape with life from the Combat: But tell me Sir Knight, why beare you such ill will to him that slewe the Prince? considering that it was don in plaine Battell, and he his enemy who would haue done as much to him if he could. Not for this cause alone will I enter the Combat, said Orzodine, but for I am desirous to let him know that I am more fauoured in Loue then he: and as I am one of the most happy Louers, so am I the best Knight in the world, which I will maintaine against any that dare gaine-say it. Happy loue, Dieu vous guard, said Tryneus. If the Poets had hitherto spared the description of Cupid, Sonne to the Goddess of Loue, now might they iustly haue set him downe for blinde: yet is hee moste worthy to be condemned, that he would vouchsafe any fauour to the most foolish among men, he hauing Dedicated me to the seruice of a Lady, to whom your gentle Iro-nia, Oronia I should say, doth not deserue the name of her Seruant.

For the rest, whereas you vaunt your selfe to be the best Knight in the world, your great folly is too apparant, for there are many knightes Errant in the world, who can giue you a braue Camizado at the Lance: and after they haue soyled you in the Foist, bestow a little paines to take your greene head from off your grosse shoulders. My selfe that slew the Brother to your Goddess of Beauty, will do you so much pleasure as to heale the incurable disease where with you are Day and Night tormented. O diuine spirits, cryed the Pagan, fauour me so much, that this Knight may but dare to enter the field with mee. Yes I dare (sayde Tryneus) and before we part, I doubt not but to make thee quiet enough.

Orzodine presently shew his Gauntlet as his Gage, and Tryneus a Golden Bracelet, which Aurecinda had giuen him, entreating Zephira to keepe them, which she refused to doe, fearing the danger of the Prince Tryneus. Whereupon the Soldane entered the Hall, leading Palmerin

by

by the hand, but when they saw the Armed Knight thus to contend with Tryneus, they marvelled greatly what might be the occasion thereof. When Orzodine saw the Soldane was sette, hee entered into these speeches. Soldane I am hither come to accuse thee, of a villainous Age which thou hast committed, Harboursing in thy Courte, the man that slew the valiaunt Donadell, whose murder thou canst not so cunningly couer, but that thy Treachery shall be openly discovered.

What art thou (saide the Soldane) that darrest speake thus presumptuously in our Presence? Orzodine King of Galappa (quoth he) of whome thou hast heard heretofore, and nowe haue I presented my Gage against this Knight, which I will maintaine in despite of the proudest. The Soldane abashed at this Cuent, sought to dissuade them from the Combatte, because he had heard greates speeches of the Kings Promise, but all was in vaine: For Orzodine was so Obstinate, and Tryneus so earnest, to reuenge the Turkes proud blasphemy against his Lady, as they would not be pacified till the field was graunted them. Let vs haue Judges presently (quoth Orzodine) and the field assured for our Combat, that I may discipline this glorious stranger.

Take not such haste (sayde Tryneus) for I feare thou wilt thinke thy coming too soone. Immediately were the two combatants Armed, the Judges placed in their Tent, when the Soldane and Palmerin with many ether Princes, went to behold this exploit. But such a mightie man was the King of Galappa, as Palmerin feared his Friends successe. The Trumpets sounding, the Knights brake their Lances brauely, and met together so furiously with their bodies, as they were both throwne out of their Saddles: but they quickly recovering themselves againe, drew their Swords, and marched against eache other with like courage, as did Achilles against noble Hector. Long continued the fight with danger on either side, but the King of Galappa

broke

THE HISTORIE

stroke such mighty strokes, being a man of equall stature with a Giant, as he wounded Tryneus in many places: and such was his ill fortune: After long trauesling about, he set his foot vntrawly on the truncheon of a lance, whereby he fell downe backwards to the ground. Orzodine taking aduantage of this fall, sette his foote on the Princes breast, struing to pull his Helmet from his head: but God knows in what agony Palmerin was now, when he breathed forth these speeches to himselfe. Ah Heauens (quoth he) haue I taken such paine and trauell to finde my friende, and must he now dye among his enemyes? Aurecinda, likewise, ready to yelde by her ghost with griefe, seeing Palmerin ready to sworne as hee stood. Alas (quoth she) is it not enough that my friend must die, but his noble Companion will beare him companie? While this doubtfull feare was among the Courtiers, Tryneus had so well sculfeled with Orzodine, as he lay along by him likewise, when drawing a Pocket-dagger, hee stabbd it through his Helmet, into one of his eyes, so that hee nayled his head to the ground. Orzodine feeling himselfe wounded to the death, gaue a very loude crye: when Tryneus hauing gotten his Helmet off, presently smote his head from his shoulders. If the Knightes of Galappa were nowedisinayde, and the Soldane Palmerin, Zephira, Tomano, and all the rest ioyfull, I leaue to your iudgements: especially Palmerin, who reioycing that Tryneus had thus conquered his enemye, entered the Cityes, and embraced him, and bringing him forth the field, he was welcommed to the Pallace, with wonderfull honour.

The Body of the dead King was deliuered to them that came with him, with maruellous reprehension of their Masters most audacious Challenge: and so with great heavynesse they returned home againe. For would the Soldane longer stay in his Court the Assirian Embassadour: But excused himselfe to the Babilonian Mylos, that he could not give him any assistance, couering this answer vnder his

unfor-

OF PALMERIN DOLIVA.

unfortunate battell against the King Abimar, Maucetto seeing that to stay longer would not auaille him, tooke his leaue of the Soldane, saying. Albeit my Lord you cannot giue my Sister anie assistance: yet let Palmerin returne to him at his departure from your Court. What I can doe herein, answered the Soldane, your Lord shall be assured to finde, although I thinke his minde be otherwise addicted: but you were best to know his minde your selfe, because I heard him say he would write to Madame Alchidiana.

Maucetto departing to Palmerins lodging, the Soldane went to see his Sisters, of whom he demaunded, if they had as yet practised anie thing with the knights. My Lord, answered Aurecinda, who in all things was more prompt then her eldest Sister, I haue fixed my loue on the knight Trineus, with full resolution neuer to loue anie other: dooth not he intend to stay heere in your Courte, much lesse (I feare) to make me his wife. As for my Sister, she cannot compasse the meane, how to impart her loue to Sir Palmerin. Right strange is it, quoth the Soldane, that the promises you haue made them, and so apparent signes of ardent affection, cannot dissuade them to make choyse of you: Doubtles they bee some Great Princes, who to see the fashions of the world haue thus disguised themselves. Continue your loue as you haue begunne: and if by other meanes you cannot stay them, aduenture your honors as a meane to entrappe them. And now both occasion well serue you Sister Aurecinda, for by courteous intreating Trineus now is wounded, you may more profite in one howre, then you haue doone during this tedious pursuite.

Speedelesse was it for the Soldane thus to perswade her, in that she laboured for no other matter, keeping Tryneus companie both day and night: but Palmerin offended thereat, secretly thus rebuked the Prince. What meane you my Lord? If you mend not this order I must be angry with

with

THE HISTORIE

with you. You see this Prince exceeds in her desire, and you give her occasion to continue it: I know not what will happen hereon, but my minde perswades mee that you will hardly depart hence with honour. He advised I desire you and take this of me: that the wisest man will lende his eares to loose persons, and follow their affections: hee shall become more vnreasonable then a brute Beast, regarding nothing but what is obiect to his eies, and what the flesh, (the onelie mortall enemy to the spirit) shall soonest perswade him.

CHAP. LV.

How Aurecinda Sister to the Soldane of Persia, pursued the Prince Tryneus so neere, as in the ende, shee had her desire, and what followed thereon.



Almerin hauing thus schooled the Prince Tryneus, that he should giue no eare to the entilements of Aurecinda: Lyzanda came to his Chamber, and feigning urgent busines with him, tooke him aside, deliuering her affections in this manner. Right happy would I thinke my selfe Sir Palmerin,

so you would deigne to continue in the Soldanes Court: who doubtlesse would aduance you to the highest steppes of honoz, and giue mee to you in marriage that am his Sister, and a Ladie worthy some reckoning.

Palmerin offered to depart to the Chamber, but Lyzanda stayed him, proceeding thus. Alas my Lord will you neuer vouchsafe to speake to mee? now see I well that you are

OF PALMERIN D'OLIVA.

are the most disloyall knight in the worlde. Madame, answered Palmerin, rather will I die then one iote of disloyaltie shall be found in me: nor can I graunt your importunate requests. Without committing notorious treason to my Ladie and offending my God, whom foolish loue shall neuer make me to displease. So without any further speeches he went to the Prince Tomano, leauing the poore Ladie well neere dead with this unkinde refusall, who going to her owne cabbinet, thus began to breathe forth her sorowes.

Ah Loue, the most cruell passion that euer entred the hart of any Ladie, how great and meruailous is thy power: Some thou ensozeest to desire and intreate, without being heard or regarded: others thou causest to be happily fauoured, esteemed of their friends, Seruants and louers. Unhappie that I am, but much more unhappy is another, accursed be the hower when thou diddest commaund me to loue the most cruell and unkinde among men. Can there be anie Ladie in the world more disgraced then I am? had I not reuealed my loue to him, some comfort I might thereby enjoy among my sorowes: but the frozen mind knowing my loue: dooth holde mee in the greater contempt. My Sister tolde me, that by too long concealment of loue, manie haue lost them they most esteemed: but I (alas) doe finde it cleane contrarie. Now was Aurecinda (by chance) in the Chamber next her Sisters Cabinette, and hearing her thus sorrowfullie complain: she came to her, and thus spake.

Good Sister discomfort not your selfe by your friends refusall: I would not thinke my selfe worthy the name of a woman, if I could not winne you the man that thus torments you. As for me, I haue found the meane to compass mine owne desire. Yet could not all these speeches appease her, wherefore she left her, and vnderstanding by one of her Ladies, Tryneus should this night suppe in the Soldans Chamber: whercuppon she went to the Ladies hote house,

THE HISTORIE

house, and there prepared his bed, and such swete delicate bathes, as might mouue the spirits of a verie staid Gentleman. This doone, she came to one of the Pages of honor, Brother to the Ladie whome she most of all trusted, saying.

I pray thee good Page, goe to the Prince Tryneus his Chamber, and there attende till he come forth: then saying that some one hath doone thee iniurie, thou shalt intreate him to helpe thee against him that abused thee. If he condescend, as doubtlesse he will: bring him to the bath, where I will stay his comming with my Sister, and so soone as he is entred, make fast the doore on him, and get thee gone, but in any case be secret herein, and I will recompence thee to thine owne content. The wagge was so well instructed in his arte, as he failed not in a nyght one point of his charge. But as the Prince Tryneus came alone from his Chamber, fell on his knees before him, saying. My Lord, if euer you pittied a Gentleman abused, let mee intreate you to reuenge my cause, on a villaine that hath too much wronged me.

Tryneus, who had often sene the Page in his Chamber with Aurecinda answered; Beleue me Page, it were pittie to denie thy request, considering thou doost demand it so courteously: shall I neede to be better provided then I am? So my Lord, quoth he, your sword is sufficient. So was he conducted by the page along the Gallery, and being come to the appointed place, he opened the doore thus speaking to the prince. My Lord, the partie you must deale withall is in his Chamber, accompanied but with one Ladie, wherefore you may enter secure from daunger. Hee was no sower in, but the Page clapt to the doore and departed. Now was Tryneus not a little amazed, when he saw no bedie but the Princeesse with her Ladie, she being come thither to bathe herselfe, and layd in her bed: but in such surpassing brauerie, as Iupiter with his lightning, Neptune with his threeforked Pace, and Pluto with his Cerberus

OF PALMERIN DOLIVA.

berus, could stand and wonder thereat. So finely had shee tressed the golden tresses of her ayre, and her head-attire embellished with such goodly Orientall Pearles, as made her seeme a beautifull Angell, being couered with a gorgeous Canapie, resembling the Sunne vnder a faire Cloude. Wetwene her daintie breastrs hung a pprecious Carbuncle which supplied the office of Venus her firebrand: when she saw Trineus stand so agast, she said. Why: my Lord, are you more afraid of a naked Ladie, then of the most puissant knight in Persia, armed cap a pe? I can iudge no lesse, seeing you dare approach no neerer. In sooth my Lord, quoth the Pages Sister, you may thinke your selfe happie to be desired of such a Ladie, whom mightie kings and Princes haue earnestly sought, and would gladly haue had the least fauour shee bestowes on you. So taking him by the hand, shee caused him to sit downe in a Chayre by the beds side, and giuing her Mistresse her Harpe, she departed leauing them together. Ah Page, quoth Trineus, how hast thou deceiued me: What: said the Princeesse, you forget where you are, you must at this time somewhat pittie my sorrowes, and heare a dittie which I haue made for your sake. Then taking her Harpe, she thus began to sing as folloineth,

The Dittie sung by Aurecinda to the Prince Trineus.

THe God of warre, fierce, sterne and rigorous,
when he beheld faire Venus heauenly beauty,
Made small account of her disloyalty,
But suddenly became full amorous.

THE HISTORIE

*Beautie had then her power vigorous,
 Chaunging rough lookes to sweetest secrecy.
 But he I loue, incest with cruelty,
 Doth not regard my torments langourous.
 Why should I then pursue that stubborn minde,
 That with excuses kils my hope out-right?
 Yet if he helpe not, death must me acquite,
 Ah mighty loue in nature most unkind,
 Thou dost constrain me to affect the man,
 That neither fauour, loue, nor kindnes can.*

*What haue I said? the Knight of my desire,
 Is meere diuine, and furthest from compare:
 whose Eagles eyes can well discern my care,
 And with sweet pitties droppes alay this fire.
 The little God hath made him gracious,
 His Mother mild, to ruc the Ladies smart:
 That shrines his liuely Image in her hart,
 Then to despaire becomes no veruious,
 Regard sweet friend the passions of thy Friend,
 whom God and nature hath appointed thine:
 Giue loue his due, and then thou must be mine,
 So shall long sorrow haue a happie end.
 The Persian mid, say boldly thou hast wonne;
 That Monarches, Kings and Princes neere could
 (donne.*

*With excellent cunning did she handle her instrument,
 but with far better grace and affection deliuered her dittie,
 gracing it with such sad countenance, mournfull lookes,
 and renting sighes, and forced the Prince Tryneus to be-
 come exceeding amorous. And burning in this new fierie
 impressi-*

OF PALMERIN DOLIVA.

Impression, beheld the singular beautie of Auricinda, which
 rauished his senses in such sort, as (trembling like the As-
 pen leafe) hee sat downe by her on the beddes side. The
 Princesse laying her Harpe from her, embraced him very
 louinglie with these speeches. Alas my Lord, will you still
 continue in this rigour and cruell inhumanitie? your hart
 is more hard then Adamant, that will not bee mollified
 with so many intreaties: I sweare to you by the Sonne
 that lighteneth the world, vnlesse you graunt me one re-
 quest, before your face will I presently slay my selfe. Full
 well doe I perceiue, quoth Tryneus, that hardly can I es-
 cape misfortune: the Seruant hath deceiued me, and
 now the Distresse seeks my death. Ah Madame, quoth he,
 how can I graunt your request, considering mine offence
 to God, and he that loueth me loyally? Either be as good as
 thy word, quoth she, else stand to the danger that may be-
 fall thee.

Why? Sir Knight, is my beautie of so slender account,
 as I am not worthy to bee helde betweene thine armes?
 wilt thou suffer me to consume in this violent flame, which
 thou maist with such ease and honoz extinguish? hadst thou
 rather see a Ladie spill her hart before thee, then thou wilt
 vouchsafe to preserve her life? Come, come sweet Friend,
 see how loue and his Mother hath made way for thee, re-
 fuse not opportunitie so fauourable offered. What ble-
 mish is on this bodie, that should deserue disdain? If the
 King of Gods would think himself honored with this con-
 quest: much more estimation shouldest thou make hereof.
 In briefe, she was so perfect in her subtiltie, and knew so
 well how to inueigle the Prince with queint speeches and
 sweet embracings: that she made him forget God, his La-
 die, loyaltie, and himselfe, so that of a Maiden, he made her
 the sayrest woman in Persia. When the time came that he
 should depart, the Prin. He said to him; Yet haue I a fur-
 ther request, my Lord, you must promise to meete mee in
 this place at times conuenient, and endeavour with your
 com-

companion, that he may likewise loue my Sister. Tryneus made promise he would, but rather he desired to stab himselfe with his weapon: then that Palmerin should know this great abuse, so heinous did his offence seeme to himselfe.

Aurecinda perswaded her Sister, still to pursue Palmerin with her loue, and what had passed betwene her and the Prince Tryneus, she declared: whereupon her desire grew the greater, yet all was in vaine, for Palmerin would giue no eare to her complaints, which was the cause of this mishap following. Lyzanda aduertised by her Sister, that Tryneus still thus vied her company in the Bath: enuious of her Sisters benefit, and despisefull at Palmerins obstinate refusall, she went to the Soldane, and with many teares thus deliuered her grieffe. Ah my Lord, how much better had it been, that we had neuer knowne these cruell Christian Knights: whose ingratitude will bee the cause of my death: for the younger of them is marvellously beloued of my Sister, who forgetting her faith, honoz, and her obedience to your Maestie, hath dishonored both her selfe and you, onely to make proue of the other Knights cruelty to me. The Soldane admiring his Sisters report, answered.

I did not will my Sister to abuse her selfe, without promise of marriage: but seeing it hath so fallen out, by my fathers soule they shall both repent it. Durst the Traytour abuse me so much in mine owne Court? Why? my Lord, quoth Lyzanda, you are the onely cause thereof, and therefore you must bee angry with no body but your selfe. Let me not lue an holore said the Soldane, if I be not sufficiently reuenged on him: Sister, bee you but secret, and referre the rest to my direction. Then calling for the Captaine of his Guard, willing him to take fiftie knights, and when his Maestie was at Supper, they should goe take his Sister and the knight with her in the Bathe, and afterwards carrie them to strong prison. But see it done secretly,

cretely, quoth he, for if his companion know thereof, it may arise to further inconuenience. And because Palmerin should not misdoubt this treason, all Supper time the Soldane held him in familiar talke: he hoping by this fetch, to stay them still in his Courte, but it fell out afterward to be the cause, that many of his best and chiefest knights were slaine.

Not long had the ambushed knights waited where they were appointed, but the Princesse Aurecinda opened the doze, and came forth with her friend as shee was accustomed: where they were suddenly taken, Tryneus not hauing the leisure to draw his Sword, so was he carried prisoner to one of the strongest Towers in the Pallace, and Aurecinda at the same time to another. Tryneus seeing himselfe thus betraide, fel into these lamentable discourses. Unfortunat wretch that I am, haue I so lately escaped by my friend, the cruell enchauntments of the hellish Malfada, when I endured so many paines and torments, and am now come to the place where they shall be redoubled:

Ah Palmerin my good Brother and companion, what wilt thou say when thou hearest of my taking: but most of all when thou vnderstandest the cause thereof? Miserable wretch, how often did my friend warne me of this inconuenience, yet had not I the grace to credit his counsell: doubtlesse my very conceit of shame, when thou shalt bee acquainted with my foule offence, will bee more grieuous to me then death. What dishonour, paine, torment and punishment, shall bee sufficient for my misdeede? Forlozne and despised Caitife, could not the feare of God, which hath hitherto so graciously protected thee, nor the loyaltie of Agriola, who forsooke Parents, Friends, and all for thee: haue kept thee from this monstrous ade? O eternall God, the man that forsaketh thee is vile and abominable. When I had thy feare before mine eyes, I was at rest and quiet in conscience, esteemed and beloued of all men: but when

THE HISTORIE

thou gauest me raines of libertie, I became dissolute and forgetfull of thee, as also of them that honored me so much. Ah miserable occasion, and those deceits, entilements, and subtil perswasions: how mightie are they in operation? neither men nor diuels could bring me into such danger, as you haue plunged me in by to the eares. Ah villainous Page that first brought me thither, and thou the falsest Ladie in the world art cause of my euill. For are they to be accused but my wretched selfe, who seeking mine owne hurt, found it, and hauing found it, continued in it. Thus sorrowfully wailed Tryneus, where on the contrary side Aurecinda reioyced: for when she considered the estate of her friend, she perswaded her selfe by this meane, that the Soldane her Brother would enforce him to marrie her, which hope made her as ioyfull, as Tryneus was sad and pensiu.

When the Captaine had imprisoned Tryneus & Aurecinda, he came to the Soldane sitting at the Table, saying: Will your Maiestie commaund me any further service? I haue enclosed the knight Tryneus in one Tower, and your Sister Aurecinda in another. Why? quoth the Soldane, did you find them together? I did my Lord, quoth the Captaine, your Sister leading him by the hand out of the Ladies hot house. By Mahomet, quoth the Soldane, but that you speake it, hardlie could I beleue it, what shamefull villainie is this committed in our Pallace: by the greatest God, the fact shall be so worthilie punished, as it shall remaine for a perpetual memory. At these speeches Palmerin was not a little amazed, and dissembling his anger so well as he could, said to the Soldane, I cannot be perswaded my Lord, that Tryneus would commit so vile an acte, without entilement thereto by your Sisters treason: theee beeing (vnder your Maiesties correction) the most shamelesse Girl that euer I saw, for twentie and twentie times haue I seene her follow him, with gestures farre vnfitting one of her calling. Then starting from the Table, quoth he: Con-

sider

OF PALMERIN DOLIVA.

sider what he is, and what thou intendest against him, for neuer was imprisonment so dearely bought as this will be, and before thou puttest him to death, it shall cost me my life, and the liues of an hundred thousand knights beside, in reuenge of his wrong. Being thus enflamed with ire, hee could not so giue ouer, but thus began againe. By God Soldane, thy treason is so manifest, as thou canst not hide it, full well doe I vnderstand thy flatteries, whereby thou hopest to keepe vs in thy service, but farre art thou fro thy reckoning, for rather will I be torne in a thousand peeces, then endure the reproch of such a mans service, who vnder colour of friendship imprisoneth his knights, and afterward threatneth them with death. Tomano, Dramino, Corax, and many other knights belonging to the king Abimar, seeing Palmerin in such a rage, as it seemed the fire did sparckle fro his eyes: endeouored to perswade him, and Tomano thus spake to the Soldane. My Lord, vnder my safe conduct, and your faith promised, are these two knights come with vs to your Courte, and you haue now imprisoned one of them, aduise your selfe of speedie iustice: for this shame done him is against all right, and for euer shall you be noted with breach of faith: beside, I repute his iniurie as done to my selfe. The Soldane seeing the Princes thus moued, although himselfe procured those fittie Armed knights to take Tryneus, yet with smoth countenance he thus answered. Content your selues my friends, Tryneus in right shall be defended: and if I find my Sister culpable, she shall be punished as she were a stranger. More I demand not, said Palmerin, for I am assured, that by her flatteries Tryneus hath been seduced. So departing to his Chamber, he met his two Squires, Bellechino and Colmelio, of whom he demanded, if they at any time perceived the loue betweene Tryneus and the Princesse Aurecinda.

They answered that they did perceiue it, and diuers nights they saw him goe to the Princesse Chamber. And

Why did you not reucale it to me: quoth he, woorthily haue you deserued death, in concealing the shame of your Masters Friend, wherein my selfe cannot escape vntouched. Hereupon he Armed himselfe, and sending for the Prince Tomano, said to him.

I thinke it best my Lord, that you keepe your ordinarie guards about your person, till we know how the Soldane will deale with Tryneus. As for my selfe, I intend (if your Brother Drumino and the Prince Corax will toyne with mee) to keepe the field with the thousand Knights that came hither with vs, that none may enter into the Cittie without our licence. In meane while, you may send a Courtier to the King your Father, that he presently send vs what helpe he may. Sir Palmerin, answered Tomano, not onely my Knights shall enter the field for you, but my selfe likewise, so please you to commaund me, and what you thinke best for the deliuerance of your friende Tryneus, I will bee willing to accomplish to my bittermost. Presentlie will I send a Horseman to Grisca, and conferre with my Brother Drumino, that his Knights and Gentlemen may be Armed that came from Sauara, as also they that came with my Nephew Corax from Garara, which will bee in number a thousand moze: your selfe in meane time may get forth your necessities.

Who then had seene the Knights Arming, the Horses prouiding, the bag and baggage carrying, would haue said, that Palmerin was as much feared & beloued in a strange Countrey, as in his owne. Such was the diligence of the Nobles and Souldiers of Grisca, Sauara and Garara, as they were right soone before the Pallace attending for Palmerin, who commanded Tryneus his Horse and rich Armour should be brought forth by his Squires, leauing in his Chamber all the riches and treasure, that the Soldane and the Prince Zephira had giuen him, and mounting on his owne Courser, he came and embraced y Prince Corax, saying: Let vs depart (my Lord) from these ingrate

full

full people that neuer knew how to entertaine strangers: well may the Soldane thanke the Prince Zephira his Wife, else I had smitten his head from off his shoulders. There the Ensignes displayed, the Drummes and Trumpets sounding cheerfully, as the noyse was heard through all the Cittie.

And in this manner went Palmerin to the field, which raised such a tumult among the people, and such sedition amongst the Nobles of Persia, as they boldly tolde the Soldane, that most vnaduisedly he had imprisoned the strange Knight and the Prince his Sister, and faith ought euermoze be defence for a stranger. The Soldane perceined his follie well enough, but as the man blighting in his euill, without altering his humour, regarded not their speches: commaunding that they should all Arme themselves, and charging eache one expressly not to speake to Tryneus without leaue. Why: (quoth hee) the frole that is gone, to much abused mee in my Pallace: by my Crowne, I will punish both his pride and his companions, maugre all them that dare say the contrarie. And so hee flogged from them into his Chamber.

CHAP. LVI.

¶ How the Soldane seeing hee could not perswade Tryneus to marrye his Syster, condemned him to death, and what followed afterwards.



Tomano, who by the good counsell and aduiseiment of Palmerin remained in the Cittie, with two hundred knights for the defence and safegard of his person: sought by all the best meanes he possibly could for the deliuerance of Prince Tryneus, and commaunting to the Queen Zephira, thus spake: O adan,

scire

THE HISTORIE

seeing men can no way perswade the Soldane, trye what the pleasing speeches of Ladies will doe: who (in my iudgement) cannot come from him, without obtaining theyr request.

The Soldane having forgotten the especiall fauour, which heretofore he receyued by Syr Palmerin, for whose safety he gaue both faith and promise: at the simple report of Madame Lizanda, hath this Night past committed Sir Trynens Prisoner in the strongest Tower, saying he was found in the Bathe with Aurecinda. And so earnestlye dooth he prosecute the matter, as that notwithstanding the great intreatie of all the Princes and my selfe, he will not discharge him, but hath sworne that in despite of vs all hee shall be punished. What? (quoth the Quene) doth my Lord so much forget himselfe: that he will seeke his shame who hath done him such honour? Belieue mee Madame (answered the Prince, I haue told ye the trueth: therefore when you shall walke to his Chamber, which is the place where all demaunds are graunted to Ladies, you may put him in remembraunce of the Prince, and to giue some good words for him, that so willingly aduentured his life for you, Ah my Lord (said Zephira) I feare the Soldane will hardly heare me: For when such mightie persons are in anger, little account make they of Loue or vertue, yet will I willingly doe what lyeth in me.

So bidding the Prince good Night, she went weeping to the Soldanes Chamber: which his Maiesty perceiuing, came and embraced her, demanding who had any way offended her? Euen you my Lord (quoth she) and in such sorte, as if presently you doe not helpe it, I doubt the danger will be very great. I vnderstand you haue sent Trynens to Prison, and withall sworne that hee shall dye: if you suffer such an infamous dede, thinke not but that my life will speedily follow him. Madame (answered the Soldane, what I haue done is to no other ende, but to stay him and his company in my Courte, because theyr renowne is so

OF PALMERIN DOLIVA.

so famous in Turkie. With this excuse he so qualified the Quene, that she durst not moue any further questions. The next day hee sent for the Prince Tomano, and with many other great Lordes went to see his Sister Aurecinda, framing his speeches to her in this manner.

Sister, you haue shewne your selfe of good gouernment, and great estimation made you of honour and vertue, in daring to thinke so soyle a thought as you haue committed in acte. Didst thou not consider the place of Honour in my Courte: what shame hast thou done to the house of Persia, which hitherto neuer sustained blemish: and now is soyled by thy immodest dealing with a stranger. So much doth thy heynous faulte offend mee, that if he make thee not his Wife, thou shalt dye the death as the Law hath ordained.

Soldane (answered the Princeesse fiercely) in vaine seekest thou to recall the Acte committed. Dost thou thinke my faulte so offenseu, which first was perpetrated by thy perswasion? To Loue a Gentleman, faire, well spoken, comely, swete, gracious, and benigne, and who is of highest desert among all other: is it a matter deseruing death? chiefly to a Princeesse, whose youth may wel excuse her trespass: If it be worthy the name of a sinne, it is more to thee then mee: For thou didst first intreate, perswade, and commaund mee to Loue him: yea, thou diddest inuent the meane how to winne him.

By thy deuile first did I make proffer of that, which is the only sweet solace in Loue. If thou therefore wilt put me to death, my care is the lesse, seeing that with the mosse perfect among men I haue obtained my desires. And for the fault shall not be layd on the best knight in the world, my self prouoked him thereto, I called him, I deceiued him: and in briebe, more by force then Loue I constrained him to yelde, to ease those passions that hourly tormented me.

When the Soldan beheld the impudencie of his Sister, he thus replyed. Very true it is, that I commaunded thee to Loue him, but not in this sort: whereof I can request no bet.

better prove then thine owne shamelesse speeches, which I will severely correct before it be sight. So departing from her, hee went to Tryneus with these wordes. *Spy Knight*, I did neuer thinke that a man wise and valiant, as thou hast bene esteemed, hauing seene and frequented many Princes Courtes, could imagine an act so foule and detestable, in his Pallace that hath so highly honoured thee. It behoueth thee therefore to take thy choise of two things: either to amende thy fault by espousing my Sister, whom I frankly giue thee, and therewithall to renounce thy Wap-tisine, or suffer cruell death in reward of thine offence. Soldane answered Tryneus, thou abusest thy selfe in thinking to beguile me.

Spy G D D, if it arme me with patience to the death, rather then for Riches and Honours momentarie, I should forsake my Faith to my Saviour, by whom I hope to enjoy euermlasting happinesse. As for the fact thou twittest mee withall, well may it be excused: for I haue neither ravished or violated, but by force of Loue erred, with her that threatened her owne Death before my face, except I consented to her desire: yet in respect of mine Honour, much better had it bene to haue suffered her dye: but to thinne the reproach of too seuerer and inhumane nature, I yielded to her Amorous petitions. Notwithstanding, if thou therefore wilt put mee to death, thou canst not doe me so much shame as thou imaginest, but shalt cause mee to performe the Debt we all owe to nature, and for which wee enjoy our Breath in this world.

To conclude, thy flatteries and menaces cannot make me thine, much lesse hers, that hath so falsly deceyued mee. By the Starres (quoth the Soldane) the audacious behaviour of these Knights maketh me to wonder: the one hath willainously iniured mee in the presence of my Barons, and the other (for nothing I can say) will Exchange his opinion, which he shall full sone and deeply repent. So commanding the Tower to be fast locked, he went to the great Hall, and

and there before all his Knights, said. You haue heard me Lordes, the confession of them both, and withall haue seene their great obstinacie: therefore by sentence irrevocable I condemne them to death, and this day shall they be burned in the place accustomed, none of you all mooue mee to the contrarie, for I will not be otherwise perswaded. By heauen, said the Prince Tomano, unhappie should I be to stay with you any longer, wherefore at this instant I forsake your alliaunce, and henceforth wil shew my selfe your mortall enemy. Alas my Lord quoth the young Princesse Belsina, will ye so sone abandon my companie? Follow mee then answered Tomano, where I goe: for no more will I be seene in this tyrannous Court, where nothing but dishonour and crueltie is used.

Presently the Princesse and hee mounted on horsebacke, and with their trayne came to Palmerins Campe: who hauing heard the Soldanes sentence, was ready to haue slaine himselfe, but that he hoped to saue the life of Tryneus at the fatall houre. Alas my Friends, quoth he, to his companie, this day must you assist me, to deliuer the most gentle Knight that euer bare armes. Set forward courageously against the Tyrant, whom with the ayde of my God, wee shall easilie vanquish. Zephira hearing that Tomano and Belsina were gone, and how the Soldane had iudged Tryneus and Aurecinda to death: entred into meruailous regrets and acclamations, whereat the Soldane was so enraged, as he commaunded that Tryneus and his Sister, should presently be ledde to the place of execution, and vnder the charge of five thousand Souldiours, they were brought on horsebacke forth of the Cittie: but when Aurecinda saue her selfe so hardlie used, wringing her handes, and renting her comelie locks of hayre, she brake forth into these pittifull speeches.

Alas Gentlemen, why are you the instruments to execute a Tyrants will: what recompence can you expect at his handes, that for greedie desire of my patrimony, sendeth

death me to death: So pierceing were these wordes in the eares of the Souldiers, as they very much lamented her case: but Tryneus neuer chaunced colour, ryding on with resolute constancie, not once listning to the mones of the Princesse.

When they were come within sight of Palmerins power, they raunged themselves in battell arraie, committing Trineus and Aurecinda, the fiftie knights, who should conuey them to the Furnace where there death was appointed, w^{ch} was a good quarter of a league from the Citie. Tryneus now seeing death before his eyes, and no succour neere to rescue him: prepared himselfe to the latest extremitie, and with manie sorrowfull satwelles to Agriola and Palmerin, was fully perswaded to endure the torment. Palmerin knowing which way his friend should be led to death, with a sufficient traine lay secretly ambushed, and espying oportunitie, gaue the summons to his men, whereupon they all issued forth very couragiously. But as they rushed out from their secreete ambushment, the ayre was suddainly obscured, and such thunder, hayle and rayne fell, as neuer was the like heard or seene before: the Soldanes squadrons seemed to be all in a flaming fire. The pooer Persians thinking the end of the world was come vpon them, fled towards the Citie: but notwithstanding all their haste, the greatest part of them remained dead in the field. In the natural fire (prepared of Tryneus) made him fearful, doubtlesse this fire rayled by coniuration made him much more affrighted, but suddainly came to him an Armed knight with his Sword drawne, and mounted on a horse of mightie bignes, who tooke the horse of Tryneus by the bridle, saying.

Come Sir Tryneus, in despite of the Tyrant thou shalt not die. At these wordes arrived Palmerin, who embracing Tryneus, said, Ah my deere friend and Brother, what villainous minds beare they that would doe you this outrage: alight, and put on your Armour which my Squire hath

hath brought hither, that wee may with honour reuenge this shame. As they thought to goe set on the enemy, the Armed knight, was Muzabelino, thus spake. My Lord, let vs not tarrie t^oying time heere, but summon your people together, and sette forward to Grisca, where you shall finde better succour then in this place. The desolate Tryneus, what with his former feare, and present ioy to beholde his friend, was not able to speake one worde, but Palmerin hauing well noted the Armed knight, at length knew him to be Muzabelino, wherefore embracing him, said;

Ah my Lord, for euer be the King of Kings prayes, in graunting me to haue knowledge of you, let me be worthilie condemned of ingratitude, if I doe not acknowledge this great fauour to my friend: which I account as deere as done to my selfe. After manie courteous salutations passed on all sides, they sette forward to Grisca with their men and prouision: where we will leaue them, to shewe what afterward befell to the Soldane and his people. After a long and very dangerous tempest, with whirle-windes, lightnings, and strange apparitions, to the great discomfort of all the Persians, one of the Princes, came to the Soldane, saying;

My Lord, the lightning hath fallen so terrible in the Court, as all the Ladies of hono^r are slaine therewith. Another brought newes, that thre parts of the Souldiers, which conducted Trineus and Aurecinda forth of the Citie, lay all slaine in the rough tempest. While these strange mishappes were discoursing, Aurecinda entred the Chamber, saying, Now Soldane maist thou behold thy sin: Seest thou not that the celestiall spirits, haue reuenged our wrong with the death of thy people? and for my escape I render thanks to the highest, not to thee that gaue my life to the fire, yet much better would my death haue contented mee, then to liue without him whose absence is my torment: and did not the hope of his life giue mee some comfort, thou shouldst

THE HISTORIE

shouldest perceiue how little I esteeme of my life. Then entred the Quene zephira, and she falling at the Soldanes fete, thus began. Ah my Lord, the dishonour you haue this day done me is vspeakeable. Haue my deserts bene so simple in your eyes, that I might not intreate the libertie of one Knight, who this day (I feare) hath perished by your ingratitude? Neuer shall I see those noble knights againe, whose liues haue bene endangered for my welfare. Ah my Lord, if you looke into the weight of your offence, you shall perceiue my teares are not shedde without great reason.

Madame, quoth the Soldane, and you faire Sister, at this time excuse my fault committed, and patiently heare what hath happened: for I vowe to you by the faith of a Prince, that I will make sufficient amends for my trespass. When hee now thought to be no further troubled, his Sister Lyzanda entred mad and raging, and snatching his salshion from his side, said. See villaine, see what happeneth by thy commaundement, one of thy Sisters is for euer defamed, and the other will presentlie end her life before thee. Wherewith she stradd the weapon to her hart, and fell downe dead at the Soldanes fete, to the no little sorow of his Maestie, and all that were present: but Zephira, causing the bodie be taken away, the Soldane commaunded she should be honourable buried and erecting a goodlie Tombe of Marble ouer her graue, caused the manner of her death to be thereon described. Afterward, by the counsell of the Lords of Persia, he sent the Prince Tomano and the strange knights, all the riches and treasure they had left behinde them: the Princesse Aurecinda remaining in continual heauines, and within shORTE time she felt her selfe to be conceiued with Childe. Wherein shee somewhat comforted her selfe, though Fortune would not suffer her to enjoy the companie of her freind, yet one day shee hopped to see his liuelie image: which at the time appointed by nature shee did, being deliuered of the goodliest male Childe that

OF PALMERIN DOLIVA.

that euer was seene in Persia, naming him Ryfarano, who carried the beautifull complexion of his Mother, as hee did the hardines and magnanimitie of his Father.

CHAP. LVII.

How Palmerin and Tryneus hauing sojourned a while at Grisca with the King Abimar, departed to the Isle of Malsada, where by the meanes of Dulacco and Palmerin, all the enchauntments were finished.



By the way as the Princes rode towards Grisca, Palmerin bled these speeches to Tryneus. How happy is the Prince that giues credit to good counsell, and will not be led by flatteries, or subiect himselfe to his owne passions: and how vnforgunate are they that fall into the contrarie: Can yee haue a better example heereof then the trayterous Soldane: who first (causelesse) disquieted the good King Abimar, and afterward at his Sisters motion imprisoned his friend: for your good successe here in my Lord, you must thank Muzabelino, and the Prince Tomano, whose power was so ready to defend you. Tryneus remembryng his follies past, was still so ashamed thereof, as he could make no answer, wherefore Palmerin thus spake againe.

Why: my Lord, hath the imprisonment for faire Aurecinda strocken you dumbe: leaue this bashfulness to Women, and remember your former courage. Stoute Hercules, whose honors are yet so rise in memorie, did not hee for the loue of Iole, weare feminine garments, and spin among

THE HISTORIE

among women: Did not Achilles the like, when he was with his faire friend in the Courte of King Lycomedes? Marke Antonie the Romane Emperour, did not he follow Cleopatra before Octavius, although his Armie on the Sea, was twofold the number of his enemies: And you, for a little familiar loue to a young Princesse, who conquered you only by importunate lute, remaine thus confounded. Doe you imagine your selfe to excell in strength, prowess and knowledge, Hercules, Achilles, and the Emperour Antonie?

Alas deere Brother, answered Tryneus, well may you boast of your especiall graces, being able to triumph ouer concupiscence: but so ykelome is my offence in mine owne conceit, as I thinke my selfe vnworthie to be seene among men of vertue. What shall I say to my Agriola, when she shall vnderstand my heinous offence: how shal I dare to present my selfe before her: For that, saide Palmerin, we shall doe well enough: but I would it were so welcome to passe, that we were with her to abide her censure. Continuing these speeches, they arrived at Grisca, where the King being aduertised of their coming, came to meete them, vsing these gracious words at their entertainment. Right welcome are yee my noble friends, no maruell though the Soldane sought to wrong you, remembering how for my sake you vsed him in the battell. In sooth my Lord answered Palmerin, well doth your nobilitie deserue our seruice, and his iniurious dealing sharpe reuenge, which happily hereafter he may feele to his cost, vsing strangers so vnhonozablie: but heere we present your Daughter Belina to your Maiestie, after whose mariage all these troubles began.

Welcome faire Daughter, said the King, much better then my Sonne hath been to your Fathers Court. When my Father, quoth the Princesse, hath considered his furie, doubtlesse he will be hartily sorrie therefore, and make satisfaction for any thing misdone: till then I beseech your highnesse

OF PALMERIN DOLIVA.

highnesse to conceiue the best. And according as the Princesse had spoken, it came to passe, for within three daies after, the Soldane sent Ambassadors to the King Abimar, to excuse the imprisonment of Tryneus, and the sentence of death hee gaue against him: sending to him and Palmerin all their treasure, and sumptuous presents in signe of satisfaction, and to his Daughter Belina and the Prince Tomano, he sent sixe Camels laden with gold, as the dowrie of their marriage.

Now are Palmerin and Tryneus weary of their so long stay from their friends, wherefore they desired leaue of the King to depart, who seeing he could not well intreate their longer abode, right thankfully yeelded to their request, giuing them all thinges needfull for their iourney, as Horses, Armour, men, money, and diuers other gifts of inestimable value. For which kindnes they humbly thanked his Maiestie, refusing to trouble themselves with such riches in their trauaile, nor would they take that the Soldane sent them, or what they brought from the ten Rocks: except the Bird and the two Crownes, giuing all the rest to Muzabelino, desiring him to continue them in remembrance. My Lords, quoth he, no seruice can bee lost that is done to such liberall Princes, as now you giue mee good occasion to confesse: and though both I and mine would spend all our following daies in your seruice, yet can we not recompence the very least of your courtesies, recommending my sonne Bellechino once more to you my Lord, in hope he will proue a loyall and faithfull Seruant, otherwise I could part his head from his shoulders in your presence.

And because the way you brought Madame Zephira, is very long, troublesome and dangerous: I haue prepared a Shippe for you, which without any perill shall speedily carrie you to Malda, and a young knight my brother haue I appointed Pilot therein, who shall direct you how to finish all the enchauntments in the Isle, and after-

ward I desire you so to order the matter with the King Maulerino, that my Brother may haue the gouernement thereof after your departure. Beleeue me noble Friend, answered Halmerin, your Sonne will I intreate as well becomes him, and your Brother shall not onely haue the charge of the Isle, which I will freely giue him: but I will so worke with the Brother to Zephira, that he shall endow him with greater possessions. So taking their leaue of all the Courtiers, Muzabelino brought him to the Shippe: wherein they were no sooner entred, but it presentlie cut through the waters with such violence, as they were very quicklie come to Malfada. They going on shore, Dulacco Brother to Muzabelino demaunded of the Prince Tryneus, if he had the King he found in the Cup at the Castell of the fenne Rocks. I haue it on my finger Sir, answered Tryneus. Let vs thre then enter the Isle, said Dulacco, as for you Bellecchino and Colmelio, stay you in the Ship till you heare the sound of a Cornet, and then may you safely venture on the land.

Dyardo standing in one of the Turrets in the Castell, saw when the Ship came and cast Anker, wherefore hee expected if any dust come forth thereof on the shore, and so amazed he was that the thre knights were not transformed, as till Palmerin spake to him, hee knew not what to imagine, but afterward he made hast downe, and letting downe the Bridge, came and embraced him, saying: Welcome is my noble Lord to Malfada: haue you learned or brought any remedie with you, whereby to redue your friends here enchanted: in happy hourse did you bestow your labour, if so it came to passe, but what may these two knights be that come in your company? The one is the Prince Tryneus, quoth Palmerin, whom I so long time sought for, and the other is the man that must giue vs assistance.

After many friendly embracings, Palmerin demaunded what was become of the two Damosels he left there.

My Lord, said Dyardo, they remaine prisoners to deepe nance for the hard speeches they gaue you. So went they all to the prison, where Palmerin demanded a key of the had the key of the enchanted Tower: but they continuing in their former obstinacie and mallice, would not answer one word. False harlots queth Palmerin, why speake ye not: if you giue me not the key quickly, all your force shall not saue your liues. They being fearefull of death, presently fell on their knees, and one of them taking the key forth of her pocket, opened the doore of the Tower, saying:

Enter tonight, I hope thou wilt repent thy hastinnes. Palmerin and his thre companions went in, where they beheld a huge Idol of Copper, holding a Book with an art to readie drawne to write: by him hung a goodly Cornet of Tuoze, and on the other side a faire Booke. My Lord, said Dulacco, we must haue both the Cornet and the booke: and if you faile in getting them, no one alieue can end the enchantments. My God will strengthen me, said Palmerin, so drawing his Sword, and cuering himselfe with his Shield, he boldly stept to the Image. And in the night of the devils that fiercely strooke at him, he puld the Book violently from him: when suddainly such a searefull cry was heard through the Castell, as made them all to shake and tremble. The Booke and Cornet he easily reached, and giuing them to Dulacco, willed him to finish the rest. That will I, quoth he, but you must be readie to assist me: let vs now goe forth and you shall see our auailles: when I am reading the first leafe of the Booke, doe you sound the Cornet so loud as you can possible. Palmerin did as hee was commanded, and by the reading of Dulacco, and the sound of the Cornet, all that were enchanted in the Island came running thither: being so many as Palmerin was amazed thereat.

Dulacco hauing ended his Lecture, they all returned to their former shapes, the first were the couragious Fryssoll,

the King of Sparta, the Duke of Pontus, the Prince of Macedonia, the Prince Olorico, Laurana and Agriola, whom Tryneus ranne and embraced, seeing her so perfect in beauty as euer she was.

Now the remembrance of his offence with Aurecinda, stopped the passage of his speech, and her fauours sholone to the great Turke, made her likewise ashamed: yet kisses and embracements with teares and sighes, deliuered their inward ioy for this happy meeting. Here must we imagine the comfort of the other fine Princes and Laurana, then which doubtlesse could bee no greater, seeing their noble friend that had deliuered them, and beholding each other in good disposition. Now are all those which were enchanted, brought to their former shape, as wel Turks as Christians, and their Ships by Dulacco restored thei againe: chiefly they that belonged to the Merchant Estebon and his Sonnes, to whom Palmerin gaue such aboundance of treasure, as afterward they had no cause of want, discharging each one to their owne Countrey, who departed thence to their no little contentation. Agriola, Laurana and the other Princes, being altogether conferring of their good fortune, Palmerin commeth cheerefully among them, and discoursed what had happened since the separation, wherein hee reuealed all that you haue heard already, which to repeat againe would be but troublesome: it suffiseth you to conceiue, that all the friends being met together, are so well acquainted with each others mishappe, as now they ioyntly reioyce in this happy successe. The next morning, Palmerin galled Bellechino his Squire, saying to him.

Thou must presentlie passe to Elaine to the King Maulerino, and hauing saluted him on my behalfe: deliuer him these Letters, wherein his Maiestie shall bee acquainted with all that hath happened, but make all possible speede thou canst, because at thy returne we will sette to Sea presently. The Squire being gone. Palmerin gaue in charge to Dulacco, to see his Shippes victualled and prouided, and that

that withall which Muzabellino had giuen him.

Afterward he went to bid Agriola and Laurana good morrow, and then comming to Frysoll, the King of Sparta, and Olorico, who were all pleasantly discoursing together in their Chamber, hee said to them. Assuredly my good friends, if fortune had been so aduerse to me, that I could not haue found Trineus, or the means to deliuer you from the enchantment: I had giuen my farewell to Armes, riches and honour, and would haue haunted those pathes where neuer man trode. For with what face could I approach the presence of my Sister and Aunt, hauing lost them whom they liue onely to loue. And you noble Prince Olorico, haue iust occasion to complaine on mee, that haue caused you to endure such paine and trauaile: but in recompence of this ouer great wrong, I will cause you to enioy her, whom you haue so long faithfullie loued, and so soone as I am arrived at Constantinople, I will send Ambassadors to my Lord the Soldan, that he may accept you as his Son in my stead.

My Lord, answered Olorico, the honour you haue done me, in accepting my company, I account to excuse all other courtesies, and though for a time I haue been unfortunate. I take it patiently, assuring you by the word of a Prince, that I imagine the man not worthe to taste the swete, who cannot abide to sale the sower. By this time are Palmerins Letters come to the King Maulerine, who hauing vnderstood their content, ioyfull of Palmerins returne, and of his good fortune in finishing the enchantments: hee came presentlie with his traine to Malfada, where to discourse the pleasure on each side conceiued, the honourable and gracious courtesies bestowed, with all the especiall fauours becomming a King and so worthe personages, is farre beyond my capacitie, and therefore I referre it to your gentle consideration. But at Palmerins intreatie, Dulacco was made Lord and chiefe Gouernour of Malfada, and diuers other territories nere adioyning:

THE HISTORIE

which moued Palmerin thus to thanke the King. Seeing your Maestie for my sake, hath bestowed this Island on me wth the good friend; to the end that the name of wicked Malfada may bee bitterlie faced forth: let me intreate that it may henceforth bee called the Ile of the two Louers, because therein was enchanted two, the most loyall Seruants that euer Loue had, hauing endured wonderfull and variable fortunes, and yet here met in the end to their no little comfort.

Let it be, quoth the King, as you haue appointed, and whosoere henceforth calleth it otherwise, shall bee held among vs as an open blasphemor. Afterward the King accompanied Palmerin and his friends to their Shippes, and there committed them to their prosperous voyage, so Palmerin, his seauen companions, the two Princesses, with his Squires Bellechao and Colmelio, entred the Shippe that Mazarabelino gaue him: & an hundred knights which the King Maulerino had giuen him, were embarked in another Shippe well appointed, so hoysing saile, with a merrie gale of wind they launced into the Sea, and the King with his traine returned to the Courte, leaving Dalacco quietly possessed of the two Louers.

CHAP.

OF PALMERIN D'OLIVA.

CHAP. LVIII.

How Palmerin and his Companions sayling on the Sea, met with Ptolome; and of the honorable entertainment the Emperour, Florendos, and the Ladies them, when they arrived at Constantinople.



Three dayes sayled our knights without any strange adventure, and on the fourth, as Phcebus ganne enter his Chariot, to displaye his radiant golden beames on his Uncle Neptunes Regions: Palmerin standing aloft on the Decke, spied a great Carrick, which with full Saile made haste towarde them, and by the Banners he discerned that it was of Turkie, wherefore he cryed aloud to his Companions to arme themselves.

Suddenly were they all come aloft on the Deck armed, and the hundred knights in the other Shippe were likewise in readynesse: when the Carricke being come neere them, they might behold the Turks strongly prouided, and Ptolome their Captaine bravely encouraging them. At length they buckled together, and a sanguinous fight beganne betwene them, so that euen of the Kings Maulerinos knights were slaine, the King of Sparta fore wounded by Ptolome, and Dyard in great perill of his life. When Palmerin saw the King of Sparta fall, and that the Moores had daunger of the hurt of his friends, fearing the King was slaine, hee came to Ptolome, and after many sharpe strokes on either side, at length hee slaine, when pulling his Helmet forward from him, thinking to haue smitten off his head, Ptolome cried: Kill me not a knight,

THE HISTORIE

for I yeld my selfe to thee. Palmerin knowing his friend, said to his companions and the rest. Gine ouer my friends, and fight no longer. for false Fortune hath too much deluded vs.

Ah worthy Ptolome, why haue I deale so hardly with thee? Is it possible that any man may be likened to mee in mishap? no sooner am I out of one, but presently I fall into another: By Heauen (deare friend) if I had slaine thee, right soone would I haue bene reuenged on my selfe. See then sweet Ptolome, how Palmerin grieues for his offence, more then if he had lost the best linne on his body. When Ptolome behelde his friende Palmerin, and by him the noble Prince Tryneus, embracing them, he said. O Saviour of the World, how highly hast thou this day fauoured mee, permitting me to finde my dearest friends? When they brought him to the Princeesse Agriola in her Cabin, who was not a little glad to beheld the man, that endured with her some parte of miserie, and Colmelio was ioyfull to behold Syr Ptolome, in that their hap was to be parted where they were led to be sold as slaues: but Agriola would needs heare the discourse of all his fortunes, since the first time of theyr separation, which he and Colmelio truly recounted. Belieue me Ptolome said Palmerin, I see we haue had our shares in aduersitie, and hardly can we iudge whose wrong hath bene greatest: But how came you thus to bee Captaine among the Turkes? My Lord (quoth he) the Princeesse Alchidiana bought me, and charged me to sake you, as well by Sea as by Land: and for my defence gaue me forty knights, of whome there now remaines but ten aliue. That Ladie am I highly beholding to (saide Palmerin, and for the wrong I haue done her by the death of her knights, I will excuse my selfe by an honorable Embassade, when I shall send the Prince Olorico to her againe. And that thou Ptolome mayst know some of my good happes, vnderstande that I haue founde my Father and Mother, who are Florendos the King of Macedon, and Griana the Daughter
and

OF PALMERIN DOLIVA.

and Heye to the Emperour of Greece. I did euer perswade my selfe (quoth Ptolome) that your Discent was of Royall lineage: But I intreate you for my sake, that these knights which your men haue taken, may be gently v'sed, and enioy theyr Libertie. Palmerin calling them to him, said. For Ptolome his sake, that was your Captaine, and her Loue who commanded you to trauell with him, I wish to you as to my selfe: yet shall you all goe with me to Constantinople, that you may helpe to conuert the Prince Olorico backe againe, whome I haue sent to send with you vnto your Mistresse.

We abide my Lord (quoth they) at your Direction, and willingly shew your commaund, in that wee haue knowne how dearely the Soldane loued you, and better Fortune could not haue befallen vs, then so luckily to meet with you and the Prince Olorico: as for our Companions that are slaue, there is no remedie, for such mishappes are common, where Fortune scowleth. So sayled they on friendly together, and on the Sea we will leaue them, to tell you of the returne of the Embassadour Maucetto to the Soldane of Babylon, who hearing that the Persian had refused to assist him, was somewhat offended thereat: But when he saw what Palmerin had written, hee pacified himselfe, saying: Ah gentle Palmerin, hadst thou bene in the Battel at Constantinople, I had not needed to demand help of him whom I iudged my friend: but seeing Fortune hath sholue her selfe so contrary, I will not attempt any thing, from which thou disswadest me.

Maucetto declared, that Palmerin had likewise sent a Letter the Princeesse Alchidiana, which hee commaunded him presently to carry her: So sooner had shee read the Letter, and thereby vnderstanding his knightly deedes of Chivalry, but embracing the Embassadour, she thus spake: Maucetto, neuer couldest thou haue brought mee better newes, then of the man whose Name flourisheth in all places. Ah sweet Letter, written by the hand of the most perfect

THE HISTORIE

fect knight living, full of charitie, and cheyselfe will I keepe thee. Ah Ptolome, whome my Noble friend loves so dearly, thou haue I sent in dangerous hazard of thy life: but may I once see thee againe, thou shalt perceiue my Loue for Palmerins sake.

Happy art thou Princesse Aephira, having with thee the myrrour of mankinde. My Lord (quoth she) as though Palmerin had beene present, wilt thou wrong thy selfe so much as to tarry with her? Dare the Soldanes Sisters vaunt that they loue thee? They be faire, as I vnderstand, but yet not so faire that thou shouldst refuse mee for them. What haue I saide: doubtlesse matter to mine owne reproach, for if thou wouldst, the Kingly offers of my Father, and my importunate intreaties could no way moue thee: hardly may the Persians preuaile with thee, especially in such a weightie cause as Loue is. Maucetto, what saiest thou? is Lord Palmerin like to stay long in Persia with the Soldans sisters? No Madam (quoth he) I heard him say very often that hee would depaite thence before a Moneth was expyred.

In these and such like speeches they continued, wherein we purpose to leaue them: For by this time is Palmerin and his friends arrived in the Hauen of Constantinople, and Colmelio is sent before to the Pallace, to aduertise the Emperour of these most ioyfull tydings. As Colmelio entered into the great Hall, the first man he met was his Father Gerrard, who was newly made Lord Chamberlaine to the King Florendos: wherefore falling on his knees before him, he said: Father, little did I thinke to finde you exalted to such honour, happy was the day when you found Prince Palmerin: and much more happinesse is this day, in that I bring the most ioyfull newes that euer Man did to this Court. Old Gerrard was exceeding glad to behold his son, catching him in his arms, said. Welcome Colmelio to thy aged Father: hast thou heard any tydings of the Lord and Palmerin? Oe with me Father, answered Colmelio, and you

OF PALMERIN DOLIVA.

you shall heare matter of meruaile. At that instant came the Emperour with the King Florendos into the Hall, and all the Ladies going to heare diuine service, wherefore Gerrard thus spake to his highnesse. My Lord, see heere my Sonne Colmelio, who long time hath trauailed in searche of Prince Palmerin, he hath some message of importance to deliuer to your Maestie. Right welcome is hee, quoth the Emperour, say what thou wilt my friend, thou hast free libertie.

Rightie Emperour, said Colmelio, your Son Prince Palmerin is arrived in the Hauen, and with him the yong Prince Tryneus, Sonne to the Emperour of Allemaigne, the good knight Sir Ptolome, the fine Princes which went with him from Macedon, the two Princes of England and Durace, with diuers other unknowne to me: and saluting your Maestie with his humble, due tie intreateth that Horses may be sent for them and the Ladies that hee and they may come to kisse your highnes hande. The Emperour, Florendos and the Ladies, were readie to swoone with ioy at these tidings, and hauing embraced the Messenger, commanded a royall traine to goe meete his sonne, and goodlie Palfrates to bring them to the Pallace, some ranne on foote to the Porte, other on horsebacke, so that before the Emperours traine came, such Masse of Gentlemen and Merchants were there to receiue them, as hardlie they could stand one by another. After they were all mounted on horsebacke, with great ioy and triumph they rode towards the Pallace, where Tryneus falling on his knees before the Emperour, said.

Long live your Maestie in health and happines, heere may you beholde the man, for whome my Lord Palmerin your sonne, hath endured such paine and trauaile. The Emperour perceiuing by his speeches that he was Tryneus the Prince of Allemaigne, thus answered. I hope my Lord that you will beare with mine age and weakenesse, which hinders me from enter taining you as faine I wold, but

THE HISTORIE

but I beseech you to arise, for it ill becometh so great a Prince, to humble himselfe in such sort. Florendos & Grian (in this time) welcommed their Sonne, Arismena the King of Sparta, Armida her Frysell, and the old Emperour and Emperesse graciously entertained Agriola and Laura-na, each absent friend so embraced and welcommed, as all the day was spent onely in those ceremonies. The next morning Palmerin dispatched his Dwarf Vrbaniillo to the Emperour of Allmaigne, that he and Polynarda might vnderstand these long expected newes: and afterward comming to Sir Frysell, he said to him; Brother, our Mother hath enriched vs with a Sister since our departure, and my Sister Armida me with two Nephewes, I pray you let vs goe see them.

Whereupon the Purles brought the young Princes, the eldest of them being named Dytrius, and the youngest Belcar, the young Princesse, Daughter to Florendos and Grian, was called Denisa: so fayre and comely were the Infants, as if Nature had studied to make them most exquisite. Beloue me Sir Frysell, quoth Palmerin, if my Sister continue as she begins, the Realme of Hungaria shall hardlie want heires: what? two at a blow, Sir Lady it is a signe of good fertilitie. And when you are entred the estate of wedlocke, answered Frysell, if your linage increase according to the greatnesse of desire: Madame Polynarda shall be as well sped as her neighbours. Thus tested the Princes together, attending newes of the Courtier, that went with Vrbaniillo to the Emperour of Allmaigne, who at that time was at Vienna.

CHAP.

OF PALMERIN DOLIVA.

CHAP. LIX.

How the Duke of Mensa and the Countie of Redona, conducted the Prince Olorico into Assiria, where hee was espoused to the Princesse Alchidiana.



Per the space of a Moneth and more, Palmerin, Trineus and Agriola sojournd at Constantinople, till all things were prepared for them to trauell towards Allemaine: during which time, Palmerin shewed such signes of loue to the Prince Olorico, as hee would seldome be forth of his company. And seeing that more and more his amorous passions encreased, hee said: Deere friend Olorico, although I am no way able to recompence your long continued kindnes, or remunerate the paine and trauell you haue suffered in my company: yet haue I determined (so you like thereof) to send you to Assiria, and with you the Duke of Mensa, and the Counte of Redona, as Ambassadors to my Lord the Soldane, with such an honourable traine beside, as Mysos shall haue no occasion to complaine.

For doe I this (Sweete Prince) as enuious of your company, or that I stand in feare of the Soldane: but onely to keepe my promise, which was, that I would aide you to my vttermost, to accomplish the marriage betwene you and Madame Alchidiana, for whom I see your mind is incessantly troubled. My Lord, answered Olorico, if ever perfect loue might be discerned in a Princes heart, doubtlesse it is most amply deciphered in yours. Where can you find

THE HISTORIE

finde in any Historie, semblable affection: so that a Christian would to fauour his enemy, that is contrarie to him in Law and profession: It are the humanity, that so great a Prince would so much abate himselfe, to accept as his companion in Armes, the poore Senne to the King of Arabia: praising for his good, not the suretie alone of the Christians, but the alliance of the greatest Lord in Asia. Wherefore my noble Lord, since of your accustomed good nature you haue made me this offer, of simple iudgement should I shew my selfe to refuse it. I accept your gracious kindnes, and assure your selfe of his ready seruice, whom your precious vertues hath so bound to you, as for euer I will name my selfe the Seruant to the Prince of Grece. Hereupon Palmerin wrote to the Soldane of Babilon in forme as followeth.

The Letter of Prince Palmerin, to the great Sultane of Babylon.

Right puissant Lord of Assiria, if the obedience we owe to Parents and Countrey, are causes sufficient to cal home a knight errant, with refusall of all strange friendships and alliances: I hope your Maiestie wil not mislike of my returne from Persia to Constantinople. And because I was there aduertised by your highnes Ambassa-
dour Maucetto, how you haue resolved to be vs with open hostilitie: I will now reueale vnto you, that by the grace and fauour of the highest God, since my departure from your Courte, I haue obtained knowledge of my Parents, who are such, as if you seeke the wzacke of Constantinople: you goe about to destroy that Palmerin, whom heretofore you haue so deercly loued, and is now become the onely heire to that Empire. Wherefore my Lord, if for my sake you will graunt so much, as to forget reuenge for your deceased Brother Gamezio: both we and all ours shall

OF PALMERIN D'OLIVA.

shall continually name our selues, your friends and assistants against all your enemies. Contrariwise, if you will followe your former opinion, we must defend our selues so well as we may. And so I am no more (with credit) forsake my Countrey, Parents and friends, to returne againe to your seruice: I send you the Prince Olorico, a knight both ballant and hardy as any in all Turkie, without exception of your Court, the great Turkes, or the Soldane of Persia, and he to serue you in my stead. Desiring your highnes by that affection which you did beare mee, when the Prince Amarano was slaine in your presence: that you accept him as your Son, and giue him in marriage to your daughter Alchidiana, as the man that hath best deserved her, if euer Prince might merit a Ladies loue by bountie and choise chualtrie. So shall you performe an action of mickle honor, and bind me continually to acknowledge this kindnes.

Yours Palmerin d'Oliva,

An other Letter he wrote to the Princesse Alchidiana, the tenor whereof was thus.

The Letter of Palmerin, to the Princesse of Assiria.

To you Madame Alchidiana, daughter to the great Soldan of Babilon: Palmerin d'Oliva your knight, sendeth health conigne to your magnificence Madam, sending to your father the Duke of Mensa, and the Countie of Redoua our Ambassadors, to intreate of perpetuall peace & alliance betwixen his Maiesty and vs, wherefo may it please you to giue fauourable assistance, I thought good by them likewise to write to your excellencie, with earnest intreaty to receiue as yours, the Prince Olorico, heire
Z to

THE HISTORIE

to the Crowne of Arabia. You know faire Madame, that neuer had he come to your Fathers Court, had not the perillous battell against the proud Brethren of Amaranos prouoked him, nor would hee haue aduentured the dangers of the Sea, but in hope (at length) to purchase your gracious loue. For these considerations, good Madam, entertaime him into your sober thoughts, who hath no more feared to spend his blood for your sake, and thrust his life into infinite dangers, then I haue done to set my hand and pen to this paper. I know that your grace, beautie and great dolour, commandeth the chiefest Prince on the earth for your husband, and (to sheld my selfe from blame) I know that I promised you my seruice, when I should returne from Constantinople: but how hath it fallen out: your Palmerin is knowne by them that haue like authoritie ouer him, as your loue hath on the Prince Olorico. I am a Christian, a stranger, Sonne to the simple King of Macedon, and Daughter to the Emperour of Greece, beside, of very little or no desert at all. Hee is of your Law, your neighbour, Sonne to the rich King of Arabia, & a Prince of as high vertue as euer was in my companie: witnesseth whereof he made on the Phrygians, and in an hundred places since in my presence. Therefore Madam, if noblenes of hart, and loyall lone deserue so great an alliance, I know no Prince this day liuing more worthy then he. Assuring you withall, that more gladly would I die the death, then sollicite the cause of him, to whom I should but imagine unworthy your person.

Your Knight, Palmerin d' Oliua.

When hee had sealed their Letters, he gaue them to the Ambassadors, who accompanied with fiftie Grecian Knights, went to the Hauen where their Ships was prepared: after them followed the King Maulerinos hundred Knights, the number being supplied with other, instead

OF PALMERIN D'OLIVA.

steade of them that were slaine, and after them went the Knights that came with Ptolome: then came the Prince Olorico and Palmerin, deuising by the way on many seruicall businesses.

My Lord (quoth Palmerin) I imagine you nowe remember our taking by the Admirall Olimaell, and feare that like mishappe may againe befall you: I therefore (as your Guard) giue you the hundred Knights I had of the King Maulerino, and fiftie other Knights naturally borne in Greece, as able in Armes as any other whatsoeuer, in treating you to hold me excused if I giue you not such estate becomes your Nobility. Worthe Palmerin (answered the Prince) the greatest Lord that is might well content himselfe with the Honourable companie you haue giuen mee. And had not extreame passions euer ruled me, and cald me hence to her seruice whom I haue onely chosen: I would forsake Arabia, and the Lawe of Mahomet, onely to live in your companie. But in what place my Fortune guides me hereafter, neither Parents or Friends shall hinder mee to say that I am your bowed and affectionate Seruant. The like also doe you conceiue of me (said Palmerin.) So with feares they left eache other, Olorico and all his companie being aboard, such fauourable wind and weather they had, as without any danger they safely arriued where the Soldane lay: and first the tenne Knights went on shore, they that were left of the companie which the Princeesse Alchidiana gaue to Ptolome, and conning before the Princeesse, said:

Madame, your Knight Sir Ptolome humbly saluteeth, you by vs, sending your excellencie this Letter. Beside there is now arriued at the porte, the Prince Olorico, and certaine Ambassadors from the valiant Palmerin, Prince of Greece and Macedon, who come on his behalfe to kisse your hand. The Princeesse hauing heard these newes, and read the Letter which Ptolome sent, containing the great good fortunes of Palmerin, was inwardly so rauished with

THE HISTORIE

delight, as along space shee remained silent, but at length brake forth into these speeches. Ah Fortune, how well thou knowest to change matters which way thou pleasest, not according to the will & desire of passionate mindes, but on the behalf of the highest in perfections. Ah Palmerin, the man whom my heart shall euer loue, how may faire Polinarda lustily tearme her selfe happy, hauing thee for her Lord and loue: considering that the beautie and graces of so many Ladies conquered with thy deserts, nor the sumptuous riches continually offered thee, could once diuert thee from thy first affection. Ah Alchidiana, that which hath made so many Ladies and Knights fortunate, in compassing the onely issue of their desires, doth now remaine for thy torment alone, making thee the most unhappy creature vnder the Sun. Agriola, Grian, Arismena, Armidia and Zephira, are they (swete Knight) by thy meanes in assurance of their loues? Tryncus, Frycoll, the King of Sparta, Maulerino, Abimar, Tomano and diuers other: are their Realmes quieted, and their Ladies triumphing in their ioyes, onely by the price of thy blood, and danger of thy life? And must I alone remaine disgraced, for euer condemned, hauing lost the Knight I loued as my soule? While the Princesse continued these complaints, the Prince Olorico and the Ambassadors were come before the Soldane, and being entertained by him with very gracious countenance, they presented the Letters from Palmerin, which being read in the presence of all his Lords, the Soldane thus answered.

My Friends, I will impart these newes to my Countsell and my Daughter, and afterward make you answer as I may. Hereupon the Duke of Mensa, the Countie of Redora, and the Prince Olorico withdrew themselves, and sone after the Soldane sent for his Daughter, thus speaking to her; Daughter, our Princes thinks good, and haue counselled me to make peace with Palmerin, who at this present is heere of Greece: and requireth in witnessse

of

OF PALMERIN D'OLIVA.

of our truce, that I should giue you in marriage to the renowned Prince Olorico. Advise your selfe hereon, for Palmerin hath earnestly intreated it by writing, and here I haue a Letter for you, I think to the same effect. The Princesse hauing read the Letter, returned this answer. It is very true my Lord, his request to mee is for the selfe same cause: seeing therefore it liketh you, and the Princes of our Realme think it conuenient, in respect of the common profit and good may ensue thereby: it is not for mee to make deniall.

Right glad was the Soldane of this answer, wherefore he said. Goe then faire Daughter and decke your selfe accordingly, for after Dinner in the Presence of the Ambassadors, you shall be affianced to the Prince. Olorico since his arrivall had talked but little with his Ladie, wherefore hee now determined to goe see her: and meeting her as she returned from the Soldane, hee saluted her with great reverence, but the Princesse feigning that shee knew nothing yet of their marriage, thus spake to him. I understand my Lord, that your companion Palmerin hath altogether forsaken vs. Madame, quoth the Prince, if hee haue abandoned your company, it is onely by the fauour of Fortune, who hath been a greater friend to him then any man beside: yet cannot the great honours and possessions hee now enioyeth, make him forget you, in that at my departure he said, for euer he would live and die your Knight. God keepe him, said the Princesse, where euer he is, for still is my hart bowed to his remembrance: and gladlie can I doe as much for him as for my Brother, though his present advancement hinder him from my service. Such is his trust Madame, quoth he, in your fauour, that you will not refuse any honest request he makes to your excellencie, in which respect hee hath sent mee to intreate you, that you will be assistant to the peace he desireth with your father, and that you would vouchsafe me so much honoz, as in his need to entertaine me into your service, which to begin, I present

THE HISTORIE

present you my heart, that neuer since the day of our departure from Constantinople, hath entered any rest, being absent from the onely means of my comfort. If then I haue liued all this while in some hope, by remembraunce of your exceeding graces and courtesies: beyond all other should I account my selfe in happinesse, if now at length you receiue me as your Seruant. I receiue you, saide the Princesse, for Palmerins sake, and for your owne defects, which haue bene so worthy: requiting you with equall affection, so that you denye me not one request. Nothing shall you be denied (swaite Princesse, quoth hee) if by my life it may be compassed.

Now will I demaunde any thing of so great value (saide she) this is the fauour you shall graunt me: hereafter when time shall serue, that you will conduct me to Constantinople, there to behold the faire Princesse Polynarda, and the magnificent Courte of Noble Palmerin, in recompence whereof, I giue my selfe to be your Wife, and accept you as my Lord and Husband. If Olorico was now well pleased, I referre to your iudgements, wherefore confirming their premises, by kisses and embracings, with soleimne protestations and irrenotable vowes, they departed thence, to their Chambers.

After Dinner, the Princesse Attzyed in most sumptuous Garments, came into the Hall with her waiting Ladies, when the Soldane sent for the Ambassadors, and thus spake to them. My friends, I now perceiue the man to be ouer foolish that trusteth in himselfe, I thought by my power to destroy Greece, where on the contrary my people are destroyed. I thought to continue vnquenchable hatred toward your Maister, and now I am constrained to graunt him Peace: yet not constrained, but by the worke of the greatest God, I am moued so to do, which in the presence of all my Lordes I protest, and with as good a will as hee doth demaunde it. See then the power of that Maieesty, which can subdue and conquer where he list: and I sweare to

OF PALMERIN D'OLIVA.

to you by my Crowne, that the good Fortune of Palmerin, contenteth me as well, as if hee were mine owne Sonne. Mightie Soldane, answered the Duke of Mensa, if you resolve to loue the Prince Palmerin, both hee and his will not faile to performe the like vnto you: and on his behalfe we moste faithfully promise, that against all your Enemys, (Christendome excepted) you shall be assured of his succour assistance.

I request no better assistance (quoth the Soldane) then this that he hath sent, and that you may witnesse I am his faithfull Friend: at this instant shall the peace be ratified by all the Lords and Princes here present, and to seale the same, as he requested, I giue my Daughter to the worthy Prince Olorico. Great ioy was generally made for this good agreement, and the two Louers were Espoused together within fewe dayes after: and the time being come for the Embassadors returne to Constantinople, Alchydianna sent diuers rich golts to Palmerin and Polynarda, the like did the Soldane and the Prince Olorico.

CHAP. LX.

¶ How Palmerin, Tryneus, and Agriola, accompanied with many great Lords and Princes, went to the Emperour of Allemaigne at Vienna, where great triumphs were made, at the celebrating of the Marriage between Tryneus, and the Princesse Agriola.



Done after the Prince Olorico, and the Embassadors of Greece were gone towardes Asiria, Palmerin (although the Aged Emperour very much dissuaded him) made prouision for his speedy voyage to Allemaigne: and hauing already conducted the King of Sparta and

THE HISTORIE

and his Aunt Arismena some part of their way homeward: at his returne to the Citie of Constantinople, came to the Duke of Pontus, saying: I remember the time when you did cut off the great Turkes head, an acte deserving good and especiall recompence, and that you thereby delivered vs, and performed it at the motion of the Princesse Laurana: her haue you loued euer since both on land and Sea, and her Countrey is not farre hence, wil ye now make her your Ladie & Wife? I promise you my assistance so farre as I can.

My Lord, answered the Duke, fearing to offend you, I still deferred to moue you in this cause: but seeing wee are now so happily fallen into these tearmes, I will not conceale the truth from you. In sooth my Lord, when first I saw her, I loued her, and haue euer since continued in this hope, that time at length would fauour my intent. It sufficeth, said Palmerin, and presently he acquainted the Emperour therewith, who thinking the match very meete and conuenient: they were the next day married by the Archbishop of Constantinople, and in short time after went to take possession of their Duchy of Durace, where they were receiued very honozable, and the whole State yielded vp into the Dukes hand.

When Palmerin saw that the most part of his companions were departed, at the earnest intreatance of the Prince Tryneus and Agriola, he set forward to Allemaine, accompanied with Frysol and Armida, whom he conducted into the Realme of Hungaria, where Frysol was crowned King by reason of his fathers decease, there went with him likewise Diardo of Bohemia, & Prince Eustace, Prolome & other Lords of great account. Such good speede they made in their iourney, as in short time they arrived at Vienna, where the Emperour being aduertised of their comming by the Diwarffe, came with his courtly traine to meete them, and taking his Sonne Tryneus in his armes, said: I see it is the will of God my Sonne, that hereafter

OF PALMERIN D'OLIVA.

I shall haue as great joy by thee, as in the long absence I haue had grieve and sorrow, all which I patiently put up, for the loue of thy Brother, the Noble Prince Palmerin, and faire Agriola of England, that well deserves it. But in good sooth my Children, had you not come in so happy time, I should haue bene diuened to marvellous feare. For the King of France perceiuing, that I would not giue my only Daughter in marriage to his eldest Sonne, demanded the King Reinde of Spayne his Daughter, who granted his request: so that they twayne, with the ayde of the King of England, haue leaped such an Arme on the Sea, as neuer was the like seene to passe the Rheine. But seeing you returned in good disposition, the lesse account I make of their angry menaces: yet are they the three principall Kings of Christendome.

My Worde (answered Palmerin) be not you dismayde at their Enterprise, for ere many dayes be expyred: I haue to see all matters quietly pacified, and that without any effusion of Blood. The lesse is my doubt (quoth the Emperour) in that with such good Fortune you haue finished your intentions, for nothing you begin, but comes to luckie ende. Witnes hereof appeareth in the search of my Sonne Tryneus, whom the best Knights of Christendome haue laboured to find: but all their trauel I see hath bene spent in vaine. By this time they were come to the Pallace, where they were graciously receiued by the Ladies. Alas my Friends, saide the Emperesse, which of you shall I first embrace?

Oh my Son Tryneus, how sorrowfull hast thou made me since thy departure from England? Just cause hast thou to thanke the Heauens, who protected thee still in so many dangers, and forget not thy Brother Palmerin, who hath endured such trouble for thy sake. Faire Daughter, quoth she to the Princesse Agriola, welcome are you indeed. God send you better fortune hereafter, then you haue hadde already, which yet hath bene a Touchstone of your loyalty. But while these speeches continued, howe the other two

Louers with piercing it egard behelde each other, and how many gracious signes passed as secreete Embassadors betwene them. Polynarda was clad in such costly Accoutrements, for the pleasure she conceived the Dwarfs arrival at the Court: as she seemed another Iuno, when she stood to abide the Arbitrement of Paris, or like Volupras, following her Mother.

But fearing least this Amiable encounter, should decypher some patte of her former courtesies to her Friende, which as yet was unknowne to any by Bryonella: she locked by all secretes with so sweete a kisse, as would haue contented the rudest of the Gods, had it bene Vulcane or Neptune themselves. And coming to salute the Princesse Agriola, saide. Pomaruell (faire Sister,) if your Love wrought wonders in my Brothers minde, for vnfaignedly I speake it, your exquisite Graces deserue the greatest seruice in the world. Alas Madame, answered Agriola, if Nature, or they that had the charge of mee in my youth, could haue painted me with such Beauty, as I see in you, or enriched me with Wisdoms, able to deuise with my Lord when he came to see me: then could I haue said somewhat of the paines he hath taken for me, but I know my selfe so full of imperfections, as the Love he beares me proceedeth of his owne good Nature, not by any merite he can beholde in me. Then Palmerin kneeling before the Emperour, said. I beseech you my Lord graunt me one request, which shall be no way preiudiall to your Maiesste. Arise Sir Palmerin (quoth the Emperour) aske what thou wilt, and thou shalt haue it.

My Lord Tryneus and the Princesse Agriola, saide Palmerin, are religiously married betwene themiuelues, let me intreate your Highnes to confirme it with open solemnization, before the Duke of Mecana here present: whom I mean to send into England, that he may resolue the King how himselfe was an eye witnes of theyr Marriage. The Emperour liked so well of Palmerins motion, as some after the

the Wedding was solemnized: and he coming to Bryonella, courteously taking her by the hand, sayde. My good Friend Bryonella, I am now to be discharged of the promise I made at my last being heere: in witness whereof I haue brought your Knight Syr Prolome, and him I commend to your further fauour. So highly am I beholding vnto you my Lord (quoth she) as neuer shall I be able to returne sufficient recompence: but were wee equal in ioy with the Prince Tryneus and faire Agriola, then would I thinke no forme can wrong vs.

Palmerin at these wordes presently left her, and perswaded the Emperour so well: as Prolome and Bryonella were likewise coupled together: when Palmerin conferring with the Princesse Agriola, thus spake to her.

Now may you iudge Madame, whether I deceyued ye or no: and if the Estate of my Lord Trineus be any lesse then I tolde ye. Had I not giuen faithfull credite to your speeches (answered Agriola) I would not haue forsaken my Parents and Friends so rashly: but I hope they will pardon me, in that I haue done nothing but to their honor.

On the Morrow with exceeding ioy and rare triumphs, were Palmerin and Polynarda married together: And thus was long and faithfull Loue worthily requited. Prolome was now created Duke of Saxonie, and Dyardo toke his leaue to goe see his Wife Cordonya, whom he had not heard any tydings of, since he

was first taken by the Pirates.

Howe Palmerin sent Ptolome Duke of Saxon (as his Embassadour) to the King of Fraunce, and the Duke Euface of Mecana, to the King of England, to treat of the peace betweene them.



Certaine dayes before the departure of Dyardo. towards Bohemia, Palmerin in the Presence of the Emperour and all the Princes, gaue the charge of his Embassade to the Duke Ptolome: which he should deliuer, not onely vnto the most Christian King of Fraunce himselfe, but also to his yongest Sonne, who now had espoused the Duchesse of Burgundie.

So departed Ptolome from Vienna, accompanied with many worthy Lordes and knights, and at length arrived at Digebon, where the Prince Lewes (being made acquainted with the cause of his coming, thus answered the Embassadour.

My Lord, sometimes I had acquaintance in Fraunce, with the most renowned Palmerin, and because hee is the onely man of the Worlde, to whome I owe all friendly affection: I will perswade my Father to ioyne in Peace with him. Now was Ptolome in good hope that his trauell would sorte to successiue ende, wherefore they presently iourneyed to the King, who as then was with his Estates at Paris: and hauing heard Palmerins request, who now was wedded to the Princesse Polynarda, and therefore his intended warre to the Emperour, would extende to the hurt of the man he loved, thus answered, Duke of Saxon, I

am

am sufficiently acquainted with the bountie of thy Master, and very well I doe remember, that at his being in France he combated for his Lady Polynarda: yet was I ignorant till now of that hath happened. But least hee should conceine, that I seek to make a commotion in Christendome: let him enjoy his Lady and Wife in peace, although she was sometime promised to mine eldest Sonne, reseruing these conditions of our amitie, that our first Nephewes and Nieces may match together in marriage, thereby to continue the honour of thair predecessors. As for the Kings of Spaine and England, who moued me to giue them assistance: on their behalfe I can make you no certaine answer, untill my Messengers bee returned home againe. Gracious Lord, quoth Ptolome, I dare assure you in the name of my Master, that he hath euermore esteemed your favour among the best Christian Princes, and will not refuse the marriage betweene your Children hereafter. And this continuation of your amitie, will cause, that neither the Kings of Spaine or England will seeke to molest him: but with your highnesse ioyne in loue and friendship. With this answer Ptolome returned to Vienna, where the Emperour and Palmerin welcomed him with exceeding honour: and by this time had the Duke Euface taken landing in England, where deliuering the summe of his charge to the King, his highnesse returned him this answer. Although my Lord Ambassadour, both your Master and the Prince Tryneus did me manifest dishonour, yet not to withstand peace, which still ought to be preferred before warre, I grant his request, and will presently call home my Garrisons, shaking hands with him in honorable concord. As for the wrong done to my Daughter, I am content to excuse it, beleeuing that shee was not conueied hence, but with her will: thanking the Prince for the honour hee hath done her, seeing she would leaue her Parents and friends so lightly. I thinke my gracious Lord, answered the Duke, that when you consider what your Daughter hath done,

you

THE HISTORIE

you will not touch her with want of wit or iudgement: for in respect of the long enmitie betwene the Emperour and you, we desired that her marriage might sort to this happy ende. For would she haue departed hence with the Prince Tryneus, without a faithfull and resolu'd promise of marriage: which is performed, with as great honor as ever was done to the Daughter of a King. Thinke you, quoth the King, that had not the great friendship of Tryneus, (when against his Fathers will he came with Palmerin to assist me) qualified the weight of mine anger against him: I referre his service, to the iudgements of my Lords of England, who perswaded me to reuenge, which you well perceiue as yet I haue not done.

Prince Palmerin, quoth the Duke, is so vertuous, as rather would hee haue runne on a thousand deaths, then your Daughters honour should any way haue bene impeached: but being assured of this fortunate issue, both hee and Tryneus aduentured as they did. And forrie am not I, said the King, that all things are come so well to passe, but seeing we are entred thus farre in speech: tell mee (I pray you) how Palmerin came to the knowledge of his Parents and how he finished the aduentures at the Castell of the femme Rocks, and the dangerous Isle of Malhada, which neuer any knight could compasse before. Then the Duke rehearsed euery accident, how amorous the great Turke was on the Princeesse Agriola, and each severall occasion as they fell out: at which report the Queene with her Ladies were present, who hearing the discourse of so strange and variable fortunes, said:

I thought my Daughter had learned more modestie, then leauing her Fathers Court, to follow a knight unknowne to her in strange Countries: but seeing the ende hath fallen out so well, henceforth I shall remaine in better contentment, seeing a Prince of so great renowne hath now espoused her.

While

OF PALMERIN DOLIVA.

While this conference endured, the Duke earnestly beheld the Prince Sabinda, Daughter to the Prince of Sanfuega, and niece to the Queene: and of such excellent grace and beautie he esteemed her, as forgetting the death of his Father, who deceased since his departure from Allemaine, hee became so amorous of her, that he demanded of the Queene if she were her Daughter. She is not my daughter, quoth the Queene, but the daughter of my Brother, the Prince of Sanfuega.

Right glad was the Duke thereof, and resolu'd to request her of the King in marriage: who knowing the honorable place he held among the Princes of Greece, and what account Palmerin made of him: consented thereto, so that within few daies after they were espoused together. Whereupon, to accompany the Princeesse, and to confirme the peace, the King sent the Duke of Gaule, and another great Lord with them into Allemaine, the Queene likewise sent twelue English Ladies to attend on her Daughter.

Thus returned the Duke of Mecena to Vienna, where he was worthily welcommed by the Emperour Palmerin and Tryneus, especially the young Duchesse, and the Ambassadors of England, by whom the peace was faithfully ratified and confirmed.

[CHAP.]

THE HISTORIE

CHAP. LXII.

How Palmerin and Polynarda departed from Vienna toward Constantinople, where after the decease of the aged Emperour Remicius: Palmerin was crowned Emperour of Greece, and what ioy was made at the birth of Polynarda her first sonne.



After the Ambassadors of England were returned home, Palmerin perceiving the Empire of Allemaigne was in quiet: tooke his leaue of the Emperour, minding to conduct his Polynarda to Constantinople, not without many sorrowfull lamentations of the Mother to forgoe her daughter, and faire Agriola her new acquainted Sister, yet the Emperour pacified them well enough, by shewing what benefit this contract would be to Christendome, and so proceeded to his Daughter in this manner.

Thou goest Polynarda to the seat of a great Empire: but more pleaseth mee the percellesse name of Palmerin d' Oliua thy Husband, then the regiment of such a mightie Monarch. Farewell faire Daughter, continue in faithfull loue and obedience, remembering the reuerend honour a Wife oweth to her Husband. Polynarda hearing with what earnest affection her Father spake, was so ouercome with modest dutie of a Child to her Father, as she was not able to answer one word: which Palmerin beholding, kissed the Emperours hande, embraced Trineus, and tooke a courteous farewell of all the Ladies, commanding

OF PALMERIN D'OLIVA.

ding the Pages presently to bring away the Princesse Letter, saying to her: Madame, the longer you stay heere, the greater will be your conceite of sorrow, by absence the griefe will be forgotten: Let vs then merrily iourney to the Citie of Constantinople, where they that neuer saw you, will reioyce moze at your comming, then all the Allemaignes can sorrow for your departure. With like comfortable speeches Palmerin frequented his Ladie by the way, untill at length they entered the Kingdome of Hungaria, where Fryssoll with his chiefeest Lordes attended theyr comming, to whom Palmerin in ieausing, saide:

Brother, I haue aduentured to bring your Sister Polynarda into your Kingdome, take heede if you lay claime to her now as sometimes yee did: because that I am ready to defend her against whomsoever dare. I perceiue my good Lord (quoth Fryssoll) that you will haue my Follie generally knowne, I pray you let no such youthfull pranks be now remembered: for as you are the chiefeest in Chiuallrie, so haue the deffenies giuen you a Lady, whom no one in the whole world may Paragon. Well may it be saide that God and Nature fore-poynted this match: nothing inferiour vnto louely Paris and faire Helena, or puissant Hector and wife Andromacha.

Fryssoll accompanied them so farre as Alba, where most courteously parting from each other, Fryssoll returned to his Kingdome, and Palmerin some after came to Constantinople, where no little ioy was made for his safe arrivall, especially for the Princesse Polynarda, who was a right welcome Ladie into Greece, the olde Emperour prouiding such rare Deuices and Triumphs as the Chronicles to this day recorde the memory thereof. About tenne or twelue Moneths after, Polynarda was deliuered of a goodly Sonne, who was named Prymaleon, whereat the good olde Emperour so inwardly reioyced, as his spirite onely comforted in the good Fortune of his Sonnes, and fearing afterward, to see any sinister chaunce befall them, departed this fraile

THE HISTORIE

and transitory life, whose Death was signified thre dayes before by the Enchanted Wyrd. His Funerall was performed as becometh so great an Estate: and faine would Palmerin haue had his Father the King Florendos Crowned Emperour, earnestly labouring the Princes in that cause: But hee desiring them to holde him excused, returned them this answer.

Great offence were it to God (my friends) that the Honour due to him, who gaue me libertie, defended my renowne, and saued my Life, should be taken from him, and giuen to me: For if Vertue, Authority, and good Fortune, are the properties wherby to make choise of an Emperour, Palmerin is very many degrees before me. As for his Generosity, it is so well known to you, as that it were but lost labour to make report thereof. For his Authority, the barbarous Nations, among whom he hath liued, and conqueringly controlled, deliuer sufficient testimonie. And for his high good Fortune in all his Enterprises, where is the man that may be equalled with him? What hath hee at any time attempted, but he hath finished the same with wonderfull Honour: I could name Kings and Princes, that raigue onely by his meanes. To speake of the victories he hath obtained, either in Battell or single Combat, your eyes haue beheld, and the whole World apparantly witneseth. This dare I boldly say, and some of you doe know it better then I, that his onely Name will be more feared in Greece, then all your fore-past Emperours haue bene by their greatest puissance.

So well did the people like what the King Florendos had saide, as immediately was the Prince Palmerin proclaimed Emperour of Constantinople, and the next day he was Crowned according to the accustomed Rites and Ceremonies. Not long afterwards did the King Florendos stay with his Sonne, but returned with his Quene vnto Macedon, where he gouerned in loue and iustice among his Subjects, daily sending Messengers to Constantinople, as

OF PALMERIN DOLIVA.

well to vnderstande the health of the Emperour and Empresse, as also of young Primacon, who daylie increased in strength and Beautie.

CHAP. LXIII.

How the Prince Olorico and Alchydiana pretending to trauell to Constantinople, to visite the Emperour Palmerin, and the Empresse Polynarda, strayed on the Seas: and what sorrowfull moane shee made, and how she was found by Palmerin.



In one of the Chapters before you haue heard mentioned, how Olorico promised the Princesse Alchydiana, that hee would bring her to the Emperour Palmerins Court, which shee kept imprinted so deepe in her fancie, as but for the common Galladie, incident to young Ladies, which is, to become great sone after they are espoused, shee would haue betaken her selfe to Trauell, within thre Moneths after her Marriage. Notwithstanding, within short time after that trouble was past, shee came to begge a Wone of the Soldane, which hee not deneged her, thinking she would demaund no matter of weight. Father (quoth she) you must needs giue leaue to the Prince Olorico, that he may guide me, and accompany mee to Constantinople, for that I am desirous to see the Emperour Palmerin.

Daughter (saide the Soldane, the trauell on the Seas is very perillous, and oftentimes great Estates perish by Shipwracke: but seeing you are so desirous, and I vnbaitedly haue past my promise, you shall not in ought bee hindered,

deceitfully. Her appar was presently prepared tenne
Shippes and Gallies, the greater part wherof was laden
with great Horses, rich Tapistry, and other things of much
value, which should be given to Palmerin and his Polynar-
da. In the rest were Embarked chosen knights for her
defence, with Ladies and Gentlewomen to attend on her,
and needfull necessaries: thinking to shewe her sumptuous
Magnificence in the Emperours Courte, which in conclu-
sion fell out otherwise. For Fortune who is evermore va-
riable and neuer permanent, at the instant, when Olorico
and Alchidiana, building mist on her faith, and were come
within tenne dayes Sailing of Constantinople: shee alte-
red their opinions in most doubtfull manner, as they expec-
ted nothing but the ende of their liues. The winde now ari-
seth contrary to them, a sudden storme and terrible Tem-
pest ouertaketh them, and with such rough billowes their
Shippes were beaten, as in their sight fire of their Gallies
were drowned, the residue were very farre scattered from
them, and the great Carricke wherein themselves were a-
gainst a rocke, was split in the middell. Now are they left
to the mercie of the Waters, and Alchidiana waisting on
a Plank for safegard of her life: and had not one of the
Pyrates by swimming recovered a little Squiffe, where-
with he presently made to her, and gotte her in, otherwise
there had the Princesse unhappily perished. This Pilote
was shrewd and cunning, as cutting through the vnmur-
riful waues, he gained landing at a Port distant from Con-
stantinople about thirty miles: the Inhabitants where they
came on shore, wondered to see her so gorgeously Attired, and
had not the Pilote friendly perswaded them, that she was a
Princesse trauellling to the Emperours Court, and by mis-
hap had lost all her company on the Seas, they would haue
dealt with her very hardly. But when they understood
the cause of her coming, they entertained her with fauour
and civillie, causing her to be lodged at a very welthy Mar-
chant house, where shee wanted nothing she could desire.

Alchi-

Alchidiana seeing she had escaped the danger of the Sea,
and was now in better assurance then before, comforted
her selfe with this good fortune: but when she remembered
her losse, into what want & pouerty she was now brought,
and that through her foolish desire, her Husband was drown-
ed, (as she thought) she was overcome with grieve, that
neither her owne noble mind, nor the daily presence of the
Greeks that came to see her, could dissuade her from cease-
lesse lamentations.

Ah wretch that I am, quoth she, how well haue I deser-
ued this weakefull aduenture? Ah ill advised Alchidia-
na, what moued thee to crosse the Seas: if not in ordi-
nate desire to see him, of whom thou maist expect no re-
medie for thy sorrow: or else to see her that is Mistresse of his
heart, and so make thine owne conceits more languishing?
O Lord and Husband Olorico, I am the unhappy cause
of thy death, thy loue hath ever bene to mee sound and
perfect: why could it not then make thee forget the man,
who alwaies disdained my passions, and neuer loued mee
but with dissimulation (If thou escape death as I haue
done: iust cause hast thou to hate mee continually. Could
not I remember, how thy people spent their blood for mee,
onely to witnesse thy neuer daunted affection: and I haue
requited thy loue with monstrous ingratitude. Why then
did not our Gods make me alone to suffer the desert of my
folly, but take reuenge on them that neuer offended? Ah no-
ble Ladies, how hard is your recompence in my seruice,
that you tender and delicate bodies should be sold for the
fishes? And you worthy knights and Gentlemen, in stead
of purchasing honour and renowne with your Matter, you
are lost for ever, to my no little grieve and veration. The
Merchant in whose house shee was lodged, hearing her
heauie and lamentable complaints, thus comforted her.
Be of good chere Madame, your Husband (by the grace of
God) will well enough escape this danger. As for your
treasure, it is a matter soone gotten and soone lost: and to

THE HISTORIE

mounte for your Ladies and Gentlemen, it is no purpose, because it can no way benefit them. When men loose our goods wiues and Children, we must with patience please our selues: you then hauing knowledge of vertue, and that we are all subiect to the transitory changes of the world, to despaire is farre vnseemely your estate.

My Lord the Emperour is bountifull and liberall, and the most vertuous Prince that euer reigned in Greece: he will so well recompence your losse, as you shall not com-
 plainte of your coming. With the persuasions, she was somewhat pacified, and hauing staied there nine or tenne daies, to see if any other of the Galles would arriue there, seeing none came: she sold diuers of her precious Jewels that was about her, for halfe the value they were worth, and prouided herselfe of five Horses for her selfe, her Hostesse and her two Drighsters, the Pilot that had saued her from drowning, and one of the Merchants seruants, with which companie she rode toward Constantinople, hauing changed her rich attire into mourning weedes. As they were in a great Forrest five miles from the Cittie, the Princeesse calling to remembrance, how poore and simple shee should come before the Emperour, hauing bene one of the wealthiest Ladies in the world: was so overcome with this conceite, as hardly coulde her Hostesse keepe her from swooning, wherefore seeing they were nere a goodly Fountaine, there they allighted to rest her a little. And after shee had walked in the coole shadow of the Trees, she found her selfe in better disposition, preparing to mount on horsebacke againe: but it came so to passe, that the Emperour Palmerin hauing bene Hunting in that Forrest, and by earnest pursuit of the Game, lost all his companie, so that at length he came to the Fountaine where Alchidiana walked. His arrivall greatly amazed the Women, and before he would demand what they were, hee allighted and dranke of the Fountaine-water. Alchidiana earnestly beholding him,
 and

OF PALMERIN DOLIVA.

and feeling inwardlie a strange alteration, presentlie swooned againe in her Hostesse armes. Alas, said the Emperour, haue I so offended the Ladie, that the sight of mee should endanger her life: tell mee my friend, quoth hee to the Pilot, dost thou know of whence she is? No my Lord, answered the Pilot, but I vnderstand she is a noble Princeesse, who coming to see the Emperour, hath lost her people and goods in the Sea. He thinks I haue seen her here tofore, said Palmerin, but I cannot remember the place where. When beholding her more aduisedly, he said: Is not this the Princeesse Alchidiana? that cannot be: my Ambassadors told mee, that shee was married to the Prince Olorico.

By this time she was a little recovered, and seeing how he held her in his armes, thus spake. Ah Sir Palmerin, why do you hinder the departure of miserable Alchidiana? thinke you shee can end her life in better time and place, then in this Countrey, and betweene his armes whom she loued as her life, yet neuer receiued courtesie by him till this instant. Ah my Lord, here wait thou behold the foolish and indiscrete Alchidiana, who for thee hath lost her Husband Olorico that loued her dearelie. Knights, Ladies, and inestimable treasure hath shee likewise lost, all which she maketh no account of, but of her beloued, whom she shall neuer recover. But may it be Madame, quoth the Emperour, that you are indeed the Princeesse Alchidiana, Daughter to the Soldane of Babilon, the flower of all the Ladies in Turkie? The same am I, said shee, who loued thee so vnmeasurably, and the loyaltie of marriage, feare of dangers of the Sea, nor thy too rigorous refusall, both in my presence, and by thy Messengers, could not dissuade me from this shame, onely to see thy Court, and the beauty of Polynarda. And that at length I might purchase my desire, I brought my Husband with mee, who I feare the cruell waters haue swallowed, and as beauteous Ladies as euer were scene, with riches that well might decorate an Em-
 pire.

THE HISTORIE

pite. By heauen. Madam, quoth Palmerin, if the Prince haue lost his life in this aduenture, neuer will my heart be merrie againe. For see I the vnspcakable loue you bare me, which I haue in some part requited toward your Olorico: yet dislinay not sweete Lady, nor feare his death before further trespall, for by mine honour I sweare, no sooner shall I come to Constantinople, but I will cause his search presently to be followed, not doubting but he may be found againe.

And now faire Princeesse, tell what vertue or desert you saw in me, that might value the least paine you haue endured: committing your gracious person to so many doubtfull hazards, of feares, affrights, perturbations, heate and colde, which your choise nature could hardly brooke in trauell: vnworthie were I the name of a man, if now I should not pite you. And I sweare to you by the liuing God, that if your mishap fort to an euill ende, neuer will I weare my Diademe longer. Alas Madam, if heretofore I haue deluded you, consider it was a Louers deceit: that had bequeathed his hart to such a Lady, as loues you as if you were her Sister. But haue you, quoth she, among your amorous delights, acquainted her with my vnseemely boldnesse: what may she then conceiue of me, but as of a Gille given to loose and lauish appetite: The loue of wedlocke faire Princeesse, said Palmerin, cannot make me disclose her preiudice, that honoured me so much: let it suffice you, that for the fauour I obtained when you found me in like place, she remaineth to recompence you with all possible kindnes. Let vs then depart hence toward Constantinople, that you may be used as becometh your high calling. Woode despised that I am, quoth she, Princeesse, had I entred into conceit of your former illusions, neuer had I fallen into so great danger: but as for matters past, either of your rigour or disdain, your present affabilitie compelles mee to forget, set on then when you please, and I will beare yee companie.

The

OF PALMERIN DOLIVA.

The Pilote, the Marchants Wife, and her Daughter, on theyr knees desired the Emperour to excuse them, in that they hadde not reuerenced his Maestie as they ought. Mostoly Honour I expect not said the Emperour, come on and goe with mee, that I may recompence your paines taken for this worthy Princeesse. So rode they forward, and as they issued forth of the Forrest, there stayed the knights and Vnters attending the Emperours coming, they all maruelling at the great courtesie he used to the Lady: then his Maestie calling the Duke Eustace to him, saide. Thou must presently with thy companions, goe Arme ye, and trauell to finde the Prince Olorico, whome the tempestuous Seas hath separated from his Lady. Who brought these heauy tidings to your Highnes (said the Duke.) This Lady, who is his Wife (quoth he) hauing miraculously escaped Shipwacke by the meanes of this Barriner. When they were come to the Pallace, the Duke of Saxon came to hold the Emperours Horse while hee alighted. Prolome saide Palmerin, know you no better your Mistresse Alchidiana? you must now remember her passed fauours, when shee resembled you from base seruitude. And that shall not I forget my Lord (quoth the Duke) while I haue a day to liue: I cannot thinke that this Lady is she. It is euen the without further question (saide the Emperour) doe you and the Duke of Mecana helpe her from her Horse, and conducte her vp into the Pallace, while I in meane time goe to aduertise the Emperesse.

Madame (quoth Prolome) yet can I not be thoroughly resolved. In soth Prolome, (saide she) I am Alchidiana, who to accomplish what thou and thy Companions could not, am come hither in this pouerty: discovering my want of knowledge by an irreuerable losse, except you my good Lords take the greater pittie on me. Think you Madam, (quoth Prolome, that my Lord Olorico is lost: neuer feare it I beseech ye, but thinke you shall finde as great fauour in this Courte, as it were with the Soldane your Father.

Pal.

THE HISTORIE

(Palmerin coming to the Empreſſe, ſaide) Madame, as I was Hunting this day, I found in our foreſt the Princeſſe Alchidiana, of whom I haue ſo often told ye, ſhe being wiſe to the Prince Olorico, that named himſelfe my Dwarfes Brother, when I was laſt with you at Gaunt, I deſire ye to intreate her, as her Calling deſerueth, becauſe I am not a little beholding to her. So taking her by the hand, they came and met the Princeſſe, and Palmerin taking her courteouſly in his armes, deliuered her to the Empreſſe, ſaying.

Fayre Princeſſe, you ſhall remaine with my Ladie, till our knights haue found your Lord and Husband. God will requite your kindneſſe to a diſtreſſed Lady, ſaid Alchidiana, although I feare for my offences his fortune will be much the worſe. Madame (quoth the Empreſſe) ſo Noble and debonaire is your Lord and Husband, as no danger can any way prejudice his life, but thinke him as ſafe as if he were here preſent with you, which doubtleſſe will be right ſone and in good time: therefore let me intreat you to be of good chere, as if you were now in Affria. And though we cannot compare with the Court of Babylon, yet here ſhall you be attended as beſeemes ſo great a Princeſſe.

I doubt not thereof good Madame, ſaide Alchidiana, the more I am I indebted to the Emperour and you: yet can I not forget the abſence of my Lorde, being ſeparated from him in a place ſo vncomly. Pray that is the defender of the iuſt (quoth the Empreſſe) will ſend ye meete againe in place more comfortable, and in that hope I pray ye to perſwade your ſelfe: laying aſide theſe mourning garments, the very ſight whereof cannot but offend ye. Theſe gracious ſpeeches ſomewhat contented her, and expelled all priuate conceits of ſorrow: yet would ſhe not change her habit, till ſhe heard either good or bad newes of the Prince Olorico.

CHAP.

OF PALMERIN D'OLIVA.

CHAP. LXIIII.

¶ Howe the Prince Olorico was reſcued from the Moores, by the young Knightes that the Emperour Palmerin ſent in his ſearch: and what ioy was made at Conſtantinople at his arriuall.



Vpon the Emperours reſolution for the ſearch of Olorico, the Dukes of Meccena, and Saxon, with each of them fifty knights, were prepared to ſea with two greate Gallies well appointed: and Colmelio, Bellechino, Sergillo, Sonne to Cardino, and the Marchant Eſtebons two ſomes, whome the

Emperour had but lately knighted, with thirtie hardy and valiant ſoldiours departed in another. Eight other ſhips were ſent on the Coaſts of Propontida and the Boſphore, to ſeeke the Prince.

It ſo came to paſſe, that the ſame day Alchidiana was preſerued from drowning, Alibarbanco a Pirate was ſailing towards Nacolia, and paſſed very neere where the Princeſſe Carrick was ſplit, and him did he ſee floating on a Cheſt, which was filled within with Partur-ſkinnes, being then with pittie moued to behold him in ſuch danger, he cauſed his men to take him into the Shippe, who ready to yeeld by his ghoſte he was beſtimated with colde. When Alibarbanco ſaw him ſo richly apparellled, and the Cheſt well ſtuffed with things of ſuch value: hee imagined him preſently to be ſome great Lorde, for whome hee ſhould haue ſome large Ransome, wherefore he vſed him very courteouſly. Olorico ſeing he was ſo happily eſcaped, liſting his eyes

THE HISTORIE

eyes to Heauen, saide. Great is thy mercie O God, that so fauourably boughsided to regarde thy poore creature, noz were losse worthis reckoning, so my Ladie Alchydiana were saide in Affiria. What angry Planet raigned when we betoke our selues to Sea: what answer shall I make to the Soldane your Father, that gaue mee such charge of your Person at my departure: hardly may I dare to come before him any moze.

Alibarbanco hearing these complaints, reioyced thereat. By Bahomet (quothe he to himselfe) noz shalt thou see him any moze, if I can hinder it, for I will present thee to the great Turke, his mortall enemie: and for thy Ransome I shall receyue a bountifull recompence. So thinking to strike towarde Natolia, he hapned among the Emperours young Knights ere he was aware: wherefore he thought to take theyr Shippes likewise, yet therein he found himselfe very much deceyued. For Bellechino knowing them to be Turks by theyr Banners, said to his companions, We are now I feare in the danger of Turkish Pyrates: Let vs therefore with courage winne our deliuerance. Hereupon they fiercely assailed Alibarbanco, and buckled so closely, that in the ende they Wounded him, making such slaughter among his men, and throwing him likewise staine into the Sea, that none were left to resist theyr further Entrance, where they found the Prince Olorico, and being not a little glabbe of this their good successe, they eache one embraced him with gracious courtesie. Alas my Friends (quothe the Prince, how know you my being heere: who gaue you in charge to sake me sozth: who hath bene the Befenger of my misfortune: By Lorde the Emperour Palmerin, (answered Colmelio,) vnderstood thereof by your Ladie Alchydiana, whome he found by good happe as he rode on Hunting.

But may I giue credite to your wordes (saide the Prince) is my Ladie with his Maestie at the Court: She is in trusth my Lorde (saide Bellechino) and the Barriner like

OF PALMERIN D'OLIVA.

likewise that saued her life. Whom the Emperour hath highly recompenced for his faithfull seruice. I beseech you, quoth Olorico, let vs haile saile presently toward Constantinople, for my heart cannot be perswaded till I haue seene her, so great is my doubt, considering our vnfortunat separation.

Neuer may I heare Abmes in Knighthood, said Bellechino, or lift my Sword in honourable Chualtrie, if Alchidiana be not at Constantinople, where I both saw her and spake to her before our departure. So taking the vessel that belonged to the Pirate Alibarbanco with them, in short time after they arriued at Constantinople, where their chearefull sounding of Drums, Trompets, and Clarions at their landing, deliuered testimonie of their good successe. If the Emperour was glad for the recouery of his friend, the Princeesse Alchidiana of her Husband, and enterie one generally for the man lost by such mishap, I leaue to your iudgements, that can censure the rare ioyes of loue and friendship. What Triumphes, Tournaments, bonfires, Maskes, Pomeries, and other delightfull exercises were performed, for ioy of the Prince Oloricos safetie, whom the Emperour made account of, as you haue heard before: it would demand a larger volume to set downe, you must therefore here imagine, that you behold his Maestie highly contented, Alchidiana thozowly satisfied, and the whole Courte well pleased by this happie euent, giuing themselves to expresse the same in open and manifest signes, bestowing so great estates to prosecute, & therefore of as great honour as may be deuised.

The young Knights are especially welcommed for their moztie seruice, the Dukes of Saxon and Mecana likewise, though they failed of bringing the Prince, yet they brought two Foystes belonging to the Prince Alibarbanco, richly laden with many welthy spoiles, which were giuen among the young Knights in recompence of their paines. During the time of these surpassing pleasures and

THE HISTORIE

and delights, there entred the Haven of Constantinople three Ships, laden with marvellous sumptuous gifts and presents, from the Quene Zephira, and her Brother the King Maulerino, being sent to the Emperour Palmerin and his Emperesse Polynarda, by two great Lords Ambassadors from Persia, to request familiar loue and alliance with the Emperour, the Soldane confessing his iniurie to Tryneus while he was in his Courte. When the Persians came before the Emperour, who was honozably accompanied with Kings, Dukes, Princes, Counties, and many braue Ladies: they were greatly abashed, yet thinking on the argument of their Embassage, one of them began in this manner.

It is no maruell, redoubted Emperour and Monarch of Greece, if thy Subjects both loue thee and visit thee, whether thy behaviour hath conquered the mindes of foraine Potentates: who to enter amitie and peace with thee, some haue left their Countries to send their Ambassadors hither, other dare not stirre, or assemble their men in warlike manner, so is the name of Palmerin feared throughout all Asia. Hereof beare witnes the great Turke, the Califfe of Siconia, and the heyres to the Prince Amarano of Nigrea: not much inferiour in this condition, is the Soldane of Babilon, whose Daughter with her Husband I here behold. The victorious Abimar, King of Romara and Grisca the worthy Maulerino, and the puissant Soldane of Persia my Master, Husband to the vertuous Prince Zephira: who with their Brother haue sent your highnes three Shippes, laden with the most welthy riches their Countreys can yeeld. My Lord and they humbly kisse your Maesties hand, desiring you to forget his discourtesie to the gentle Knight Tryneus, when hee became enamoured on the Princesse Aurecinda. But if their loue then sortet to a philosophicall trope or figure, it hath thence prouced effectually in procreation, to the no little ioy of my Lord and Master.

The

OF PALMERIN DOLIVA.

The Princesse was deliuered of a goodly Son, growing in such exquisite forme and feature: as it is expected hee will one day resemble his Father in chualtrie, as hee hath already his Mother in amiable perfection.

Ambassador, quoth the Emperour, for the great vertue and nobilitie I haue founde, as well in the Princesse Zephira, as also her noble Brother: I grant the friendly alliance thou demundest. Yet hereof am I sorrie, that the Sonne to the Prince Tryneus, should bee nourished and spend his youth among Mahumetists, without knowledge of his God and Redeemer: for in such sort should hee bee instructed, after hee is come to the yeres of understanding, that all the Alchoran is tales and fables, and doubtlesse God will so deale with him in time, as hee shall imitate the Toppes of his Noble Father. As for the presents sent vs by the King Maulerino, the Soldane, and his Quene Zephira, we accept them as from our friends, and will returne them some remembrance of our thankfulness. His Maestie commanded the Persians to be lodged in his Pallace, and continued still their former ioyes and triumphes: but to alter those Courtly pastimes and delights, this misfortune happened which hereafter followeth.

CHAP.

THE HISTORIE

CHAP. LXV.

How the great Turke refused to assist Lycado, Nephew to the Admirall Olimael, against the Emperour Palmerin: and what trouble happened in Constantinople, by the Traytour Nardides, Nephew to the King Tarisius, Lycado, Meuodeno and their Father.



Such was the humanitie and pittie of Palmerin, when hee finished the enchantments at the Isle of Malfada, as he gaue libertie to all the Turkes and Christians, which were before transformed, as you haue heard: among whom was Lycado, Nephew to the Admirall Olimael, he that at the taking of Agriola, had the Prince Trineus for his prisoner. This Lycado, seeing himselfe in his owne Countrey and out of danger, where hee heard how the great Turke was slaine and his Uncle likewise: hee came before the Sultane that then reigned, saying: Worthie Lord, as men are naturally inclined to bemoane their losses, so are Subjects bound to aduertise their Soueraignes, of any shame or iniurie done to their Maestries. This speake I my Lord, because you haue not as yet reuenged the death of your deceased Brother, now sleeping in the armes of Mahomet, albeit traiterously slaine by Palmerin and his companions: at which time my noble Uncle was likewise murdered, with many Knights of chiefe and especiall account. And least you should be ignorant in the truth of the deede, and who also caried hence the Princesse Agriola, I haue

credibly

OF PALMERIN DOLIVA.

credibly vnderstand, that Palmerin is Nephew to the Emperour of Greece: one of his Companions is the Emperours Sonne of Allemaigne, and all the rest were Princes and Lords of Greece, onely sent as Spies into Turkie. Wherefore, seeing you now hold the state in such peace and quietnes, it were necessarie you should leaue a mighty Army: and please you to commit the charge thereof to mee, I will loose my life, or make an absolute destruction of all Greece. I remember (said the great Turke, that your Uncle made like entraunce into my deceased Brothers Courte, as you by your speeches now labour to do: but I will so warily looke to such intrusions, as no Traytors shall rest here if I can hinder them. Your Uncle vexed the Christians what followed thereon: the death of his Maister, and daungerous confusion. By you likewise may ensue as bad Fortune, depart you therefore from our Court: and but that we are loath to be noted with Tyrannie, thou shouldst presently be drawne in pieces with horses. False Traytour, thou that comest to counsell vs in a matter, wherein we cannot meddle but with great dishonour: it behoues thee first to regard the end of thy intent, and what hee is that gouernes in Greece. Goe Villaine goe, and on perill of thy life neuer presume before our againe.

Lycado was greatly astounded at this sharpe answer, and seeing he could haue no better successe, hee went to his Father the Brother to Olimael, being one of the chiefeest Magitians in all Turkie: to him he made his complaints, saying, hee would die in that resolution, but he would cause the Turke to knowe that hee was no Traytour, and this (quoth hee) shall be the meane whereby I will compasse it. I meane to disguise my selfe, and Trauell to the Cittie of Constantinople, where priuily I will murder the Emperour Palmerin: So shall my Lords the great Turke touch mee with no further suspicion, but will reward me with greater benefites then euer my Uncle had. By Sonne (answered his Father, thinkest thou that thy deeme will sort to effect:

the Brother Menadeno would helpe the herein; but he is too young: yet in your time serue for the departure; I will not onely tell the, but conduct the my selfe. I beseech you good Father (sayd Lycado) further me in what you may, for neuer will my heart be at rest, till I haue payde Palmerin with the selfe same coyn the great Turke was. He meant while do you studie, and search all your Booke of Astrologie, Divination, Magique, and Pigromancie, as Zabolus, Orpheus, Hercules, Zoroastres, Circes, Medea, Alphonso, Bacon, Apponius, and all the rest that write of the Blacke Speculative: reade them ouer againe and againe, denise such Spells, Crozisms, and Coniurations, as the very spirits may speake of the Feast: I will make at the Citie of Constantinople,

Whereupon, the Olde man made his Sonne Menadeno knight, and with Lycado betoke themselves to Sea, saying my Sonnes, I will bring ye to Constantinople, where (by bestie of mine Arte) mee will arrive before three dayes he expires: remember your Uncles death, and behaue your selues in such sort, as you may be Registered for ever. The time doth not fauour you with sufficient Reuenge, and therein shall you be assisted by a Christian knight, whome we shall find ready Landed there for the same cause.

Their Ankers being weyed, they launch into the dape, and cut through the waues with such violence, as if the Diuell himselfe were in their Sayles: so that they took Land at the selfe same houre, as Nardides arrived at Constantinople. As concern what this Nardides was, you remember the two Traytors Promptoleon and Oudin, nephewes to the King Tarisius of Hungaria, whome Palmerin and Frysol slew at Constantinople: he was their Brother, and Sonne to the Duchesse of Ormeda. She understanding the death of her two Sonnes, could not conceale it from the Duke her Husband, who presently dyed with very conceyte of griefe: Whereupon, she to Reuenge this mischance caused by her report, as also the death of her two sonnes,

Sonnes, made promise to Nardides, (then being righte yeres olde) that so soone as he was knighted, he should goe to Constantinople, and there (if it were possible) to murder the Emperour and Frycoll. All this he vowed to performe, and about some two or three yeres after, hauing married the Kings Daughter of Polonia, he Embarked himselfe with forty knights, determining by a Combat for Treason, to to compasse his intent.

These weakfull aymer at Reuenge, landed all at one instant at Constantinople. When the old Magitian calling to Nardides: saide he would gladly speake with him in secret, as concerning matters greatly for his awaile. Whereupon they went all closely together, into the Masters Cabin, and the Olde man entred into these speeches.

Sayd Nardides, needlesse it is for you to hide your affaires from me, for I know that you departed from Polonia with forty knights disguised like Marchants, onely with this determination, to desir the Emperour, in reuenge of certaine iniuries done to your Brethren. But if you will giue credite to me, and go to worke in such sort as I shall aduise ye, ye shall happily obtaine the ende of your desire. By God (saide Nardides) you tell me wonders, there is not one in the Shippe that knowes mine intent: yet haue you saide the truth, wher at I cannot maruell sufficiently. Seeing then you know so much, it were but follie to dissemble, say then your mind, and I will heare ye. This night (saide the olde man) the Emperour will Suppe in the great Hall, with the Prince Olorico, and the Princesse Alchidianaes friends, the King of Sparta, and his Quene, with many other great Princes and Lordes: so that such store of people are in the Pallace, as little regard will be had of Strangers or Household seruants.

You then with my Sonne Menadeno, being Armed as becometh a cause so weightie, shall suddenly enter, and kill the Emperour: my Sonne Lycado and I, will stay your returne here, and I that can commaunde the winde

and weather, will carrie you hence without daunger of following. And true it is, that there is a Bird peatched in the Hall, which the wife Muzabelino hath so Enchaunted, as neyther god or yll things can come to the Emperour, but shee bewrayes the same by her Song or fearefull crye: yet doubt not you thereof, strike boldly, there will be none Armed, and so shall you depart againe at your owne pleasure. My friend (said Nardides, happy be the good houre I mette with thee, assure thy selfe, that if I can kill the Emperour, and thou afterwarde deliuer me safely: such recompence will I bestowe on thee, as both thou and thine shall for ever remember me.

Other recompence I demaund not (said the Old man) then the death of the Emperour: Prepare thy selfe therefore to follow thine intent. The Night being come, these Traytors Armed themselves, and casting their Mantles, about them, entered the Pallace, where among the Pages and Seruants, without insuspition they came into the Hall: leauing Lycado and his father at the Doore, where hee threw abroad such Enchaunted words, that all such as came forth of the Houses, presently fell downe a sleepe in the Streetes. No sooner were the Traytors entered the Hall, but the Bird gaue a horrible and fearefull crye, beating her Beake against her Brest with such furie, as though she would haue rent forth her heart. My God (said the Emperour) in mercie behold me: For the crye of this Bird doth foretell great misfortune. Look about my friends (quoth hee to his Guard) and see if any Stranger or unknowne bodie is entered our presence. Nardides by these speeches, well knew he was the Emperour, wherefore drawing his Sword, he thought to haue cleauid his head: yet he sayled of his intent, for the Emperour seeing the blow coming, with a great Golden Cuppe stretched it indifferently, notwithstanding, the Sworde in slapping from the Cup, gaue him a sore wound vpon the head. Olorico sitting on the other side of the Table, ranne at the Traytour, but the Emperour,

perour had receiued two strokes more ere he could come at him, so that his Maiestie fell from his Chaire as hee had been dead.

As the Prince Olorico held the Traytor Nardides by the armes, Menadeno strooke at him so rigorously, as if Prolome had not borne of the blowes with a great Silver plate, Olorico there had lost his life. Duke Eustace seeing this shamefull outrage, wroong the Sword out of Nardides hand, and gaue him such a sound stroke therewith on the head, as made him tumble his heeles vpward: and by the helpe of Bellechino, who found the meanes to get off his Helmet, he smote his head from his shoulders. Bellechino who had been newly baptised, loued the Emperour as hee had bene his father, and comming to Menadeno whom Duke Prolome strongly held in his armes, gaue him so many stabs on his throte, that hee likewise fell downe at his feete. The Emperesse seeing her Lord so wounded, rent her garments, tore her comely locks of haire, and smote her faire face with meruailous violence. Ah my Lord, quoth she, thou art not wounded alone: for if thou die, as God forbid, right soone will my ghost follow thee. Cease Madame your complaints, said the Emperour, and comfort your selfe so well as you may, for this is the houre wherein I must leaue you: I haue lost such abundance of my blood, as longer may I not liue with you: O my God forgive my sinnes, and receiue my soule. In uttering these words hee swounded againe, and the Emperesse with him for company, to the no little amazement of all the Lords and Ladies, who were well nere at their wits end to behold this unexpected alteration. Alchidiana likewise was in wonderfull perplexitie, fearing also that her Lord was wounded to the death: but to comfort this sorrowfull and desolate Court, good Fortune sent this helpe ensuing.

THE HISTORIE

CHAP. LXVI.

How the wise Muzabelino knowing by his art, the cruel treason done to the Emperour: came to succour him, and of that which followed.



Muzabelino the Pigromancer, of whom we haue already spoken, by chance this day was turning ouer his Books, and found the dangerous stratageme devised by these Traytors, and calling his familiars together, demanded the danger that would ensue by this treason: whereto one of them replied, that if he went not speedily to Constantinople, the Emperour, the Prince Olorico and their Ladies would hardly escape that day with life. Then Armed he himselfe, in selfe same manner as hee was when he succored the Prince Tryneus, and calling two spirits of the ayre resembling Giants, their faces so ugly and fearfull as no human creature durst behold them: then he commanded to carrie him to Constantinople, and with a great flaming firebrand in his hand, he cut through the ayre with such horrible thunder, as each one thought the world had bin ended. When he beheld the old man that defended the port, he said to him: False and disloyall Traitor, dardest thou meddle with the man in whom thou knowest to bee in my guard: take him to ye (quoth hee to his two spirits) and conuey him to your Courte, and there keepe him aliuie for mee, for I will giue him a paine a thousand times worse then death: you know how to vse my gentle guest, let him

be

OF PALMERIN DOLIVA.

be dealt withall as his behauiour hath deserued. The miserable old man assented hereat, and thinking to helpe himselfe by his Magique, was presently transformed into a Serpent. Now thou shalt perceiue, said Muzabelino, that I am greater in power then thou art. So taking two great Golden chaines, he tied the Serpent about the necke therewith and his Sonne together: letting such a continuation on them, as he should neuer bee changed to his former shape.

Then came hee to the Pallace, where taking off his Helmet, he entred the Hall, saying to the knights. Ah my deere friends, the Traytor that thus hath molested you is taken, reioyce therefore and be of good chere, your Lord is not dead, he liueth, he must liue, and in despite of enuie shall flourish more then euer he did. The Princes & knights hearing him speake so friendly, and yet knew not what hee was, notwithstanding his promises they were greatly amazed: but when they saw Bellechino and Colmelio so reuerently embraced him, they began to conceiue better opinion of him. Alas my Lord and Father, said Bellechino, in a happie houre came you hither, and your presence puts vs out of al further feare: vouchsafe to succor the Emperesse Polynarda, for pittie it is to see her thus changed. Whereupon Muzabelino embraced the Emperesse, whose face was colde, pale and wan. Why Madame: quoth he, where is your former wisdom and discretion: leaue these desolate countenances to common people: your Lord is in no daunger, but within three daies hee shall bee well againe. Conuey her hence, said he to the Ladies, I am ashamed to see your folly, suffering her to lie in this sort, and no one helpe her. Then was she conducted to her Chamber, and Muzabelino with the ayde of his Sonne and Duke Eustace, caried the Emperour to his bed, where staunching his woundes with a precious Oyntment: Muzabelino gaue him some of the water to drinke, which before had healed the Princesse Zephira, and which he had brought with

Wh 4

him

THE HISTORIE

him in a little viall of Chryſtall, when the Emperour being ſome what better recovered, liſting his eyes to heauen, ſaid. How great art thou in mercy my ſoueraign Redeemer, ſending Muzabelino from the furtheſt regions, to help me in ſo great a neceſſitie? Ah my noble friend, what haue I done at any time for thee, that might induce thee to ſauour me ſo much? By Lord, answered Muzabelino, ſo precious are your deſerts in mine eyes, as I can doe no leſſe, except I ſhould be accounted the moſt ingratefull among men. So bathing his wounds with the iuyce of certaine vertuous hearbes, he willed all that were preſent to depart the chamber, and on the morrow they ſhould ſee their Lord in better eſtate. So left they the Emperour to his reſt, & al the Princes, knights and Ladies, came to welcome Muzabelino, who comforted the Princeſſe Alchidiana, aſſuring her that the Prince Olorico ſhould doe wel enough, for he had likewiſe bathed his wounds, and left him in his Chamber quietly ſleeping. On the morrow he commanded the bodies of Nardides and Menadeno to be burned, afterward he loſed Lycado from his father, cauſing him to be put in priſon till the Emperour were amended: and taking the Serpent by the chaine, he brought him by the help of his two ſpirits into the great Court, where by his cunning he erected a goodly Marble pillar, and on the top thereof a ſtrong Cage of yron, ſaying to the old man transformed. Accuſed creature, to the ende thy paine may bee the greater during the Emperours life, thou ſhalt remain in this monſtrous ſhape, and die thou ſhalt not, till the God of heauen call him hence whoſe death thou diſdeſt continue. Incontinent the ſpirits thruſt the Serpent into the Cage: and afterward baniſhed away, leauing the monſter caſting fearefull flames of fire out at his mouth, and howling with ſtrange and pittifull cries. Then went Muzabelino to the Empreſſe, who ſtill remained ſad and penſiue, and bringing her to the Emperour, ſaid. See Madam, am I not ſo good as my word, your Lord is well and perfeatly recovered, bee you then pleaſant
and

OF PALMERIN DOLIVA

and mourne no longer. For a little toyfull was ſhe at this ſight, embracing his highnes with ſuch affection, as though ſhe had bin abſent from him a long time: but when the Emperour ſaw her face ſo martered with lamenting, and her ſweet countenance ſo much altered, Alas Madam, quoth he, why doe you offend that ſeate of heavenly beautie, which God ordained to excell all Ladies living: albeit I had died, yet ſhould not you haue bled ſuch tyrannie on your ſelfe. If ſuch a weakfull chance had happened, answered the Empreſſe, ſome had my gholt followed my Lord. For my heart hath no comfort but onely in you, and that once loſt, ſarewell life and all. Then muſt you both, ſaid Muzabelino, conſider the mighty work of God, eſpecially you my Lord, who as you are loved of many, ſo are you hated likewiſe of a number: you muſt therefore hereafter ſtand vpon your guard, hauing beſore your eyes, that the more renowne increaſeth, the more doth ſpightfull enuie ſeek to deſace it. Alexander the great, and Iulius Ceſar are examples thereof. You Madame muſt waſh your face with the water in this viall, which will reſtore your former beauty, as ſome time it did to the Princeſſe Zephira. Within ſeuē daies after, the Emperour ſhewed himſelfe to his Subiects, who were mercailous toyfull to ſee him ſo well recovered, the Prince Olorico likewiſe was perfectly cured, and al things ſo well as if this had not happened. Then was Lycado deliuered to the people, who in recompence of his treaſon, halled him into the Market place, and there binding him in an yron chayne, made a ſmall fire vnder him, and ſo by little and little broiled him to death.

CHAP.

THE HISTORIE

CHAP. LXVII.

How the Soldane of Aabylon sent for the Prince Olorico, and his Daughter Alchidiana, and of the sorow the Emperour and Empreſſe made for their departure.

Herepozt of this miſhap at Conſtanti-
nople was ſo ſpread abroad, as the
King Florendos of Macedon, and the
Queene Griana hearing thereof, pre-
ſently poſted to Conſtantinople, where
by the good meanes of Muzabelino,
they found their Sonne in very ſound
eſtate of health, for which they highly thanked the wiſe Pa-
ſitian, giuing him many rich and honourable rewards.
And Muzabelino ſeing all matters quieted, that the Perſi-
an Ambaſſadours were likewiſe readie to returne to the
Soldane, not a little contented with the league of peace, he
tooke his leaue of the Emperoz, and ſailed home with them
to the King Abimar of Griſca, who he certiſied of all things
that happened, and how fortunately the danger was pre-
uented. Fryſoll the King of Hungaria, came with his
Queene Armida to Conſtantinople, a Meſſenger likewiſe
came from the Emperoz of Allemaine and Tryneus, to vi-
derſtand the health of the Emperoz, ſuch was the bzute of
this ſuddaine miſchance. While all theſe Princes remai-
ned there at the Court, the Princeſſe Alchidiana was deli-
uered of a faire Daughter, who at the Emperoz Palmerins
request was baptiſed, and named Philocriſta, and not ma-
ny daies after the Empreſſe had a Daughter likewiſe, na-
med Belliza, and the Queene of Hungaria had another, cal-
led Melicia: no little toy being made at the birth of theſe
children. But now the Soldane of Babilon ſeing his ſon
and

OF PALMERIN DOLIVA.

and daughter returned not all this while, ſent the young
King of Balifarca to enquire of them, and no ſooner was he
entred the Wauen of Conſtantinople, but newes of his ar-
riual was brought to Alchidiana and Olorico, who to ho-
nour the King, went and met him at the Pozte. The King
being landed, ſeing himſelle vnarmed, and remembering
the death of his Father beſore that Citie, with the teares
in his eyes, ſaid: Wretched that I am, muſt I venture thus
nakedly on the ſhoze, where my father, brother, and deereſt
friends were ſlaine: Ah Conſtantinople, the enemy to our
Law and Religion, doſt thou flouriſh by the blood of the
greateſt Lords in Turkie: a day will come to abate thy
pride and inſalency. I hope King of Balifarca, ſaid Olorico
if thy father and brother were ſlaine, it was like worſhie
Princes in their Maſters ſeruice, whole death if thou re-
member, and (withall) the valour of them that ſlew them:
thou muſt think how Fortune ſauours the Grecian ſucceſ-
ſors in the Empire. Beſide, thou commeſt now in peace,
but ill beſeemes it thee then to remember paſſed troubles:
ſay thy meſſage to the Emperoz that thou commeſt for, and
think not on ſuch ſciuolous matters. By this time they
were come into his Maieſties preſence, when the King be-
gan in this manner. Mighty and renowned Emperoz, the
Soldan of Babilon my Maſter, perceiuing that age haſte-
neth on his death, ſendeth to intreat your highnes, that his
ſon and daughter may returne home to him, that while he
liues he may inueſt them in the Kingdome, to behold ſoine
part of their worſhy gouernment. I think their abſence,
ſaid the Emperoz, is as irkſome to him, as it is pleaſing and
contented to me, nor wil I with-hold them contrary to his
liking: deſiring you good Princes to hold me excuſed, if I
haue not vied you as your vertues worſthly meritt. Alchidi-
ana hauing heard her fathers request, brake ſoozth into
teares, and though nature made her deſire to ſee the place of
her birth, and to behold her parents and kindred: yet pier-
cing affection which conquereth all things, drew backe her
mind

THE HISTORIE

mind in such sort, as shee could more willingly haue staid in the Emperors Court. But beholding the mutuall loue betweene Palmerin and Polynarda, she resolved to vse the like to her Husband, and forget the fally that too much conquered her appetite. When the day was come of their departure, marvellous was the sorrow at this friendly parting: yet seeing there was no remedie, she kissed her daughter Philocrista, and courtously bidding the Emperour and Emperesse farewell, with her Lord Olorico, who was as loth to leaue his noble friend, went aboard, and hoisting sails attained safe arriuall at the Soldanes Court. Great ioy was made for their returne, the Pilot that saued the Princesse life, the Soldane made chiefe Captaine of his Guard: and he dying, Olorico was created Soldane, wherof some after he aduertised the Emperour, sending to him and the Emperesse many precious iewels, not forgetting somwhat to his daughter Philocrista. When Olorico and Alchidiana sailed from Constantinople, the King of Sparta and his Quene Arismena, the Duke Eustace and the Duchesse Sabinda, with diuers other Princes returned to their countries. The like would the King Florendos, Grian, Proleme and Bryonella haue done: but that the Emperour intreated their longer stay. Grian gaue her Dwarf Aménada sister to Vrbaniello, to the young Princesse Belliza, & the Emperour gaue his Dwarf such welthy possessions, as he married with a rich Gentlewoman of the city, by whom he had a sonne of the stature of the Pygmees, named Risdeno, who after ward was giuen to wait on the yong Prince Primaleon. Now the Emperour calling to mind, his former paine and travell in search of adventures, so loued and honored knights errant: as from each place in the world they came to his Court, as wel to behold his magnificence, as the three yong Princesse, Philocrista, Beliza, & Melicia whose beauties were renowned farre and nere. Great ioyes & Triumphes were daily made in honoz of them, wherein Belcar, sonne to King Fryssoll, and Tarendos son

to

OF PALMERIN D'OLIVA.

to Duke Eustace of Mecena, hauing receiued the order of knighthood, welued themselves both so ward and valiant. Dailie came such store of knights to Constantinople from Allemaine, Italie, France and Spaine, as they exceeded the number of them in King Arthurs time, when he made the great Tourney before the Castell of Lasies. And one evening as the Emperour was dawning with the Princes, to censure of them that had best deserved: suddainly entred the Hall a Lady richly attired, who without saluting or speaking a word to any body, a good while stood viewing the Emperour & his knights. At length, making as though she would returne againe, she thus spake. Noble Emperour Palmerin, I haue more delighted to behold thy Chivalrie, then any of the Princes on the earth: but a time shall come, that the renowne of them and thee, shall be utterly abolished by Strangers, chiefly by one, whose vertue & bountie shall be such, as thy selfe shalt account him the best that euer bare Armes. So departing, she mounted on her Palfrey, and rode away in exceeding great haste. The Emperour maruelling at these words, said. Ill aduised was I, in not demanding of the Lady the knights name, which shall surpasse all other in prowesse, gladly would I know his name, of whom she made such a glorious report. These speeches so enflamed the minds of the knights present, as many of them secretly Armed & enfelds, and rode after the Lady, among whom was Cardyno and Colmelio, whom we will leaue in their iourney till they find her: and heere conclude our History, till time bring on the followe of Primaleon and Palmendos, desiring your acceptance for these two parts, the better affection I shall haue to procede in the other.

FINIS.

MY promise performed, and *Palmerins* famous
Historie finished: for my long labour, Gentle-
men, I request but your friendly speeches, an easie
matter to be giuen by you, yet nothing can bee more
welcome to me. If I may speed in so fir all a request,
Palmendos will leaue his Mother the Queene of *Thar-*
sus, and *Primalcon* hasten his order of Knight-hood,
that you may bee acquainted with their rare aduen-
tures. In meane while, the famous *Palladine* of *Eng-*
land is arrived, and to feede you with varietie of de-
lights, his History by Easter tearme next will be with
ye: till when, vse such fauour to *Palmerin*, as Prince
Palladine be nothindered.

Antonie Monday.

Honos alit Artes.

FINIS.